



I'M REALLY A SUPERSTAR

BOOK 09

Chang Yu

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

I'm Really A Superstar

(我真是大明星)

by

Chang Yu

(尝谕)

Synopsis

Zhang Ye was originally a mundane college graduate with aspiring dreams to become a star, but unfortunately has below average looks and height. However one day, he woke up and suddenly found himself in a parallel world!

It's like the same world, but wait a minute...many brands, celebrities and even famous works from his world changed and are gone in this new world!

Armed with the profound literary knowledge of his previous world and a heaven-defying Game Ring that gives him magical items, stats and skills, Zhang Ye embarks on a journey to pursue his life-long dream of becoming famous!

Follow Zhang Ye as he takes the new world by storm, one plagiarized piece at a time, to hilarious reactions!

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Legge & CKtalon @ [Wuxiaworld](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 701: The Difficulty Of Zhang Ye's Questions!

Sunday.

The next morning.

The day before the deadline for the submission of the exam questions, everyone woke up and ate the breakfast delivered to them. Every team's question setters were called to a meeting by their respective team chiefs to begin another day of work, to compile and summarize everyone's questions, then analyze and discuss it as a group.

Mathematics team.

"Dean Pan."

"Oh, you're here?"

"Everyone has arrived."

"Uh, Teacher Zhang is not here yet."

"You haven't seen him since yesterday?"

"That's right, I did not see Professor Zhang since the night before

yesterday. I think he stayed in his dorm the entire time, then I heard he went to get more information and past exams."

"The deadline's tomorrow, so we have to finish the rough draft of the Mathematics exam today, or else it'll be too late. Get someone to call for Professor Zhang."

"Alright, I'll go."

Right at this moment, Zhang Ye walked into the office from outside.

Dean Pan looked over. "We were just going to get you. So how is it?"

Zhang Ye came in with a stack of documents. "It's more or less done."

"How's the difficulty of the questions?" Dean Pan asked immediately with great interest. He truly intended to utterly depend on Zhang Ye's help this time for the Mathematics exam. Although Pan Yang was one of the supervisors of the Mathematics team, his expertise did not really lie in the area of algebraic geometry at the high school level.

Everyone gathered around them as well.

Zhang Ye said, "The difficulty should be good enough. Didn't you tell me that the more difficult it is, the better?"

"Yes, it'd be good if it's more difficult." Dean Pan said, "We already have a lot of questions that are just moderately difficult, so we don't need to come up with any more of those. What we're lacking are the extremely difficult ones, so let me take a look at what you have."

Zhang Ye passed the documents over to him. "There's multiple choice, fill in the blank, and short answer, all of which I've proposed quite a number of. Why don't you all go through them first. I still have more if they're not suitable."

A person said, "Professor Zhang's really efficient!"

A middle-aged man said, "I want to see what you've got there too."

They pulled a whiteboard over.

Then Zhang Ye's questions were placed on it and held up with a magnet while everyone gathered around the whiteboard to take a look. They scanned it once over from the first question to the last, all the way down.

Finally, when they finished reading the last question, all of the teachers from the Mathematics team were stunned for a while.

"This..."

"Man!"

"Ah? This question..."

"Let me do some calculations for it!"

"This isn't right. This is not a question for high school students at all!"

"This requires an advanced math formula that will only be learned in university to solve, no? It even uses a formula that will only be taught in the second year of university! Why's there even calculus in this?"

"This question won't do!"

Next to them, a female teacher went to a whiteboard and began solving the problem. She used a total of three minutes to solve the problem. It was very fast because the problem was not difficult to her at all, but the problem solving process required used at least two formulas that weren't taught in high school textbooks.

Putting down the marker, the female teacher said, "This is not something that a high school student can solve at all!"

After staring at the problem and solution for a long time, Dean Pan looked at Zhang Ye. "Teacher Zhang?"

Zhang Ye laughed. "The problems I have proposed are all solvable through the knowledge found in high school textbooks. None of them exceed the scope of a high school exam. This problem might look difficult and complicated when you read it at first. I see that this teacher used several formulas to solve the question just now, even using higher mathematics formulas, but it's actually not necessary at all." He picked up the marker and started writing on the whiteboard. "If you adjust your mindset first before attempting to solve the question, you would not be tricked by it. The actual, correct, and most simple way to solve this is to start from here. If you bring this specification over here to the front, then it would become simplified and you can then apply this calculation, like this, like this..." He put down the marker. "The answer can be derived easily this way."

When everyone from the Mathematics team saw this, their jaws dropped!

Easy?

Easy your sister!

This problem was way too tricky! After they knew about the problem solving process, it did not look difficult anymore. Indeed, even though they could use algebraic geometry knowledge to solve it, it was almost impossible for anyone to have that train of thought for the solution when faced with such a question! Even this group of math teachers did not figure it out at the start! Let alone the students!

Dean Pan laughed. "This problem is interesting!"

That female teacher wiped the sweat off her forehead. "How many high school students can possibly solve the problem with that kind of thought process? The way I look at it, at least 99% of the examinees will be stumble at this question!"

Zhang Ye said, "That might not necessarily be true. Even if this problem solving process is not easy to think of, there are still at least two other ways using normal methods to solve it." He wrote out another two solutions on the whiteboard using high school algebraic geometry formulas which could be used to solve the question, even if the process was more complex and needed constant calculation and application of formulas.

The teachers of the Mathematics team were all convinced after seeing the solutions written out by Zhang Ye.

Dean Pan decided, "This problem is good. It's different from all the problems we've ever had in our Beijing college entrance Mathematics exams. Let's see the next problem then."

The next one was a multiple choice question.

This was an extremely tricky question and if there was just a lapse in concentration, the examinees would be deceived by the four given answer choices and make unnecessary assumptions about the question. Even if they used the wrong answer that they derived in the first place to work backwards, the answer would still stand, which made it even trickier. Among the question setters of the Mathematics team, when they were all studying this question,

there was one of them who got the answer wrong due to being misled by one of the wrong multiple choice answers. When he finally found out what the correct answer was, the teacher who answered wrong facepalmed and coughed, flushing with embarrassment. He even wished for a hole to open up so that he could crawl in and hide. It wasn't that he wasn't smart, but rather he had a lapse in concentration and subconsciously fell for the trick question!

This question was wicked!

Professor Zhang understood too well the mindset of the examinees and had purposely set this trap for them. If it was in accordance with how other Mathematics multiple choice questions were solved, then there would be 5 out of 10 examinees falling for this trap!

The third question was similar!

The fourth question...

The fifth question...

The tenth question...

One by one, the questions were discussed and attempted. The more times the teachers from the Mathematics team attempted the proposed questions, the more frightened and depressed they felt. There were even some questions that left them with a lingering

sense of a headache when they attempted to solve it. But the more they felt this way, the more they were convinced by Zhang Ye's ability.

After going through the last question.

Dean Pan looked at Zhang Ye and couldn't help but smile. "If I was given such an exam 30 years ago during my high school days, don't even mention getting full marks, if I could pass, I would thank the heavens for sure!"

The other teachers laughed at Dean Pan's exaggerated comparison, but they truly had a similar reaction to it as well. These questions were all too insane! This wasn't even a question of difficulty anymore. Many of the questions were just goddamn traps laid for the examinees!

A female teacher didn't know whether to laugh or cry. "Isn't this too difficult?"

Dean Pan smiled and said, "I think it's appropriate enough. Since the higher-ups want a reform and are calling for an increase in the difficulty of the Mathematics exam section, then these questions by Teacher Zhang are obviously the most suitable to help achieve that!"

Someone said, "We're going ahead with them?"

"Yes, we are!" Dean Pan decided and approved.

A young mathematics teacher wearing a complicated expression said, "When the examinees see this exam, they will definitely be cursing all 18 generations of ancestors of the question setting team!"

Another teacher laughed loudly. "That's doesn't matter. The difficult ones have all been proposed by Professor Zhang. We were only responsible for the easy ones."

Zhang Ye said, "...so you're all putting the blame on me now!?"

Finally, after another round of deliberation, the first edition of the Mathematics exam was roughly confirmed. Zhang Ye was not going to bother with the remaining work left to be done and just let Dean Pan and the others handle it. Zhang Ye excused himself and headed to the Chinese Literature team with another set of documents.

At 10 AM in the morning.

Over at the Chinese Literature team, a fervent discussion was also taking place.

"But this question is very good."

"The board says that it's too traditional and not innovative enough."

"I've already changed the style, so it's no longer a traditional type of question anymore."

"That won't do, Chief Yu has rejected it. It's the same for those questions of mine, none of them pass, so I will have to start all over again. Hai, I don't think we'll be able to make it on time."

"The Board is asking for too much this time."

The door opened and Zhang Ye walked in straightaway without knocking. "Is Chief Yu around?"

Seeing him arrive, Su Na said, "Teacher Zhang, you're here? Let me get him for you." She knocked on the office door. "Chief Yu, Zhang Ye is here."

Chief Yu came out of his office. "How's the question writing going?"

Zhang Ye said, "All done."

Chief Yu immediately said, "Good. Everyone, let's study these questions."

Su Na was the most curious about the questions and quickly took the papers from Zhang Ye's hand to pinned them to the whiteboard.

When Liao Qi, Li Rui, Ma Qi, and the other Chinese Literature team teachers saw, they came strolling over as well. A few of the teachers did not seem to care too much, as they had always been biased against Zhang Ye and did not like or appreciate him much, feeling that his abilities had been over-exaggerated too much by everyone else.

However, when they laid eyes on the first question, those teachers looked like they nearly vomited blood!

Su Na burst out into laughter!

Chief Yu stayed quiet and did not say a word for a long time!

Liao Qi: "..."

Li Rui: "..."

Ma Qi: "..."

Then at the second question, everyone vomited blood!

The questions Zhang Ye had written out were questions they had never come across before. They weren't even things they had ever even thought of. All the questions could be described as totally unexpected, yet when they carefully thought about them, the meanings behind those questions were very interesting!

Zhang Ye went forward and gave a simple explanation of his questions' answers and thought processes. "The first question's answer is a little more flexible. It's mainly to test the examinee's thought, logic, and values. If the answer is logical and the arguments are valid and in a positive light, then we can give full marks for it. Next, we have the second question..."

One by one, he explained all of the questions to the teachers.

After that, Zhang Ye made an excuse that he had something else to attend to and left. He did not stay longer than necessary at the Chinese Literature team as he knew that a few of the people there did not have good opinions of him, so he didn't want to bother with them either. In the Chinese Literature team, he wasn't the lead question setter and did not have much say. Therefore, after he supplied them with the questions, he just handed them over to Chief Yu to let him make the final decision.

After he left, the Chinese Literature question setting team turned silent!

At this moment, everyone had actually wanted to shout:

F**k!

Are these even high school level questions? Can it get any more wondrous than this!

Chapter 702: Celebratory Feast!

Monday.

Everyone from the Beijing college entrance examination's question setting team felt that the sense of burden had been lifted from them.

"Finally, everything is settled!"

"Phew, it hasn't been easy!"

"It's finally over!"

"We can finally rest for the next few days. I'm going to sleep well tomorrow!"

"This year's question setting work was too difficult. I wouldn't want to come back to next year's question setting team. It's been so tiring that I haven't slept soundly for the past week now."

"Anyway, our work is done here and we can finally relax."

"Yes, we only have to wait for the college entrance exam to finish."

"We're free at last!"

Today was the day of the deadline. Every question setting team had already submitted their tasks' requirements. The main, supplementary, and some backup questions which were not selected were all sorted and submitted to the higher-ups by the supervisors. At this point, this year's Beijing exams were basically confirmed with the remaining task of selecting the questions and some detailed adjustments left to the Higher Education Entrance Examination Board. The Higher Education Entrance Examination Board and the higher-ups would decide which of the questions were suitable for use and which were not. Essentially, the remaining work would no longer involve the question setting teachers as their jobs were already completed. From this point forward, the time remaining would count as their off days. Until the college entrance exam was over, they would not be allowed to return home.

On the hill.

Zhang Ye and Su Na were taking a morning jog.

Su Na was dressed in her sports attire with a towel hanging off her shoulder. She was already sweating all over while Zhang Ye was in a better condition, not feeling tired yet. After running for a while already, he was still not short on breath yet.

"I can't take it, I can't take it anymore. I have to walk from here." Su Na stopped and was unable to run anymore. "Teacher Zhang, you've got really good stamina."

Zhang Ye also slowed down his pace. "I'm doing worse than before. In the past, I'd always trained and gone for my morning exercise regularly. But now I can't do that since I'm always cooped up at work. I can only run a few laps to relax when I've used too much of my brain at work." His stamina was not exactly good either, but at least it was still better than Su Na who did not train frequently. After all, Zhang Ye was armed with some martial arts although it was still at a level where it only worked randomly and at given times.

Su Na smiled as she wiped her sweat away and asked, "How've you been doing recently?"

Zhang Ye smiled and said, "It's been the usual stuff. I'm just doing TV shows which is my original profession."

Su Na said in amusement, "What original profession? I'm not even certain what your original profession is anymore. Math, literature, music, radio, television, which profession haven't you dabbled in? So which one of those is your original profession? If you didn't mention it, I would already have forgotten what your real profession is. Besides, you're amazing no matter which field you go into. You always manage to shine and thrive!"

Zhang Ye bragged, "Heh, I may not have any strong points but I'm really good at adapting."

Su Na said, "I seriously never expected you to be approached by the college entrance exam team this time. I suppose there are many people who also weren't prepared for it. If this is the signal the education system is sending out, then does that mean you're likely

to return to Peking University this year? They can't keep you suspended for too long. There are still many Peking University students asking about you, hur hur. Not to mention the other examples, but just on Peking University's official forum alone, the students have made known their intentions more than once, hoping that you will resume your duties again."

"Is that so?" Zhang Ye was very pleased. "So the students still remember me?"

Su Na suddenly changed her tone. "However, there are still some students boycotting you."

Zhang Ye was baffled. "Hah?"

Su Na blinked and laughed. "You didn't know about that, right? When I got up this morning, I met some people sent by the Higher Education Entrance Examination Board. One of them was a university classmate of mine. During breakfast, I learned from him during our chat that you have already become a public enemy on the Internet. Do you know which group is boycotting you this time? It's this year's Beijing examinees and their parents. They're all calling for the Higher Education Entrance Examination Board to dismiss and send you home. On any forum and on Weibo posts related to the topic of the college entrance exam in Beijing, there's even an operation called 'Send Zhang Ye Home' going on. According to my sources, not only are there beautiful women lining up to take a shower in your house, there is also plenty of cash in your bedroom and an ancient tomb of the Tang Dynasty was even discovered in it. All these things were said just to make you go home quickly to take a look. After I heard that from my

classmate, I nearly died laughing! Your house is the subject of all verbal attacks online now!

Zhang Ye nearly fainted when he heard about the situation in the outside world. "What the hell is going on? Why are they boycotting me? Has this bro become a specialist in being boycotted that something like this would happen every few days?"

Su Na said, "Who asked you to present those wondrous elementary math problems in the past? The examinees are afraid that you will make the questions too difficult, so they started this movement and are totally enjoying themselves. Everyone from the examinees to their parents, and even your own fans, are happily and tirelessly smearing your name, haha."

Zhang Ye became even more speechless, but then boasted without shame, "After this bro entered the entertainment industry, I've always walked the path of a male idol, but why is it now becoming more and more like the path of a comedian?"

Su Na: "..."

The two of them chatted casually as they walked to the halfway point on the hillside.

The moment they reached the entrance to the dorms, they bumped into Dean Pan.

"Teacher Zhang, Little Su, both of you went for a jog?" Pan Yang

waved at them.

Su Na said, "Yes, Dean Pan. Have you eaten yet?"

Pan Yang smiled and said, "Not yet, I'm saving my appetite for this afternoon. Oh right, the both of you should get ready as well, so quickly shower and get changed. There will be a celebratory feast at the hilltop at 11 AM. Everyone will gather to eat. Tentatively, it'll be an outdoor barbecue as the weather is quite nice today. It's cloudy and not too warm."

Su Na asked, "Is it organized by the Higher Education Entrance Examination Board?"

Pan Yang said, "No, it's our teachers who are organizing it. We do the same thing every year. It's already considered a standard event here. There will be a list of whatever ingredients need to be purchased and some staff from the Higher Education Entrance Examination Board will head out to buy them for us. If you need anything, you can let them know and give them a list."

Zhang Ye smiled and said, "Sure."

Su Na said, "I feel like drinking some iced soda water right now."

"That will definitely be included." Dean Pan said, "There are also some programs like singing or dancing. Whoever wants to participate can get ready beforehand. Don't be late."

Su Na said, "We will definitely be on time!"

...

It was not even 9 AM yet, but some people were already at the top of the hill. However, Zhang Ye was not in a hurry as it was still quite early at the moment. After he had showered and changed into casual wear, he headed to Building 1. Without any Internet connection or his cell phone, the only free time activity left was reading. There was a library which had many books that covered many subjects such as literature, history, social science, and many other extracurricular books as well. The book collection in the library was not only limited to the scope of the college entrance exam.

There was no one inside as all their work had already been completed. Everyone had left and no one was borrowing any books or researching for information inside the library anymore.

He closed the door, turned on the air conditioning, and sat down. Without choosing a specific type of book, he took a random one and read through it. Well, to be accurate, the word "read" was not a good description for it. He was like a machine flipping through the pages at a very fast speed. He would only take one second to glance at a page, capture all the words on it, and then move on to the next page. This reading speed would have left anyone stunned.

Catalog of Song Dynasty Famous Figures.

Algebraic Geometry Exercises.

The History of Music.

Go for Beginners.

Portuguese for Dummies (Part 1).

And so on. It had everything you could name.

The books he read were not determined by his interests but rather just whatever he was able to get his hands on. It was totally random and unrestricted.

After flipping through about 20 books, Zhang Ye stopped. He then quietly opened the game ring to take a look at the huge amount of Reputation Points which The Voice had given him with its previous two episodes. After that, he immediately tapped into the Merchant Shop and spent 10 million Reputation Points to purchase 100 Memory Search Capsules all at once. After consuming a capsule, his mind quickly recalled the contents from the first book he flipped through, storing all the knowledge into his mind, book by book.

Previously, Zhang Ye had always used the Memory Search Capsules to recall the knowledge from his previous world. But now he knew that this was no longer enough. For example, this incident of him not knowing when the college entrance exam was held had sounded an alarm for Zhang Ye. He was still too unfamiliar with this new world. After all, the two worlds were not the same. There were many differences like when the college

entrance exam was held, the contents of the textbooks, as well as many other aspects. If he still based his behavior on the knowledge and train of thought from his previous world, he would definitely have problems with a lot of situations. That was the reason why Zhang Ye had planned on finding time to gain a deeper understanding of this world.

Other than these slight differences between the two worlds, most other things were essentially the same. Actually, the knowledge Zhang Ye did not have a chance to learn in his previous world could totally be learned in this world. There was no way that he could read the books from his previous world or return to it anymore, but this world also had those books. Zhang Ye quickly went through all the related books or video resources and used the Memory Search Capsules to memorize them, achieving a crazy fast learning speed. It was still many days from the start of the college entrance exam. He could not go anywhere other than stay within the boundaries of the private location in the hills. With such plentiful time, it was apparent that this was the most suitable time to do this. Time should not be wasted. There were still plenty of things to learn about.

One book...

Three books...

Five books...

In the blink of an eye, Zhang Ye had already etched the contents of five books deep inside his mind. He even could recite them backwards comfortably as all the information was easily

retrievable.

Of course, a huge amount of Memory Search Capsule was needed for this and had to be supported by an enormous amount of Reputation Points. Thankfully Zhang Ye's new show contributed even more Reputation Points that allowed him to use them constantly. Zhang Ye did not feel pained after spending tens of millions of Reputation Points as they would be useless if left untouched. It was a different case for gaining knowledge. After comparison there was nothing to feel heartbroken about. Furthermore, The Voice has only aired for two episodes. After the later episodes were broadcast, there would be even more Reputation Points coming in so he could stand this round of huge spending. That was why the most important thing for Zhang Ye now was to enrich himself and arm himself. Knowledge was power and also a bridge connected to his goal of becoming an A-list celebrity. What he was doing now was setting a foundation to prepare himself to reach higher heights!

Six books...

Ten books...

Looking at his watch, he realized that it was almost time. Only then did Zhang Ye leisurely stroll toward the hilltop to join the celebratory feast that everyone had organized. He was ready to pig out.

Chapter 703: The Teachers' Friendly Contest?

Later in the morning.

11 AM.

The sky above the hilltop was scattered with clouds and some of the thicker clouds were floating past harmoniously, blocking off the hot sun which was shining directly overhead. With the addition of the dense shade at the hilltop created by the trees and a cool breeze sweeping through the wilderness, it felt very comfortable.

At this moment, the hilltop was full of teachers.

"Dr. Chen, you came too?"

"Yo, is everything prepared?"

"Where's the bacon? Where did you put the bacon?"

"In the second drawer of the cooler. Be careful when you open it, there are ice cubes in there."

"Let's light the charcoal!"

"Wait a moment, not everyone is here yet."

"Haha, my stomach is already growling in hunger."

"Can any of you male teachers come and help us move the grill?"

"I'm coming!"

The barbecue grill and food were all set and ready for cooking.

Zhang Ye was accompanied by two young teachers from the mathematics team as they walked up to the hilltop together. When they saw this scene, their mood became better seeing this lively atmosphere. Looking at the amount of food, their fatigue from the past few days seemed to disappear into thin air. They were just waiting to tuck in now.

Not far away, Su Na was drinking a soda and chatting with a few other female teachers beside her.

Many of the other male teachers had already opened a crate of beer and started drinking. For the past few days, the teachers were not allowed to even take a sip of any alcoholic drinks but it didn't matter anymore now.

"Professor Zhang, we're over here."

"Right here."

Many teachers from the Mathematics team were seated under a pavilion. When they saw Zhang Ye arriving together with some of their colleagues, they called them over.

Someone said, "Teacher Zhang, I heard that the Beijing examinees are undermining you?"

A female mathematics teacher covered her mouth while laughing. "I also heard from someone at the Higher Education Entrance Examination Board that the examinees have caused quite a big commotion."

When Zhang Ye heard this, he said in a depressed tone, "Hai, don't mention that. Tell me, what have I done to offend anyone?! This bro has somehow offended a large number of people again this time. What did I do to deserve this!"

A teacher from the Science team standing outside the pavilion heard that. He turned his head and asked, "The Science exams are presented as rather difficult, don't tell me your Mathematics team has set very difficult questions too?"

A math teacher smiled and said, "It's not just very difficult. Later you will know when you see it, especially those questions set by Teacher Zhang. Every one of them was trickier than the last!"

That person: "..."

About ten minutes later, the last wave of teachers who hadn't arrived yet reached the hilltop. Among them was Dean Pan of the Mathematics team. But Chief Yu, the supervisor of the Chinese Literature team, could not be seen, probably because something had come up and he could not come. Immediately, the hilltop was surrounded with smoke. Barbecue grills and charcoal fires were lighted everywhere. There were an estimated seven barbecue grills and were enough for these dozens of teachers to grill the food. The food was also abundant and could even last for the entire day of barbecuing.

"Almost everyone is here!"

"Let's start grilling!"

"Come on, come on!"

"Let's grill the scallops first. The hot weather will easily spoil them."

"Please grill some big shrimp for me, thank you."

Some of the male teachers volunteered and started getting busy in front of the grills. Not long after, the food was cooking on the grills, and the buzzing sound of the fat cooking emanated a fragrance that drifted everywhere.

At this point, a middle-aged male teacher from Tsinghua University suddenly announced loudly, "My fellow comrades, after

working for so many days, our work is finally complete. From now on, we have nothing to worry about, so let's have a good time together. I suggest that we go by the old rules!"

A female teacher smiled and said, "OK!"

Another, slightly plump female teacher also said, "I agree!"

A teacher from the Chinese Literature team said, "Seconded!"

A teacher from the Arts team said, "Haha, no problem!"

Many of them were regulars of the Beijing college entrance examination's question setting team. Some of them had even participated in the question setting team for the past seven or eight years. Except for a few new faces who joined this year, like Zhang Ye, Su Na, and some of those younger teachers, the others were all very familiar with the "old rules" the Tsinghua University teacher had just mentioned. Don't think that these authoritative people of the education world who could easily send shivers down their students' spines with just their stares alone were stereotypically rigid people. They would throw up too if they drank too much. Similarly, if they overworked, they would find a chance to relax.

Zhang Ye was unsure, so he asked Pan Yang who was beside him, "Dean Pan, what old rules are they talking about?"

Pan Yang chuckled. "It's not too interesting if everyone just ate and did nothing. I forgot which year it started, but during the

celebratory feast after every question setting, we organize some activities like a performance, singing, or calligraphy. We split the teachers into different teams and whoever loses is punished by drinking alcohol or taking on other penalties."

Zhang Ye nodded. "I see."

A middle-aged mathematics teacher said happily, "Every year, this segment is always interesting and something to look forward to."

However, Zhang Ye did not seem interested. This fellow had only been staring hungrily at the barbecue grill all this while.

Everyone began to discuss. Voices chattered.

"How do we split the teams this year?"

"For the past few years, it was always the arts teachers in a team and science teachers in the other. But then there isn't much suspense in the contest this way. The science teachers are bad when it comes to literary activities, so it has always been the arts teachers coming out on top every year."

"Heh, we science teachers have also won before, alright?"

"Haha, only once or twice. Old Zhou, you can still remember that?"

"That was still our victory! Besides, many of you people from the arts are well versed in literature, dancing, writing, and drawing. Is there any honor in beating our teachers from the sciences?"

"Let's be serious now, how should we split the teams this year then?"

"If we don't split the teams according to the sciences and arts, surely we can't split them according to schools, right? There will be too many teams like Tsinghua, Peking, Renmin, and Beijing Normal University. It won't be easy to manage so many teams."

"Why don't we group them according to gender?"

"Oh, right! That's a good suggestion!"

"Sounds good to me!"

"It'll be quite interesting if the two genders compete against each other!"

"What will the penalty be if a team loses?"

"The loser will have to drink since there's so much beer around."

"Good! It's settled then?"

"Yes, it's settled!"

"Come on, who's afraid of whom!?"

Isolated in the hills, everyone's passion for self-entertainment was many times greater than usual. It didn't matter if they were young teachers or older comrades, everyone were quite cooperative. Very quickly, all the teachers unanimously agreed with this proposal of splitting the teams. Everyone immediately stood with their camps, one side with all the male teachers and the other with the female teachers. When they were all with their group, there were obviously fewer people in the female teachers' team. They were only about two-thirds the number of the male teachers' team.

A female teacher disagreed with this, "That won't do, we have too few people."

Su Na also giggled. "That's right, us women already aren't good drinkers, and yet we have less people on our team. It's too unfair."

Liao Qi from the Chinese Literature team said, "Then how do you recommend we solve this?"

A middle-aged female teacher suggested, "Give us a teacher from your side who can at least drink on our behalf."

After some discussing, the male teachers did not have any

objections as it was only for entertainment anyway. "Alright, pick a person, only one person."

Hearing that, the female teachers immediately started whispering to each other.

Many of the male teachers also straightened their backs in hopes that the female teachers would choose them. Being the only man in a group of women would also be a sign of popularity. Even if they had to drink on behalf of the female teachers if their team lost, it would be OK.

The female teachers were discussing while pointing fingers at them.

"What about Teacher Chu?"

"He's not bad."

"How about Teacher Wu?"

"He's a good one too."

"Aiyah, who should we choose?"

"We have to get someone who can drink a lot."

"Or find someone who can help us to win, haha."

Zhang Ye's enthusiasm for the activities was close to nil. This guy had already moved away from the groups and walked over to the barbecue grill by himself. On seeing the scallops were cooked, he scooped them up and started eating. At times, he would blow on his fingers as the food was too hot. The taste was acceptable. All that was missing was just some garlic paste!

Suddenly, a female professor of Renmin University took the lead and stood up. "We've made our decision."

Liao Qi asked, "Who will be joining your team?"

The male teachers all turned their attention to them and perked up their ears.

That female professor smiled for a bit and said, "Let's welcome Teacher Zhang Ye to our team."

When he heard his name being mentioned, Zhang Ye, who was just taking a big bite of some meat next to the grill, turned his head with a shocked expression. "Ah?"

Liao Qi's eyebrows twitched. "Are you sure?"

The female professor smiled and said, "Yes, I'm sure."

Pan Yang said, "Professor Zhang, stop eating for now. You've just been given an arduous duty."

Su Na also waved at him to call him over. "Teacher Zhang, come over quickly."

A female teacher said, "Hur hur, with Zhang Ye here, at least we won't lose in the field of literature. Besides, even if the male teachers' team plays dirty and comes up with some math questions or brain teasers, we still have a 100% chance of winning. As for the remaining areas like competing at singing or dancing, those are all our forte. We aren't afraid of anyone!" Among the female teachers, they were mainly comprised of English teachers, history teachers, political science teachers, and geography teachers.

A female doctorate professor said, "Teacher Zhang, it's all on you now. Is your alcohol tolerance good?"

Zhang Ye said helplessly, "I'm the type who goes down after just a glass. You'd have to carry me down the hill if I get drunk."

Su Na exposed him, "Save your excuses, when have you ever held back when it comes to drinking? Surely you can down at least two bottles of beer, right? Teacher Zhang, we're a group of women here, so you better not let us down."

Once he was with the group of women, many of the female teachers started chatting with Zhang Ye.

"Little Zhang, I'm Sun Fang from Beijing Normal."

"Ai, Sis Sun."

"I've a favor to ask of you."

"Please speak."

"Can you help me get Zhang Yuanqi's and Fan Wenli's autographs? My children like them both very much. Aren't you their leader now?"

"Man, I'm not their leader. I'm only an executive director and they will only take my instruction while filming the program. It's different once we're offstage, but no problem, I'll get them for you. Let's exchange phone numbers and I'll get someone to bring it to you."

"Teacher Zhang, I want them too."

"Yes, me too."

"I don't need their autographs, but Professor Zhang, could you help sign ten of your own autographs for me instead? After you become an A-list celebrity, I will open an online shop to sell your autographs."

Seeing that Zhang Ye was so popular with them, the male

teachers did not feel too surprised at all. The most well-known person in the team of teachers was Zhang Ye. Not only was he reputable in academics, but even without his reputation as a famed mathematician, Zhang Ye was also one of the hottest B-list celebrities in the country. Many of the female teachers probably couldn't name some of the male teachers but all of them definitely knew Zhang Ye. Except for some teachers from the Chinese Literature team who had doubts about Zhang Ye and those who disliked him on Chinese Literature matters, the majority of the other teachers were not prejudiced against him. Naturally, the only person who would receive unanimous votes from the female teachers would be him alone.

Chapter 704: A Poetry Duel?

The contest began.

As they ate, everyone was happily engaging in each other with a competitive spirit. The topic of the contest hadn't been decided yet, but the male and female teacher teams were already starting to snatch things from each other.

"Don't take that from me!"

"That's ours, haha!"

"Put down that chicken wing of mine!"

"Damn, I barbecued that, since when did it become yours?"

"We can't beat them! Teacher Zhang, come and help us, quick!"

"Don't you all know about 'ladies first!?'"

"Wow, the scallops are delicious, so delicious!"

Finally, the group divided into two teams, with one team standing in front of the barbecue pit towards the northern side, while the other team stood on the opposite side. The two teams drew a clear boundary from each other, not showing any weakness. Although it was just a friendly contest to relax from the

tense work they were dealing with before, both parties were aiming to win. Everyone had a strong sense of team spirit and honor—well, except for Zhang Ye. Zhang Ye basically did not have any interest at all for this sort of contest.

Zhang Ye wasn't bothered by anything and was only concerned with eating. In his position as the only man in the group of women, his only duty was to drink should their team lose. Nothing else mattered to him.

"Come on!"

"Don't steal food anymore, it's time to compete."

"Which side gets to decide the topic first?"

"Let the ladies do it first."

"OK."

"Then we'll go ahead and set the topic."

"The usual rules apply. We'll have three judges to decide who wins or loses."

In the end, three teachers volunteered to be the judges without needing to be chosen. The judges' team was made up of the Chinese Literature team's Li Rui, a male teacher from a foreign language

school, and an almost-retired professor who was previously from Tsinghua University who looked to be around 60.

The judges got ready.

The female teachers huddled together to discuss and then came up with the first topic: "The first topic will be Last Letter with song lyrics. Everyone will sing a line from a song and the next person must use the last word of the song to begin the next line." This was a traditional game they'd always had and something they always played. It was also the game the female teachers were best at.

The male teachers did not lose their morale.

"That's fine!"

"Come on!"

Last Letter with song lyrics began.

The first female teacher to sing a line was Su Na. "When will the moon be clear and bright..."

The male teachers' team sent a young history teacher to the front. "Bright heart o' mine suddenly awash by the downpour..."

A cheerful-looking teacher from the female teachers' team continued on from their word. "Downpour of confusion conspire

to leave me lost..."

With a line coming from each side, the teams were evenly matched.

When the game was heating to the stage of becoming white-hot, the victory came as a surprise when someone from the female teachers' team sang a line of lyrics ending with the word "kiln." There were almost no songs that had lyrics beginning with this word, leaving the male teacher who was next in line hesitating for a long time and unable to come up with a line.

After five seconds.

The three judges announced that the female teachers' team won.

The female teachers scored the first victory and high-fived each other in celebration!

"We won!"

"Heehee, it's too easy!"

"Teacher Chu secured the victory."

"Drink, drink, drink!"

"Losers, admit your defeat!"

The male teacher who did not manage to come up with the line to carry on the game took a bottle of beer with a saddened expression and chugged it down. He took great effort to finish it, clearly showing that he wasn't much of a drinker at all. After he finished it and with the alcohol kicking in, he said in a very upbeat manner, "The next round's topic will be decided by us. Our topic will be the Imitation Game." From his quick suggestion of the topic, it was clear that the male teachers had already discussed this while the female teachers were discussing about their previous topic.

A female teacher asked, "What are we going to imitate?"

The male teacher explained, "We will imitate actions and expressions. Each team member will make an action or expression and the other team will have to follow suit. The team that is not able to follow along will be the losers."

"This is something new."

"We've never played this before last time."

"OK, no problem."

"We accept your challenge. Come on!"

The female teachers were full of confidence.

This first action was to be done by a male teacher who walked to the front with hearty laughter. He got down on the floor and did a one-handed push-up. This action might not even be possible if Zhang Ye were the one doing it, as it was related to body strength and muscle groups holding up the person's weight. It wasn't something just anyone could do.

But it turned out the female teachers' team also had an able member. It was a young, petite, and slim female teacher. She walked up silently to the front, then got down on the floor with both hands on the ground initially to try out the posture first. Then she lifted her left and placed it behind her back and imitated the action of a one-handed push-up, persisting for one second before she could not hold it up anymore. It was only for that one second and not as long as the male teacher, but was still considered to have passed.

The male teachers were amazed.

"Damn!"

"She really did it?"

"Who is that teacher?"

"I know her. She's not a teacher from the universities, rather she's a deputy head at the Chinese Literature department of one of the high-ranking high schools. I think she has danced since she was in her teens. That's why her physical condition is quite good."

"How awesome!"

"Even I couldn't do that!"

The female teachers were also applauding and cheering!

"Teacher Ku is too cool!"

"Teacher Ku, impressive!"

"Haha!"

Then this Teacher Ku stood up and immediately did an action. She did the splits right where she was. "Who's next?"

The splits were still a considerably common routine, but that was more in the context of a woman whose body was more flexible. For a man, even if he was very flexible, the splits still very difficult to handle.

However, there were also incredible people in the male teachers' team.

"Let me give it a try." A skinny male teacher came forward and adjusted himself for a long time before slowly splitting his legs apart and getting lower onto the floor. However, at the last bit of the action, he was unable to go down any further. He clenched his

teeth and turned around to ask for help. "Can two people help me out a little here? Press me down slowly, I should be able to do it."

Two male teachers went over to help.

Press!

Press again!

In the end, he really was able to do it!

The male teachers' team cheered!

"Beautiful!"

Teacher Hu really gave it his all!"

"Really well done!"

"I've heard that Little Hu used to practice taekwondo as an amateur. Looks like that's true."

"Little Hu's ligaments are really elastic!"

That male teacher got up with the assistance of his team members. When he finally stood up, he was already swaying around a little, unable to stand properly. This round was enough to

cause him some pain and even very nearly took his life.

The victor was decided in the next round by a male teacher. When he made the action, the female teachers all fainted at once. They saw him stick out his tongue and pushed the tip up and up and further up and touched the tip of his nose.

"What the heck!"

"He could do that?"

"That's really amazing!"

"..."

"We're done for!"

The female teachers were totally at a loss for a response. They attempted to imitate the same action but failed after countless tries. Don't even mention being able to lick the tip of your nose, most people couldn't even make their tongue cover the philtrum.

The judges announced and declared with great laughter the male teachers' team as the victors of the second round.

Su Na waved her hands and said, "Teacher Zhang, stop eating already. Come here and drink up."

Only then did Zhang Ye put down the razor clams in his hands and turn around to look over. "You all lost?"

A female teacher said, "We lost, so it's your turn now."

Zhang Ye acknowledged that and walked over to pick up the bottle of beer. He composed himself a little and then gulped it down in a single breath. As he drank too quickly, he could feel himself swaying a little from the alcohol and the ice-cold temperature of the beer!

The contest was getting more exciting as it progressed!

In the third round, the female teachers team won.

The fourth round was taken by the male teachers.

After the sixth round, both sides were still tied at 3-3.

Zhang Ye had drunk three bottles of ice-cold beer and with his alcohol tolerance not exactly high, he already felt like he couldn't drink anymore. His belly was already bloated.

But everyone else was still playing around happily, not feeling tired amid all the laughter.

"Teacher Zhang can't take it anymore?"

"Haha, Little Zhang can't drink anymore, let's keep going for victory!"

"Why don't we make the seventh round the decider?"

"Agreed, the seventh round will decide the winner!"

"Then who shall decide the topic?"

"I think for the sake of fairness, we should let the judges decide the seventh round's topic."

"OK."

"That would be great!"

"This is make or break!"

Everyone agreed to make the last round the decider.

The three judges began their discussion and communicated for a long time before finally agreeing on a topic together. The Chinese Literature team's Li Rui stepped up and smiled as he announced, "After our discussion, we've decided that everyone compete in the final round on the topic of...poetry. As for the subject, this hill we are currently residing on used to have a couple staying here. A classic saying was even coined because of them, so in accordance to this setting, the subject has been decided as 'husband and wife.'

Any sort of poetry theme will be accepted, so whoever comes up with the neatest and most elegant version that also fits the theme well will win this round."

Poems?

Everyone was very surprised by this.

Among the judges, Li Rui was part of the Chinese Literature question setting team. Even those who weren't on the Chinese Literature question setting team had heard of Zhang Ye's reputation in poetry, so how could Li Rui not know that this was Zhang Ye's expertise. Zhang Ye had first become famous because of his poems, so from this decision on the topic, did it show Li Rui and the judges team favoring the female teachers team and wanted them to have the advantage in winning? But that was not it. Quite a few people knew that Li Rui was not especially fond of Zhang Ye's poems and had also criticized Zhang Ye on the Internet when Zhang Ye was involved in the scolding battles with his literary circle peers. Besides, Liao Qi and a few of the Chinese Literature team teachers like Liao Qi and Ma Qi had clashed with Zhang Ye privately over the college entrance exam work that they had been working on the past few days. They felt that Zhang Ye's literary standards had been deified too much by people. Even though they admitted that Zhang Ye's literary standards were high, they did not think that Zhang Ye was as great as what everyone thought him to be. They did not believe that he deserved the status he was revered with. At the top of the great pyramid of the literary circle, there were only a few surviving masters. While many people mentioned Zhang Ye in the same breath with those masters, they did not feel that Zhang Ye was qualified enough.

Then what was the meaning of this topic?

Suddenly, Liao Qi came forward and said, "Send me up for this round!"

When everyone saw that, they were suddenly enlightened and could roughly understand what was going on. It was no wonder that Li Rui had chosen to use poetry as the topic. It was because those people from the Chinese Literature team were not convinced of Zhang Ye's talent and wanted to use this chance to test him and go up against him. They had come prepared and even came up with a subject that was rather subtle. Everyone knew that Zhang Ye's standard in poems specializing in scolding was very high, so they were not careless either and did not clash head-on with Zhang Ye. As such, they had chosen the theme of "husband and wife" for the subject. This theme was something that had never been reflected in Zhang Ye's previous works before. They were trying to limit his skills so that they could beat him.

Chapter 705: Little Zhang Unleashed!

At the top of the hill.

The atmosphere among the teachers was suddenly lively.

"How interesting!"

"Yeah, a poetry duel?"

"That is playing to Zhang Ye's strength."

"Teacher Liao isn't bad either. Teacher Liao Qi is not only an associate professor at Tsinghua University, he also holds a position in the Poetry Association, so his standards are really high too."

"But he still won't match up to Zhang Ye. Don't you know what sort of level Zhang Ye is at?"

"Haha, that may not necessarily be true. Teacher Liao is not weak either. It's just that Teacher Liao's works are more artistic, unlike Teacher Zhang's poems which are essentially tuned for the masses, so they are not so widespread and well-known by people. That is why we can't say that Teacher Liao's standards are inferior to Zhang Ye."

"Yeah, I think there could be a little competition between the two of them."

"Looks like Teacher Liao prepared ahead of time."

"That's right, to even dare to have a contest in poetry with Zhang Ye, he must definitely have come prepared. Looks like there's something we can look forward to here!"

"Start the duel then!"

"Teacher Zhang, go out!"

"Teacher Liao, come on!"

Quite a few people started to cheer them on in full anticipation.

However, Su Na winked a few times at Zhang Ye with full intent. She was also a part of the Chinese Literature question setting team and naturally knew that some teachers had some issues with Zhang Ye, a minority group of Chinese Literature teachers from Tsinghua and Renmin University led mainly by Liao Qi. They were very unhappy with the fact that a "tumor" of the literary and educational world like Zhang Ye was flourishing so well, so when the few of them suddenly created such a showdown during the contest, she suspected that they were surely up to no good. She wanted to remind Zhang Ye to be careful. As for his poetry, Su Na was not the least bit worried since she clearly knew Zhang Ye's abilities.

Behind Zhang Ye, two Peking University female teachers quietly

tapped on Zhang Ye to remind him as well. From this, it could be seen that even though everyone was getting along harmoniously, speaking and laughing together with all the activities from earlier, it was all just fun and games. Now that this topic had been brought up, the atmosphere was no longer the same. This was the real thing. It felt like they truly wanted to challenge Zhang Ye. Naturally, most of the Peking University teachers were on the side of Zhang Ye. Peking University had long been old foes with Tsinghua University. When something like this happened, it was always clear to everyone where they should stand.

Judge Li Rui asked, "Has the male teachers' team chosen their representative for this round?"

Liao Qi nodded.

"How about the female teachers' team?" Li Rui turned his head and looked at the other side.

A female teacher from Tsinghua University smiled and said, "Our side is definitely sending Teacher Zhang out to compete this round. I don't think I need to further explain Teacher Zhang's poetry standards, do I?"

On the other side, a male teacher from Tsinghua University also chimed in, "Right, I've long heard of Teacher Zhang's abilities to compose a poem as soon as he lifts up the brush. Come forward then, Teacher Zhang."

The several Tsinghua University teachers began echoing each

other, some praising first before attacking.

But who would have expected the following to happen? When Zhang Ye heard them, he gave a wave of his hands and said, "I'm not going to. I'd said earlier that I would be on this team only to help the ladies drink if they got punished. I'm a guy here and not truly a part of the female teachers' team."

Li Rui smiled. "The female teachers' team has already claimed you, so you're part of the group. Since everyone is recommending you, why don't you step up and take part in this final round?"

Zhang Ye was standing in front of the barbecue grill and only cared about cooking the meat. "You girls go ahead, I just want to eat my meat. My poetry is just so-so anyway." He was totally unable garner any interest in this poetry contest. "Oh, right, Teacher Su Na's standard is very high, so why don't we get Teacher Su to do it."

Su Na was speechless. Why do I have to do it!

Zhang Ye kept pushing it around, not wanting to take responsibility at all.

If it were anyone else trying to evade the responsibility, everyone would surely think that the person was not confident, was afraid to lose, or feared losing face, and thus did not dare to take up the challenge. But when it was Zhang Ye doing the evading, no one thought in that way at all. This was because Zhang Ye's poetry composition standards were something everyone already knew

about. Those works, like *The Furthest Distance in the World*, *Dead Water*, *Admiring the Mountains* were there for everyone to see and were brilliant works without a doubt. It was impossible for Zhang Ye to not be confident or afraid to lose. The only reason he did not take up the challenge was—he was not interested or wasn't in the mood to do so.

Everyone hooted.

"Zhang Ye, get up there."

"If you don't go, there will be no one representing the female teachers."

"Yeah, you're the only person on the female teachers' team who is well-versed enough at poetry."

"This is the final round, it's even the decider of the overall winner. We're all having so much fun, so Teacher Zhang, you will surely honor that, won't you?"

"Right, let's have a good contest."

After dragging on for a long time.

Seeing the situation, Liao Qi from the male teachers' team suddenly said, "Since there's no decision on who is to represent the female teachers team, then I will just have to shamelessly go first. The theme is 'husband and wife'?"

Judge Li Rui said, "Correct."

"Liao Qi asked, "Do we have a brush and ink?"

"Yes." A teacher said with some laughter nearby. "It was specially prepared for the typical contest. I knew that there would surely be something like this today, so I prepared it ahead of time. There. Everything is laid out now." He laid them out with the help from a few other teachers and even the table was set up. Of course, since they were in an isolated location on a hill, they were not too fastidious about the details of these tools and equipment. Everything were just the simplest items they could get their hands on.

Everyone was looking forward to the contest.

"It's starting!"

"Teacher Liao seems very confident."

"Who do you all think will win?"

"If Zhang Ye does it, then the chances of him winning are larger. But if Zhang Ye doesn't want to take part, then there's not likely anyone on the female teachers' team who can beat Teacher Liao at this."

"That's what I think too."

"The theme of the poem has to be related to 'husband and wife.'
This won't be easy."

Under the attention of all the teachers, Liao Qi of Tsinghua University's Chinese Department slowly walked up to the table and stood there stolidly. He composed himself for a moment, and as though with great thought, a glimmer of bright light shone from his eyes as he held the brush firmly in his hands. He looked like he already had something in his mind and began writing!

.....

Kǎishū (regular script) characters vividly came to life on the scroll:

We tied up our hair to become husband and wife.

Our love and affection we never doubted.

.....

Without a pause, the poem was written out in one go!

When Liao Qi finally lifted his hand and put down the brush, the observing crowd couldn't help but cheer!

"Great!"

"This poem is too beautiful!"

"It fits the theme perfectly!"

"The couple's mutual feelings for each other were described too vividly! This is so great!"

"This poem is really quite good! It rhymes well, the theme is clear and fits the mood perfectly. There's nothing to nitpick at all!"

"This poem is sure to win. Teacher Liao's really skilled at this!"

"Yeah, even if Zhang Ye were to step forward now, he might not win!"

"That's true, even if Zhang Ye were to write the next poem, how much better could it get than this?"

"That's not true. Zhang Ye's poems usually bring with them a certain strength I think can be better than this one."

"For the same thing, the benevolent sees benevolence and the wise sees wisdom", I suppose. When it comes to art, it has always been difficult to say who is better. In any case, I feel that Teacher Liao's poem is as good as perfect!"

["仁者见仁智者见智" literally means "for the same thing, the

benevolent see benevolence and the wise see wisdom." It is a metaphorical description to express that different people from different viewpoints may have different understandings of the same problem.]

Ma Qi from the Chinese Literature team started clapping. "Professor Liao, great poem!"

Judge Li Rui also applauded and gave his acknowledgment, "How wonderful!"

Liao Qi smiled slightly. "Thank you everyone. The mood just came to me and I was able to freely express it well enough."

At this moment, the young male teacher from the judging team looked in the direction of the female teachers' team with a smile and said, "Who will you all be sending out? The topic has a time limit of 10 minutes, so if no one is going to do it, will you be drinking instead?"

Liao Qi smiled in the direction of Zhang Ye.

The others also mostly focused their attention to Zhang Ye.

But it was like Zhang Ye did not notice them at all. His back was still facing them as he continued eating. He gobbled up the scallops and oysters by the mouthful like a glutton who could never eat enough. It was like he was either acting high and mighty or purposely keeping a low profile. It was really just because he could

not get into the mood to duel with poetry today. Was there any meaning to this?

A big sister figure on the female teachers' team walked over. "Little Zhang."

"Ai," Zhang Ye mumbled as he continued eating. "Mm...what's the matter?"

The big sis was didn't know whether to laugh or cry. "Stop eating. We're going to lose if this goes on. It's always been an annual tradition that the losing team also has to perform a group punishment besides drinking. Sometimes we have to do a group dance or a group run, and that's really quite embarrassing."

Zhang Ye acknowledged her and just continued to eat.

Su Na also came over. "Teacher Zhang, go up. It's your turn!"

Zhang Ye said with some amusement, "You're quite good at poems too. Why don't you do it and I will support you."

Su Na could only helplessly smile at that. "My level of poetry composition should not be shown on any stage whatsoever. Besides, I've already seen Teacher Liao's poem and it's at least five grades higher than my level. I don't want to embarrass myself. We're all depending on you, Teacher Zhang. You have to win this round for us!"

"Yeah, come on, Zhang Ye."

"Teacher Zhang, hurry up!"

"We're relying on you!"

"Stop eating already. Hurry up and go win!"

Many of the female teachers were constantly nagging him. Some of the younger female teacher might find winning to be more important, probably because they didn't want to perform the punishment and just wanted to quickly win the round.

Suddenly, a young male teacher from Tsinghua University shouted from his group, "If Teacher Zhang does not dare to take the challenge, then we should just get someone else.'

Liao Qi smiled at that.

Li Rui and the minority group of people from the Chinese Literature team were also watching the fun.

Doesn't dare to?

Doesn't dare to take the challenge?

When Zhang Ye heard that, he looked in the direction of where

the voice came from and let out a laugh. "I know you're try to goad me into taking the challenge. Do you think that this kind of goading will work on me?" Then he put down the food he had in his hands and went over. "Yes, it works very well on me!"

Su Na: "Pfft!"

Liao Qi: "..."

Li Rui: "..."

The female teachers were highly amused by this!

Wiping his hands clean, Zhang Ye walked up to the table and confirmed with the three judges, "The theme is 'husband and wife,' right? There are no other restrictions on the poem type?"

Li Rui answered, "Yes."

Zhang Ye nodded and lifted up the brush.

With that, everyone came together to surround Zhang Ye at once, sticking out their necks and trying to glimpse the Xuan paper.

Liao Qi and the others were also in the crowd.

Even with so many people watching, Zhang Ye still looked very

listless, clearly not too excited by everything that was happening. It was like he just casually picked up the brush without even thinking and just started scribbling onto the Xuan paper.

It was [Xíngkǎi](#):

Xíngkǎi: A running script font also known as a style of semi-cursive Chinese characters

Gazing with dried eyes over the span of mountains and rivers,

How many a bosom friend have I met thus far?

.....

Chapter 706: Husband Missing Wife!

He put down the brush.

The composition was complete.

When the first line of this poem was initially revealed, no one could see anything good about it. Everyone first noticed Zhang Ye's aesthetically pleasing characters, and when he wrote out the rest of the characters with an unrestrained, elegant motion of the brush despite his body looking extremely relaxed, many of the young female teachers who were observing started exclaiming excitedly. A few of the teachers and professors who were professionally trained in calligraphy also had stunned expressions. They rushed closer to have a clearer look, then looked even more stunned!

"These words..."

"This calligraphy skill is so high level!"

"An amateur hobbyist would not be able to write in this manner!"

"Is that [Xíngkǎi](#)? I've never seen such a style of Xíngkǎi before, it feels a little similar to the traditional Xíngshū style, but yet a little different."

"The characters are beautifully written!"

"I didn't expect that Zhang Ye could write such a good calligraphy piece!"

"It's also my first time learning that Teacher Zhang's calligraphy skills are at such a high level!"

Everyone was stunned at what they were seeing.

Liao Qi raised an eyebrow, looking rather surprised as well.

The several Tsinghua University teachers all looked at one another.

Only Su Na's expression did not change. Previously at the Calligraphy Association's anniversary gathering, which was also a day to celebrate Wu Zeqing and another calligraphy master's birthdays, Su Na and many others from the Calligraphy Association had all witnessed Zhang Ye's calligraphy skills. Su Na felt that the best work by Zhang Ye was that poem called Ode to Mulan. All the unique styles of Zhang Ye's writing were reflected in this work. This was a style unique to Zhang Ye. No one could write in the same way as him even if they imitated such a style directly from his works!

Clearly, no one from this world knew that Zhang Ye's calligraphy was imitated from the handwriting style of his previous world's famed calligraphy master, Wang Xizhi, the Sage of Calligraphy. Even though Zhang Ye had not eaten enough Calligraphy Skill Experience Books yet, and was still lacking quite a bit of soul, as long as he could achieve 20% of Wang Xizhi's calligraphy style, it

would be enough to shock the people of this world. The title of Sage of Calligraphy was not for nothing, and not self-proclaimed by Wang Xizhi himself, but affirmed by history itself!

"It's so good!"

"These words are really feast for the eyes!"

"If this were a contest of calligraphy, Professor Liao would have been utterly defeated."

"Yeah, but the topic is still on poetry."

Many people were full of praise, but after having their breath taken by Zhang Ye's calligraphy skills, everyone slowly began to notice Zhang Ye's poem. They wanted to know how Zhang Ye would perform with the theme of "husband and wife" he was unfamiliar with.

Su Na squeezed to the front.

Dean Pan also went forward.

The poem read like this:

Husband Missing Wife

Gazing with dried eyes over the span of mountains and rivers,

How many a bosom friend have I met thus far?

The pot empty, afraid of pouring wine,

Difficult to pen my reply.

Journeyed away from the living for a long time,

Without news I slowly return home.

The lamp serves as my companion on lonely nights,

I am thinking of you, my wife and son.

After he finished, Zhang Ye even left his signature on the piece.

After a final glance at his work, Zhang Ye nodded with satisfaction and put down his brush. Then he strolled toward the surrounding crowd and squeezed past them to make his way back to the barbecue grill to continue eating, this time attacking the grilled mushrooms.

The remaining crowd cheered!

"Great poem!"

"The entire poem revolves around the 'missing' character. It embodies the husband's thoughts and feelings for his wife and was described in such a lonely but beautiful manner!"

"Awesome!"

"I'd thought that Teacher Liao's poem had already reached the peak of perfection! Who knew that Teacher Zhang is indeed Teacher Zhang! He thoroughly deserves his reputation! It's not any worse in comparison to Teacher Liao's poem! Moreover, Zhang Ye is not even married yet, so this theme of 'husband and wife' was already a topic not in his area of expertise. If we consider that point and include the fact that this was an improvised work, then it shows even more clearly how skillful Zhang Ye is!"

"Professor Zhang is still so full of literary talent."

"Well composed!"

"This poem is just like his calligraphy skill, they're both amazing!"

"Beautifully executed, Teacher Zhang!"

"Haha!"

Dean Pan nodded firmly, giving his approval.

Su Na gave Zhang Ye a thumbs up from afar.

Most of those in the female teachers' team also happily started dishing out their praise. As expected, Zhang Ye did not disappoint them, he did not let them down at this critical juncture!

A female teacher laughed, "I guess we won this final round?"

Ma Qi from the Chinese Literature team frowned. "What do you mean by you all won it? Teacher Liao's work is also very good. At least in terms of usage of words, I find Teacher Liao's phrasing to be more sophisticated."

A male teacher from Tsinghua University nodded with a smile. "I also find Teacher Liao's poem to be better and more beautiful."

Su Na disagreed, "Of course it's Teacher Zhang's poem that's better. No question!"

A female professor looked at the male teachers' team and said, "Whoa, you guys don't want to admit that you've lost now?"

"Why do we have to admit that we lost? Teacher Liao has indeed composed his poem quite well, so it's still very difficult to say who has won or lost yet. After all, when it comes to art, it's very difficult to distinguish who is better. Everyone has their own views and opinions," someone from the male teachers' team said.

An older professor who was very qualified commented, "That's true. In my opinion, each of these two poems have their strong points that stand out. It isn't easy to come to a clear conclusion as to which is better, so why don't we leave this to the judges. We will let the three judges vote and whichever work gets more will win."

"Sure!"

"Let's leave it to the judges then."

"Agreed."

"Zhang Ye will definitely win."

"It has to be Teacher Liao who wins it!"

Everyone looked to the judges, eager to find out the result.

Liao Qi was also very concerned about the results, but did not show it on his face.

But compared to Liao Qi and the few other Tsinghua University teachers, Zhang Ye was even more indifferent. After completing his job, he left it all behind and went straight back to eating and drinking.

At this moment, the young male teacher judge said something. "In my opinion, I still think that Teacher Zhang's Husband Missing

Wife is better. Compared to the other poem I enjoyed the mood of this poem more."

The female teachers' team suddenly laughed happily at this.

"That's how it should be!"

"Well said!"

Then the next judge, Li Rui said, "I don't quite agree as I feel that both poems carry the mood quite similarly. However, I find Teacher Liao's poem to be clearly more suited to the theme of 'husband and wife.' In his poem, it greatly shows the theme with the husband, wife, and love written into it. But Teacher Zhang Ye's poem is more written from the perspective of the husband and only expresses one side of the pair's feelings. The poem is still good, but in the context of the theme, Teacher Liao's poem definitely takes it."

Many of those who heard this judgment also thought that this was a logical argument.

"That's true."

"Yeah, Teacher Liao's poem is more complete and in line with the theme."

"Yes, regardless of how Teacher Liao's other poems are, this one today is really quite well written."

Li Rui voted for Liao Qi.

Zhang Ye and Liao Qi were now at a draw with the votes at one-to-one. It was all down to the last judge's decision.

The last judge was the comparatively older professor who walked up over to the two poems which had been hung up vertically to take a closer look at them. He then turned around with a helpless smile. "I can't decide which is better. Both are beautiful to read, so why don't I abstain from voting and we'll make this a draw."

"Draw?"

"Man!"

"Then who's the winner?"

"I guess that just means there's no winner or loser."

"Then will we be adding another round to the contest?"

"Let's just leave it as a draw."

"Hai, we nearly did it, heehee. I was still hoping to see the male teachers' team perform [square dancing](#)!"

The contest finally ended with a draw. This was a result many people could accept. It was just a game after all, so as long as they were not judged to have lost and had to be punished, then it would be fine.

Liao Qi did not have any issues with this either. To be able to come up against Zhang Ye and walk away with a draw was a result he could wholly accept. At the moment, he and a few other Tsinghua University teachers all shot a belittling glance at Zhang Ye. As expected, just like how Liao Qi and a minority of them thought, Zhang Ye did not turn out as legendary as they claimed. If it really had to be said, at most Zhang Ye could be considered a very excellent literary artist. A master? He's not at that level yet! Even Liao Qi's poem could draw level on terms with his, so how could Zhang Ye be considered on the level of a master? His standard was only so-so!

Ma Qi said with the intention of bootlicking, "I can see that Teacher Liao has surpassed himself and gone a level higher already. Will this be the path you will be walking down more often from now on?"

Liao Qi laughed and waved it off. "Me? I think it's better for me to keep teaching with honest intentions, composing poetry and such things should just remain a hobby for me. I wouldn't do this professionally."

Li Rui also smiled and said, "For an amateur to write at such a good level, you're making us feel embarrassed."

Several of the Tsinghua University teachers also gradually

chipped in with their flattery.

Over at the other side, Su Na had walked up to Zhang Ye from behind. "Still in the mood to eat?"

Zhang Ye grunted out a yes. "I've been using my mind too much for the past few days. I don't really know why I am feeling so hungry, but I've probably spent too much energy thinking." Not only was he tired from thinking about the question setting for the exams, he had also done some speed learning this morning using the Memory Search Capsules.

Su Na pouted, "They've already come to a judgment over there. It's a draw."

Zhang Ye smiled. "I heard it. If it's a draw, so be it."

"This poem of yours today was indeed not bad, but compared to your previous works, I feel that you have not fulfilled your potential," Su Na said helplessly. "You're usually more competitive than this, but look at you today. It seemed like you didn't care at all. I don't think you even gave it any thought when you were writing this poem, right? You just casually picked up the brush and composed it. If you had been more serious, how could you possibly not beat Teacher Liao? This isn't your usual standard at all."

I can't beat him?

I composed it offhandedly?

Zhang Ye smiled without saying a word. He did not offer any arguments to that.

Beside them, a few Peking University female teachers also said, "Hai, Teacher Zhang, you've really underestimated your opponent today. Teacher Liao obviously came prepared, yet you didn't do your best. With your reputation, a draw would already mean that we lost. If it gets out that Teacher Liao's poetry standards are on equal standing with you? Teacher Liao would get all the attention. By then, everyone might even think that we all from Peking University aren't a match for them from Tsinghua University."

Suddenly, someone appeared walking up the hill towards them.

—It was the Chinese Literature question setting team's Yu Fan!

Prior to this, Yu Fan was busy with the examination work and thus came rather late. When he arrive, he was a little taken aback by the scene. He smiled and asked, "What's the matter? Was there a contest again? Who won this year? How did you all divide up the teams?"

Li Rui smiled and said, "It's a tie this year."

Yu Fan blinked. "You can even manage to tie?"

Ma Qi said, "In the final round, both teams finished with a draw."

A summary of the situation was related to Chief Yu.

Chief Yu's interest perked and he went forward. "Let me have a look."

Chapter 707: Marvelous, Hidden Palindrome Poem!

The contest ended.

Everyone was back to speaking in joyful manners with each other.

Ma Qi said to Chief Yu, "We were divided by gender into two teams, but because the female teachers' team do not really know how to drink, Zhang Ye was pulled over to join their team. The final round was a contest between Teacher Liao and Teacher Zhang."

Chief Yu said a little taken aback, "What did they compete on?"

Ma Qi said, "Poetry, with the theme of 'husband and wife.'"

Chief Yu looked to Liao Qi and smiled. "Old Liao is back to writing poetry?"

Liao Qi smiled and said, "Yes, it was spontaneous and not something that can't be presented on the professional stage. Chief Yu, you're the professional here, why don't you look over my piece and give me some pointers?"

Chief Yu waved it off, feeling flattered. "I sure can take a look, but I don't dare claim to be able to give any advice. If we're talking

about writing poetry, you're at a higher level than me."

Liao Qi laughed heartily. "Chief Yu, you're being modest."

At this moment, Su Na came over to join them. "I still feel that Teacher Zhang's poem is better. Chief Yu, since you're here, why don't you give us your opinion? You're definitely the authoritative figure in this area."

A female teacher from Peking University also added, "Yes, please take a look."

As the Chinese Literature question setting team's chief and the supervisor, Yu Fan's qualifications were unquestionable. In the Chinese Literature team, he was definitely among the top few members. Whether it was in the education or academic world, he had had many great achievements in them. On the literary front, everyone had complete conviction in Chief Yu. Since nobody could agree on who won or lost and stuck to their own opinions of whom was better, then why not let an expert give his views instead.

Chief Yu agreed, "Sure."

In the blink of an eye, he was walking toward the two poems that were hung up.

Everyone else also came up behind, surrounding him not too far away.

"We tied our hair to become husband and wife, Our love and affection we never doubted..." When Chief Yu read these lines out loud, he couldn't help nodding agreeably. "Fine poem." Then he turned his head to look at the other poem. "Gazing with dried eyes over the span of mountains and rivers, How many a bosom friend have I met thus far..." After reading the poem, Chief Yu was suddenly silent. He stared at the poem for a long time and did not give any comments or say that it was a fine poem like he did for Liao Qi's work. Instead, he seemed to have become lost in thought.

Everyone saw, but did not understand what was going on.

"What's happening?"

"I don't know."

"Is there something wrong with Zhang Ye's poem?"

"Why isn't Chief Yu saying anything?"

Li Rui from the Chinese Literature team blinked, then said to Chief Yu, "Teacher Zhang's poem did not touch clearly on the theme of the subject. It's not complete enough as it only depicts the feelings of the husband and not the wife's. Comparatively, Teacher Liao's poem is complete, and even though it was decided that this was a draw, I still feel that Teacher Liao has won this round."

Ma Qi said, "If they were contesting calligraphy skills, then needless to say, Zhang Ye's calligraphy skill is already at a very

high level. It's not something an amateur can come up against, but if we are talking about the poem alone, then I also think that Teacher Liao has won."

Chief Yu still maintained his silence.

One second.

Two seconds.

Three seconds.

Suddenly, Chief Yu gaze lit up and he unexpectedly turned around to ask, "This was written by Teacher Zhang Ye?"

Li Rui answer with some reservation, "Yes."

Chief Yu sucked in a breath, then turned his head back around and continued staring at that poem. The longer he looked at it, the more shocked he felt, and the more wry his smile became.

Everyone was confused as they did not understand what Chief Yu was doing.

Dean Pan finally said, "Old Yu, what are you daydreaming about? Which of the poems are better? Spit it out." Dean Pan was not knowledgeable about poetry and such, having only been around numbers all his life.

Hearing that, Chief Yu smiled as he shook his head. "Whose poem is better?"

"Yeah, that's right."

"Chief Yu, stop keeping us on our toes."

"So whose poem is better?"

"It should be a draw, right?"

Everyone was extremely curious and wanted to know.

When Chief Yu finished listening to all they had to say, he broke out into laughter. "If we're talking about whose poem is better or of a higher standard, then I really am unable to pass judgment on that, because the difference between these two poems are not simply just a grade or two. These two poems are...basically worlds apart! A draw? A tie? Which of you decided on that?" he said with an amused expression.

Li Rui exclaimed, "Worlds apart?"

Ma Qi was stunned. "Surely it's not to that extreme? So who won?"

Chief Yu did not even think and just replied, "Do you even need

to ask who won? It's obviously Teacher Zhang's poem that won, and it won by a difference that one cannot even begin to imagine! The difference between these two poems is not simply just a level or two!"

When Liao Qi heard this, his expression immediately turned dark. "Oh?"

Zhang Ye who wasn't too far away from them also heard this and glanced at them.

Su Na was also very surprised at this. "I do think that Teacher Zhang's Husband Missing Wife is better, but it's still just a little better. Surely it can't be that much better, can it?"

Dean Pan asked, "Is there really such a great difference?"

A female teacher asked, "Surely that's not true, is it?"

A male teacher from Tsinghua University said, "Aren't these two poems quite similar to each other? How did you reach such a conclusion?"

Many people were once again looking at Zhang Ye's Husband Missing Wife because of Chief Yu's comments. They wanted to look at it in detail, but could not understand no matter how hard they tried. Moreover, as Li Rui said, if they really wanted to quibble over the matter of the usage of words, then Zhang Ye's Husband Missing Wife definitely didn't suit the theme too well, so

why did his poem get so revered by Chief Yu? This poem clearly had a flaw, didn't it?

Chief Yu glanced at Li Rui and said, "You were saying earlier that Teacher Zhang did not fully touch on the theme? It wasn't complete?"

Li Rui said, "Yes, I really don't understand why you are praising Husband Missing Wife so much. If this poem had another part depicting the wife's feelings for her husband on top of his feelings for her, then it would be complete and would be able to match up to Teacher Liao's work. After all, this isn't an open topic that one can freely decide what to write, but is limited to the scope of the given theme instead."

Chief Yu sniggered. "Wife Missing Husband?"

Ma Qi said, "Yes."

Chief Yu smiled and said, "If I were to tell you that it exists in this poem?"

Everyone was stunned.

"Huh?"

"There's what?"

"Wife Missing Husband?"

"Where is it?!"

"Yeah, there's nothing that mentions that!"

"Damn, what is Chief Yu talking about? Isn't this just Husband Missing Wife? It's depicting the husband's feelings of missing his wife from beginning till end, where's the depiction of the wife's part?"

Everyone was feeling confused, not understanding what Chief Yu was talking about.

In the end, Chief Yu did not keep everyone in suspense and looked up at the poem once again, some shock still in his eyes. He pointed at it and said, "This poem is not as simple as what you see on the surface, nor was it written casually by Little Zhang. There's something hidden in it, so why don't you read it backwards to find out what it is!"

Su Na was stunned. "What?"

Liao Qi said, "Read it backwards?"

Li Rui said appalled, "What do you mean by reading it backwards? How can we read it backwards?"

Chief Yu smiled and said, "Don't believe it? Then why don't you all try reading it once that way?"

Everyone looked at the last two lines of the poem with the intention to just give it a try as Chief Yu suggested. "The lamp serves as my companion on lonely nights, / I am thinking of you, my wife and son."

Read it backwards?

Someone who was not convinced by anything that was said so far, recited it out aloud:

"Your...wife...and...son...are...thinking...of...you..." However, just listening to this first line was enough to stun a few people!

"This...this..."

"Oh my god!"

Wife Missing Husband!

There's really a goddamn Wife Missing Husband!

What the heck! What was this? Just what the heck was this?

Su Na was very shocked, but hurriedly continued reciting it, each

word louder and louder:

"Keeping a lonesome watch like a solitary lamp.

"Hesitating to send letters with no response.

"Long departed, we're separated like life and death.

"Why do you find it difficult to pen a reply?

"Pouring a bowl of wine yet afraid the pot will empty.

"Even as bosom friends, we have barely met.

"Gazing with dried eyes over the span of mountains and rivers!"

When the entire poem was read out aloud backwards, all of the teachers present there, including the Tsinghua and Peking University teachers were all stunned!

An antithesis? It was done to extreme neatness!

Does it rhyme? It rhymed perfectly!

Moreover, there was a difference in the poem when read backwards or forward.

It was like another poem with a change in perspective!

Reading it normally, it was about a man missing his wife!
Reading it backwards, it was about a woman missing her husband!
This was simply unbelievable!

Su Na exclaimed, "Holy shit!"

A female teacher from Peking University also said, "Holy shit!"

A female teacher from an Institute of Technology echoed them,
"Holy shit!"

Liao Qi: "..."

Li Rui was desperately gasping for air!

Ma Qi was dumbfounded!

Dean Pan was dumbfounded!

The other teachers were all dumbfounded!

Suddenly, a younger female teacher shouted from the crowd,
"Palindrome poem! It's a palindrome poem!!"

At this moment, no one knew what words could express their feelings anymore. Perhaps, the most suitable phrase that could depict their moods right now was "what the f*ck!"

Could it get any more awesome than this?

Could it be any more unbelievable than this?

To think that just a moment ago, Su Na and the other female teachers from Peking University were still grumbling about how Zhang Ye did not seem to be putting in any effort and just casually composing a poem without serious thought. Who knew that it turned out to be the complete opposite of that! Zhang Ye did not just casually compose it! If he did that, would the poem be able to be read from both directions? Why don't you be casual and show us that instead! This was clearly a poem that Zhang Ye had put a lot of thought into to create! And he even did it spontaneously on the spot! There wasn't even a draft!

A draw?

A tie?

Thinking about how everyone had earlier come to such a conclusion, it would surely make anyone laugh their heads off! How could it be a tie? Chief Yu was right, these two poems were never in the same world to begin with! Even if Liao Qi's poem was pushed up a further four to five grades, it would still fall far behind Zhang Ye's poem! The chasm was too wide! This was a difference in the standards and level of the poet, a difference that couldn't be

bridged even with a different usage of words and composition techniques!

Liao Qi remained silent.

A few of the teachers from Tsinghua University who had been stirring the pot earlier to get Zhang Ye to step up to take the challenge also stayed quiet! The difference in standards were too great that they didn't even know what they could say anymore! To compete with Zhang Ye in composing poetry? Perhaps from the beginning, this whole incident was already the greatest joke in the world!

At this time, the way that many of those present were all looking at Zhang Ye was like they had seen a god!

There were even some people who were still staring so hard at Zhang Ye's poem that they couldn't snap out of it. They read it over and over again, forwards and backwards. Every time they completed reading it once, they felt an urge to curse at someone's second grandma to appease their shock. This poem was...really too goddamn awesome!

Su Na suddenly walked up quickly to get Zhang Ye's poem and rolled it up carefully. She held the rolled up Xuan paper in her hands and said, "I didn't get your Ode to Mulan previously, so don't even try to reject me. Please gift this poem to me, Teacher Zhang."

Zhang Ye smiled and threw up his hands. "Whatever."

But no one else was having any of it. They all rushed up and tried to claim it for themselves.

"What's this, what's this?!"

"Little Na, don't even try to jump the gun on us!"

"Teacher Su, what do you mean by it's yours? I was still thinking of taking it for myself!"

"Little Su, please let me have the poem. I will treat you to one month's worth of lunch!"

"Teacher Zhang Ye, gift it to me instead, please!"

Note that it definitely doesn't work in English as a palindrome poem. The poem was translated to the best we could in terms of meaning instead. Below, you'll find the original palindrome poem (with English translation).

父忆妻 Husband Missing Wife

枯眼望遥山隔水, Gazing with dried eyes over the span of mountains and rivers,

往来曾见几心知. How many a bosom friend have I met thus far?

壶空怕酌一杯酒, The pot empty, afraid of pouring wine,

笔下难成和韵诗. Difficult to pen my reply.

途路阳人离别久, Journeyed away from the living for a long time,

讯音无雁寄回迟. Without news I slowly return home.

孤灯夜守长寥寂, The lamp serves as my companion on lonely nights,

夫忆妻兮父忆儿. I am thinking of you, my wife and son.

妻忆夫 Wife Missing Husband

儿忆父兮妻忆夫, Your wife and son are thinking of you,

寂寥长守夜灯孤. Keeping a lonesome watch like a solitary lamp.

迟回寄雁无音讯, Hesitating to send letters with no response.

久别离人阳路途. Long departed, we're separated like life and death.

诗韵和成难下笔, Why do you find it difficult to pen a reply?

酒杯一酌怕空壺。 Pouring a bowl of wine yet afraid the pot will empty.

知心几见曾往来, Even as bosom friends, we have barely met.

水隔山遥望眼枯。 Gazing with dried eyes over the span of mountains and rivers.

Chapter 708: The Date Of The College Entrance Examination Has Come!

Zhang Ye's poem was being fought for over by everyone. Other than the value of Zhang Ye's calligraphy, the other main reason was because this poem was such a classic that each person wanted it to adorn the walls of their home. However, it still ended up being given to Su Na as she was the first one lay her hands on the scroll of Xuan paper the poem was written on and had already gotten the best chance of keeping it. On top of that, everyone also knew that Su Na and Zhang Ye were colleagues at the Chinese Department in Peking University who enjoyed a good relationship together. As a result, no one really made any further attempts to get it from her after that.

"Hai."

"I was a step too late."

"I really like this poem a lot!"

"Who doesn't like it! That's obvious!"

"Let me suggest this: why don't we have another contest and let Zhang Ye compose a few more poems so that we can share them equally. Do you all agree?"

As it turned out, no one bothered with such a suggestion.

Another round? Who can compete with Zhang Ye? You?

Having seen this palindrome poem, no one here today dared challenge Zhang Ye anymore. If anyone still dared to boast and go up against him, then surely that person would only be brought down in shame.

By contrast, Liao Qi was looking clearly depressed away from the others.

Chief Yu saw this and went over to offer some comforting words. "Old Liao, don't take it to heart. Everyone has something that they are good at. When it comes to poetry, it's what Zhang Ye excels at. Almost no one in the entire country can stand on equal footing with him, so your loss is not something to be ashamed of."

Liao Qi did not say anything.

The other Tsinghua University teachers who were provoking Zhang Ye earlier now felt hot with embarrassment. Half of their group had left the place earlier.

An old professor from Renmin University beside them said, "The younger generation will surpass the older."

Today's celebratory feast has given many of these teachers the chance to widen their horizons. Having been able to witness such awesome poetry made it worth their time in attending.

Not long after, the celebratory feast ended.

Everyone was still talking about the poem excitedly as they proceeded back to their own dorms.

This poem was actually by Li Yu from the Song Dynasty in Zhang Ye's previous world. The poem was titled A Husband's and Wife's Mutual Saudade. This palindromic poem was very famous among all the ancient palindromic poems. Zhang Ye had come across it once in a book and remembered it. Since he brought it over to this world on this occasion, it was naturally able to shock everyone.

...

Later that afternoon.

In the dorms on the hillside.

After Zhang Ye came back, he immediately took a shower and did not place much importance of today's incident. After his shower, he went to the library and borrowed another dozen or so books and brought them back to his dorm room. He restarted his work from this morning and started flipping through the pages of content. Then he used a Memory Search Capsule to take in all the details of the information he had flipped through in the books earlier and memorized all of it. Now he could simply just retrieve any information he wanted from his mind.

One book.

Another book.

Zhang Ye did not mind the boredom or loneliness and just repeated the same thing over and over again, working hard to absorb the vast knowledge of this world to use them as a basis and prepare himself for the future. He was already planning to use the remaining days approaching the date of the college entrance examination in this way.

...

The next day.

Daytime.

No one knew who did it, but Zhang Ye's *A Husband's and Wife's Mutual Saudade* was suddenly posted online to Weibo along with a message: "This was composed by Zhang Ye at the private location where the college entrance examination question setting teams are held. Come and enjoy this piece of poetry, everyone. Let me give you all a hint: there's a mystery to it, heehee."

Judging from the tone, it seemed like it was a woman who posted it.

Some netizens started paying attention to this post.

"Composed at the college entrance examination question setting team location? Then how did you get your hands on it?"

"Yeah, isn't that a private place that's closed off to the public? There shouldn't even be any form of communication allowed there. This must be fake then? Clickbait?"

"The OP might be a staff member of the Beijing Higher Education Entrance Examination Board?"

"That's possible."

"Let me take a look at this poem."

"Eh, it's quite well-written."

"Yes, it's written well with a suitable mood to it."

"Was this really written by Zhang Ye? It doesn't feel like it. I thought that Zhang Ye's poems were always earthshaking? This piece is good, but it doesn't carry any impact to it."

"It's definitely clickbait, it's confirmed!"

"A mystery? What mystery?"

Many of the netizens did not believe this was real as there were

too many liars and rumors going around.

When the woman who posted on Weibo saw that everyone was doubting the veracity of her post, she replied with an update: "Whether you believe this was written by Zhang Ye or not, just try reading the poem backwards and you'll know. Other than him, no one else could compose a poem like it!"

"Ah?"

"Read it backwards?"

"Hur hur! This is the first time I've heard of a poem that can be read backwards!"

"Let me give it a try."

In the next moment, countless people were totally amazed!

"Holy f**k!"

"Holy f**k!"

"Your sister! This can really be read backwards!"

"This was really composed by Zhang Ye?"

"I know this! It's a palindrome poem! It was very rare even in the ancient times! Even among the palindrome poems that were passed down from antiquity, there aren't many that can be considered poetic and can rhyme as well as this one!"

"Why did Zhang Ye write this poem? A Husband's and Wife's Mutual Saudade? What does this mean?"

The woman who posted the Weibo post explained: "I heard that the teachers were having a celebratory feast and there was a contest. Someone had challenged Zhang Ye to use the theme of 'husband and wife' to compose a poem. Then, without even thinking, Zhang Ye composed this piece straightaway with a brush and won!"

"Heavens!"

"How informative!"

"This is too godly! The deep, ancient knowledge of literature of China is really broad and profound! If you didn't mention it, I wouldn't even have known that there was such a thing as palindrome poems! Too awesome!"

"Hearing this explanation from the OP, I would definitely believe that this was a work by Zhang Ye. Someone issued a challenge and Zhang Ye took it on with a palindrome poem? That's totally that guy's style!"

"Face-smacking Zhang has gone on to smack faces again!"

"Your sister, Teacher Zhang has been held in the mountains yet he can't stay idle for a moment and has gone on a face-smacking spree again!"

"Pfft, that's right! The name of Face-smacking Zhang is not for nothing! Even if Teacher Zhang were to be launched to the moon, I reckon he would still find the means to smack some faces! No one can stop the march of Face-smacking Zhang!"

"Hahaha, why is it that a poem that is so sorrowful can be twisted into something by you all that I'm crying from laughter!"

"Teacher Zhang is impressive!"

"Zhang Ye is indeed Zhang Ye! Fully deserving of his reputation!"

"Zhang Ye's poem is not only good in that setting, even the technique he used is a very high level one! It can be seen that this is just child's play to Zhang Ye. Composing a poem is mere child's play to him since he can do it so easily and elegantly."

When this Weibo post was forwarded and viewed multiple times, more and more people started paying attention to it and the number of comments also increasingly soared. Very soon, A Husband's and Wife's Mutual Saudade palindrome poem was broken down and analyzed. Word by word, the details were put under the microscope and picked apart. The more they researched,

the deeper they got, and the more people saw its ingenuity. They were increasingly feeling more and more amazed at how incredulous it was!

However, there was a big group of people who did not care about this at all.

It was the Beijing college entrance examinees!

"What palindrome poem, so what!"

"All I care about right now is how difficult this year's Beijing college entrance exam will be!"

"Seeing this A Husband's and Wife's Mutual Saudade palindrome poem by Zhang Ye, I suddenly get a feeling of being screwed! If he can even compose such a difficult poem, then how can the questions he set be simple?"

"I'm giving up all hope!"

"It might not turn out to be that way. Everyone, let's not be so pessimistic!"

"Right, Zhang Ye's not the only question setter anyway, even if does set some questions, how many questions can he write? As long as we can get the other questions correct, then the score wouldn't differ by much!"

"That sounds logical!"

"Hopefully. But I have an ominous feeling about this."

"F**k, me too, I better go and revise my algebraic geometry again. I'm going offline, bye."

"I'm going offline too."

...

One day.

Three days.

Five days.

In the blink of an eye, the annual college entrance examination was here again!

Chapter 709: The First Day Of The Exam Is Over!

At the end of June.

It was the first day of the college entrance exam.

The sun was already blazing early in the morning, making the Beijing weather extremely hot and sunny. Under the soaring temperatures, the examinees and their parents were all densely packed at the entrance of every examination venue in the province. There were traffic cops stationed at each of the nearby junctions of the examination venues to maintain order and regulate the traffic flow, keeping traffic smooth to the fullest extent. Some of the exam venues even had an ambulance on standby to handle any emergencies. Everything was given careful consideration to the examinees.

Today was not only a big day for the examinees but also an important one the whole society was very concerned with. News related to the college entrance examination had been published all over the place by the media and newspapers since a few days ago.

"Drivers are advised to keep clear of the schools that are designated as examination venues."

"Cheering for the examinees to do well."

"Reforming the Beijing college entrance exam, difficulty likely to

be greatly increased."

At a certain examination venue.

"Please produce your exam admission pass."

"Here."

"Alright, you may proceed inside."

"Mom, I'm going in."

"Little Ying, do your best, don't be nervous!"

"OK Mom, you should go home first."

"Mom's not leaving. I'll be waiting for you outside."

Similar scenes were happening at the entrance of every exam venue. The parents of the examinees all appeared to feel nervous and uneasy. Meanwhile, the students all had different expressions, some looked like they were not affected, some looked extremely worried, some were smiling brightly, and some were expressionless, as each person carried their books and did some last-minute revision.

Of course, there were also no lack of discussion by the examinees

on the difficulty on the exam.

"I heard that the questions for this year's exam are extremely difficult!"

'Ai, I'm also quite worried."

"I really hope it isn't going to be difficult."

"It would be nice if they followed the previous standard of difficulty, why must they reform it no matter what?!"

"Let's see how it turns out with the English Language test first."

"Hocus pocus, can it be simpler for us?"

The first subject to be taken was the English Language test. The college entrance examination's subject sequence and timing of the sections of this world were somewhat different from Zhang Ye's previous world. Not only was the exam held at the end of June, the sequence for the first day's morning was the English Language test, followed by the Arts and the Science tests in the afternoon. The second day's schedule would be for the Chinese Literature and Mathematics tests. Moreover, like the Mathematics test of this world, be it the standardized national test or those independent, provincial-level tests, the Mathematics test was not separated into the Arts or Science subjects, but as a standalone subject.

8:40 AM: The examinees take their seats.

9 AM: The English Language exam officially commences.

"The first section is a listening test..."

With the broadcast of the listening test, it raised the curtains for yet another year of the national college entrance examination!

1 question.

5 questions.

10 questions.

The examinees began their battle with their heads lowered, wearing serious expressions on their faces.

Time passed bit by bit.

When the bells signaling the end of the examination rang, countless examinees heaved sighs of relief. After submitting their papers, they began discussing the questions as they walked out of the exam venue.

Immediately, their parents surrounded them.

"How was it?"

"Did you do well, Little Qi?"

"Is the English Language test difficult?"

"It's more difficult than last year's, but only slightly. The difficulty was more or less the same compared to our second mock exam. It's still fine and not as difficult as I had imagined."

"Right, I also feel that it's alright. They just increased the difficulty on the listening test."

"Mom, I did quite well. I can definitely get a high score this time."

"That's great, Mom will take you to a nice restaurant!"

"I want to eat grilled fish."

The majority of the Beijing examinees felt that the difficulty of the examination questions were still quite acceptable and many of them seemed like they had fared quite well. Everyone left with their parents with smiles on their faces.

.....

Later that afternoon.

The second half of examination commenced.

The arts students were taking the Arts test while the science students took the Science test.

Because the papers for the Arts and Science subjects made up most of the points allocation and covered a greater scope, the examination questions were also more complicated. That was why the examinees did not dare take it too lightly and went into the examination venue with caution. But when the examinees completed the tests, it turned out that many of them had smiles on their faces instead. At some of the examination venues, quite a number of candidates even handed in their papers early. It seemed like they had completed the exam quite smoothly.

When they left the examination venue, those who bumped into their classmates immediately started discussing.

"What was your answer to the fifth question?"

"I chose A."

"Haha, looks like I got the question correct by chance!"

"The Science test was quite acceptable this time."

"That's right, I thought it would be very difficult."

"But the difficulty was still increased by a little, like the Physics section."

"Yes, the difficulty of the Physics section was increased. I didn't even understand the last major question on the test, but it's alright, I wasn't even planning to answer that question anyway. I had given up on it right from the beginning. I guess not too many people will be able to answer that."

"Eh, Wang Xue, you're also at this examination venue? I just saw you, how was your Arts test?"

"It was alright."

"It wasn't that difficult, right?"

"The Political Science test was quite difficult as the questions were worded quite trickily. The others were alright and many of the questions were modified to a different style of questioning. Actually, they were similar to those that we did in the mock exam previously and a majority of them were gimme questions. As long as we used a more flexible train of thought to analyze and answer the questions, there wasn't much of a difference from the past Beijing exams."

"That's right, this difficulty level is just right."

"Aren't the newspapers constantly reporting that the Beijing college entrance exam is undergoing a reform? Haha, I don't see

much of a reform at all. To think that I was so worried about it previously!"

"That's right, they totally exaggerated it!"

"I also got a fright at that time, but it turned out to not be a big deal."

"Bye, I'll go home now to prepare for tomorrow's tests."

The first day of the exam was over. Many of the Beijing examinees went home joyfully with their parents and their faces beaming.

On the same night, the answers to the English Language, Science and Arts tests appeared on the internet. These answers were not released by the official authorities but were compiled by the teachers from the high schools who answered the questions one by one themselves and posted them online for the examinees to compare with their own answers.

An English teacher from the Beijing Normal University Affiliated High School posted on Weibo: "The difficulty of the listening test has clearly become more difficult, but the rest of the test was still within our expectations."

A teacher of No. 15 High School: "There were not too many difficult questions in the Science test."

A teacher of No. 14 High School: "The difficulty for the tests this time was average as there were some changes from past questions that were set, but were not obvious."

A teacher of No. 8 High School: "The exam reform is going slowly with a trial and error approach, so we cannot expect overnight results. Some of the questions for the Beijing exam this time were very eye-catching and original, but whether the questions were difficult or not was secondary."

There were many different opinions and views, as everyone discussed fervently about this topic.

In the end, even the Beijing media came forward to post: "Reforming the Beijing college entrance exams. The thunder was loud, but the rain was light?"

In contrast, the examinees from the other provinces did not have it as easy as the Beijing examinees.

"Hai, it isn't easy this year either."

"That's right, it's about the same compared with last year's exams."

"The English Language test was too difficult as there was too much new vocabulary I had never even heard of before!"

"Everyone, quickly take a look at the Beijing tests. It seems like

it's still as easy as before."

"Weren't they intending to reform it?"

"I don't know. Anyway, I know how to do all those questions."

"F**k, it's true. If I were given the Beijing exam, I would be able to get more than 500 points on my college entrance exam! Your sister! Looks like the examinees living in the 'Imperial City' are having a more blissful life!"

"I envy them so much!"

"In my next life, I also want to be born in Beijing!"

Chapter 710: The Most Difficult Exam In History!

The next day.

The college entrance exam ushered in the second, and last, day of the examination.

The subject for the day's morning's examination was the Chinese Literature test followed by the Mathematics test in the afternoon. It was not even 8 AM yet, but many of the examinees were already outside the exam venues accompanied by their parents.

"Have you brought along all your exam items?"

"Yes, I've brought them all."

"Exam admission pass, ID card, pens and pencils?"

"They're all inside my bag."

"Do your best today and just keep up your good work."

"Of course, Dad. I feel like I could get at least 550 points in this exam!"

"Are you serious? That high?"

"It's because the questions were not too difficult."

"If you think it's easy, then others will also find it easy too. Everyone might end up with very high scores in the end. When that happens, the cutoff points for admissions in Beijing will also increase accordingly. The result will be the same, that's why today is the crucial moment. Don't let your guard down, make the best of the easy questions to get more marks, and don't make any careless mistakes."

"Understood!"

.....

Elsewhere.

"How did you fare yesterday?"

"It was very good."

"I also did quite well. This year's college entrance exam didn't seem like the big deal they made it to be."

"Hehe, I'm going to the internet cafe tonight. You wanna come?"

"Let's go! Of course I want to!"

"After working so hard for the past year, I can finally enjoy playing games again!"

"Man, there are still two subjects left, let's focus on the exam first."

"It's nothing. With that standard of difficulty in the English Language and Science tests yesterday? I'm feeling very confident about it."

"Heh, that's very true."

From the conversations, the mood and mentality of the Beijing examinees were very telling. More than half of them came to the examination venues today with confidence and were calmer after having experienced their first tests of the college entrance exam yesterday. Many of them who originally were scared of the college entrance examination had become indifferent as the difficulty of the English Language test had given them confidence for today. The remaining half of the examinees still maintained their alertness and nervousness as they felt that yesterday's tests were too simple and probably the two tests today would be slightly more difficult. On top of that, these two tests were set by the famous Zhang Ye. That was why some of the examinees definitely did not dare underestimate the questions.

Very soon, it was time for the examination to begin.

At the examination venue at No. 4 High School, in an

examination hall on the second floor.

A plump and a thin examinee were whispering to each other. They were not from the same school and probably only got to know each other yesterday.

"Fatty, how was your English Language test?"

"I won't get fewer than 100 points."

"Whoa, you're that awesome?"

"What about you, Skinny?"

"I won't get fewer than 110 points."

"Hur, can you stop bragging?"

"I'm not bragging. If you don't believe me, let's compare whose Chinese Literature test will score higher. This subject is my forte. Moreover, the Beijing Chinese Literature test has always been very easy every year."

"It will be different this year since they're pushing reforms on the college entrance exam."

"Reform, my ass. You should've already gotten an idea when you

saw yesterday's exams. How difficult can the tests get?"

"Sure, then let's compare whose score is higher. If I can demonstrate my fullest potential, I can probably score 115 points and above."

"Then I will score 120 points!"

"F**k, I will score 125 points!"

"Then I will score 130 points!"

At this moment, a female proctor stared at the two of them and said, "Stop whispering to each other. The exams will be distributed soon."

The two of them immediately shut their mouths.

In the next second, the examinees were passing the exams backward. Once the tests were in their hands, everyone immediately picked up their pens and started answering the questions.

The plump examinee rubbed his hands together and had a look of concentration on his face.

The thin examinee was also smiling as he prepared to attempt the questions.

However, after just a moment, the entire batch of examinees in the exam hall suddenly fell silent. It seemed that even the sound of scribbling had disappeared and the atmosphere abruptly became strange!

A proctor glanced at them curiously. "Quickly answer your questions!"

Answer our questions?

Answer your sister!

The plump examinee was stunned!

The thin examinee was also stunned!

The entire hall of examinees were all stunned!

They had just began attempting five questions before they got stuck. They felt that they could not continue anymore! Some people felt like they were about to vomit blood as they stared with their eyes wide, looking down at the next few questions. As a result, they found out that after every few questions, there would be a question that was so difficult that it would make people feel like they wanted to die!

For example, this question:

Confucius and Laozi are fighting, who will you help?

Help your second granny! How could these two old men get into a fight?! Besides, even if the two of them really got into a fight, how could I help? No matter who I helped, I will get f**king beaten up! Come on, they were both sages!

At this moment, all the examinees' hearts froze.

Score 120 points?

Score 130 points?

Both the plump and thin examinees could no longer boast anymore at this moment! Their faces turned green!

Many of them couldn't help but swear: "F**k, what the f**k are these questions?! F**k, which f**king bastard's grandson wrote these questions?!"

The proctor felt strange about everyone's reaction and was wondering why everyone was looking so baffled. Then she also looked down and flipped through the spare exams. After she saw the questions, the female proctor also became confused and was totally stunned at that moment. She was also a Chinese Literature teacher, but in all her life of teaching Chinese Literature lessons, she had never come across such questions before or even heard of similar ones. Even if she tried to attempt some of the questions

herself now, she did not know how she would begin to answer the questions!

The same scenes were happening at every examination venue!

Some of the examinees even double facepalmed!

While some of them stared unblinkingly with stunned faces.

Without needing to think much, many of them had already come to a conclusion. Zhang Ye! This question was definitely f**king written by Zhang Ye! Besides this bastard, no one else could possibly come up with such a wicked question! It was definitely that person trying to lead them into a trap!

They seemed to know Zhang Ye's style quite well. These extremely difficult questions in the Beijing Chinese Literature test were in fact all set by Zhang Ye. For example, the question of "Confucius and Laozi are fighting" was actually sourced from Zhang Ye's previous world, when Tsinghua University held its own admissions test, which could also be considered as a sort of college entrance exam question. The question itself was considered to be open-ended and could be freely answered as there wasn't a perfect answer. Confucius and Laozi were both people of a certain status, so it wasn't likely for them to get into a fight. Laozi spoke of the Way (Dao) while Confucius pushed [Ruism](#). When Confucius was born, Laozi had left society. From the perception of ideology or conduct, there were too many ways to approach and analyze this question.

[Ruism, also known as Confucianism]

However, it was easy to say but hard to do. This question had truly stumped all of the Beijing examinees. On top of that, this was still only the beginning as there were more of these similarly wicked questions waiting for them in the later parts of the test, each one of them trickier and more difficult than the other!

Time passed by quickly.

"Put down your pens. It's time to hand in your papers!"

"Teacher, I haven't finish answering yet!"

"You can't continue to write anymore."

"Come on, please let me write a little more!"

Every examination venue was defeated on all fronts, with many of the examinees wailing!

When they came out from the examination halls, the examinees did not even know how they could describe their current feelings!

"Son, what happened?"

"Dad, I blew it!"

"Ah? How can that be?"

"It was too difficult! The Chinese Literature test was too difficult!"

Close by were some examinees who were already cursing and swearing!

"Zhang Ye! It must be him!"

"That guy is wicked all the way to his grandma's house! What an inhumane person!"

"I don't care whether Confucius and Laozi are fighting or not! I only know that if Zhang Ye were standing in front of me right now, he would definitely get beaten up by a bunch of people!"

"I've never come across such difficult Chinese Literature questions before!"

"Is this even the college entrance exam? Why do I feel like it's an exam for post-grad students instead?!"

"I'm done for! It would already be very good if I can manage to pass this time!"

"Me too, I've totally screwed it up!"

"I didn't give an answer for quite a number of the questions! I totally had no idea how to even start answering them!"

"It's really a reform of the exam! This reform is too harsh! All of a sudden, the difficulty has been increased severalfold!"

In the afternoon.

Many of the Beijing Chinese Literature exam questions had already been leaked and were quickly spreading on the internet. The questions became famous almost immediately as they were widely spread by everyone!

When the netizens saw this, they expressed their shock.

"Holy shit!"

"These questions...luckily I'm not involved in this year's college entrance exam!"

"Thankfully, I didn't repeat my studies last year. Otherwise, if I encountered these questions, I wouldn't even know how I died!"

"Why are they so difficult?!"

"Did all of the Beijing examinees get wiped out?"

"Who could even answer them?!"

"Who was the person who wrote these questions?! That was too damaging!"

After looking through the questions, many netizens and examinees from the other provinces very nearly fainted as well. With this, the examinees from the other provinces were no longer envious of the Beijing examinees or wishing they were born in the imperial city in their next lives anymore. These questions were so f**king difficult that it was clearly not meant for anyone to attempt!

Some teachers also posted online.

A Chinese Literature teacher of Yucai High School: "I'm also stunned with some of the questions. I don't see how I can get full marks for them! Today's Chinese Literature test was totally beyond our imagination!"

A head-of-department at the Chinese Literature Department of Beijing Normal University Affiliated High School: "This Chinese Literature test is probably the most difficult test in the history of the Beijing college entrance exam! But if you were to say that the difficulty of the test has gone overboard? That is also not the case. All the questions were set within the scope of the topic, just that the approach of the questions were quite different from usual. They needed the examinees to have a very strong sense of logic and good at expressing the language to be able to answer them well. The exam questions were actually set in a very interesting manner, and could be approached from several directions, thus testing the

examinees' overall ability!"

News was flying all around in the mainstream media publications of Beijing!

"The Beijing Chinese Literature test: The reform that drew first blood!"

"The Beijing Chinese Literature test: Rated the most difficult exam in history by the experts!"

"The examinees believe about more than ten of the difficult questions were set by Zhang Ye. Reporters have inquired with the Beijing Higher Education Entrance Examination Board but received no comment and need further verification!"

"The Beijing Chinese Literature test creates a shock with its 'godly question'!"

"The Beijing examinees have fared badly at most parts of the Chinese Literature test. Examinees' parents curse at the question setter! "

Then, very quickly, in just the short duration of the afternoon break between the exams, the godly question and some godly answers in reply to it were published one by one.

For example, the question about Confucius and Laozi. Many of the examinees had posted their answers online. It was not known

whether they were answering seriously or was just ridiculing the question.

ChenFeng2001: "I will help Confucius because Laozi knows Tai Chi!"

DUSHDJ: "I will help whomever the question setter helps!"

LittleButterflyCC: "I will not help anyone but call 110 to inform the police immediately!"

Obese317: "I will not help either of them. First, I will go and mediate for them. After I manage to calm Confucius and Laozi down, the three of us will proceed to beat Zhang Ye up together!"

The last answer resonated with many of the examinees.

Many of the examination candidates were "shouting" on Weibo @Zhang Ye: "Teacher Zhang Ye, show yourself. We promise that we will not beat you to death!"

Chapter 711: A Difficulty That Brings The Examinees To Tears!

On Weibo.

A lot of celebrities also joined in the fun.

A C-list female singer commented: "Hai, why are the college entrance exam's Chinese Literature questions so difficult these days? If my college entrance exam was like the one they have now, I probably wouldn't have qualified for university at all!"

Chen Guang: "Director Zhang has once again angered the masses!"

Yao Jiancai: "Hur hur, Little Zhang is totally out for the kill. Let's see what will happen to him after he gets down from the hills. The Beijing examinees will probably come out in force to get him!"

Fan Wenli: "Pfft, these questions amuse me!"

Dong Shanshan: "Zhang Ye's thinking is forever different from others."

Chen Guang: "Actually, it is not Zhang Ye's fault at all. It was the Beijing Higher Education Entrance Examination Board who wanted to reform the exam, so they got him precisely because they wanted him to set the most difficult questions amid all the

pressure. Otherwise, what was the point in getting him? Fortunately, the exams are all the same, so the difficulty applies to everyone. If you can't do it, then it's likely other people won't be able to do it either. That will average out the curve and it will be down to a fight over every examinees' standard themselves, so there isn't any unfairness since it's the same for everyone."

Though it was put in this way.

And it sounded very logical as well.

But the examinees did not think in such a way. Many of them already hated Zhang Ye to the core, kicking up a fuss on the Internet. Someone even called for a "crusade against Zhang Ye" team to be started.

"Good idea!"

"Count me in!"

"This is numbing, I'm going to join the crusade as well!"

"I swear to take it all the way to the end with Face-smacking Zhang!"

"Face-smacking Zhang is totally screwing with us all!"

"Wait till we finish our Math exam! When we finish our exam!"

Our 'knives' must surely be stained with Zhang Ye's blood! I won't be playing games or relaxing anymore tonight, I will constantly be criticizing him online!"

"Warriors, count me in!"

Many of these people's fighting spirits were soaring high!

However, an even greater number of people did not have the mind to think about such things. They were more concerned with the afternoon's Mathematics test.

"The Chinese Literature test was already incredibly bad. What will the Math test be like?"

"I can't even imagine!"

"Zhang Ye's the lead question setter for the Math test!"

"God, just let me die!"

"The college entrance exam is too horrible!"

At this moment, an online media outlet published an analysis report: "With the Chinese Literature test over, the Beijing examinees are left wailing. The Chinese Literature test's questions were too difficult and had far exceeded the difficulty in known history. However, if we see this from a different perspective, there

might be a possibility that the Math test will be easier. Could there be such a possibility of this happening? It can't be that both the Chinese Literature and Mathematics test are the most difficult in the history of the national college entrance exam, right? Then what kind of scores are the Beijing Higher Education Entrance Examination Board even intending to let our Beijing examinees get? Would 400 points be counted as high? If everyone's score is low, then the admissions cutoff score would slide down greatly. Is it likely that one doesn't even need 400 points to get admitted into Tsinghua University? That's impossible!"

Following that, many teachers and education industry insiders also commented with their own analysis and judgments.

Many of them were also authoritative figures.

An industry insider posted: "The current estimate for the Beijing examinees' average score for the Chinese Literature test is not likely to exceed 75 points and could be lower. It has to be mentioned that last year's average score for the same paper was 103 points, so if the Mathematics test's difficulty is increased, then the tier 1 scores might really end up shrinking down to just around 400 points! That is not a very realistic outcome."

A national exam question setter posted: "The difficulty level of this year's Beijing Mathematics test is likely to be moderate or just slightly above average."

The experts gave their analysis from all kinds of perspectives and made good arguments to support their views.

The examinees were all excited by these comments that were posted.

"That's right!"

"The analysis seems very logical!"

"The Math test shouldn't be more difficult than the Chinese Literature test!"

"Well said!"

"That's great, I'm feeling relieved now!"

"Charge! There's only the last subject left now!"

.....

Later that afternoon.

As the timing approached, it was also time for the last subject to be examined for this year's college entrance examination—mathematics.

Having experienced the wakeup call from this morning's Chinese Literature test, many of the examinees were dealt a severe blow,

especially having gone through yesterday's level of the English, Arts, and Science tests, the level of difficulty for today's paper was made even more obvious. It was like the difference between the sky and earth. Some of the examinees had not even come back to their senses from the disaster of the morning's test and were already arriving back to the examination venue in the accompaniment of their parents.

They were still unsettled!

There was still anger over the level of difficulty!

It was like this for the examinees and their parents alike.

"Son, it's the last subject."

"I know, Mom."

"The Chinese Literature test is already over. It doesn't matter what we say about it anymore, so just focus and score well on your Math test to make up for your Chinese Literature test's score."

"I will!"

"Are you confident?"

"Yes!"

"That's my son, go get 'em!"

Beside them, another parent was also advising their child.

"Daughter, I just read on the Internet that many of the experts have already analyzed and concurred that the Math test is not going to be too difficult, so don't worry about it!"

"Ah? Really?"

"It's true. It's what the experts have claimed, how can it be wrong? They said that the difficulty level for the Math test is likely to be moderate or just slightly above average!"

"That's great to hear!"

Around them, quite a few parents and examinees who heard this came over to ask.

"Will it really not be difficult?"

"Yes, the media reports also analyzed it as such. You all can check the Internet if you don't believe."

"Hu, it nearly scared me to death!"

"It's good as long as it's not difficult! I was so scared that my legs

were trembling!"

"Then I had better score higher on the Math test! I need to claw back the points I lost in the Chinese Literature exam!"

"Right!"

"Wow, the reports online really analyzed it that way! It's supported by so many experts too!"

"Let me see, let me see!"

"Haha, I'm not worried anymore now!"

"That's exactly what I was thinking. The Chinese Literature test was already super difficult, so the Math test can't possibly be as difficult too!"

It was almost time to start the last test. The examinees had all gone into the examination venues. Those who had seen the analysis presented by the media and experts had all regained quite a bit of their confidence. They held their pens firmly, in preparation to do well on all the questions!

However, as it turned out, after the Mathematics test was handed out, when the examinees saw the multiline questions on it, they were all left looking flabbergasted!

Some people gasped!

Some people covered their faces and let out a silent scream!

Some people turned pale!

There were even some who held the exam in their trembling hands!

.....

Question 3:

If the complex number z satisfies the equation $z(2 - 3i) = 6 + 4i$ (where i is the imaginary unit), then the modulus of z is _____.

.....

Question 9:

There are 3 small balls of similar size in a box. One of them is a black ball. If two balls are randomly picked from the box, what is the probability of the two balls being different in color?

.....

Question 13:

To better understand the quality of a batch of cotton, a cotton mill randomly extracted 100 lengths of cotton fiber (the length of a cotton fiber is an important indicator of the quality of cotton). The resulting data falls between $[5, 40]$. Its appearance frequency is indicated in the distribution histogram below. [image] In the sampling of 100 lengths of fiber, there are _____ lengths that are shorter than 20mm.

.....

Question 15:

In the Chinese Literature and Mathematics subjects, the results are graded into 3 tiers of either "Excellent," "Pass," or "Fail." Assuming Student A's results are all not lower than Student B's, with at least one subject scoring better than Student B's, then the statement "Student A's results are better than Student B's" is valid. If among some students no one scored better than each other, and neither did any two students score the same points as another, with their Mathematics results also not the same. Then: What is the maximum number of students that fulfill the conditions?

.....

What kind of questions were these?

Just what kind of damned questions were these?

Don't even mention solving these questions! Just looking at them alone was enough to make half of the examinees vomit blood!

Some of the more outstanding Mathematics students were already covered with sweat, trying their hardest to understand the questions. There were also some who were weaker in the subject who had already laid down their "weapon" and given up on answering!

F*ck your grandpa!

Who the hell said that the Mathematics exam questions would not be too difficult?

Who the heck said that the Mathematics exam questions were going to be moderate to slightly above average in difficulty?

Those who said so should come look at this for themselves! Is this f**king moderate to slightly above average in difficulty? Is this not too difficult? Only at this moment did the examinees realize that they had been scammed by those media reports and experts who had sounded so confident with their arguments! The Mathematics test was totally not like how they had predicted it to be! In fact, this was even more difficult than the Chinese Literature test by at least two times! At least they could still read and understand the questions in the Chinese Literature test. But for some of the questions in the Mathematics test, even after staring at it for forever, they could not begin to understand the question whatsoever!

The people of this world definitely did not know where these questions originated from. Only Zhang Ye knew that these multifaceted questions had all come from the past years of college entrance exams of every province in his previous world. There were questions from the 2014 Beijing college entrance exam, the 2009 national college entrance exam and also the 2010 Jiangsu college entrance exam, whose claim to fame was being the most difficult examination in the college entrance examination history! All of these questions were gathered and chosen by Zhang Ye to be used for this world's Beijing college entrance examination's Mathematics test this year. The difficulty of it was something that one could not even begin to imagine!

However, this was not Zhang Ye intentionally trying to find issue with the examinees. He was just doing as instructed by the Higher Education Entrance Examination Board who had requested for the most difficult questions he could come up with. They fully had the intention to reform the exam and Zhang Ye had no objections to this. Whatever the Higher Education Entrance Examination Board wanted, he would just give to them. His job was only to write the questions. Nothing else mattered to him.

The bell sounded to signal the end of the exam.

The Mathematics test had ended!

At that moment, the curtain was drawn on the annual national college entrance examination!

.....

Jinshi.

At an examination venue.

"Granddaughter! Granddaughter!"

"Granny, I've finished my exam!"

"Did you do well?"

"I did OK. I just didn't manage to finish the last major question."

"Alright then, let's go home. Granny will cook a sumptuous meal for you!"

.....

Beihe Province.

"We're finally free! Hahaha!"

"When I get home, I want to sleep soundly for three days and three nights!"

"I want to play video games! Play them for three days straight! It

will definitely be very enjoyable!"

"Oh! We're free!"

.....

Jiangnan Province.

"Today's examination wasn't too difficult!"

"Yeah, it was easier than last year's!"

"I counted. My points will definitely qualify me for tier 1! University, here I come!"

"Me too, the Math test was so easy!"

.....

The entire country's examinees were finally set free at this moment. Many of them had left their examination venues laughing, even those who did not do well or performed as ideally as they wanted. Since the dust had settled, they were now totally relaxed and could finally make their way home to their families.

However, there was a place where it was different!

The reactions of the examinees in this municipality was different from all the other places!

Beijing!

After the college entrance examination was over, at the end of the last exam subject.

Outside many of the examination venues, other than the sight of many anxiously waiting parents, there were also many media reporters who had arrived. Some of the reporters even arrived in their press vehicles, probably preparing to do an episode covering the topic or getting the footage ready for tonight's news report.

"Ah, they're coming out!"

"Quickly, the cameras!"

"They're coming out! The exam is over!"

The parents and reporters were all crowded outside the entrance.

However, their expected reactions of the examinees exiting the venues with excitement did not happen. Yes, not a single one of them did that. Everyone just walked out slowly and silently with a sense of heaviness. They all looked like they had been through a tough battle or seemed like they had just been beaten up.

The parents were getting anxious.

"What's wrong?"

"Little Ye, what's going on? What happened?"

"Zhouzhou, why aren't you talking?"

"How was the exam, baby? Say something at least!"

Suddenly, a thin and weak-looking boy walking right in the front started crying loudly after hearing his parents asking him about the exam. "...It was too damn difficult!"

With this cry, a few female examinees behind him also started shedding tears. A girl was crying while yelling out, "Zhang Ye! I can't live while you do! You're my sworn enemy! Sob sob sob!"

The parents were stunned!

The reporters were also shocked!

F**k! Just what kind of a Mathematics test was it for this year's Beijing college entrance examination? Why did some of the examinees even breaking down in tears over it?! Just how difficult was it!

Meanwhile.

At the other examination venues in Beijing, similar scenes were playing out as well!

Many of the examinees had exited from their examination venues in tears, crying while cursing all 18 generations of ancestors of this year's college entrance examination's question setting team!

If the Chinese Literature test had caused them to cry out loudly before, then this Mathematics test was the one that had extinguished all their remaining hope. Even a few examinees who usually did very well at Mathematics and scored highly in their classes came out of the venue in tears. They had never used swear words despite the many years at school, but when they walked out of the examination venue this time, they could be heard loudly swearing, "They better not let us find out which bastard wrote those questions!!"

Chapter 712: Down With Zhang Ye!

Each time the college entrance examination was held, there would always be examinees who passed and failed. Some of them would do poorly, but there were others who did well in the examination. But looking at the situation now? Did everyone end up doing badly this time? Did everyone meet their doom at the Mathematics test? But no matter how difficult the test was, it couldn't be that not even one of them did well, right? There would surely be some straight-A student who could do well on this exam, but no matter where they searched and looked, why were all the examinees showing the same expression?

A father and his son were talking.

"Son, haven't you always done well at math!?"

"It was too difficult! The questions were way too difficult!"

"How many did you manage to get correct?"

"I don't know! I had to resort to guessing just to solve the questions!"

"How could that be! Just what kinds of questions did you get!?"

"Dad, if I can get 50 points on my math test this time, I would be more than happy!"

"What? You've always managed to get no fewer than 90 points in math! You even managed to score 99 points on one of the mock exams! Why would it be so bad this time? This doesn't reflect your aptitude at all!"

When another examinee heard that, he said, "Just be contented with that. Lei Zi can still score 50 points, but if I can score 40 points, I would already be extremely satisfied! I did not write a single word for my answers to the last three major questions! I couldn't even understand what the questions were asking!"

Several of the reporters' eyes met each other's, but they could not believe what they had just heard. They could believe that a question could not be answered since difficult questions did exist, but for the candidate to even not understand the questions? They clearly could not believe it. As a result, those reporters tried to obtain some of the math questions by interviewing a few examinees who recounted to them from memory. Upon writing out and seeing the questions, those reporters instantly felt dizzy.

"Brother Liu, can you understand the questions?"

"...What about you?"

"Me? I don't get it at all."

"F**k, me too."

"Damn, is this question even meant for us humans?"

"It seems like the question setting team is really out to kill everyone!"

Very soon, quite a few news reports were published.

"Darkness befalls the second day of the Beijing college entrance exams!"

"Difficulty level of the Chinese Literature and Math tests goes off the charts!"

"The end of the college entrance exam: Students leave the exam venues in tears!"

"The Math exam questions exposed: Check if you can solve these questions?"

"Never before in history! Difficulty of exam questions brings examinees to tears!"

Many of the photos taken outside of the exam venues were also posted. In the photos, it could be clearly seen that the headlines of "brings examinees to tears" was not just a figure of speech. The examinees had really been brought to tears by the difficulty level!

.....

Elsewhere.

When the exam was over, the Internet blew up with comments. The angered Beijing examinees invaded Weibo, Tieba, and a few of the larger online forums, "shouting" together in unison.

Examinee Little Wang: "Fairy tales are just lies! They're all lies!"

No. 3 High School Wu Fei: "Teacher, why didn't it turn out according to the way we discussed?!"

No. 4 High School Examinee: "It's not that I'm bad at math, but that the enemy is too crafty!"

Beijing Normal University Affiliated High School Examinee: "Who were the people who listed out the reasons one by one before deducing that the Math test wouldn't be too difficult? Show yourself! If I don't beat you to death, I will take on your last name!"

No. 8 High School Examinee: "After finishing the Chinese Literature test, I felt that my heart was crushed. But after finishing the Math test, I felt like my balls were crushed!"

"Balls crushed as well!"

"Balls crushed as well+1!"

"Balls crushed as well+99999!"

A student from No. 63 High School: "Dear juniors, if next year's Beijing Chinese Literature and Math tests become easier, please remember us. Please remember us, because that was exchanged with the sacrificed blood of your predecessors, your seniors, us! Don't thank me, just call me the unwilling Red Scarf!"

The examinees from the other provinces had gathered to watch.

"Scratching my head in confusion."

"Brothers and sisters who took part in the Beijing college entrance exam, it's been hard on you all."

"I've seen your Math exam questions, all I want to say is—you're all glorious warriors!"

"Come on, stay strong!"

"Whoever gets those questions would not be able to answer them either!"

"The Beijing Higher Education Entrance Examination Board has really gone big this time! Let's see how they will handle the situation later on!"

"Zhang Ye's such a wicked fellow! Those questions must have been set by him!"

"We're lucky that our province's Higher Education Entrance Examination Board did not invite this fellow to join them! Otherwise, the ones to be sacrificed this year would surely have been us! Just thinking about it gives me the shivers!"

"Whoever gets involved with a question setter like Zhang Ye who does not play his cards logically is surely down on their luck!"

"Zhang Ye is the scourge itself. When he was at the radio station, he fought the entire radio station system. Then when he went to the television station, he fought the television station's leader. At the university, he went against the education world. When he got into the crosstalk industry, he fought against the crosstalk world. Now, he has even come to destroy the Higher Education Entrance Examination system!"

The Beijing examinees were cursing!

The examinees' parents were complaining!

The entire society's attention had suddenly turned its focus to the Beijing college entrance exams!

The Beijing Higher Education Entrance Examination Board...the question setting teams...Zhang Ye...All of these parties were thrust to the forefront of discussions!

Not long after, a call to "severely punish the question setter" was

making rounds across the Internet. Countless Beijing examinees and their parents were participating in it while the examinees from the other provinces also joined in to show their support. This new wave of dissent once again turned the Internet upside down as it caused a great deal of commotion!

"Where is Zhang Ye at?"

"Zhang Ye, where are you?!"

"Hand that man over!"

"Down with Zhang Ye! Revenge for the examinees!"

"Down with the Beijing Higher Education Entrance Examination Board! Justice for the examinees!"

The "shouts" came wave after wave, continuously!

.....

At another place.

Zhang Ye's parents' house.

Dong dong dong, dong dong dong. There was someone knocking on the door outside.

His parents and Chenchen were at home staring at the computer for news related to the Beijing college entrance exam. When she heard that someone was at the door, his mother went over and opened it. "Who is it?"

Outside, Zhang Ye stepped into the house. "Who else could it be?"

His mother was surprised for a moment. "Why are you home?"

Zhang Ye laughed. "The college entrance exam is already over. If I don't come back, where would I go? Do you prefer that I stay in the hills? Heh, let me say this: I was bored out of my mind when I was there. It's always the woods that I see when I open my eyes. Just look at all these marks on my body, I got these bites from the mosquitoes and bugs. There's too many of those in the hills!"

His mother said, "Get into the house quickly, I will get you some essential balm."

Zhang Ye was in a rather good mood. "It's fine, I've already applied some." Then he walked into the living room and saw his father with Chenchen. "Dad, you're not working today? Chenchen, do you miss Uncle?"

Chenchen glanced at him. "—Hur hur."

Zhang Ye smiled and said, "Hur hur means you did." Then he asked, "Dad, did this little rascal cause any trouble in our home?"

Chenchen pouted.

His father looked at his son. "You're still worried about whether Chenchen caused any trouble? I think the trouble that you've caused is much greater! Just look at this, it's a total mess online! The examinees and their parents are all scolding you! You're really asking for it. Just stick to setting the questions, why did you have to make them so difficult?!"

Zhang Ye said, "Who's scolding me?"

His mother followed up, "See for yourself. No one is not scolding you!"

Zhang Ye went over to the computer and had a look. It was really true; his Weibo account had received countless mention notifications and all of them were talking about "ridding evil for the people." Zhang Ye was already sweating at the sight of this and suddenly plucked Chenchen out of the chair she was sitting on and then sat himself in front of the computer. He logged into Weibo and quickly posted a message.

Zhang Ye: "Everyone, cool down. If it was difficult, then it would have been difficult for everyone. If the scores are low because of this, then everyone's score will also be low. It is actually all the same and your college admission won't be affected." In this world, it was quite common for students to be admitted into universities. Out of ten examinees, more than half would qualify for university. That was why the difficulty of the questions wouldn't have

affected their chances by much, unless the examinees did very badly on the overall exam. That portion of the examinees who did not achieve a good enough result still wouldn't have scored well, whether or not the questions were difficult. They still wouldn't have qualified for university, so there wasn't really much of a difference.

However, the examinees were having none of it!

When they saw Zhang Ye's Weibo status light up, all of the Beijing examinees swarmed over!

"That Zhang guy has appeared online!"

"Your sister, how dare you still appear!"

"Everyone, come and gather quickly! The culprit has appeared!"

"Down with Zhang Ye!"

"Zhang Ye, we've all been screwed big time because of you!"

"What kind of lousy questions of yours are those!?"

When Zhang Ye showed up, he was immediately besieged by countless people!

Zhang Ye was didn't know how to react. He coughed and then composed himself and posted onto Weibo like a boss: "Why are you all scolding me? The questions were not set by me, they were set by Dean Pan Yang of Peking University."

Dad: "..."

Mom: "..."

Chenchen: "..."

Su Na's Weibo: "..."

A Peking University teacher who was also on the question setting team: "..."

At a certain house.

Pan Yang came home totally worn out and had just taken a sip of tea before he started browsing through the Internet on his computer. Instead, he saw the Weibo message posted by Zhang Ye, and after reading it, he nearly lost his balance. He spat out his tea. He had not expected Zhang Ye to pin the blame on him to make him the scapegoat!

Pan Yang was also getting anxious. This was not something he could take the blame for. He was just about to post his Weibo reply when he saw the rest of the comments that the examinees followed up with. Those comments left him laughing out loud.

"Peking University's Dean Pan?"

"Don't listen to his nonsense!"

"Dammit, who are you trying to bluff here! It's you for sure!"

"Don't think that we don't know about it! These kind of wicked questions wouldn't have come from anyone else but you!"

"Pfft, Teacher Zhang, you're lying with a straight face! I'm suddenly very amused by this!"

"Zhang Ye, do you even have any integrity left!?"

"It was you! Can't be anyone else!"

"Don't try to shift the blame! Even if these questions get burned to ash, I will know where they originated from!"

In the end, not one of the examinees or netizens believed him. They all knew that Zhang Ye's mouth was totally unreliable!

Zhang Ye had no other way out, so he simply went offline as he knew that if he couldn't appease them, then the better way was just to hide! This guy was intending to lie low for the moment since he had become the public enemy to so many people!

.....

At night.

The farce was still ongoing!

The Beijing Higher Education Entrance Examination Board was also interviewed with regards to this year's examination questions and a press release was published soon after. The press release exposed the names of the question setters of the most difficult questions in the various subjects' exams and even revealed some details in regard to how a question should be written.

This resulted in the Beijing examinees and the observing netizens discovering with shock that the questions that had tormented the examinees in both the Chinese Literature and Mathematics tests were indeed written by none other than the goddamned Zhang Ye!

That's right!

Every question!

Every question was set by him!!!

At this moment, the examinees became so angry they cried out loudly in rage. Every injustice has its perpetrator. They once again launched their attack on Zhang Ye's Weibo with wave after wave of

scolding!

"You still dare claim that the questions were not set by you! And even tried to accuse Dean Pan of being the one?!"

"I give in to you, Teacher Zhang! How could it be that all the crazy difficult questions were set by you?"

Chapter 713: The Average Scores Of The Beijing Examinees Are Published!

The next day.

The storm was not over yet.

The first thing he heard when he woke up and opened his eyes was the ringing of his cell phone.

Zhang Ye was in a half-awake state when he answered the call, "Hello, who is it?"

"It's Pan Yang." It was the Dean of Peking University's School of Mathematical Sciences on the line.

Zhang Ye suddenly felt more awake, and asked knowingly, "Ha, Dean Pan, what's the matter for you to call so early in the morning?"

Pan Yang did not hold back. "Why did you pull that shit on me yesterday?"

Zhang Ye played dumb. "Ah? Did I?"

"You claimed that the questions were set by me?" Pan Yang asked.

Zhang Ye said, "What? What questions were set by you? Did I say that? I don't remember anymore. I was too tired yesterday, so I went to bed immediately after I got home."

"You rascal, still pretending to be innocent."

"Hehe, that's not it."

After quibbling for a bit, the call ended and Zhang Ye was no longer feeling sleepy. He got up and went out of his bedroom only to see that his family had already gathered in the living room to watch the news. Chenchen was sitting at the computer desk, fidgeting around, doing something.

"Dad, Mom," Zhang Ye greeted.

His mother turned her head. "You're up? I'll go prepare breakfast then."

"Sure. Thanks, Mom." Having said that, Zhang Ye turned to Chenchen. "What are you doing?"

Chenchen did not turn to look at him and just replied, "Using the computer."

Zhang Ye grunted, "Playing games again?"

"No," Chenchen said.

"Let me see." Zhang Ye walked up behind her and saw the interface of Weibo in the browser. When he saw that the entire screen was filled with the angry comments and scolding by the examinees and their parents, he couldn't help but sweat at this. "Why are you looking at this so early in the morning?"

Chenchen simply said, "I want to know how everyone is scolding you."

Zhang Ye nearly fainted. "Why would you want to know that!"

Chenchen said, "It's fun."

Zhang Ye: "..."

His father was amused by this as he sat there beside them.

His mother said, "You rascal, you deserved it. You could have just stayed at home in peace, yet you chose to go out there and get into trouble!"

Zhang Ye said depressed, "You say it like it's such a simple situation. If I just stay at home all the time, where would I get my popularity? How could I boost my reputation that way?"

His mother rolled her eyes at him. "Whoa, you're still talking

about reputation? Do you even have any reputation left now? It's already turned into notoriety! When I went out to buy the groceries this morning, I bumped into our neighbors, Little Sun and Sister Chen, at the market. They would usually chat with me for a bit whenever we see each other, or at least greet me. But today, it's like they pretended not to have seen me at all and just walked past me. I only found out later that Little Sun's and Sister Chen's children were taking their college entrance exams this year! Grandma Wang told me that Little Sun's child went home after the exam and broke down crying! Look at the trouble you've caused me! I have to go over there to make a visit to clean up your mess!"

Zhang Ye blinked. "Surely that's not necessary? The questions I set were definitely not easy, but they also weren't that difficult either. It shouldn't have been so difficult that it would cause them to cry, right?"

His father interrupted. "Just watch the news for yourself later. You can't imagine how many people are crying because of this year's college entrance exam."

.....

The scoldings continued on the Internet.

If the examinees had just recounted from memory the Mathematics exam questions yesterday, then as of today, the entire exam had been uploaded with all the answers included in it. Anyone could see it. It was only then that the netizens discovered that those questions they had seen yesterday were only for the multiple choice or fill in the blank sections at the beginning part of

the examination paper. The short answer questions at the end of the test were even crazier in difficulty. One of them required the examinees to solve a question that was at the university level using high school algebraic geometry knowledge. The attached ideal answer for this question took up more half the paper it was written on, leaving anyone who read it trembling!

The examinees were in tears as they checked through the answers.

"I scored 50 points!"

"I calculated mine and I only got 45 points!"

"I'm so sad, I think mine is only about 40-45 points. There were a few multiple choice questions that I couldn't understand and guessed at, so I can't remember which options I chose for those!"

"I did a little better, but I won't get higher than 70 points!"

"Having analyzed the questions and answers today, I've realized that we were too careless during the exam. We totally underestimated that scammer Zhang Ye back then. Many of the questions could still be solved and were within most of the examinees' level. But what is most wicked about Zhang Ye is that he totally tries to catch you off guard with the questions' approach. The style of the questions are all done in a way that we have never come across before, so when we first read the questions on the exams yesterday, most of us were stunned by them. It happened to me as well and I was totally unprepared for it!"

"It's useless to say anything now!"

"I hereby announce I will officially join the 'Zhang Ye's Lifetime Adversaries Organization'!"

"I will join too!"

"A lifetime of adversary? I will be his adversary for at least two lifetimes!"

"Three lifetimes for me!"

"Ahem, don't be so harsh. Teacher Zhang was just following orders. He's still a nice guy no matter what."

"Right, don't be too harsh on Teacher Zhang now."

There were still a few netizens who were speaking up for Zhang Ye.

In the end, an examinee from this year's college entrance exam posted a reply that left everyone laughing: "It's not like I want to be so harsh on Teacher Zhang, I really don't wish to do so. But among all the insanely difficult questions, if any one, just one question, was set by another teacher, then I wouldn't have said anything. I would understand and I could point my finger at the other question setter instead. All it needed was for a single question to

not be set by him! But as it stands? They were all set by him! Every single question was his creation! So give us a reason not to be harsh on Zhang Ye? Just a single reason will do!"

If it were any other question setter, when faced with all these public opinions, they would have long since crumbled from the pressure and come forward to give an explanation to save their reputation. But Zhang Ye did not do so. He just went ahead with the most straightforward response—lie low! It was a good thing that this guy's mental strength was so strong. He had already gone through many similar situations where he was scolded by a lot of people at once, so it was just routine for him now.

Perhaps that was also the same reason why the Beijing Higher Education Entrance Examination Board had approached him in the first place. The Beijing Higher Education Entrance Examination Board were very committed to the reform of the college entrance examination this time as they wanted to change the perception of their exam questions being too simple. That explained their determination but also explained why they needed someone to carry out this dirty job. They needed someone who could become the focused target of the backlash from the examinees and their parents, thus lessening the pressure focused on the Board itself!

But who could they find?

Who would be the most suitable target?

Among all the teachers at the university level, who was the most unafraid of getting scolded? Whose mental strength was the strongest? Who had the thickest skin of all?

The Board did not even need to think and made their decision immediately—recruit Zhang Ye! This fellow had already been through a hundred battles. His skin was amazingly thick. Even if the examinees and their parents did not scold him, there were still many other groups scolding him. Since he wasn't lacking in this area, it wouldn't matter much even if another group were to join in and scold him. So no matter how you looked at it, Zhang Ye was clearly the best candidate for this role! There was no one more suitable than he!

—That was probably why the Board invited him to join them in the first place.

However, at the very end, the Beijing Higher Education Entrance Examination Board might not have even expected that Zhang Ye would be able to write such insanely difficult questions that it would bring the examinees to tears. This was something no one could have predicted!

.....

Later in the morning.

At the Beijing Higher Education Entrance Examination Board. More than a dozen people had gathered here for a meeting.

A female staff member said nervously, "Leader, the scores for this year's Math and Chinese Literature tests might be a little bit low. Professor Liu has already informed us to be prepared for it. The

teachers who graded the papers have already given us some feedback. They told us that after marking more than 20 papers, no one scored higher than 100 points for the Chinese Literature test yet. It's even worse for the Math test. Among the 20 papers...not one scored above 70 points!"

The Board's leader: "..."

The Board's office supervisor: "..."

Finally, the second-in-command wiped his sweat away and said, "For the reform this time, I think we might have tried a little too hard....It feels a little too harsh even. Could the tier 1 grade really not even be above 480 points?"

A staff member coughed and said, "Only over a few dozen papers have been graded. We still don't know about the rest of the papers after that. However, it's true that this year's questions were too difficult."

Faced with the incredibly low scores of the examinees, the people on the Board were also feeling a little guilty now. This was the first time they were doubting their decision in getting Zhang Ye to join them and wondered if it was a mistake. They felt they might really have gone too far this time!

.....

A few days later.

The national college entrance examination's results were gradually released.

The Internet buzzed with activity.

A Shandong Province examinee: "I checked it out! I scored 560 points!"

A Beihe Province examinee announced excitedly: "I got 530! It should be enough to qualify for tier 1! Hahahaha!"

A Jinshi examinee: "I scored 510. I didn't do as well as I could have, but it should be enough to qualify me for tier 2. Why haven't they announced the grading yet? Hurry up! It's taking too long!"

"596 for me! Do you all think that I will become the top scholar of our province?"

"Nonsense, I scored a point higher than you, what top scholar are you talking about!"

"Hai, I only got 488. I'm in trouble this year!"

"I got 601 points, higher than any of you!"

Many examinees from the different provinces were bragging about their scores actively online, except for one place. That place

was where the Beijing examinees were from.

Everyone began to notice.

"Eh, why haven't any of the Beijing examinees talked about their scores yet?"

"Beijing examinees, how did you guys do?"

"Right, your exams made the headlines this year!"

"How many points? Tell us quickly."

The other provinces' examinees were all full of anticipation and curious.

At this moment, a female Beijing examinee posted on Weibo: "Are you sure you want to see?"

The netizens actively replied: "Of course!"

"Alright then." The female Beijing examinee immediately posted her results slip online.

When the netizens saw it, they were all dumbfounded!

Chinese Literature: 78 points.

Mathematics: 25 points.

"Damn!"

"Surely that's too low?"

"Are you serious? 25 points for Mathematics?"

"This girl must be just average in her studies. Is there anyone else who scored higher?"

Another group of Beijing examinees gradually posted their results slips online. They were even the students from some of Beijing's key focus schools!

A student from No. 15 High School: "My total score is 391 points."

A Beijing Normal University Affiliated High School's student: "I only got 69 points on my Chinese Literature test."

A student from No. 4 High School: "My total score is 482 points. It's already considered high, but I only received 69 points on my Math test! It's low as f**k. Not even labeling it as going overboard on the scores would explain the situation properly!"

Very soon, the various provinces' average scores were tabulated and released.

It was generally as follows:

Shandong Province Chinese Literature Examination Average Score: 97 points.

Jiangnan Province Chinese Literature Examination Average Score: 101 points.

Jiangsu Province Mathematics Examination Average Score: 102 points.

Liaodong Province Mathematics Examination Average Score: 99 points.

But the average score everyone had their attention on for this tabulation was the Beijing Municipality's examinees' average scores. For example, the English, Arts, and Science average scores of the Beijing examinees were still in line with the national average. But the Chinese Literature and Mathematics average scores, together with the weighted total score for the Beijing examinees were basically eyesores!

Beijing Municipality Chinese Literature Examination Average Score: 72 points.

Beijing Municipality Mathematics Examination Average Score: 59 points.

When they saw the statistics, many of the netizens were stunned!

Chapter 714: The National Higher Education Entrance Examination Board Wants To Invite Zhang Ye Too?

It was too low!

It was way too low!

Every year's college entrance examination, whether it be the provincial or the nationwide version of the exam, had always had different difficulty levels. Sometimes, a certain province might have it easier and sometimes more difficult. It was impossible to maintain the same difficulty level across the entire country, therefore there would be a difference in the scores between each province's or municipality's zone. However, the scores usually did not differ by much and only came down to a difference of perhaps one or two points!

For this year's Beijing exams, however?

The Chinese Literature examination's average score was lower than the national average by nearly 30 points?

It was even more shocking for the Mathematics exam where it was lower than the national average by a total of 40 points!

When all the scores were combined, the total scores that the Beijing examinees got was lower than the national average by more than 70 points??

These figures had truly shocked a lot of the netizens who saw it!

Another group of people who were similarly shocked by this were the people from the Beijing Higher Education Entrance Examination Board and their question setters!

.....

At the Board's office.

"What the hell!"

"This..."

"There was nothing wrong with the tabulation of scores, right?"

"Why don't we tabulate the data again?"

Many of the staff working at the Higher Education Entrance Examination Board were sucking in gasps of cold air due to the low scores. The data had been available to them earlier, and they were even the ones who were in responsible for tabulating the data. But from the time they received the data until now, every one of the staff couldn't help but draw in a breath of cold air every time they saw these figures!

It was terrible!

It was really, really appalling to look at!

If the media and industry insiders had analyzed this year's Beijing Mathematics test to be the hardest in the history of the Beijing college entrance exam, then after seeing these statistics, they would have to modify their stance to place it as the most difficult in the history of the national college entrance exam!

The Mathematics exam had an average score of 59 points?

The average of all the examinees was only 59 points?

There had never before been an occurrence of such a low average for the Mathematics test of the college entrance exam!

This was an eye-opener for many of the veteran staff at the Board's office. Such low scores were previously unheard of or seen before!

Zhang Ye and dozens of other question setters had also arrived at the Board's office today to join a meeting and discussion on some issues, but he was somehow caught in such a scenario.

Su Na looked at Zhang Ye.

Suddenly, everyone's focus turned to Zhang Ye.

Zhang Ye gave an awkward cough, probably feeling a little embarrassed. "Ahem, about that, in any case, the cutoff score will be adjusted lower, so there isn't really a difference and shouldn't affect the admissions." When he gave this excuse, even he was not totally convinced of it. To be honest, Zhang Ye himself did not expect the examinees to score this low either.

There was silence.

No one spoke as they let this awkward scene play out. Then Zhang Ye immediately said to Dean Pan, "I'd already said that I didn't want to take this job at the beginning, yet you insisted that I do it! Hai!"

All of the Higher Education Entrance Examination Board office staff: "..."

Dean Pan nearly fainted at that. "You rascal, pushing the blame onto me again, are you?"

A leader of the Board didn't know whether to laugh or cry. He quickly mediated, "It's already turned out like this, so even if the scores are low, so be it. At most we will suffer a little loss of face, but it's really nothing much."

Zhang Ye immediately said, "That's right, that's right. It's not even a big matter at all! We can definitely get through this!"

That leader of the Higher Education Entrance Examination Board

nearly fainted at this response. He was just trying to mediate the situation so that everyone could take a step back, but it seemed like Zhang Ye was really good at latching onto the topic!

But it was really as he said it. What's done was done, so what else could they do about it? All they needed to do was to just stick to the procedures and move on from there!

"Luckily, there was someone who got a perfect score on the Math test," a Board supervisor consoled.

Zhang Ye's curiosity perked when he heard that. "Someone got a perfect score?"

That person nodded. "Just one. A girl."

Zhang Ye was very curious about who it was. "What's her name?"

That person said, "Huang Lingling."

Huang Lingling?

It's her??

Zhang Ye smiled, looking very pleased.

He knew who this girl was. At the previous International Math

Olympiad held at Summer Palace, Huang Lingling was a representative of the youth team for China, together with her brother, Huang Leilei. Zhang Ye got to know them both on that occasion and had spoken to them quite a bit. Huang Lingling had even mentioned that if she managed to qualify for Peking University, she would want to be a student of Zhang Ye's so that he could personally teach her more about math. He didn't think at that time that she would be taking her college entrance exam this year.

.....

Soon after.

The Beijing college entrance exam admission cutoff scores were released.

Arts Subjects Tier 1 Grade cutoff score: 467.

Science Subjects Tier 1 Grade cutoff score: 464.

Arts Subjects Tier 2 Grade cutoff score: 425.

Science Subjects Tier 2 Grade cutoff score: 421.

The cutoff scores for the entire admissions exercise had dropped drastically! It was so low that the scores were totally unheard of by many people!

Immediately, the Beijing college entrance exams were once again the focal point of discussion in society. This time, not only Beijing Television and the other provincial satellite stations were reporting about it on their news programs, even Central TV Department 1's News Simulcast reported about it that very night!

Although Zhang Ye was also working at Central TV Department 1, but with the corporate structure rather bloated and the staff divided into many different departments, those who were involved in the variety shows had nothing in common with those program teams involved in the news. Even Zhang Ye who had been working at Central TV Department 1 for so many days now did not know which floor the News Simulcast program team was situated at. That was why Central TV Department 1's news program reporting on the Beijing college entrance exam was not done so for Zhang Ye, nor was it out of respect for The Voice's program team. It was purely because of the big commotion that the Beijing college entrance exams had caused!

The Beijing exams' exposure in the media skyrocketed even further!

Zhang Ye's exposure rate also soared along with it!

Overall, even though he had been scolded a lot, it was still not a bad thing for Zhang Ye as his reputation continued to rise every day!

.....

On Weibo.

When the Beijing admissions cutoff scores were published, the condemning comments from the examinees also gradually lessened.

"I was scared to death, but luckily I managed to get a tier 1 score!"

"I qualified for the tier 2s. Your sister! I initially thought that my low score of 430 in the Science subjects would only have qualified me for a vocational college, but I never expected to manage to qualify for tier 2 instead!"

"Everyone's scores are low, therefore the admissions cutoff grades were also adjusted accordingly!"

"I was very lucky too. Somehow I got a tier 1 score!"

"Good, good. From the results, it looks like I did pretty well this year. Usually, I only get tier 2 scores, but because of those wondrous questions this year, it somehow went my way instead, allowing me to realize my potential and getting myself a tier 1 score!"

"Still, I feared for my future."

"Yeah, I would never want to come across questions like this

again in the future!"

"Reject drugs, stay away from Zhang Ye!"

"Please send Teacher Zhang as far away as possible! Don't let him come near us in case we get ruined again!"

"I'm in eleventh grade this year and will be taking my college entrance exam next year. To the Beijing Higher Education Entrance Examination Board, may I thank you first for getting rid of someone like Zhang Ye in advance?! That guy is such a bastard!"

"Please get rid of Zhang Ye!"

"Seconded!"

Suddenly, a lot of eleventh grade students from the other provinces started gloating at the Beijing students who were due to take their college entrance exam next year.

"Hehe."

"The Beijing college entrance exams had always been so easy all these years, so it's high time that you guys have it hard now. That kind of difficulty level shouldn't be too bad, right? Haha!"

"Yeah, the wheel of fortune is always turning. It's finally your turn!"

"Good luck to the Beijing examinees! Have a good one!"

"Ha, I'll suggest to the Beijing Higher Education Entrance Examination Board to get Zhang Ye to set the questions every year. Since the schools in Beijing have so many resources and places for students, they should have to go through a tougher process!"

"I'd be delighted to see that!"

"Zhang Ye, beautifully done!"

"There's still room to raise the difficulty of the questions!"

"Teacher Zhang, work harder next year. Make it so difficult that they want to kill themselves!"

"Right, please do that. I will be taking the national college entrance exams anyway, so there's nothing for me to be afraid of!"

Quite a lot of people were adding fuel to the fire.

The Beijing examinees gnashed their teeth with hatred!

But right at this moment, a piece of news was suddenly published online. It was a conversation between a reporter and the supervisor of the national college entrance examination question setting team.

The conversation was as follows:

Reporter: "Professor Niu, the college entrance exam results are finally out."

Professor Niu: "Yes."

Reporter: "The Beijing exams this year have attracted all the attention. I've just received the latest update that says that the Beijing examinees only scored an average of around 50 on the Math test while the scores for the Chinese Literature test were not much better either."

Professor Niu: "I saw it too."

Reporter: "What are your views on this? There's an uproar of condemnation online about whether the Beijing exams were too harsh on the examinees."

Professor Niu: "I've seen those comments online as well. Actually, my opinion is different from most of you. I think that the questions used in this year's Beijing exams were very good. It was something new and had a good level of difficulty. On top of that, it also achieved its basic function of evaluating the examinees and assigning them to their tiers. My comment on this is—the standard of the Beijing exams is very high, the question setter is also of a very high standard, and in terms of the reform steps needed to be taken for our exam standards, Beijing is leading at the forefront of this revolution. We have also discussed this before and would like

to make some reforms on our side as well, so if it's at all possible, we would like for Teacher Zhang to join us for next year's question setting task in the national college entrance exam."

.....

When they saw this news article, those eleventh grade students who were just making fun of the Beijing students earlier also turned green in the face!

Suddenly, an explosion of reactions followed!

"The National Higher Education Entrance Examination Board also wants to invite Zhang Ye to join them?"

"Goddammit, goddammit to your fifth great grandma!"

"Don't, please don't!"

"Oh brother, please don't joke like this, I have a weak heart!"

"How did it turn out like this!"

"Go f**k your grandpa! Are they planning to send us all to our graves!?"

"Beijing was already a warning with the immediate damage it

caused among the examinees, could it really happen to us next year? Your sister! I protest! I will be the first one to protest against this!"

"That's too inhumane!"

"Professor Niu, don't mess around like this!"

"Our Old Comrade Niu, if you dare invite Zhang Ye to join the National Higher Education Entrance Examination Board next year, do you think I won't head to your house to smash your windows with rocks!? What kind of a grudge do you bear against those of us who are taking the national college entrance exams?!"

"Please get rid of Zhang Ye! Get rid of him!"

"Wu wu wu. I don't want to see him either!"

"It's over, we're definitely done for next year!"

Those who had been mocking the Beijing examinees sometime earlier were dumbfounded at this moment!

If the Beijing college entrance exams had implicated just a small percentage of the examinees, then the national college entrance exams which covered a lot more of the provinces and examinees would affect a great deal of people. This was something that countless eleventh grade students who would be next year's examinees from the various provinces and municipalities would

not agree to at all! When such a massive group of people came together online and exploded into protesting "voices," earth-shattering wails and howls could be "heard"!

"Don't, please don't!"

"Teacher, I want to die!"

"I suddenly feel like I'm screwed!"

In contrast, the Beijing examinees doubled over laughing at the turn of the tide!

"Hahahaha!"

"Serves them right!"

"They deserved it for taking us as a joke!"

"Aiyo, how hilarious! I'm dying from the joy!"

"This is what they mean by 'pride goes before the fall'!"

"You'll all have a chance to try out Zhang Ye's exams next year! Let's see if you all can still laugh when the time comes!"

"Take care!"

"The jinx has gone to look for you guys. You're on your own! Good luck!"

Yet another commotion was beginning on the Internet!

Some people were crying, some were angrily scolding, some just joined in to observe the fun as it all devolved into chaos!

Chapter 715: Meeting Wu Zeqing

On the weekend.

In the morning.

The Internet bustled with noise and controversy. However, Zhang Ye, the person at the center of the controversy, was still sleeping in at home. Probably tired from working too hard recently, Zhang Ye, who almost never snored, was snoring away. He didn't look too pretty sleeping there, hugging his blanket and drooling on his pillow unawares.

The bedroom door opened.

His mother walked in. "Little Ye."

"Ah?" Zhang Ye responded in a confused state of mind.

His mother said, "Get up and go have your breakfast."

Zhang Ye turned around and covered his head with the blanket. "I'm not eating. I want to sleep."

His mother said, "I've already bought soy milk and fried breadsticks for breakfast."

"I'm not prepared to get up so early. I'm too tired. Wake me when

lunch is ready," Zhang Ye said.

His father overheard their conversation from outside the bedroom. "Didn't you say yesterday that you would accompany your mother and go shopping during the day? It wasn't easy for you to get some days off, so stop sleeping already."

Zhang Ye grumbled, "Dad, I really can't get up, I'm too tired."

Chenchen also walked into the bedroom and glanced over at the bed. "Zhang Ye, you're so lazy."

His mother stared at him. "See, even Little Chenchen is criticizing you. Don't you feel ashamed?"

Zhang Ye grunted, "No matter who criticizes me, I will not get up."

His mother said, "Hurry up and get up, breakfast is getting cold."

"I'm not eating." Zhang Ye drowsily remained lying down in bed. "Mom, it's not that I don't want get up, but I really can't get up. This bro is so tired and aching all over that I intend to sleep until the afternoon. Even if the sky is falling, I won't get out of bed." With that, his droopy eyelids closed and he went back to sleep again.

When his mother realized that he would not wake up, she helplessly prepared to leave his bedroom.

At that same moment, Zhang Ye's cell phone beside the pillow started to ring.

Zhang Ye woke up again and picked up his cell phone impatiently and answered: "Who is it?"

A mature and gentle woman's voice at the other side replied: "It's me."

"Oh, Old Wu." It was Wu Zeqing. "You're up already?"

Old Wu: "Are you still sleeping?"

Zhang Ye: "Yes, you don't have work today?"

Old Wu: "I took the day off. Are you busy today?"

Zhang Ye: "No, I've got nothing on."

Old Wu: "I've been thinking about how we haven't met in a long time. Since I have the next two days off, if you're not busy, do you want to come over to Big Sis's place? Or do you want to sleep awhile longer? Another day maybe?"

Upon hearing this, Zhang Ye immediately sat up. "...I've had enough sleep. I'll be right there!" After hanging up, he got out from his bed and said, "Mom, Dad, I'm going to visit a friend. I'm leaving

now!"

Mom: "..."

Dad: "..."

Chenchen: "..."

The three of them were at a total loss for words.

Didn't you say that even if the sky collapsed, you wouldn't get out of your bed?

.....

It was around 8 in the morning.

In the high-end district of Taoran Pavilion's East Gate.

When Zhang Ye drove his car over, he found that the gates to Wu Zeqing's house were already open. He drove directly into the courtyard and parked it there instead of in the garage. He knew that Wu Zeqing had kept the gates open for him. When he got out of the car, Zhang Ye immediately spotted Old Wu sitting near the flower beds in the yard. She was holding something and tilling the soil, appearing to be fiddling with the flowers.

Wu Zeqing also looked at him at this moment. Their eyes met.

How long had it been since he had last seen Old Wu? Zhang Ye could not remember how long it had been anymore. He only knew that it had been a very long time, at least a month or two. When Wu Zeqing was newly appointed as the SARFT's Deputy Chief, she was too busy with work. After that, Zhang Ye had accepted the offer to work on a program at Central TV Department 1 and the question setting duty for the college entrance exam, leaving him too busy for other things. The two of them only kept in contact by texting or through phone calls since they basically had no time to meet up, so when he finally got to see Wu Zeqing again this time, Zhang Ye's heart thumped with excitement. He had missed her badly. Otherwise, he wouldn't have even gotten up from his bed immediately after just receiving a call from Old Wu.

Zhang Ye quickly walked over to her. "What are you doing?"

Wu Zeqing smiled. "I'm loosening the soil for the flowers. I was away on a business trip for the past week and had just returned to Beijing yesterday. It's been such a long time since I've taken care of the them."

"Let me help you," Zhang Ye volunteered.

Wu Zeqing said, "Don't dirty your hands. I'm just finishing up here."

"I've nothing else to do anyway." Zhang Ye picked up a forked stick from the ground and followed along, mimicking her

loosening of the soil. At the same time, he also helped her to water the flowers.

They chatted as they gardened.

Old Wu said, "I heard that many of the examinees are scolding you now?"

Zhang Ye said, "Are they?"

Old Wu looked at him. "I think so. It was even published in the newspapers."

Zhang Ye said, "Hai, don't talk about that. It's so unfair to me, and I don't even have a way to seek redress. The Beijing Higher Education Entrance Examination Board came to find me and demanded a reform of the college entrance exam. They wanted the question setters to word the questions in the most difficult way possible. So when I heard that? Sure, I'll make the questions then! But as it turned out, when the exams were done, the examinees started blaming it all on me. Why didn't they criticize the other question setters as well? Why didn't they scold the Beijing Higher Education Entrance Examination Board instead? Don't you think I've been wronged?! Therefore, I'll simply not show my face for now and lie low for a few more days. After this issue passes, this bro will return as good as new again!"

Wu Zeqing stood up and dusted the soil off her hands. "Alright, I'm done here. Go into the house and have a seat first, I'll tidy up the things outside. Oh right, there are some boxes on the sofa.

Open them up and take a look."

Zhang Ye asked curiously, "What's in them?"

Wu Zeqing smiled gently. "I went shopping during my business trip and I bought two set of clothes for you. Try them on and see if they suit you. I think they will look nice on you."

Zhang Ye chuckled. "You're super busy, yet you still found time to buy clothes for me."

Wu Zeqing smiled and said, "Go on. Try them."

Although Zhang Ye affectionately chided her, he was actually very happy inside. He went into the house and searched around on the first floor. He spotted the packaging on the sofa and unwrapped them one by one. After looking at the clothes, he immediately took them and went upstairs to try them on.

He went downstairs.

"I changed." Zhang Ye showed off his new attire.

Wu Zeqing had finished tidying up the flower beds and had just returned to the house. "Let me get a good look." After studying him thoroughly, she nodded slightly and beamed. "You look pretty good. This color and style are quite suitable for you. Do they fit?"

Zhang Ye also liked the clothes a lot. "Yep."

'That's good.' Wu Zeqing walked up to him and adjusted his collar a little. "It's a bit crumpled here. Take it off later. I'll iron it for you."

"OK." Zhang Ye also looked in the mirror. "You have good taste indeed. I was getting worried recently that I would have no more clothes to wear. It's already been some months since I've bought any new clothes."

Old Wu said, "You're quite frugal."

Zhang Ye said, "I'm not being frugal; it's just that I don't have the chance to buy clothes. Whenever I go to the mall, I get recognized easily so it's inconvenient to buy anything there. Unlike other celebrities, they have an agent and agency to help take care of their necessities and even have companies providing custom-made clothes for them. I don't have an agent nor an agency. Although I have an office, Central TV is such a petty employer. Although they will prepare a wardrobe for the show, after the show ends, you have to sign for it and return it. If we do not sign or the clothes go missing, we still have to compensate them out of pocket."

Wu Zeqing looked at his reflection and said, "Next time you want to get some clothes, let me know and I'll help you get them. You are a public figure and associate professor now, so you definitely have to be particular about your clothing. When people look at you, they'd at least have to see you as a professor, right?"

"Right."

"Have you eaten breakfast yet?"

"Not yet, what about you?"

"I just ate. There's still some congee left. Do you want some?"

"What type of congee?"

"Millet congee."

"I'll take it."

"Do you want eggs?"

"Yes, I want them sunny side up."

"Hur hur, wait awhile then."

"Sorry for the trouble, Old Wu."

"It's no trouble."

Zhang Ye wasn't modest; he treated her home as his own. He closed his eyes and leaned back on the sofa comfortably with his

legs crossed while waiting for breakfast to be ready.

Whenever he was with Old Wu, she would never let him do any chores. In the past, Zhang Ye had in fact tried to argue for a bit, wanting to help her with the chores. But after that, he no longer insisted.

Chapter 716: Zhang Ye's Classroom Is Back!

After breakfast.

"Old Wu, I'm full."

"Did you like it?"

"It was really delicious. It's not like this bro is sucking up to you by saying that, but your culinary skills are truly excellent. Among all the people I've come across since childhood, your cooking tastes the best. I've never eaten anything so delicious before. I even had two or three bowls of the millet congee. If I ate any more than that, my stomach would've burst apart. I'm so full now that I can't stuff myself any further."

"As long as you like eating it."

"That's for sure."

"Do whatever you need to do. Big Sis will go and do the dishes now."

"Oh, do you have a notebook?"

"Laptop you mean? Yes, it's upstairs in my bedroom's drawer."

"Alright, I need to use it."

"Go ahead and get it from upstairs."

Zhang Ye made himself at home and headed straight up to Old Wu's bedroom. He found the laptop and brought it downstairs. He spotted a shady area in the front yard of the villa where there was a rocking chair. Seeing that it was Old Wu's garden and how it looked pretty nice out there, he headed outside and laid back on the rocking chair. He powered on the laptop and placed it on his lap, then got online. He also played some music to listen to by-the-by.

Old Wu was washing the dishes while Zhang Ye admired her. There was a sense of harmony in the air. Sometimes, this was what a relationship should be like. There wasn't any earth-shattering, over-the-top excitement. Both people could just be doing their own things and not say a word to each other, but as long as they were together and could see each other, it was still something they could be very happy about and the relationship would still be as strong as any other.

Old Wu was wearing a neat white shirt today. It was very simple, without any decorations or patterns on it. She was in a pair of coffee-colored slacks and her shirt was tucked in, secured with a thin belt. She looked very capable and experienced doing what she was doing. Her clothes did not get in the way of her scrubbing the bowls, nor did any water splash onto her. Just from this alone, it could be seen that she regularly did her own chores.

Just thinking about how a great beauty like that was his girlfriend, all of the cells in his body were exploding with

happiness. However he thought, she was beautiful. However he looked, he felt extremely pleasant. The so-called mood, defined actions. When a person was happy, anything they did wouldn't feel tough. Zhang Ye hummed along to the music from the laptop as he logged into Weibo.

He posted: "Good news! Good news! Zhang Ye's Classroom is back!"

Zhang Ye had actually intended to lie low for several days and not appear anywhere for at least 10 to 15 days. However, as he was unable to suppress the good mood he was in today, he decided that he would just make an appearance.

When he appeared, his Weibo suddenly became lively.

"That Zhang guy is here!"

"You still dare appear?"

"Capture the wild Zhang Ye!"

"Scold him!"

"Everyone, come and beat up this guy! Zhang Ye is planning on proposing another question!"

"It's Zhang Ye's Classroom again? Those elementary math

questions from the previous time nearly made me vomit blood. What kinds of questions are you planning on this time? The key question is: what are the prizes?"

"If the prizes aren't attractive enough, I won't be taking part!"

"I would like to see just what sort of wondrous question you can come up with this time!"

Quite a lot of people had gathered around, including some of this year's college entrance examinees, Zhang Ye's fans, and some observing netizens, pushing the popularity of his Weibo up the charts.

When Zhang Ye saw enough people observing his Weibo, he smiled and posted: "The same rules apply. I will post several questions and prizes will be awarded for those who get them all correct. Because of this year's college entrance examination's Chinese Literature and Mathematics questions' difficulty level, many of you have very strong negative opinions of me, so I have decided to increase the level of the prizes. Those who can correctly answer all the questions that I give will not only receive an autographed calligraphy piece from me, they will also be able to scold me face-to-face for 30 minutes. There's no limit to the amount of prize winners, but it's on a first come, first serve basis. Come and quickly join in!"

When he announced this, the netizens were all stirred up!

"Are you for real?"

"Are you sure, Teacher Zhang?"

"Hahahaha! I must definitely join!"

"Can we really scold you face-to-face? That would be great!"

"Count me in! Everyone, let's answer this together!"

"Everyone, come and join in. The more people we have, the stronger we get. If we can win this, then we will have a chance to scold Zhang Ye right to his face!"

"Come on, give us the questions!"

"Zhang Ye is totally underestimating us! After he presented those elementary math questions previously, I went through them many times and ascertained his style of question writing. Now that we're doing this again, I'm sure I'll definitely be able to answer all of them correctly!"

"Everyone, let's do this. This opportunity might never come again!"

"I've been waiting so long for this day to come!"

"Everything was written out in black and white and with everyone as witness, let's not give Zhang Ye the chance to deny it

when he loses!"

"Hehehe, I've already taken screenshots for evidence. We must definitely let Zhang Ye have a taste of defeat this time!"

Word of this event spread like wildfire. In the blink of an eye, countless people had gathered here, especially those examinees from this year's Beijing college entrance exam. They were all gnashing their teeth, hating Zhang Ye. So when they saw this chance, they immediately put down whatever they were doing and charged over, each more high-spirited than the last, each roaring more than the last!

When Zhang Ye saw all the excited netizens, he mustered up a laugh: "This time, it won't be an elementary math question. The scope of these questions will be the same as the college entrance exam, except they won't distinguish between different subjects."

"Come on!"

"Whatever you say!"

"I can answer any question you give!"

"Give the questions quickly! I'm getting impatient!"

"There's nothing to be afraid of even if it's a college entrance exam question. We have so many examinees here. Even if I can't do it, there are still university students around. If they are unable to

answer as well, there are still all the postgrads getting their Masters or PhDs. If all of us unite, we can definitely bring down Zhang Ye!"

Countless netizens were all gathered on Weibo, their eyes watching and waiting for the questions to be released.

At this moment, Wu Zeqing finished washing the dishes and was walking out of the house. "Are you chatting online?"

Zhang Ye raised his head and smiled at her. "I'm holding an event, a question and answer session with a chance at winning a prize."

"Let me see." Old Wu walked beside him.

Zhang Ye slid over. "Let's sit together?"

The chair wasn't exactly spacious, because how large could a rocking chair be?

Old Wu looked down and did not reject the offer. She sat down next to him.

Old Wu read all the posts on his Weibo. "Are you seriously going to find some time to let the netizens scold you?"

Zhang Ye said, "How is that possible?"

"Then why did you say that?" Old Wu said with a smile.

Zhang Ye replied happily, "The key here is that they must first be able to answer my questions correctly."

Old Wu who was leaning back in the chair now suddenly had her interest perked. "I want to see what kinds of questions you have prepared too."

A number of people on Weibo were already pressing for the questions to be released faster.

"Quickly!"

"Where did he go?"

"Did Teacher Zhang run away because he got scared?"

"Quickly post the questions. I'm getting anxious here. You've already promised us that we can get to scold you if we get everything correct. We're all witnesses here. Even if you run, it's no use."

"Teacher Zhang, you're definitely going to lose this time!"

Everyone was very excited.

At this moment, Zhang Ye's Weibo updated. He posted the interesting questions from his previous world line by line onto Weibo.

Chapter 717: Zhang Ye, You've Really Won!

The questions were announced on Zhang Ye's Weibo.

Question 1: Essay.

The question was as follows:

A young man is wandering around at the beach, looking glum.

"Why the long face?" an old man asks.

The young man explained that even though he had always done his best—in life and his work—he had never gotten recognized or respected.

"Watch carefully." The old man picked up a grain of sand and threw it away. "Can you find that grain of sand?"

The young man smiled wryly and shook his head.

"I have here with me a pearl as well." The old man took out a huge pearl and weighed it in his hand, then proceeded to throw it onto the beach. "Now, that won't be difficult to find, right? Become a pearl and no one will ignore you."

The question was posted on Weibo, line by line.

When many of the netizens read up to here, they smiled.

"This is too simple!"

"This question is a very traditional one."

"This composition isn't bad. This is the first time I've read this story, and while it looks very simple and straightforward, it carries a rather strong philosophy behind it. Even if this question had been included in the college entrance exam this year, it would have been very suitable. It allows for a very clear thought process so that the examinees can reflect and extend on it, as it focuses on the importance of self-worth and society's acknowledgment that could then be written as an essay. The essay can start off with the story of the sand grain and pearl, or from the importance of hard work and..."

As the netizens commented and analyzed the question in all seriousness, the topic of the question was suddenly and unexpectedly revealed.

—If I become a pearl, no one would ignore me anymore? That made a lot of sense, as the young man thought about it for a moment. Then he picked up the pearl and ran off!

Question requirement: Please use the topic of "Where should the most basic level of trust between people exist?" to write an essay. There is no limitation to how the topic is used, but the essay must not be fewer than 800 words.

At this line, all the netizens were dumbfounded!

"Holy f**k!"

"The most basic level of trust...between people?"

"What kind of a twist is this!?"

"Zhang Ye, I'm cursing your great-grandpa!"

"Where did the self-worth and society's acknowledgment we were just talking about go? And the story of the grain of sand and pearl that somehow got cut short and became a mess? Why did he steal the pearl and run away?! Does he need to have such low moral integrity?! Your sister! After that long-ass introduction, the requirement of the question had nothing to do with it at all!"

"Zhang Ye, you cheat!"

"Pfft! I'm cramping from laughing!"

"Damn, we've been tricked by this passage again!"

When the question requirement was given, everyone immediately jumped up and started cursing colorfully. They'd witnessed wondrous questions before, but nothing as wondrous as this. Was this a Chinese Literature question or a joke?

"I was still wondering why Zhang Ye would offer that prize so calmly!"

"Yeah, this question is basically unanswerable!"

"Who says it's unanswerable? I'll give it a try!"

"Right, it's just asking for 'Where should the most basic level of trust between people exist?' I'll write an essay!"

Some of the netizens charged forward, ready to give their answers.

"Come on, next question!"

"Where's the second question?"

"I won't believe that we can't answer your questions!"

"That's right, we will settle it once and for all with this guy today! I'm getting so furious!"

.....

At the Wu residence.

On the lawn in the front yard.

When Wu Zeqing saw the question Zhang Ye had typed onto his screen, she let out a laugh and then said, "No wonder you're always getting a scolding from everyone else."

Zhang Ye sniggered. "That's how they show their love for me."

Old Wu said, "Is that so?"

"Of course," Zhang Ye replied as his hands continued typing the next question.

.....

On Weibo.

With the countless netizens waiting, the second question was revealed.

Mathematics problem:

50 women are performing a square dance in a plaza. They are all spread out 1 meter apart from each other, with the speakers broadcasting at 170 dB. Xiaoming's house is situated on the seventh floor. The current wind speed is 3 m/s.

The netizens began analyzing the problem.

"It's time for a math question!"

"Will it ask for the duration needed for the sound to travel? Or something else?"

"50 people spread out in a formation, 1 meter from each other? Hmm, the decibel unit is a little troublesome, and there's even wind speed involved?"

"If we ignore the acoustic resonance factor and transmission loss of power, then it won't be difficult to solve this problem."

"I've already started my calculations. It's quite simple. All I need to know now is what the problem is asking for."

Then, within the next second, the question was revealed.

Question: What is the probability of success should Xiaoming attempt to dump feces on the women in the plaza?

Ah??

The netizens all fainted all once!

"Dumping feces? Why would it be asking about dumping feces?"

"I'll dump on your sister, Zhang Ye!"

"What about the transmission of sound we were just talking about?"

"Let me calm down for a moment, I feel a little lightheaded!"

"How did this become a probability question?"

"Hey Zhang, why do you never play according to the rules!"

"Let me give this question a try. I don't believe I can't do it! Since the weight of the feces is unknown, as well as the throwing strength and speed, the women in the question are also gathered in a single location. When the feces are flung, their surface area will gradually change. Let us first establish the axes of the objects. If Xiaoming is on the z-axis, then the senior ladies will be on the x-y axis....Next, we have to calculate the parabola of the flung object..."

"Previous poster, you're awesome!"

"Bro, we are all depending on you!"

"Good luck! I think you can do it."

Some science geek started doing the calculations!

At this moment, Zhang Ye's third question was posted.

Question: [Spring is the season for mating](#). At 6 PM Beijing time, on the day of the vernal equinox, Police Constable Xiaoli raised his head to the sky at a 38° angle of elevation and saw the North Star. Afterwards, he led his team and rushed into an underground prostitution den to raid it. What are the most likely words that the John in the room would shout out when he realizes that this is a raid?

A. É Dī Gè Shén Ah [2. "Oh my god" in Guanzhong dialect]

B. Diū Léi Lóu Móu [3. "F**k your mom" in Cantonese]

C. Nóng Xiǎng Zǔ Sā [4. "What do you want" in Shanghainese]

D. Ssibal [5. Motherf*cker/씨발 in Korean]

Countless strings of "what the f**k" were already flashing in front of the eyes netizens eyes!

"What kind of a question is this! What the heck is this!"

"Why does it even include the word 'ssibal!'"

"Who the hell would know what they would shout out!"

"Who can solve this question!"

With that, Zhang Ye followed up with his last question.

Question 4: A BMW sedan with a power rating of 6.0×10^4 watts is traveling on a level highway when it comes to a braking stop 5 meters away from an old granny. The old granny's weight is known to be 50 kg.

With the experience from the previous three questions, the netizens were wiser this time and did not assume the question's requirements before they were mentioned. Since they had fallen for Zhang Ye's tricks previously, they just patiently waited for Zhang Ye to finish and announce the full question.

The question requirement was posted.

Question requirements:

1: Please state the power at which the old granny would fall to the ground at.

2: How much would the old granny demand as compensation?

The netizens: "...!@#\$\$%^&*()! ! !"

"Power of the fall?"

"How can a fall still be measured by power?"

"How much in compensation? Like hell I know how much the old granny would want for compensation!"

At this moment, many of the netizens and examinees felt that they had been too naive. When they first saw Zhang Ye announcing the prizes, they still came over excited, thinking that they would get a chance to scold Zhang Ye right to his face. However, when they gave it some thought now, they should have known what kind of a person Zhang Ye was. He was so wicked and sly, and the past experience would have told them that only Zhang Ye could give others a face smacking, not the other way around. Just looking at these questions, this fellow must have planned to not let them win from the very beginning. All of the questions were "broken!"

"I'm so angry that I could cry!"

"How despicable!"

"These questions are basically unsolvable!"

"I was wondering why he would dare make such big claims!"

"Zhang Ye, come out!"

No one was having any of this.

Zhang Ye posted on Weibo: "The questions have all been announced. Is there anyone who can answer them? I can relax my requirements a little. As long as someone can answer 3 out of the 4 questions correctly, I will pass him or her and award the prizes accordingly. That means that, other than the old granny demanding compensation question, as long as the other 3 questions are answered correctly, it is good enough for me."

The netizens continued scolding.

"What the hell! Other than the essay which we can still write about, who could answer the other questions?!"

"These broken questions must not even have answers!"

"The way I see it, you're just bullshitting us right now!"

"That's right, this guy must have come up with the questions without thought. Even he couldn't answer them!"

"That must be it. He even included something like 'ssibal'? And 'É Dī Gè Shén Ah'? What has this question got to do with the information that was included at the beginning! If you're so capable, tell us the correct answer! Otherwise, stop bullshitting us!"

"Right, this question must be unsolvable. Zhang Ye is definitely

trying to cheat us!"

"Zhang Ye, you're too wicked. During the college entrance exam, you cheated our examinees. Now that the exam is over, you're trying to cheat us?"

"Down with this guy!"

"This broken question can only be thought up by someone like you!"

"Stop using your brainpower. What Zhang Ye's Classroom? This is all just Zhang Ye making fun of us. The questions don't have answers, so let's not waste the effort to solve them!"

No one was trying to solve them anymore as all of them began scolding Zhang Ye on Weibo.

After Zhang Ye waited for the longest time and no one came forward with an answer, he posted: "Who says that I am making fun of you all? Since I can give the question, of course there is an answer. Does anyone still want to give them a try?"

The netizens found it both funny and annoying.

"Bullshit!"

"What answers have you got!"

"Hur hur!"

"Teacher Zhang, you're too stubborn!"

"Then why don't you show us the answers?"

"I still won't believe you!"

With the commotion becoming livelier, a lot of celebrities also came to observe.

Yao Jiancai's Weibo: "F**k, how is this a college entrance exam question? This is obviously a joke!"

A female singer's Weibo: "Do these questions really have answers? It must be a scam, right?"

No one disagreed. They all believed that Zhang Ye was using the questions to tell a joke.

However, a minute later, Zhang Ye followed up with a post with the answers in it!

For example, the third question: "In the guise of an absurd situation, there is a geographical question that is packaged very nicely into it. Why? First off, the John would likely utter something in his native language in the midst of his panic. As such,

the objective of the question was to find out where he was located. Then just where is this prostitution den located? We know that the angle of elevation of the North Star is also the latitude of the location, so we can say that the location is situated on the 38th parallel north of the equator. By looking at the answer options, B. is Diū Léi Lóu Móu which we clearly know it to be the dialect of Guangdong Province. That location is situated somewhere around the 20th parallel north of the equator. We can safely exclude that answer because of that, while C is Nóng Xiǎng Zǔ Sā which we know to be a dialect somewhere in Shanghai. Shanghai is based around the 31st parallel north of the equator, so that is clearly the wrong answer as well!"

Seeing the explanation by Zhang Ye regarding the answer, the netizens were all stunned!

"Holy f**k!"

"Holy shit!"

Zhang Ye continued: "The answer comes down to A and D. É Dī Gè Shén is a language from where? That is from the Shaanxi dialect, while ssibal is obviously from Korean. The problem now is that both Shaanxi and Korea are both located around the 38th parallel north of the equator, so we are unable to judge from the information we have on the latitude. Because of this, it won't be easy to solve, so what can we do? Well, there's still the longitude information! However, looking at the question, there is no such information given. What is given is that it is 6 PM Beijing time and the incident happened on the day of the vernal equinox. That given time was right during sunset in Beijing. Korea is located at

the east of Beijing, so at 6 PM, their skies are already dark, while Shaanxi is located at the west of Beijing and for them, the sun has not set yet. When Police Constable Xiaoli raised his head, he could see the North Star. That would mean that it was no longer daytime, therefore the likelihood of the prostitution den being situated in Shaanxi can also be excluded. And with that, we arrive at the answer of D. ssibal. By the way, the usage of the 'Police Constable Xiaoli' was just a red herring. Some of you might have excluded the possibility of the foreign option in the answers because of it, but remember that there are also people with the last name of Li in Korea!"

The answer was revealed!

The netizens fell into a dead silence!

Yao Jiancai was stunned!

That female singer was stunned!

The examinees were stunned!

"...Zhang Ye, you've won! You've truly won!!"

Chapter 718: A Hardworking Comic!

Faced with such an answer from Zhang Ye, the netizens could only react with a "f*ck" to express their feelings!

"I'm in the process of being dumbfounded!"

"He actually solved it!"

"Wow, you really had the answer!"

"Awesome! I'm totally convinced!"

"Pfft, me too, I'm convinced as well!"

"I faceplanted onto my keyboard because of laughing too much. Teacher Zhang is indeed Teacher Zhang. Even his way of teaching is unlike others. He is always so interesting and funny, even to the point of being wondrous. I thought he had invented those questions on the spot at the spur of the moment, but who knew that there were really answers to them!"

"Just how bored did Teacher Zhang get? He must have been really bored to have been able to come up with questions like that! On top of that, he could even come up with such a goddamn logical answer to such a far-fetched question!"

"I'm kneeling!"

"Zhang Ye, I'm also kneeling to you!"

"Teacher Zhang, you're too strong! No one in the world can stop that comedic march of yours! The netizen with post #679 is right, just how bored were you!?"

The netizens fainted one by one!

A few Peking University teachers had also appeared because of these questions.

Dean Pan from the School of Mathematical Sciences on his Weibo: "..."

Su Na from the Chinese Department on her Weibo: "..."

The Chinese Department's Director Chang Kaige's Weibo: "..."

These questions were typed out by Zhang Ye spontaneously without the need to use the Memory Search Capsules. It wasn't because his memory was so good that he had them all memorized from his time in the previous world. Rather, during his time at the online television station, while working on his show Zhang Ye's Talk Show, Zhang Ye had made use of the Memory Search Capsules to retrieve all the memories in regards to Tonight 80s Talk Show, Mr. Zhou Live Show, Bao Zou Big News Events, and other similar talk shows. He had already locked down that batch of memories, therefore he could pull up all those questions without

needing to think. The questions he threw out here today were all questions from his previous world's Bao Zou Big News Events.

If he had used them as the college entrance exam questions, there would definitely be some problems due to the impreciseness of the questions. But at the very least, it was enough for a good laugh that everyone could enjoy. On this matter, Zhang Ye's objective had been met. He only needed to be rigorous with regards to the college entrance exam questions, but now that the college entrance exam was over, if he still maintained that rigorous façade, then he was just going to bring more contempt upon himself. If he instead clowned around in an impromptu fashion, occasionally teasing others, it would help him improve his image a little and bring him back to being loved by the people.

From the looks of it, it was working rather well.

"Teacher Zhang is still just as funny!"

"Yeah, you're presenting a geography/physics question just like how you'd perform a crosstalk!"

"I was one of those examinees tortured by Zhang Ye this year. The thing I hate most about him is that no matter how hard I try to hate him, I can't do it. Zhang Ye keeps adapting and keeps us laughing, so even if I want to scold him, I would be scolding him while laughing. Hai, I guess this is what Zhang Ye's individual style is—a hardworking comic! He includes his jokes in everything he says, in his shows, in his poems, and now even in his questions!"

"I find myself liking Zhang Ye more and more!"

"A comedic associate professor!"

"Where there is Zhang Ye, there will not be a lack of doubt and scoldings, yet at the same time, there is also a lot of joy. He is truly the ideal entertainer of my heart!"

At this moment, some of the netizens started another commotion.

"What about the other questions?"

"The answers to the other questions!"

"That question with the flinging of feces, how do you solve that?"

However, just when Zhang Ye was about to announce the next question's answer, someone suddenly posted their own version of the answer in the comment section of Weibo. This answer immediately left everyone stunned, not because it was an exceptional answer but because most of them couldn't understand what was written. X-axis, y-axis, differentials, and functions were all squeezed into the formulas, leaving people baffled but impressed by how amazing it looked!

"Damn, who is this person?"

"Could someone really have solved it?"

"Godly!"

"Hahaha, how awesome!"

"Has it been solved? Is the answer correct?"

When Zhang Ye saw it, he was also stunned for a moment, but then immediately gave it a Like afterwards. Then, when he noticed the Weibo handle, he was stunned for another moment but recovered with a smile on his face as he came to a realization. That person's Weibo username was—LinglingPO. Intuitively, Zhang Ye guessed that this person was probably Huang Lingling, the young girl he had met at Summer Palace during the International Math Olympiad.

Then, LinglingPO sent Zhang Ye a private message: "Teacher, did I get it correct?"

Zhang Ye immediately replied: "Student Huang, you did well."

Student Huang? LinglingPO immediately replied with a horrified emoticon: "How, how did you know that it was me? Teacher, you... still remember me?"

Zhang Ye sent her a smiley face: "I guessed. As for whether I remember you...I am not that forgetful yet. Has your brother also taken his college entrance exam?"

Huang Lingling: "He's taking it next year."

Zhang Ye: "I've seen your Math exam. You got a perfect score. You did great. You were the only examinee to get a perfect score in Math. No one else managed to."

Huang Lingling: "Hehe, thanks Teacher, I will work even harder."

Zhang Ye asked: "Where did you apply for your first choice?"

Huang Lingling replied without even thinking: "Peking University, of course! My greatest goal is to become your student, but I don't know if I will qualify for the school since I didn't do too well on my other subjects."

Zhang Ye: "It's not going to be a problem. If you don't meet the admission cutoff score, come look for me. I will help arrange something for you."

Huang Lingling replied surprised: "Ah, really? Thank you, thank you, Teacher!"

The tier 1 scores had already been released, but the cutoff scores for Peking and Tsinghua University still didn't have clear distinctions. Sometimes, even if your score was very high, you might not be admitted into Peking or Tsinghua University. In other words, this meant that even if your score was not high, you

might still be able to get admitted into Peking or Tsinghua University.

For the other higher institutes of education, the cutoff score boundaries were very straightforward. For example, if a specific score qualified you for Beijing Normal University, or a range between one score and another allowed you to qualify for Renmin University, then as long as the application for your intended university was within the top two choices, there would be an automated ranking to assign you to the institution you applied for. However, for institutions like Peking or Tsinghua University, they had greater freedom, fewer restrictions, and the authority to conduct their own admissions exercises. They even had special recruitment spots with more space to maneuver and overwrite the processes. For instance, in the case of an examinee qualifying with enough points for their first choice of Beijing Normal University, the second choice university couldn't steal this student for their own institution nor would they have the chance to do so. However, the authority Peking and Tsinghua University wielded allowed them to do so under the same set of circumstances as long as the examinees agreed to it. This was the special authority that the country's top two educational institutes had—and it was exactly as unreasonable as it sounds.

After a short conversation with Huang Lingling and having chatted for a while with the other netizens, Zhang Ye successfully accomplished his mission of downplaying the "scammer" label the netizens had given to him and went offline.

Chapter 719: An Independent Woman!

In the front yard of Old Wu's house.

Zhang Ye closed the browser.

Wu Zeqing's smiling eyes left the screen. "Those are the questions you gave?"

"Hah." Zhang Ye looked at her. "They're not bad, right?"

Old Wu nodded and said, "They're quite good."

Zhang Ye said, "I still have a whole lot of such questions. Maybe when I'm in a better mood someday, I might hold another session like this. Even if it doesn't contribute much to my popularity compared to me filming TV shows, or writing some essays and poems, it could still gain me some fans. Do not look down on the smaller things."

Old Wu laughed, "A thief does not leave empty-handed?"

"What are you saying, 'a thief does not leave empty-handed?'" Zhang Ye said, "I had nothing to do anyway, might as well use the opportunity to entertain everyone. If I didn't do things like that, would my popularity have risen so quickly? I'm already going quite far up the list of the B-list celebrity rankings, so my goal now is to aim for the A-list celebrity rankings. I'll just try to flex my muscles a little more to see if that would be a viable goal since The Voice

has already given me quite a significant increase in my fame."

Old Wu smiled. "If there's anything you need help with, just let me know."

Zhang Ye gave a wave of his hands. "I won't trouble you."

"Why are you still being so polite?" Old Wu glanced at him.

Zhang Ye sighed and explained, "It's not like that. You're now the Deputy Chief of the SARFT and overseeing the entire entertainment circle, so all the more I can't receive any help from you. It will be difficult for you to answer to administration. And if anyone finds out, they might start talking behind your back too. Besides, I'm not in any trouble now anyways. As long as no one is deliberately trying to pull me down or ban me, I'll definitely be fine in the entertainment circle. Who can stop me?"

What he said was really reasonable. This guy was now famous for being a stubborn and unreasonable person in both the entertainment circle and education world.

Old Wu smiled and said, "I'm not afraid of people gossiping behind my back, nor will there be any gossips either. If there's anything you need help with, just tell me. Don't forget, you're my boyfriend now, right?"

Zhang Ye corrected her, "Not only now, I still will be in the future."

Old Wu nodded. "Yes, in the future as well."

"I like hearing that." Zhang Ye smiled. "OK, don't worry that I'll be too courteous to you. If I feel that there's anything I need your help with, I will surely let you know. But most of the time, I should be able to handle any problems on my own. There won't be a need for such a high-ranking official to show her authority. Besides, if those foes of mine from the entertainment circle know that you're my girlfriend, who would still want to challenge me? I wouldn't have anyone to entertain me at that time. Without them looking for a fight, I would be bored as hell. Don't you know that my popularity so far was all because of duking it out with those people?"

In the entertainment circle, the partners of the celebrities were always these few categories:

1. Business persons, tycoons, or wealthy women and affluent second generations.
2. Fellow celebrities of similar fame.
3. Industry outsiders, usually with some status or background.

A majority of the partners of celebrities fell in those three categories. Even if there are exceptions, they are only in the small minority. However, for Zhang Ye to have found someone who was the leader of the SARFT, and not just a low-level leader, but the Deputy Chief of the SARFT, that was basically an exception of

exceptions in this case. If this news were leaked, probably no one would have believed it. Actually, even Zhang Ye found it unbelievable and felt like this was a dream when he gave it the occasional thought.

Old Wu gently laughed. "You're addicted to the fighting?"

"It's not like that. They're always going against me, so how can I not fight back? It's not my style to just stay quiet." Zhang Ye said happily, "That's why, as time passes, I even begin to feel uneasy if no industry peers scold me. It's like I'm asking for it, don't you think? It's all because of those people that I've become this way."

"It's common to have such ongoing feuds. It's also necessary. The show you came up with recently is very good." Old Wu said, "I've watched The Voice and heard the staff at the SARFT talking about it privately too. Many of them are watching this show right now and have very good things to say about it."

Zhang Ye nodded in acknowledgment. "Including all those poems, songs, stories, novels, and TV shows, this is by far my best work, and is also the most popular."

Old Wu asked, "What will you do when The Voice ends?"

Zhang Ye replied, "I've not thought of that yet. Maybe when the time comes I'll know better."

Old Wu said, "Will it go straight to the second season?"

Zhang Ye said, "That won't happen. The second season has to be at least a year later. If the time between the seasons is too short, the show's branding will be affected. That doesn't help its long-term development and sustainability."

The two of them spent quite a long time just talking about their job problems.

As Wu Zeqing was the head of the SARFT, she had insight into the most accurate news and data statistics of the entertainment industry. Naturally, Old Wu's general suggestions to Zhang Ye were also the most reliable. For example, the future policies' inclination for the variety show industry, or the current trend of the overall television show industry, all these information helped Zhang Ye gain a better understanding of this market. Even the information on some of the SARFT's major policies for the television industry which had not been implemented yet was not held back from Zhang Ye by Old Wu. In the entire television industry, the number of people who could get information on unimplemented policies was probably only Zhang Ye, and only he alone could get such favorable treatment. As they said, a great tree would provide the best shade.

The more he spent time with Old Wu, the more Zhang Ye realized he liked her. It was not because of the fact that Old Wu could help him, as Zhang Ye was never the type who liked receiving help. Whatever he did, he would usually only do whatever was within his means. Things he couldn't handle, he would just not take on. He hardly ever asked for help with problems. This was all down to his personality and habits. This was just the type of person he was.

The thing he liked most about Old Wu was that no matter what he did, she would support him 100% as long as it did not deviate from her principles. She would also encourage him and use her more mature and experienced viewpoint to analyze and suggest advice to him. Not only did she help Zhang Ye a lot in his decision-making process, the more important factor was actually the psychological one. With a girlfriend who spared no effort in supporting him from behind, what more could he ask for?

Old Wu might not know how to act spoiled, wasn't she the romantic type, and didn't play the little lady role. However, she was the kind of woman who would drag you back onto the correct path if you deviated from your original goals, lift you up when you were down, plant you back firmly on the ground should you get too proud, and encourage and support you on your way to success. She was someone you couldn't find anywhere else in the world even if you tried your hardest. Zhang Ye didn't know what he had done in his previous life to deserve such a woman who became his girlfriend.

When all was said and done, a woman's inner beauty was still the most important!

Does being beautiful make you any more useful?

Would long legs help?

What about large breasts?

Zhang Ye pondered over this for a moment.

...Alright, well, those are pretty important too.

Chapter 720: Tsinghua And Peking University Fight Over The Students!

The next day.

Sunday morning.

In the guest room of Old Wu's house, Zhang Ye lay in bed sleeping, snoring loudly. Yesterday night, he had discussed with Old Wu many topics regarding calligraphy and even made a few pieces. When it got late, Zhang Ye decided to stay over, though he didn't intend to leave in the first place. It wasn't easy to have matched his schedule to Old Wu's days off, so Zhang Ye definitely wanted to spend more time with her.

At 8 AM.

"Are you up?" Wu Zeqing came into the guest room from outside.

When Zhang Ye heard her voice, he opened his eyes. "Old Wu."

Old Wu said, "Let's go downstairs and have something to eat. I've already prepared breakfast."

"What time is it now?" Zhang Ye asked.

"8 o'clock," Old Wu said, dressed in her nightie.

"It's only 8? Let me lie down a little longer." Zhang Ye drowsily stayed under the covers and yawned twice in succession. "I don't know why I've been so tired for the past few days."

Old Wu smiled. "Then do you want to eat?"

Zhang Ye smacked his lips together. "Of course. Why wouldn't I want to eat the food you've cooked?"

Old Wu said, "Then shall I bring them up to have in bed?"

"Ai, that sounds great." Zhang Ye felt extremely pampered. If he were at his parent's house or the rented apartment and dared to make such a request, he would surely be given a good beating. However, at his girlfriend's house, Zhang Ye was clearly enjoying his days being treated like a young master, waited upon with great care.

Soon after, Old Wu carried the tray into the room. "Here, eat it while it's still warm. It won't be as good once it turns cold." She bent over and pulled aside a grandfather clock, then proceeded to place the tray on the bedside table beside Zhang Ye.

When she did that, Old Wu's nightie drooped down at her chest and revealed something for a second. Zhang Ye did not purposely wait for this, but subconsciously turned his sight towards her nightie's neckline. He took in the view of a pair of jiggling white and a nude-colored bra with dark undertones. Within a second, Old Wu stood straight up again and Zhang Ye couldn't see

anymore, leaving him itching for more.

If only there wasn't a bra!

Ai, just tell me, which bastard invented that lousy thing called a bra? What the hell was it good for? Where was the most basic level of trust between people?

"Have you eaten yet, Old Wu?"

"Not yet."

"Then let's eat together."

"Yes."

Wu Zeqing pulled over a chair and sat beside him.

Zhang Ye was sitting up on the bed, staying under the covers as he ate from the side of the bed. With every bite, he remarked on how good it was. He was full of praise for the breakfast Old Wu had prepared, not flattering her but rather because it was truly delicious. Old Wu's culinary skill was surely not just a level or two above his mother's. "Staying at your place for two days has surely made this bro gain five kilos."

Old Wu asked, "You're not going to work today?"

Zhang Ye nodded. "I have the next few days off."

"Peking University should be recruiting students soon. How was it this year? Are there many good students?" Old Wu asked while slowly chewing her food.

Zhang Ye took a pork with scallions bun Old Wu had steamed and said, "The admission cutoff score for Peking University hasn't been announced yet, but they should have started the recruitment already. The top scorers should be quite difficult to recruit, so they must have taken preemptive action already, but I'm not too sure about those details. I do not have a role at Peking University since I'm still suspended and haven't been back to the school yet."

Old Wu said, "Regarding your suspension, I'll ask around for you later."

"Don't worry about that," Zhang Ye said indifferently. "I'm fine with it as is, so just let nature take its course. Even if I were reinstated now, I might not have the time to go back to teaching. There's still enough things to keep me busy with on The Voice, and after that I have to think about the next show."

After breakfast.

Zhang Ye suddenly remembered something. Seeing that Old Wu had gone downstairs to do the dishes, he took out his cell phone and made a call to Dean Pan of Peking University. "Hello, Dean Pan? Has the admission cutoff grade been released yet?"

Dean Pan: "It's not out yet, but it should be out anytime now. There's probably going to be some fluctuation. What about it?"

Zhang Ye laughed: "It's like this. Do you know Huang Lingling?"

"Huang Lingling?" Dean Pan said: "The examinee who had a perfect score on the Beijing Math section?"

Zhang Ye said: "Yes. That girl might not have done too well on her other subjects and I'm afraid we might miss out on a good student if she doesn't qualify for Peking University."

Dean Pan suddenly said: "Don't worry about that. She won't slip through the net. The student recruitment team has already gone to meet with the top scorers of the exam and Huang Lingling's name is also on that list."

"Alright then, I understand."

After hanging up, Zhang Ye got up from bed and went downstairs to look for Old Wu to talk.

.....

Meanwhile.

In the outside world, this year's student recruitment began and immediately spread like wildfire!

Peking University's student recruitment team had been established early on. Like in previous years, Peking University had activated many student recruitment staff members and resources and cast their net out to various key focus schools and the homes of the examinees. Most of the student recruitment teams were made up of female teachers and staff. It was still in line with the previous years' approach policy in which they would play the emotions card to appeal to the examinees. If and when necessary, they could promise the examinees scholarships and other preferential treatments.

Su Na was a member of the Peking University student recruitment team this time. On this morning, she had come alone to a small district in Chengxi. She went upstairs to the apartment building and knocked on a door.

The door opened, revealing a middle-aged woman who had come to answer it.

Su Na gently smiled and said, "You must be Auntie Song?"

That woman asked, "You are?"

Su Na said, "I am from the Peking University student recruitment team. I contacted you last night over the phone."

"Ohhhh, you're Teacher Su," the woman spoke very politely.

Su Na looked into the house and smiled. "Is Little Chen around? I would like to chat with him."

The woman looked a little embarrassed. "My son, he...some of the Tsinghua University teachers just came over to pick him up."

Su Na was stunned. "Didn't we make an appointment yesterday?"

The woman said apologetically, "I'm so sorry, Teacher Su. I wanted my son to wait for you as well, but the two recruitment teachers from Tsinghua University had arrived at my place at 6 in the morning. They insisted on taking my son away with them. It felt a little forced, but my son and I don't want to offend anyone, so..."

Su Na was flustered. Tsinghua??

.....

Elsewhere.

No. 4 High School.

Han Henian from Peking University's Math Department had just led his team here when he was stopped by the security guards and two of the school's teachers at the gates.

The security guard asked, "What are you all doing here?"

Han Henian got out of the car. "Hello, we're from the Peking University student recruitment team. We would like to speak to your students, Zhang Zhipeng and Su Xiao, for a while. Could you please open the gates for us?"

The teachers from No. 4 High School stared at them. "It's our students' graduation ceremony today and we're having an assembly right now. You all can come back in the afternoon."

A female staff member from the student recruitment team said, "We'll just be having a quick chat with those two students and will not disrupt the graduation ceremony. We're doing this for the future of the students, aren't we?"

The No. 4 High School teacher gave a wave of his hands impatiently. "Not today, please go back."

It didn't seem like their team could get through to this school's teachers. In the end, Han Henian and the others could only park their cars on the side of the road and wait there. The two students they wanted to meet today were the sixth and eleventh place scorers of this year's Beijing college entrance examination. Peking University had already indicated that those two students must be recruited no matter what. Han Henian also had his eyes on the student named Zhang Zhipeng as he was just 5 marks short of a perfect score in the Mathematics exam. He was not only strong in math; all his other subject exams nearly scored full marks as well. That was the reason why Han Henian personally had come down today to see if he could persuade him to become their student.

After waiting for quite a while, the security guards were still unwilling to let them in.

Suddenly, a small sedan car drove over and stopped at the gate for a moment before being allowed to enter the school grounds.

Han Henian and his team thought that this might be a car belonging to the school or a school teacher and thus did not pay much attention to it. But after around 15 minutes, when this car reappeared and drove out, one of the eagle-eyed female teachers suddenly let out a scream.

"It's Zhang Zhipeng and Su Xiao!"

"Ah?"

"They've been taken away!"

"Was that Tsinghua University's Old Xu sitting in the passenger seat?"

Several members of the Peking University student recruitment team suddenly realized what was going on and immediately went up to the people from No. 4 High School to ask, "What's that about? Didn't you say that no one could enter because of the graduation ceremony?"

That teacher from No. 4 High School plausibly retorted, "The assembly is over, so they could enter."

Han Henian raged. "You!"

They finally understood that the student recruitment team from Tsinghua University had colluded with some of the teachers from No. 4 High School. They denied all entry to the Peking University student recruitment team so that they wouldn't have a chance to talk to the exam's top scorers!

.....

The same thing happened at No. 8 High School.

A press conference was being held at No. 8 High School today because their school had produced a top scholar, along with five other students ranked within the top 100 scorers of this year's Beijing college entrance exam. There was also a student who had defied all logic and scored full marks on the Beijing Mathematics exam, the only one to do so in all of Beijing. Naturally, the press conference attracted a lot of people, such as newspaper reporters, people from TV stations, parents of examinees, as well as the student recruitment teams from Peking and Tsinghua University who were poised to attack.

Once the press conference was over, four male teachers from the Tsinghua University student recruitment team rushed forward.

One of those teachers was from this year's Beijing college entrance examination's question setting team, the teacher who had a conflict with Zhang Ye and competed with him in a poetry

contest, Liao Qi.

"Student Huang Lingling, we're from Tsinghua University!"

"Student Zhou Zheng, let's have a chat. Our car is waiting outside and the Tsinghua University professors are already waiting for you at the school. Let's chat about your aspirations."

Several of those top scorers were suddenly surrounded by the people from Tsinghua University's student recruitment team.

The Peking University student recruitment team had only sent three teachers, one in her forties and two in their twenties. They were also all female teachers, so couldn't shove aside the Tsinghua team. They could only stand frozen on the outside of the crowd.

A female teacher from Peking University said furiously, "What are you guys trying to do! Huang Lingling and Zhou Zheng's first choice is our Peking University! What has it got to do with you people from Tsinghua?"

Tsinghua University's Professor Liao Qi looked at her coldly. "Everyone has a chance. Are there any rules that state that if they filled in Peking University as their first choice at the start that they must definitely go to Peking University? We have to respect the examinees' choices!" Having said that, they pulled both Huang Lingling and Zhou Zheng aside and walked out of the school. "Make way, make way!"

While Huang Lingling was being pulled away, she said alarmed, "I-I've already applied for Peking University."

A Tsinghua University male teacher pointed at Liao Qi and said, "That is Professor Liao from our institution. Professor Liao has come personally to pick you two up, so that clearly shows how sincere we are. Your filled-in intentions are not important for now. As long as you are willing to join Tsinghua University, we can accept you. Let's go. We'll chat once we're at Tsinghua University. There will be teachers there to explain to you two in detail."

Huang Lingling anxiously said, "I really don't want to go, I..."

The 3 female teachers from Peking University said in anger, "Is this even respecting the wishes of the examinees?!"

When the reporters saw that the teachers from Peking University and Tsinghua University fighting, they all looked at each other with some surprise. They had not expected that this year's competition for the top scorers would be this intense.

In previous years, the top two institutions in the country had always played the emotions card. It had always been so in recent years as well. No one had expected Tsinghua University to change to such a strong-arm tactic this year, totally foregoing the emotional side of things. They even mostly sent in their bigger and physically stronger male teachers for this specific reason—to physically get the top scorers back to the university first above all else! This tactic caught the Peking University student recruitment teams off guard!

The Peking University female teachers shouted, "They are our students!"

Liao Qi stared coldly at them. "Go away!"

The Peking University female teachers said, "Are you guys still being reasonable here?"

The male teachers of Tsinghua University did not bother with them and just continued pulling the students out of the crowd!

The teachers of No. 8 High School were all dumbfounded. They did not know whether they should intervene in the situation or not, but they were totally helpless to do anything about the situation!

Chapter 721: Zhang Ye Shows Up!

Online.

The news headlines were spreading all over the Internet.

"Tsinghua and Peking University fight over student recruitment!"

"Clashes at various key focus schools in Beijing over student recruitment!"

"Peking and Tsinghua University caught in shocking hand-to-hand combat!"

"Tsinghua University initiates public plundering of exam's top scorers!"

There were many photos posted together with the headlines. The ferocious expressions of the Tsinghua University teachers could be seen as they blocked the Peking University student recruitment teachers. The innocent and lost faces of the exam's top scorers could also be seen.

Right now, it was at the critical juncture of the student recruitment after the college entrance exam. Reporters from the media and the entire society were all focused on it. When the news headlines were published, they immediately gained a strong reaction from the people.

"Another fight over the examinees?"

"Why did they get into a physical conflict this year?"

"It was never so intense in the previous years!"

"Tsinghua University has changed from their usual tactics this year and come out in full force for the attack?"

"The top scholar of the Beijing college entrance exam and the top 10 scorers have more or less been taken away by Tsinghua University's people? If they have them picked up and brought over to Tsinghua University's school grounds, then the outcome is already determined. Once the examinees falter a little and give them their word, Peking University will be unable to do a thing about it. Tsinghua University's movements were too swift! They were really aggressive!"

"Peking University will surely suffer a great loss this time!"

"It was always a veiled strife between them every year, but now it has become an open rivalry?"

"Why doesn't the Ministry of Education do something about this toxic behavior? Since those top scorers had already applied for Peking University, why is Tsinghua University still trying to take them away? This isn't how they should be behaving."

"Heh, who cares about them. They're both top institutions in the country. This is like a fight between the gods!"

"Peking University mainly sent female recruitment teachers this year, so in terms of physical strength, they're definitely not a match for the Tsinghua University male recruitment teachers. Perhaps Peking University had not expected Tsinghua University to resort to such strong-arm tactics?!"

The news led to countless discussions about the incident!

Every year, the top scorers would be subjected to the contention between these two institutions, but it had never been like this year when all decorum was abandoned. Many of the common folk who saw this found it to be a strange and new sight. Even teachers from Beijing Normal University, Renmin University, Nanjing University, and other higher institutions were observing the commotion privately.

This incident had really kicked up quite a big fuss this time!

.....

Old Wu's residence.

Zhang Ye and Wu Zeqing also saw the news.

"Tsinghua and Peking University fought?" Zhang Ye said in a speechless manner. Even though he was in a different world now,

some things just didn't change. Just like the incident that was happening now, it had also happened on more than one occasion back in Zhang Ye's previous world. "Just to get a few students to join them, does it call for such behavior?"

Old Wu said, "Indeed it does."

Zhang Ye looked at Old Wu and remembered that she was previously the Vice President of Peking University. "When you were at Peking University, did you guys fight over the exam's top scorers every year as well?"

Old Wu shook her head. "We don't call that fighting. It's just recruitment. There are student recruitment teachers assigned to speak to those top scorers every year. Tsinghua University does the same, but it looks like they're overdoing it this year. If they continue doing it this way, there's really going to be trouble soon."

Zhang Ye glanced at her for a moment. He knew that even though Old Wu was no longer in her post as the school's Vice President, she still had Peking University's considerations at heart. After all, she had worked there for many years and surely would have developed some feelings for the institution. "Will Peking University be able to handle it?"

Old Wu said, "I don't know."

Zhang Ye blinked. "Then..."

Old Wu smiled at him. "Why don't you go take a look?"

Zhang Ye answered, "But I've already been suspended, so it wouldn't be suitable to show myself there. I don't have the status to do so either. Besides, I believe that Peking University can definitely handle the situation."

Old Wu giggled and passed him her cell phone which had the news page open on its browser. "The news reports say that even the student who got a perfect score on this year's Beijing Math exam was taken away by Tsinghua University."

"Huang Lingling?" Zhang Ye was stunned, then got irritated, which soon turned to outrage. "F**k them to their second granny! How dare they try to steal my student!?" Having said that, Zhang Ye immediately grabbed his car keys and said, "Old Wu, I'll be back for lunch. I just need to go out for a while! F**k their mother's c**t!"

Old Wu said, "You've become a professor, be a bit more civil."

Zhang Ye said angrily, "Why should I be civil? They're pushing it too far!"

In the blink of an eye, Zhang Ye had driven off furiously in his BMW X5 and charged out of the villa's grounds!

Wu Zeqing could only helplessly shake her head at this.

.....

Outside No. 8 High School.

The college entrance exam's top scholar and the others, including Huang Lingling from No. 8 High School, had been shoved into the cars reluctantly, with Liao Qi in one of the front passenger seats as both cars drove off!

The group of female teachers from Peking University ran up to give chase.

"Stop right there!"

"How can they do that!"

"Isn't that bullying! If it's not bullying, then what is!?"

"Follow them!"

The Peking University female recruitment teachers were incredibly outraged by this behavior. They got into their cars to chase after them. While they relentlessly pursued the Tsinghua University cars, they made a call back to the student recruitment team coordinators for assistance.

"Hello, Chief!"

"Little Hu, how's it going on your side? You all have to secure the recruitment of the top scorers over at No. 8 High School. Tsinghua University has been behaving too outrageously this year. They've already taken a number of the top scorers with them, so you all must definitely—"

"Our targets were taken away as well!"

"What?"

"We're chasing them at the moment. It looks like they're already heading back to Tsinghua University!"

"I understand, I will get something arranged!"

The Tsinghua University cars were leading the chase with Peking University's cars behind them. They were later joined by six or seven vehicles from the media that followed behind very closely. When it involved such big news, the media naturally wouldn't want to miss out!

.....

20 minutes later.

At Tsinghua University's main entrance.

Liao Qi was just arriving with his team in their car after turning a

corner, but immediately saw that the entrance was blocked off by quite a number of cars. They were blocked off from entering and could only come to a stop right outside the entrance.

There were more than a dozen cars lined up outside the entrance, including some from Peking University and others from Tsinghua University. Without an exception, they were all from the student recruitment teams of both schools.

About 15 minutes before this, when the Tsinghua University student recruitment team's teachers went around snapping up the examinees, Peking University was carrying out their response. Since both schools were very close to each other, only taking several minutes to travel between each other by car, the chief of the Peking University student recruitment teams made a prompt decision to stand guard outside the different entrances to Tsinghua University. When the teachers from the Tsinghua University student recruitment teams arrived, the people from Peking University immediately got out of their cars and stopped them right in their tracks!

The entire place was chaos!

Tsinghua University: "Make way! Do you intend to create trouble here?"

Peking University: "Let the students go!"

Tsinghua University: "What? Are you trying to take them away?"

Peking University: "Just who are the ones stealing here? Are you people from Tsinghua University so unreasonable?"

Tsinghua University: "Blocking our school's entrance, who are the ones being unreasonable here? If you don't make way, I'll have to call the police! The student recruitment teams have always competed fairly. If you don't have the capability to invite the students over, then are you resorting to blocking our entrance?"

Peking University: "If this was a fair competition, we wouldn't have done this and just kept quiet. But was it? You came straight out and snatched the students from us, dragging them away by force! You even resorted to using their relationships as bargaining chips, promising to arrange a good school for their love interests? How do you call that a fair competition? It's totally unheard of!"

Most of the top scorers were snatched away, while a few top scorers whose parents had informed Peking University that the Tsinghua University recruitment teachers had used the examinees' love interests as bargaining chips, promising a lot of things, and then forcefully taking them away. There were even two examinees who were poised to have a meeting with the Peking University recruitment teachers, but were intercepted by the Tsinghua University recruitment teachers who went to their homes, and persuaded their parents to ask the examinees to go to Tsinghua University's campus instead. Although the Tsinghua University teachers meant no harm to the examinees, how was this different from kidnapping them? It wasn't far-fetched to say that they had resorted to unscrupulous means!

The two groups of student recruitment teachers began to

provoke each other the moment they met!

"Old Zhou, aren't you ashamed of what you guys have done?"

"Say that again! I dare you to say that again!"

"If you dared to do it, why am I not allowed to criticize you?"

The reporters arrived at this time and got out of their vehicles quickly. Even with the presence of all these reporters around them, the student recruitment teachers from Peking and Tsinghua University did not take a step back and continued arguing!

In one of the cars.

Huang Lingling anxiously said, "Teacher, I've already spoken with the Peking University teachers. Can I...can I leave first?"

Liao Qi turned around to assure her, "Don't worry, Student Lingling. We at Tsinghua University will give you the best treatment, definitely much better than Peking University. The scholarship is just part of the terms we will be offering. As for anything else you wish to request, you can just bring it up when the time comes and we can discuss it." Having said that, he opened the door and got out of the car. Then he lowered his head to tell the other student recruitment teacher who was the driver, "It's quite a mess out there. Don't scare the children. Keep the car doors locked."

The Tsinghua University student recruitment teacher nodded and locked the doors.

Huang Lingling became even more anxious now.

The other three exam's top scorers from No. 8 High School were also in a dilemma. Faced with the Tsinghua University teachers, they did not dare offend them, so they kept quiet.

Su Na of Peking University arrived in her car at this moment. She saw seven or eight cars belonging to the Tsinghua University student recruitment teams also parked there. Inside those cars were the top scorers of this year's college entrance exam, including the examinee she had made an appointment with yesterday but who was taken away this morning by one of Tsinghua University's teachers. Su Na initially thought that only herself and a small group of teachers had their examinees taken away, but who could have thought that the same thing had happened to more than 20 of the exam's top scorers. All of them were within this year's top 30 scorers of the college entrance exam, the most excellent group of talents which had been filtered out by the examination. All of them were now held inside Tsinghua University cars!

Each year, the competition between Tsinghua and Peking University had always been closely matched. For some specializations like the Chinese Department, Peking University was the more attractive choice to the students while Tsinghua University had other specializations which were more attractive over Peking University's. Overall, both institutions were very evenly matched, but Peking University probably still stood out a little more. However, with the situation now? Almost all of the top

30 scorers of the Beijing college entrance examination were invited over by Tsinghua University to their campus. This was obviously an unusual situation!

When Su Na and Liao Qi met face to face, she immediately asked, "Professor Liao, isn't Tsinghua University going overboard this time?"

Liao Qi said coldly, "It's all based on ability, what's there to be overboard about? Our specializations are more attractive than yours, so naturally the examinees would prefer to join Tsinghua University."

Behind them was a female teacher from Peking University who also knew Liao Qi and was old friends with him, often chatting whenever they met. However, as of today, all friendship was cast aside because Tsinghua University's actions had infuriated the student recruitment teachers from Peking University. She said, "Peking University's Chinese Department is the number one department in the entire country, and you're talking about this place being more attractive?"

Liao Qi gave a cold smile. "But you only just got first place this year, isn't that right?!"

The Peking University female teacher in her forties said, "Even if it was last year or the year before that, Tsinghua University's Chinese Department still cannot compare!"

Suddenly, a woman walked out slowly from Tsinghua

University's main entrance. When she heard that, she laughed and said, "Do you mean to say that Tsinghua University only has the Chinese Department to represent them?"

That person was Xin Ya!

"Professor Xin!"

"Professor Xin!"

Several of the Tsinghua University teachers turned to look at her.

Xin Ya was from the Mathematics Association and also one of the most well-known young mathematicians in the country. Back at Summer Palace during the International Math Olympiad, Zhang Ye had met her. She was Old Wu's childhood friend and they had a great relationship. Later on, Zhang Ye met her another few times. They couldn't be considered strangers anymore. Xin Ya actually wasn't a Tsinghua University teacher. She was now affiliated with a research facility and was leading her own team in research projects. However, many years back, Xin Ya had graduated from Tsinghua University's Math Department, so of course she still had deep ties with her alma mater. For this year's student recruitment, Tsinghua University's Dean of the Math Department, who was also her teacher during her student days, had approached Xin Ya to use her name in the mathematics world to attract more of the exam's top scorers into joining them.

Xin Ya was waiting inside Tsinghua University's campus all this

while. When she heard that the examinees were all held up outside the main entrance, she came outside to take a look. "Let's compete with our Math Departments, shall we?"

Several of the Tsinghua University student recruitment teachers were bolstered by her appearance.

"That's right!"

"Why don't we compete with our Math and Physics Departments?"

Actually, Peking University's Math Department was also one of the top few in the country, and had ranked first on many an occasion. However, they had been declining in recent times, and with Tsinghua University recently recruiting five very well-known mathematicians as professors emeriti of the school, Peking University's glory days had become a thing of the past. Tsinghua University's Math department had completely gotten the upper hand on Peking University in their qualities of math.

They were basically showing off, since they knew the students could see and hear everything they were talking about right now. The final decision in choosing which school to join was still down to the examinees themselves, so there was definitely a need to showcase the most excellent aspects of their school.

Xin Ya's words stumped many of the Peking University student recruitment teachers.

Xin Ya laughed. "What? Why aren't you all saying anything?"

However, it was right at this moment, when no one took notice, that a majestic BMW had parked at the side of the road. The door opened and a young man stepped out of his car. As he headed straight for the center of the commotion, he bluntly said, "Did I just hear someone saying that they wanted to compete with our Peking University's Math and Physics Departments? Alright then! Who wants to compete?"

When everyone heard this young man's voice, the first thought they had was that this person was too arrogant, the second thought was that he too proud of himself. But when everyone turned their heads to look at him, they could only gasp in surprise!

Su Na was very happy to see him. "Teacher Zhang!"

The Peking University student recruitment teachers also cheered!

"It's Zhang Ye!"

"Professor Zhang is here!"

"Teacher Zhang, these people from Tsinghua University are really taking it too far!"

Among the Tsinghua University student recruitment teachers, there was an associate professor and a full professor in Xin Ya. But

for the Peking University student recruitment teachers, they were all just made up of ordinary staff members, with more than half of them not even teachers, just support staff. Those who were teachers weren't tenured professors or such. They were just young and ordinary teachers since Peking University had not arranged for any professors to be on the student recruitment teams in the first place.

That was why when Zhang Ye who was a Peking University associate professor came along, the student recruitment teachers seemingly found a support pillar and reacted like they had spotted a family member!

Chapter 722: Rage Smash!

Zhang Ye had arrived!

At once, the Peking University student recruitment teams' morale immediately shot up. All of them knew that Zhang Ye had been suspended long ago due to the scolding incident involving the foreign dignitaries, but a suspension did not mean that he was fired. Speaking of which, Peking University had still kept Zhang Ye's role active all this while during his suspension. His concurrent posting as a lecturer in both the Math and Chinese Departments did not change, and except for a few teachers in Peking University he had clashed with before, all of the Peking University teachers and students still regarded him as one of their own!

Even Han Henian from Peking University's Math Department, who had clashed with Zhang Ye before and did not like him much, had dropped all his biases against him at this moment. Since one of the examinees he had his eye on and whom he wanted to take as his student was stolen by Tsinghua University, he knew that they needed to stand united against the common enemy!

The Peking University student recruitment teachers were inspired.

In contrast, the Tsinghua University student recruitment teachers' expressions changed.

Around them, all the reporters immediately had glints shining in their eyes. Zhang Ye had arrived, and wherever he appeared, there

would surely be news. Everyone knew of his short temper, so if he was here, then there was no need to even ask. There would surely be trouble today!

Xin Ya stared at him.

Zhang Ye arrived at the center of the commotion. He looked at Xin Ya. "Professor Xin, I seem to have heard you saying that Tsinghua University wanted to compete in the field of math and physics with Peking University?"

Xin Ya: "..."

Everyone from Peking University immediately echoed this.

"That's right!"

"Who's afraid of whom?"

"Whoever wants to compete with us, come!"

Just half a minute ago, it was the Tsinghua University student recruitment teachers who were creating the commotion. However, in the blink of an eye, it was now time for the Peking University student recruitment teachers to fight back!

Xin Ya nearly died of anger there and then!

The people of Tsinghua University also looked worse than the next!

Compete in the field of math and physics? You even solved a world-class mathematical conjecture, so who the f**k could compete with you!

A student recruitment teacher from Tsinghua University said, "You perform exceptionally well in math, but that's your personal achievement and has nothing to do with the standard of Peking University's Math Department!"

Su Na said, "This is the first time I've heard of such twisted logic. Teacher Zhang is a teacher of Peking University, so his ability in math would of course be integrated into our Peking University's math standard as well. How can you say it has nothing to do with Peking University?"

Another Peking University female recruitment teacher echoed, "If we're talking about having no relation to the school, then it must be Professor Xin whose work has nothing to do with Tsinghua University. Her work is not with Tsinghua University, so what are you all showing off for!"

A Tsinghua University teacher rebutted, "Professor Xin was a student of Tsinghua University!"

The teachers of Peking University: "And Teacher Zhang is an associate professor of Peking University!"

Both groups of people started arguing even spiritedly, but Peking University had clearly gained the momentum and was outarguing those people from Tsinghua University. Meanwhile, the student recruitment teachers from Tsinghua University could only muster random retorts against them. In the field of mathematics education, when faced with Zhang Ye, they clearly did not have enough backing them for an argument.

Xin Ya was in low spirits. She stared at Zhang Ye and said, "Professor Zhang, what's the meaning of this hostility?"

Zhang Ye threw his hands into the air. "I don't mean anything, but I did hear someone claim that our Peking University's Math Department doesn't compare with Tsinghua University's, so I can't take that lying down. The Math Department in Peking University has always been in the top two in the country, and the quality of our teachers is as real as it gets. Why is it that when the claims came out of your mouth, it sounded like our Peking University Math Department was inferior to yours?" Because of Wu Zeqing, Zhang Ye's relationship with Xin Ya was still considered alright. However, what was private should remain private and Zhang Ye understood this very well. "Besides, can you tell me what's happening here?" He pointed to those cars with the top scorers from the college entrance exam.

When enemies met, old wounds would be opened. Liao Qi from Tsinghua University's Chinese Department came forward. "What's the matter? Do we owe you an explanation?! Get your cars that are blocking our school's entrance out of here! Immediately!"

Xin Ya added, "When the examinees leave Tsinghua University's

campus, you guys can do whatever you want, but for now, they have chosen Tsinghua University and are here to talk to our school about their preferences. What right do you have to interfere with that?"

A Tsinghua University personnel said, "Move! Otherwise I will call the police!"

Han Henian said with annoyance, "You guys resorted to dirty tricks to snatch the examinees away and you still want to report us to the police?"

"Teacher Han, you better watch what you say in front of all these students!" A youth from the Tsinghua University group said, "Who resorted to dirty tricks? Huh?"

Su Na thundered, "Did the students really come along with you willingly?"

Liao Qi said coldly, "How was it not willing?!"

At this time, they could see that in one of the Tsinghua University cars, Huang Lingling was desperately thumping on the rear windshield. She had obviously spotted Zhang Ye and wanted to get out from the car.

Han Henian pointed to Huang Lingling and said, "Is that what willing looks like to you?"

Zhang Ye did not bother with this nonsensical conversation any longer. He stared straight at Xin Ya. "Professor Xin, I'll make it short. Open the car doors and I will take those students who applied for Peking University as their first choice institution with me!"

Liao Qi flatly refused, "Impossible!"

Su Na was infuriated. "Those are the students who applied for Peking University! You people are taking this too far!"

Zhang Ye's proposed actions were not overboard whatsoever, and were even said in consideration of Xin Ya's position. He had put it this way because the examinees who had filled in Peking University as their first choice institution belonged to them in the first place. But no one could have expected that the Tsinghua University student recruitment team would not agree to it, straining the situation even further. Not only did they not intend to leave any students for Peking University, they also intended to ruthlessly end Peking University's chances of recruiting them!

Huang Lingling was still thumping on the rear windshield, saying something that could not be heard due to her being locked inside the car and the street noise on the outside.

Tsinghua University's student recruitment team also knew that the exam's top scorers in the cars would likely end up choosing Peking University, especially those who filled in Peking University as their first choice institution. But for every one they could convince to join them, it was one more student for Tsinghua University. It would still be a net gain for them if they could get

just one student to join them, therefore they did not want to bother listening to what the Peking University student recruitment team had to say right now. If we don't let the students go with you people, what can you all do about it?!

However at the next moment, an unexpected event happened. No one could have imagined it!

Zhang Ye asked for the final time, "So you won't let them out, right?"

Liao Qi sneered.

The teachers of the Tsinghua University student recruitment team ignored him as well.

Zhang Ye nodded, and then strode over with large strides, walking past Liao Qi and headed towards the car Huang Lingling was in. He was taking very large strides and many of those around could not react in time.

When Liao Qi realized this, he immediately grabbed Zhang Ye by the shoulders. "What are you doing! Go away!"

Then an amazing sight occurred. Zhang Ye did not even move his arm, just slightly adjusted his shoulders before straightening them again. It was just a slight movement of his shoulders but Liao Qi who had his hand on Zhang Ye's shoulder suddenly felt something in his arms. In that moment, Liao Qi's expression turned to shock

as his whole body backpedaled and he tumbled backwards dramatically. Finally, he lost his balance and crashed down near the curb!

The Tsinghua University people reacted instantaneously!

"Professor Liao!"

"Zhang Ye! How dare you hit our people?"

"What the hell!"

"Zhang! You..."

The Peking University student recruitment teachers were also dumbfounded!

But this was just the beginning. Zhang Ye did not even look at Liao Qi who was lying on the ground and went straight to the front of the car Huang Lingling was in. He pulled at the handle to open it but realized it was locked. The Tsinghua University driver stared callously at Zhang Ye, not intending to unlock the doors at all.

Zhang Ye turned around and checked the roadside. Then he walked slowly to the side of the road where he bent down and picked up half a slab of brick which just happened to be there. He turned around again. Surrounded by the audible gasps of all gathered, he smashed the brick on the driver side window of the car!

Bang!

The loud sound left everyone there stunned!

The Tsinghua University driver in the car was scared out of his wits. "Ahhhh!"

Bang!

Another smash!

Bang!

A third smash!

Zhang Ye smashed down on the window three times in quick succession. The cracks became larger and larger in the glass-reinforced plastic. With that final hit, the window cracked open and the window pieces flew into the car onto the face of the stunned driver. Zhang Ye was still looking indifferent to it all as he put his hand in to unlock the car doors from the inside!

This scene happened too quickly. No one was expecting it at all!

The reporters were stunned!

Tsinghua University's student recruitment teachers were dumbfounded!

Peking University's student recruitment teachers were also at a loss for words!

Everyone present at the scene simply did not expect Zhang Ye to resort to such a violent and unreasonable method...by smashing the car that belonged to Tsinghua University!

Liao Qi nearly vomited blood. "Zhang Ye!"

The Tsinghua University student recruitment teachers were all shouting!

"Bastard!"

"Zhang, do you want to die!?"

"Smashing our car? How dare you smash our car!?"

"Call the police! Quickly call the police!"

"Zhang Ye, you better stop right there! Do you still have any regard for the law!?"

Suddenly, several of the Tsinghua University male recruitment

teachers who were standing close to him rushed forward. But at the same time, Zhang Ye who was still holding onto the half a slab of brick turned his head to them, causing them to stop in their tracks. They did not risk getting any closer to him!

A lot of them knew about the rumors concerning Zhang Ye and had seen him on the news more than once. When he was working at Beijing Television, he had beaten up his leader. More recently, a more notorious scandal everyone knew about happened after the Spring Festival Gala ended. Zhang Ye sent a Korean celebrity, Lee Anson, flying with a kick. That incident brought Zhang Ye much criticism and trouble, and he had been brought to the police station three times over this affair. As such, it might be impossible that any other university professor would smash cars, but with Zhang Ye, nothing was impossible. He had done everything before, and even did it more than once! With this deterrence, the Tsinghua University student recruitment teachers did not risk making any unnecessary moves. Even though they kept scolding with their mouths, none of them tried to go up to stop him. After all, Zhang Ye's reputation was so infamous that he might really hit them!

Huang Lingling ran out of the car. The other two No. 8 High School students in there with her also came out together with her.

"Teacher!" Huang Lingling said panic-stricken.

Zhang Ye nodded at her. "Go to the where the Peking University teachers are and wait for me there."

"OK, I understand!" Huang Lingling immediately walked over to

the Peking University student recruitment teachers, looking back every now and then as she made her way to them.

Seeing this, the other two students of No.8 High School followed along close behind.

Realizing what was happening, Su Na and seven or eight other student recruitment teachers went over and brought the students back to their side. Su Na looked at Zhang Ye and nodded. "Then, Teacher Zhang—"

Right as those words came out, she saw Zhang Ye take another large stride toward the second car. With the sound of even more screams, Zhang Ye held up the half a slab of brick and smashed it at the car's window again. The window of this car shattered more easily than the previous one. Though the driver's seat was empty, there were two students from No. 4 High School inside. After Zhang Ye had smashed open the window, he put his hand into the car and unlocked it, releasing the two No. 4 High School students!

A second car was smashed!

Many of the people who saw this could only gasp from shock!

Chapter 723: Smash! Smash! Smash!

"Zhang Ye!"

"Stop right there!"

"Do you have any regard for the law! Do you have any regard for the law!"

"Doing something like this in broad daylight! Does nobody care about this?!"

"Where are the security guards?! Come quickly!"

The teachers of the Tsinghua University student recruitment team repeatedly screamed. Some were calling the police, some were calling for their own security guards from Tsinghua University, and some were flying into a rage. Smashing Tsinghua University's cars right at the entrance of Tsinghua University was a total provocation! This was the same as smacking their faces repeatedly. Did they even know what kind of place Tsinghua University was? This was a top institution in the country and a globally renowned university. When had they ever had to encounter a situation like this? When had they ever had to encounter such an unreasonable person like this bastard? Never before!

When they learned of the commotion happening outside, some students of Tsinghua University who still weren't on break gradually showed up at the scene. They cautiously peeked at the

outside of the campus. What they saw dumbfounded them!

"What...what the hell!"

"What's happening?!"

"Isn't...isn't that Zhang Ye?"

"Why did he come all the way to Tsinghua University to pick a fight this time?!"

Back when Zhang Ye caused a ruckus at Peking University's Centennial Hall, it had created an international repercussion. Who could have thought that so soon after that incident, this fellow was now showing up at Tsinghua University's doorstep today and creating yet another scandal. Many of the Tsinghua University students were feeling a little dizzy due to his antics. It's not like they had never encountered a person with a bad temper, but this was the first time that they had come across such a f**king bad-tempered fellow! Was Teacher Zhang Ye born under the star of the gunpowder keg? Why did he always explode into anger so easily?! How was he so fearless?!

Everyone was shaken!

Xin Ya shouted at him, "Zhang Ye!"

Han Henian kept wiping his sweat away as he felt that this matter was getting way too far out of hand!

When Zhang Ye smashed the first car, the teachers of the Peking University student recruitment team felt shocked but relieved, and got a kick out of watching his actions. But when Zhang Ye followed up with smashing the second car, the Peking University teachers could only look at each other in dismay and didn't know what to do! Professor Zhang was overreacting!

Yet that still was not the end of it!

In the midst of the chaos, Zhang Ye was seen turning his head around to look at Tsinghua University's third car that was holding the other exam's top scorers. He then walked calmly over to the car!

Everyone was dumbfounded!

"This..."

"Ah!"

"This is..."

"Zhang Ye is..."

A few seconds later, the loud crash of something being smashed traveled through the air!

Zhang Ye brandished his arm, holding the half a slab of brick and smashed it on the third car of Tsinghua University without any hesitation!

Bang!

Bang!

Bang!

After three smashes, the glass window shattered into many tiny fragments!

The driver inside was also on the Tsinghua University student recruitment team. At this moment, he had been shocked into a daze and was too scared to move. He allowed Zhang Ye to unlock the car door without any resistance, which set free the students from Beijing Normal University Affiliated High School and No. 15 High School!

Upon seeing that, the top scorers inside the car also didn't know how to react and just hurriedly got out. One of the examinees who indicated Peking University as his first choice institution rubbed his eyes with confusion and quickly went in the direction of the Peking University student recruitment teachers. As for the other two examinees, they had initially applied for Tsinghua University, but when they saw the situation, they did not behave stupidly. Right now, Teacher Zhang was standing there like a one-man army, so it would definitely be dangerous if they stood on the side of the Tsinghua University teachers. They certainly had to get

away as far as possible from there. If they were able to become top scorers, how dumb could they be? The two of them exchanged a look and then quickly ran far away from there. They eventually ended up standing at a spot that was obviously closer to the Peking University student recruitment teachers.

Zhang Ye was already looking towards the fourth car of Tsinghua University's student recruitment team. He walked toward it at once without any hesitation or pause.

When the staff member of the Tsinghua University student recruitment team in the fourth car saw him walking over, he nearly pissed his pants as he shouted, "Aiyo, my goodness!" Without waiting for Zhang Ye to smash his car, he unlocked the car door himself and ran out from the car frantically, like he was avoiding the god of plague!

Then Zhang Ye looked at the fifth car.

The fifth car's driver trembled with fear and also ran away, abandoning the car!

Without even waiting for Zhang Ye to look over, the driver of Tsinghua University's sixth car had already disappeared without a trace, lightning fast!

Some of the drivers thought to themselves, it's not that we are timid, rather we're only paid for helping out in the student recruitment, not to f**king risk our lives!

All at once, the drivers of those cars scattered away in panic!

The examinees held in the cars were all set free and gradually came out from the cars. Some of them were surprised at the sight of Zhang Ye, some had excitement shining in their eyes and some were sweating profusely from anxiety. There were all kinds of expressions!

How ferocious!

This was what you'd f**king call a fierce person! Just a stare alone would be able to shock anyone!

Several seconds went by as the huge area at the main entrance of Tsinghua University fell silent without a single movement!

At this moment, Liao Qi shouted, "Stop him!"

A female teacher of Tsinghua University's student recruitment team also shouted, "Stop him! What are you doing standing there and looking on for?!"

Over at Tsinghua University's side, shouts rang out all around, but it was just pure shouting. No one rushed up to stop Zhang Ye. These people were all university teachers, and if you talked about teaching or passing on knowledge, each of them was more knowledgeable than the last. If you talked about writing with a flowery style, each of them was stronger than the last, but when you talked about fighting? Then they really couldn't do it! But

Zhang Ye? He had fought with his leaders, his leader's kin, a celebrity, security guards, aircraft hijackers, and according to the rumors online, he even seemed to have fought with some monks at a certain temple in Beijing during filming. He did things here and there regardless of age or industry. This guy had done all sorts of things and was already battle f**king hardened. Even those armed hijackers who were notoriously vicious criminals were not a match for Zhang Ye, so for a bunch of teachers like them from the Tsinghua University student recruitment team...who could possibly take him on?! Whoever went against him would surely end up sacrificing themselves for nothing! Only an idiot would go up against him!

Zhang Ye looked around. When he saw that all of the examinees had been released, he threw away the brick in his hand and dusted off his dirty hands. Even though the "weapon" had been dropped, as he stood there, still no one risked approaching within ten meters of him!

The teachers of the Tsinghua University student recruitment team began to scold him with loud voices from a distance!

"This isn't over yet!"

"I've called the police! The police will be here soon!"

"Zhang Ye, you go too far! You do things without making any allowances!"

"To think that you're still a teacher of the people? You-you're

more like a rotten scoundrel!"

"Even a scoundrel is more civilized than you! Who are you to smash our cars like that?! Who are you to hit Professor Liao?!"

When Su Na heard they called the police, she hurriedly yelled to Zhang Ye, "Teacher Zhang."

However, Zhang Ye's expression did not change whatsoever. Instead, he said to Su Na and the teachers of the Peking University student recruitment team, "Take those examinees who are willing, and make your way back to Peking University for a talk about admissions and the terms of enrollment. I will handle the issue here. None of you have to worry!"

When the teachers of the Peking University student recruitment team saw that the situation was already in this state, they could only clench their teeth and immediately go over to the examinees. They did not force it on anyone but welcomed those who were willing to go with them back to Peking University and learn more about the admissions process. They didn't say anything to those who did not want to go as it was their personal freedom.

Upon seeing this, the Tsinghua University teachers became anxious!

"Don't you dare!"

"Who allowed you to touch our students?!"

Many of the teachers of Tsinghua University's student recruitment team wanted to rush forward to grab the examinees back!

But when Zhang Ye took a step forward, those staff members of the Tsinghua University student recruitment team stopped in their tracks immediately. They could only stare angrily and began scolding loudly once again!

"To think that you are a teacher of the people!"

"Zhang Ye, you are a bastard!"

"I'm so pissed off!"

With the persuasion of the teachers of the Peking University student recruitment team and the influence of the current atmosphere, almost all of the top scorers followed the Peking University teachers into the cars. Among them were some of examinees like Huang Lingling whose first choice preference was Peking University and some others who were unsure of which institution to apply for. Only four of the examinees who were probably determined to apply for Tsinghua University chose to remain behind. The rest of the examinees all got into the cars!

When the teachers of the Tsinghua University student recruitment team saw this, they fumed with rage and felt their hearts bleeding. Those were the examinees among the top 30 scorers in the Beijing college entrance exam. Every one of them

was like a treasure! But with Zhang Ye blocking them, they could not get past him and could only watch helplessly as the top scorers they had almost gotten a hold of were now being taken away by the teachers of the Peking University student recruitment team!

Su Na knew a rivalry had now formed between Zhang Ye and Tsinghua University. So after arranging for the top scorers to leave, she stayed behind as somebody definitely had to be there. Han Henian and five teachers of the Peking University student recruitment team also stayed behind. In a while, when the police came, they would definitely need to help with explaining their side of things.

"Zhang Ye, just wait and see!"

"Our score is not yet settled!"

"When the police comes, I'll see what you can do!"

The people of Tsinghua University hated Zhang Ye to the core!

The people from Peking University were getting quite worried as they did not know how to handle this matter when the police arrived.

But who could have guessed? When Zhang Ye heard what they said, he leisurely took out his cell phone from his pocket, then looked at the screen and lightly pressed 3 times on the keypad!! Although everyone was too far away to clearly see what number

Zhang Ye dialed, there were just several agencies that could be reached with only three numbers. Moreover, the pressed positions on the keypad made it very easy to guess!

Zhang Ye had dialed—110.

Everyone was stunned for a while!

Call the police?

You still want to call the police?

Liao Qi sneered incessantly!

Several of the teachers from the Tsinghua University student recruitment team also laughed!

However, when the call connected, Zhang Ye's first lines left everyone dumbfounded!

Zhang Ye said: "Hello, is this the police station? I would like to report an incident...That's right....There are some kidnapped hostages at the main entrance of Tsinghua University....Yes....Don't worry, I've already successfully rescued the hostages. Who am I? There's no need to ask who I am, just call me Lei Feng!"

Liao Qi was stunned by this. "Kidnapped??"

Xin Ya stared eyes wide. "Hostages?"

All of the teachers of the Tsinghua University student recruitment team: "...*&^;&^;((%\$##@!!!"

Zhang Ye, why are you so shameless? What did you mean by kidnapped?! No one can slander the way you do! Kidnapped? Kidnapped your sister! You're so wicked! Weren't you first at fault? Yet you're complaining?!

And who the heck is [Lei Feng](#)??

Léi Fēng (18 December 1940 – 15 August 1962) was a soldier in the People's Liberation Army and is a communist legend in China. After his death, Lei was characterized as a selfless and modest person devoted to the Communist Party, Mao Zedong, and the people of China.

Chapter 724: Thick As Thieves!

Ten minutes later.

On the road in front of Tsinghua University's main entrance, six to seven police vehicles arrived and their blaring sirens which could be heard from several streets away stopped. They made a strong show of force, and judging from the license plates, these police vehicles were clearly not sent from the local police station (sub-district public security bureau), but from the district police station (district public security bureau) instead. After the police report was received, the district police station was immediately informed of it. Kidnapping of hostages? This was a big case that the local police station would not be able to handle. So officers from the district police station were activated and sent to the location, equipped with guns. More than a dozen police officers had been sent over.

However, when they got to the scene, the police officers in the vehicles witnessed a relatively calm scene. A couple of cars had their windows smashed while a crowd of people had gathered around to observe. There were even reporters?

They got out of the police cars.

"What happened?"

"What's the situation?"

"Who alerted the police?"

Officer Sun, the lead police officer, asked around, "Who is Lei Feng?"

Suddenly, Zhang Ye strode out from the group. "That's me, I am! I was the one who called the police!"

When they saw him, the dozen or so police officers' eyes all widened with confusion. How could they not know this person standing right before them? All of them knew who he was which was why they all nearly fainted together at once. Lei Feng? Lei Feng your sister! Aren't you just the goddamned Teacher Zhang Ye!? When did you change your last name to Lei!

Clearly, the people of this world did not know who Lei Feng was.

When Liao Qi and the Tsinghua University student recruitment teachers saw that the police had arrived, their confidence recovered and they were no longer afraid of Zhang Ye. They rushed to the front, shouting, "Officers, you've finally arrived! It was him, he was the one who smashed the cars of Tsinghua University! And interfered with our student recruitment! He even beat up our people! And used physical force on us! This is too lawless!"

"Just look at this!"

"The car windows are all smashed!"

"It was with that brick slab! It was Zhang Ye who used it to smash the cars!"

"This is too much! I've never seen such an unreasonable bully before!"

The Tsinghua University teachers yelled continuously!

The student recruitment teachers from Peking University who had stayed behind also retorted immediately!

Su Na said, "Officers, this matter is definitely not Teacher Zhang's fault. It was those people from Tsinghua University who insisted on snatching the students from us. When a number of those students did not want to go with them, they used force to take them away from their homes or schools and sent them back here!"

Han Henian added, "We managed to stop them outside the entrance, but the car doors ended up getting locked by the Tsinghua University people. They kept the students trapped in the cars against their will! They've totally gone insane!"

Tsinghua University: "Held against their will my ass!"

Peking University: "If that wasn't holding them against their will, then what do you call it!"

Tsinghua University: "You're the ones who are trying to steal the

students from us now! Using violence to take them away forcefully!"

Peking University: "We're not the same as you! The students followed us according to their own initiative. We did not insist on it, but what about you? When the students did not want to come along, you just dragged them here against their will!" Both groups kept harping on the same points and hugely exaggerated for more impact!

Tsinghua University: "Bullshit!"

Both groups kept pointing fingers at each other and were arguing again soon after!

When the police officers heard this, they immediately knew that this was going to be a troublesome case. They had received two reports earlier, one of someone committing a crime outside of Tsinghua University's main entrance—reported by the people from Tsinghua University. The other report was about the kidnapping of hostages at Tsinghua University's main entrance—reported by Zhang Ye. At the beginning, the police thought they were referring to the same case, where someone was committing a crime by kidnapping. However, after they arrived, they realized that it was basically two separate issues in response to each other!

A few of the police officers were left speechless for a long time and gradually holstered their guns, knowing that the situation was not as dangerous as they thought it to be. Committing a crime and kidnapping or whatnot, it was all exaggerated by the two parties who had reported it! Actually, they were not unfamiliar with such

a situation between Tsinghua and Peking University as the two institutions had often clashed and tussled many times over the years. The local police station used to send their officers to settle such cases, but this was the first time they were witnessing such a drastic situation between the two institutions where cars were smashed and people were beaten up. The most extreme situations in the past had always been kept to arguments and quarrels only, nothing as serious as today. They couldn't have expected a bunch of intellectuals to actually get into a physical altercation!

How should they handle this?

This situation wasn't going to be easy to handle at all!

The lead officer had a headache due to this. Whether it was Peking University or Tsinghua University, they were the top two institutions in the country. In terms of civil service authority, the schools' leaders were ranked higher than their district police station leaders. They were basically at the level of deputy ministers!

Level 4 for presidents of key universities in the civil service ranking system.

The lead officer could only say, "Just what is going on? Please tell me. One at a time."

A female teacher from Tsinghua University shouted, "Zhang Ye beat up our people! He hit Professor Liao!"

Liao Qi pulled up his sleeve. "Look, it's all bruised!"

Several policemen went to take a look. The arm was indeed bruised, but it didn't look like serious at all.

Zhang Ye looked at the Tsinghua University people. "Did I make a move on him?"

A person from Tsinghua University said, "Of course you did!"

Zhang Ye threw his hands up. "If we're talking about who made a move first, it was Professor Liao who came over to grab my shoulders at the beginning, didn't he? He even tried to push me, but what did I do? I didn't even raise an arm!"

Liao Qi was outraged!

The lead officer did not just listen one side of the story. He went over to the observing crowd to better understand the situation.

"Who made the move first. Did any one of you see anything?"

"I saw it. Uh, it was that professor from Tsinghua University who grabbed Zhang Ye by his shoulders first."

"And then?"

"And then the professor took a tumble on his own."

"Took a tumble? On his own?"

"Yeah, it didn't look like anyone touched him."

"No one touched him?"

"I only saw Zhang Ye's shoulder sway a little, but it wasn't much. Then that professor took a tumble. As for how it happened, I didn't see it clearly, but Zhang Ye definitely did not raise his arms."

"Alright, I understand."

The surrounding crowd just related whatever they had seen to the police officers.

When the Tsinghua University people heard this, they couldn't accept it.

The lead officer said, "Let's put this matter aside first. Who smashed the car windows?"

Zhang Ye said, "I did."

The police officer said, "Why did you do it?"

Zhang Ye said righteously, "They kidnapped those students, so as

a citizen of China, as a public figure who is also a role model, how can I ignore something wrong happening when I see it? I ought to rise to the occasion!"

The police officers: "..."

The Tsinghua University teachers nearly vomited blood at this reply!

"Holy shit!"

"What do you mean by rising to the occasion!"

"You were clearly trying to steal our students away!"

"You-you're too shameless, Zhang Ye!"

A few of the Peking University teachers also started sweating with anxiety when they heard this!

But right at this moment, several cars arrived. It was the Peking University student recruitment teachers and the exam's top scorers who had just left. They had returned. Huang Lingling and a few other examinees alighted, and this time, their parents also came with them.

"Teacher!" Huang Lingling said anxiously.

Su Na explained to the police officers, "These were a few of the students who were taken away forcefully just now!"

The police officers immediately started asking, "Were the few of you taken away by the people from Tsinghua University just now? Did you all go with them willingly?"

Huang Lingling said, "About that...I didn't willingly go with them."

Another male student also said in embarrassment, "I, I had already filled in Peking University as my first choice and agreed to meet with the Peking University student recruitment teachers. But when I was at my school's graduation ceremony, I got pulled aside by the Tsinghua University teachers and got dragged along with them. I didn't want to go as my parents had let me apply for Peking University."

Clearly, after the Peking University side found out about the situation here, they sent this group of people back to support Zhang Ye, knowing that he might get into a sticky situation.

The male student's parents also spoke.

The father said, "Tsinghua University went too far. My son did not even want to follow them yet they grabbed him with force and put him into their car. This is as good as kidnapping!"

The mother said, "When his teacher from school called to inform

me that my son had been taken away, his father and I were scared to death. So we quickly rushed here, thinking that he had been taken away by some child trafficking gang!"

Liao Qi retorted angrily, "We were doing student recruitment!"

The mother grunted at him, "Who knows what you people were trying to do!"

Liao Qi said, "You..."

The parents were actually speaking up and siding with Zhang Ye.

Zhang Ye looked at the two of them with wonder.

Su Na walked beside Zhang Ye and whispered to him, "They are Zhou Zheng's parents. His father and mother both graduated from Peking University and were very prominent figures in the school back in the day."

It suddenly dawned on Zhang Ye why these two persons were siding with him so much. It was because they were on the same team as him!

Huang Lingling's father followed up with, "My child is the same. She has always dreamed about attending Peking University since childhood. When those Tsinghua University people dragged her away forcefully, it gave my child such a scare. How can anyone do the things they did!? They might as well commit highway robbery!

Even if the Tsinghua University teachers were doing this for the student recruitment and without any other motives, they shouldn't have done it this way. That is essentially disrespecting the views our children!"

Afterwards, a few more parents started ranting. Some of them were basically graduates from Peking University, so if they didn't side with Peking University on this matter, who else would they side with? Meanwhile, some of the other parents were very unhappy with how Tsinghua University had tried to force things their way this time. For these parents, when it came to such important matters, they should have at least notified and informed the parents before taking them away, not like how they handled it!

The place was chaotic again.

"It's not like that!"

"We were just doing this for the children!"

"We called you before inviting them to Tsinghua University!"

The Tsinghua University student recruitment teachers were trying their best to explain themselves!

But the students' parents' doubts just grew and grew!

After a long back and forth with the two groups of people talking for over 20 minutes, the lead officer formed a very good

understanding of the situation. He waited for them to finish arguing before standing between them and saying to the Tsinghua University group, "I understand quite well what's going on here. In fact, Professor Liao's injuries aren't very serious, and besides, the witnesses have all vouched that Professor Zhang did not touch him whatsoever, so let's drop that matter. As for the smashing of the cars..." He looked at Zhang Ye and continued, "Professor Zhang's way of handling the situation was indeed inappropriate. Actually, it's just student recruitment, so there was no need to resort to smashing cars like you did. But similarly, Tsinghua University has a big problem on this front. Since they did not respect the wishes of the examinees and forcefully brought them here, that action itself was already overboard. Now that we have established that both parties were at fault and should be responsible for their actions, though not amounting to kidnapping and committing crimes as those claims were exaggerated, I would like to offer to both groups that we drop the matter and forget about it!"

Liao Qi stared with eyes wide. "Drop the matter?"

"What about our cars? He smashed three of them!"

"How can we just drop it like that? That's impossible!"

The people from Tsinghua University were objecting. Only Xin Ya did not say a word.

Zhang Ye and the Peking University personnel did not have any issues with this outcome. The cars were already smashed and they also got back the students, so to them, there wasn't really anything else to ask for. It would be best that they could drop the matter

here.

The police officer frowned. "If you really want me to handle this matter, then I can only do it like this and negotiate for both sides. If Zhang Ye had really smashed your cars for no reason, I would have taken him away immediately. But that is not the case here, since your side also has a problem with your actions. The students' parents have already made it very clear. Honestly, if they choose to not sue you for holding their children in illegal custody, you're already very lucky. Should they want to take this up with the authorities, it wouldn't do any of you good, right?"

The attitudes of the parents were very critical here. Even if it was just a few parents of the students, it was more than enough.

The Tsinghua University people turned pale, and did not say a word.

The police officer said, "At most, you can ask for them to compensate you for the car windows. How does that sound?"

Zhang Ye shrugged. "I have no complaints."

The police officer nodded and turned to look at Liao Qi and the others.

To the Tsinghua University group, those car windows weren't even worth much! Could it compare to what those top scorers were worth? Of course not! They weren't even in the same class!

Soon after.

With the matter more or less put to rest now, Peking University compensated Tsinghua University for the car repairs, while the Tsinghua University student recruitment teachers offered their apologies to the examinees' parents who were unhappy about the way the matter was handled.

After the matter was settled, the policemen all drove off. To be honest, the moment the police cars left Tsinghua University, many of those police officers heaved sighs of relief. If Zhang Ye had smashed those cars with no good reason today, they might have really had to bring Zhang Ye back with them to the police station. If that had happened, there might have been a chance that they would attract another round of trouble on themselves. They had long ago heard about Zhang Ye's temper. Back then, Zhang Ye was arrested twice and on both occasions, the police stations which arrested him were plunged into chaos. With his "My Confession" and "Prisoner's Song," countless citizens turned up to turn themselves in on behalf of Zhang Ye. It caused such huge turmoil that the police stations were nearly dismantled. Those police officers who had been through those times would often bring it up during meal times and share their haunting stories of the incidents. They knew well Zhang Ye's notoriety, so if they could avoid it, they would definitely choose to not arrest Zhang Ye. If they did, it would have been as good as arresting a ticking time bomb! It was a good thing that they did not have to go to that extent this time as it was clear the Tsinghua University people were at fault.

The problem was resolved.

The reporters left. The observing crowd also dispersed.

The expressions on the Tsinghua University people were not good. They turned their heads and glowered at Zhang Ye. In their fight with Peking University this time, they had suffered a great and humiliating loss. Not only did they not manage to invite the exam's top scorers to their admission talks, their cars had also been damaged. All face was lost and many of the student recruitment teachers could not take this lying down. They quietly cursed at Zhang Ye 10,000 times over....No, it was more like 100 million times!!

On the Tsinghua University campus.

Liao Qi scolded, "That damned hooligan!"

A female teacher said in anger, "Tsinghua University is not finished with that Zhang guy!"

Another Tsinghua University teacher yelled, "We will surely hold him accountable for this someday!"

Xin Ya walked off alone to somewhere quiet. She angrily took out her cell phone and made a call to her childhood friend Wu Zeqing!

Old Wu answered the call: "Hello."

Xin Ya denounced: "Old Wu! What kind of boyfriend did you get! He just happily comes up against me and even smashed our cars! He pissed me off today!"

Old Wu laughed and asked: "What happened?"

Xin Ya related the incident to her and then said: "He proposed a solution to the mathematical conjecture and just left it for a group of us to work on it tirelessly day and night to verify it for him. It's fine that he did not thank me for it, but now he's not even leaving any face for me?!?"

Old Wu said: "I was the one who told him to go this time."

Xin Ya said: "But he still shouldn't have handled it that way. Just settle it with words, who the hell settles problems by smashing cars!?"

Old Wu chuckled and replied calmly: "It's not like you've only known him for a day. He has always been like this."

"You're still trying to defend him? Aren't you trying too hard to justify his actions!?" Xin Ya said angrily.

Old Wu laughed: "Alright, would it be OK if I apologized to you on behalf of Little Zhang?"

Xin Ya replied annoyed: "No!"

Old Wu said: "Then why don't I buy you dinner?"

Xin Ya snorted: "That's not enough! He has to apologize to me!"

Old Wu said: "Hur hur, with that temper of his, do you think it's possible? Besides, when we come around to what happened, Tsinghua University was truthfully in the wrong in the first place. I'm sure you agree with me on that, right?"

When she heard this, Xin Ya nearly vomited blood in anger. "I've finally seen through you! Whatever Zhang Ye does, you'll always think that it's correct! You two are thick as thieves!!!"

Chapter 725: An Urban Legend Of The Entertainment Industry!

In the afternoon.

Old Wu's residence.

Zhang Ye got out of his car after returning to the villa. The moment he stepped foot onto the front yard, he could smell the fragrant aroma of Old Wu's cooking. The door wasn't locked. He pushed open the door and entered the house. He saw Old Wu cooking in the open kitchen.

"Whoa, it smells really good. What are we having for lunch?" Zhang Ye probed.

Old Wu carried on cooking and said, "Shredded pork and red-braised pork ribs."

"Great, they're all my favorites." Zhang Ye was delighted.

Old Wu asked, "Have you settled it?"

Zhang Ye answered, "Yes, I've settled it. How could I have come back otherwise. 90% of the top 30 scorers in the Beijing college entrance exam are now listening to Peking University's admissions talk. As for how many of those students will end up applying to Peking University, I do not know. It all depends on them now."

Old Wu said, "I heard that you even smashed their cars?"

Zhang Ye replied, "Your news is quite up-to-date."

Old Wu stated, "Xin Ya gave me a call earlier. She said you did not give her any face and claimed that we were thick as thieves. Hur hur, you have really made her furious this time."

Zhang Ye said, "You can't blame me for that. It's the people of Tsinghua University who didn't know how to behave themselves."

Suddenly, a phone call came in.

Zhang Ye answered: "Dean Pan, are you looking for me?"

It was from Dean Pan Yang of Peking University's School of Mathematical Sciences. Once the call connected, Pan Yang asked with concern: "How are you, Little Zhang? Did you get hurt?"

Zhang Ye sniggered: "Me? Hurt? I'm fine."

Pan Yang asked: "The police didn't make things difficult for you afterwards, right?"

Zhang Ye said: "It's all been settled. I'm at home now and getting ready for lunch."

"Then that's good." Pan Yang said, "Peking University already knows about what happened this time. After hearing the news, the president even specially rushed back to the school. After conversing with him, the president told me to pass a message to you. He said that if you're free, come back to Peking University for a visit."

Zhang Ye smiled. "Sure, I understand."

Pan Yang said: "Earlier, when everyone was chatting privately about this matter, many of those Peking University teachers who were not friendly toward you in the past spoke well of you. Everyone was chatting about you, including Little Han, I mean, Han Henian of the Math Department. When we were talking about the incident, he mentioned how he thought you did a marvelous job."

Even though Zhang Ye and Han Henian did not have much bad blood between them, their relationship wasn't that good either. In the past, they got into a war of words at the International Math Olympiad. There was also the incident when Han Henian pursued Old Wu, etc.

Zhang Ye asked in disbelief: "Teacher Han said something nice about me?"

"Those were his actual words," Pan Yang answered. "Why would I lie to you?"

"Alright then," Zhang Ye said noncommittally.

Pan Yang stated: "Many people will definitely scold you for the trouble you got into today. Can you shoulder all that scolding? If you can't, I'll talk to heads of the school and let Peking University help you out with this matter."

Zhang Ye immediately replied: "That's not necessary, Dean Pan. It's no big deal. I could even take the pressure after cursing those foreign dignitaries, so how bad could this incident about smashing some car windows get? I'm fine and can handle the heat. Although, can you talk to the heads so that I do not have to compensate the car windows?"

Pan Yang laughed upon hearing this. "Of course. You've done a lot this time, so we couldn't possibly ask you to pay as well, right?"

Zhang Ye's appearance this time had truly been a great help to Peking University. In just a short time, he had reversed the disadvantage that Peking University faced in the situation involving the top scorers. Many of the Peking University teachers and professors were not of any help at all. Many of the teachers on the student recruitment team could only stare blankly at those Tsinghua University teachers as they took the examinees away. In the end—when nobody knew what to do—it was Zhang Ye, the suspended teacher from Peking University, who turned the tide. Without any hesitation, he smashed the car windows to take the examinees back. With just this point alone, many of those Peking University teachers who previously did not have a good opinion of him now saw him in an entirely different light.

Upon carefully thinking about it, Zhang Ye's temper might be bad, and he often got into conflicts with his colleagues, had scolded foreign dignitaries at the auditorium, and even rebutted the school's heads before. But however bad his temper, there was nothing they could criticize Zhang Ye for on what he had done for Peking University and not a single fault that they could pick on for his treatment of the Peking University students! Whenever there was trouble, he would really go and take it head-on!

...

Meanwhile.

At a newspaper firm, everyone on the entire second floor office was extremely busy.

Two interns returned very excitedly from their field work. One of them, holding a camera, said excitedly, "Chief Editor Chen, big news, big news. Tsinghua and Peking University were fighting over the students at the entrance of Tsinghua University. Zhang Ye smashed several of Tsinghua University's cars as well. We got all the first-hand information and even recorded the entire scene on video from beginning to end!"

The intern beside him was also extremely excited. "Chief Editor Chen, did we do well this time?"

After hearing that, the editor-in-chief did not even look at them and just carried on with his own work. He yawned and told them, "Yeah, yeah, you two did quite well."

Quite well?

Only quite well?

Is that...is that all?

The shorter intern exclaimed, "Chief Editor Chen?"

The editor-in-chief said in an unfriendly tone, "Write the rough draft up as soon as possible."

"This news..." The taller intern blinked and continued, "Will it get published on the front page in the headlines today?"

A senior reporter beside them laughed. "Just do whatever the Chief Editor tells you to do. Don't always try to claim the credit. This kind of news probably can't get into the headlines."

That intern was puzzled. "Why?"

The senior reporter guffawed, "When Zhang Ye manages to avoid making trouble for two straight months, then that will surely get into the headlines!"

This joke made all the editors in the office chuckle.

"That's right. Has there ever been a day when Zhang Ye does not get into trouble?"

"He is such a troublemaker that something is bound to happen wherever he goes!"

"The two of you are new here and unfamiliar with the situation. Even if the media in Beijing lacks news about anyone, it won't be Zhang Ye's news. When you have worked long enough here, you will get used to it. There are incidents that Zhang Ye caused before that were more serious than this one, so what's the big deal with smashing some cars anyway? If it can even get on as the front page's second headline, it would be pretty good."

The two interns: "..."

Even if it were slightly exaggerated, it represented Zhang Ye's image with the media—which wasn't that good after all. If it were Zhang Yuanqi who beat up someone, they would definitely be out in full strength to report on that news. If it were Chen Guang who smashed the cars, they would definitely and immediately send out a dozen or more reporters to the scene. As long as it were any other celebrity, they would be over a hundred times more newsworthy! All with the exception of one person. Zhang Ye smashed some cars? Wasn't this a normal thing when it involved him? What's the big deal? Ever since this fellow debuted, that has always been his style!

...

Elsewhere.

Central TV Department. In the program team office of The Voice.

Zhang Ye was on leave while the executive producer essentially did not partake in the production of the program. As the assistant directors, Ha Qiqi and Zhang Zuo had to take on the responsibility and supervision of work over here.

Suddenly, a female editor said in a speechless manner, "Aiyo! Director Zhang is on the news again!"

"Huh?"

"What's happened to Director Zhang again?"

"What's up?"

The several people around her immediately looked over.

Ha Qiqi, Zhang Zuo, and the others also felt panicked and quickly rushed over to take a look. "What's going on? Didn't Director Zhang get two days of leave to rest at home? What sort of news is it this time?"

Upon finding out, the program team staff passed out in unison!

"What?"

"Director Zhang fought with other people again?"

"He fought with the people of Tsinghua University this time? And even smashed their cars?"

"Is he alright? Don't tell me that Director Zhang got arrested again?"

"No. The police seemed to have settled the matter already. He was only required to pay compensation for breaking the car windows."

"Thank God! I was so scared. If Director Zhang really got arrested, how were we going to record the later episodes of the program? The executive director and host would have been gone!"

"I've refused to be convinced by anyone else in my entire life, but I really have to bow to Director Zhang. He can even cause such a big uproar while resting at home for two days? I've been totally bewildered by him!"

The program team staff were discussing fervently about this.

Very soon, the people at Central TV also found out about the matter and were constantly discussing it in private.

Deputy Director Jiang Yuan of Central TV Department 1 saw the news the moment it was first reported. His expression changed greatly and he immediately called Zhang Ye to make sure of his safety. After verifying that Zhang Ye had not been arrested by the police and it would not affect the recording of The Voice, Jiang Yuan felt a sense of relief, having worried for nothing.

...

On the Internet, the discussion was even more serious!

"Zhang Ye in trouble again!"

"Tsinghua and Peking University fight during student recruitment!"

"The 'war' over top scorers! Who is at fault?"

"Zhang Ye—How are we going to save you?!"

The news headlines came one after another and went viral online.

"Pfft, Teacher Zhang is in trouble again!"

"How delightful!"

"Why did Tsinghua University offend Zhang Ye again?"

"He's fighting with his peers again!"

"Zhang Ye is such a pain in the ass! Whoever gets in his way will surely suffer from bad luck!"

The netizens were divided into two camps. One group fully supported Zhang Ye while the other scolded him. Obviously, those who were against Zhang Ye made up the majority as usual, with the Tsinghua University teachers as its main force.

Liao Qi posted on Weibo: "These days, some teachers have really low standards!"

An old professor at Peking University retaliated: "Do you think that you have very high standards? Forcefully trying to get the students to join you people! What if they never intended to join Tsinghua University in the first place?"

Tsinghua University and Peking University were cursing at each other!

Zhang Ye's fans and foes were cursing at each other!

It became very chaotic!

In the end, even the Ministry of Education could not stand idle

watching this any further and publicly issued a statement: "In lieu of the media reporting about the phenomenon of individual universities using improper ways to attract college entrance exam top scorers, the Ministry of Education requests the related universities to observe their discipline and conscientiously maintain the propriety of the student recruitment!"

Finally, they ended the statement with a stern criticism on the misconducts of certain teachers. Although there was no pointing of fingers, it was obvious that the term "certain teachers" included Zhang Ye. More precisely, this criticism was mainly aimed at Zhang Ye!

It was rare for the Ministry of Education to publicly criticize an individual. This showed that whether it was in his peers' opinions or in the eyes of the organizational leaders, Zhang Ye's name and reputation were terrible.

But Zhang Ye himself and his fans did not feel so.

"Haha, Teacher Zhang was indirectly mentioned and criticized!"

"There's not much difference between this and actually naming him."

"Dear Teacher Zhang, your reputation has become even worse now!"

"Hai, Teacher Zhang Ye, I really have to hand it to you!"

Actually, these matters did not have much of an impact on Zhang Ye, because those people who liked him would still continue to like him. Zhang Ye's fans had already experienced too many similar situations, and wouldn't abandon him over such a small affair. Instead, it was precisely because they had experienced so much criticism and doubt when they followed Zhang Ye that their cohesiveness became stronger and they became braver with each setback. Moreover, each time after Zhang Ye caused any trouble, the number of people joining Zhang Ye's fan club would dramatically rise. The more people scolded Zhang Ye, the more his peers criticized him, the greater his increase in the number of fans and popularity!

Speaking of which, this would also be considered an urban legend of the entertainment industry!

Chapter 726: The Voice Wraps Up!

Monday.

After his off days came to an end, Zhang Ye arrived back at Central TV early in the morning. When he reached The Voice's program team office after taking the elevator up, the staff immediately surrounded him. Some of them were chatting lightheartedly with him while others were worried about his recent incident.

"Director Zhang, you're here?"

"You gave us such a scare yesterday!"

"Yeah, we thought that you might not be coming back anymore because of that."

"The police didn't trouble you, right?"

"You aren't hurt, right, Director Zhang? Why did you get into a fight again?"

"I was in the elevator just now and overheard two leaders chatting. They were talking about how they won't approve your off days anymore in case you go...ahem. The Voice's recording couldn't proceed if you weren't here today. The recorded scenes we did before have all been broadcast."

"Yes, please don't scare us like that anymore in the future. Our weak hearts won't be able to take it."

The assistant directors and editors kept going on and on about it.

Zhang Ye laughed. "I'll be fine, thank you all for your concern. Is the recording studio all set up and ready? What time will the coaches arrive?"

Ha Qiqi said, "The four coaches will be ready by 10 o'clock."

Zhang Zuo said, "The contestants have all arrived too and are getting ready for the stage."

Zhang Ye voiced his understanding. "Now that the blind auditions have been completed, we will be recording the [battle rounds](#). This will be different from the previous segments, so I need everyone to give their full attention and follow the procedures I listed out beforehand. There will be four main camera positions, so let's set them up."

In the second stage, called the battle round, coaches have two of their team members battle against each other by singing the same song together, with the coach choosing which team member to advance from each of individual "battles" into the first live round.

"Understood."

"Got it."

"Right!"

Under Zhang Ye's command, the program team staff began to work very quickly. A sense of self-confidence they didn't have before could be seen on everyone's faces. This was bestowed upon them by Zhang Ye, as well as by The Voice. After several broadcasted episodes, The Voice's viewership ratings were just as hot, as it maintained the number 1 spot in the nationwide viewership ratings for variety shows. They were even leading the number 2 spot by a long way. As such, The Voice's program team staff were emboldened and confident. At least at this current moment, they were the most excellent program team there was among all of the variety show teams in the country.

.....

Around 10 AM.

In the recording studio.

Three of the coaches had already arrived. Only Zhang Yuanqi was not here yet, but her manager had called in advance to inform them that she was on the way. The preparations in the studio were more or less complete, with Ha Qiqi, Zhang Zuo, and a few other staff members making some last-minute adjustments.

Offstage, Zhang Ye was chatting with the coaches.

Chen Guang said with a laugh, "You got into trouble again

yesterday? Wenli and I read about the news."

Zhang Ye replied, "It was just a small thing."

Chen Guang was amused by this response. "You even smashed the cars of Tsinghua University, how could it be a small thing?"

"That temper of yours..." Zhang Xia said with a hint of criticism, "...you'd better improve it. I'm only telling you this because I don't treat you as an outsider, but just look at our entertainment circle. Are there any celebrities who have a temper as bad as yours? After all, that's Tsinghua University you're dealing with. You should have made some allowances with them no matter what."

Zhang Ye sincerely responded, "Alright, I will listen to Grandma Zhang's advice."

Zhang Xia helplessly said, "All you do is talk the talk. You need to walk the walk too."

Fan Wenli chuckled. "But then again, Director Zhang is doing really well in the entertainment circle even with that temper of his. That is also a talent by itself, and at least for me and Old Chen, we aren't able to do the same. Whenever Old Chen and I get some negative news reported on us, even if it's just some baseless rumor, both of us suffer a drop in our popularity. Our reputation also takes a hit. We're completely unlike you since every time there's any negative news or trouble concerning you, your popularity increases instead. You're definitely a miracle of the entertainment circle!"

Zhang Ye smiled and quickly said, "Sister Fan, please don't praise me so greatly. What miracle? Everyone is calling me the oddity of oddities. I know all about that."

However, Zhang Ye did not care how others judged him. Anything he wished to do or anything he wanted to do, as long as he felt that it was not wrong, no one could stop him from doing.

A commotion stirred outside.

The thud of footsteps gradually got closer and closer. Zhang Yuanqi arrived!

"Sorry I'm late, everyone," Sister Zhang politely apologized the moment she walked in. "I won't explain why, but after we finish recording today's episode, let me treat everyone to dinner. It was really just a one-off incident today." Actually, there were other cases like this where a big shot celebrity like a Heavenly King was three hours late to a filming and the director and crew did not say a word about it. The entire film crew just waited for him to show up. But Old Zhang was much more considerate in her actions and the way she spoke. Even though she was only late by 10 minutes, she still apologized immediately after she arrived. This was also the reason why Sister Zhang enjoyed such a good relationship with everyone even after working for so many years in the entertainment circle. At least on the surface, she was very friendly.

Chen Guang smiled and said, "It's fine, we only just arrived too."

Zhang Xia asked, "Did you get held back because of your fans?"

"Yes." Zhang Yuanqi laughed gently. "I had only just left my home when the reporters and fans blocked my way. I nearly couldn't make it here." After explaining, she looked at Zhang Ye and said, "I thought you were taken away by the police again."

Zhang Ye laughed. "Well, I don't get taken down that easily."

Zhang Yuanqi gave him advice out of goodwill. "Take it easy."

"OK." Zhang Ye then looked to his staff and said, "Let the audience in and prepare to start recording."

The staff opened the doors and allowed the audience to make their way into the recording studio. At the same time, many of their colleagues from Central TV's other program teams also joined the audience for the recording. They found a seat wherever they could, while those who did not have any seats ended up finding a corner and standing there. They were all here to take part in the recording of the new episode of *The Voice*. In the previous blind audition rounds, everyone had understood and learned the way the segment operated. But for today's recording, it was going to be about the coaches' battle rounds, so a lot of their industry peers had come to watch and learn about it. Even if many of those people at Central TV still didn't approve of Zhang Ye as a host who always got into trouble every other day, they knew that his results were definitely the real deal. It was there for all to see. For a show that was ranked number 1 in the nationwide viewership ratings for variety shows, there might be some home viewers who did not watch it because they didn't like to watch talent shows. But to an

industry peer, even if it was a genre they did not like, they would still watch it. This was because it was their job. They also wanted to learn why Zhang Ye's programs could get such high viewership when they couldn't do it themselves. They had to know the reason!

Very soon, the recording began.

The stage lights flashed as the fog machine spewed out fog!

Zhang Ye walked out to the stage slowly. "I-will-not-accept-any-gifts-this-year The-only-gift-I-will-accept-is-Brain Gold There's-no-need-to-watch-any-TV-shows-this-year The-only-TV-show-you-need-to-watch-is-The Voice The-authentic-health-product The-authentic-The Voice Welcome-to-the-broadcast-of-The Voice of China-brought-to-you-exclusively-by-our-title-sponsor-leader-in-health-products-Brain Gold Drink-Mount Zhou Mineral Water-to-show-your-support-for-The Voice The-most-favored-student-of-the-four-coaches-for-this-season-of-The Voice..."

It was the same reciting!

They were the same lines of the advertising message!

But even with the same tricks, he still managed to get the entire audience pumped up. Every time the audience heard Zhang Ye's machine gun-like reciting speed, they roared with excitement!

Offstage, Ha Qiqi, Zhang Zuo, and the others looked at each other and thought to themselves how lucky it was that nothing had

happened to Zhang Ye yesterday. Otherwise, even if the position of the executive director could be replaced by someone else, no one could fill Zhang Ye's shoes as the host!

.....

The days flew by.

One week.

Another week.

Yet another week.

The duration of a singing show couldn't possibly be stretched out for too long. After around a month or so, the curtain was finally drawn on the first season of The Voice with much anticipation!

The only tinge of regret Zhang Ye had was that in the lead-up to the night of the finale, Zhang Ye had strongly advocated to Central TV Department 1 for the season finale to be broadcast live on TV. He had wanted it to be just like The Voice from his previous world where they wrapped up the finals with a live broadcast, but due to Central TV Department 1's status as a national broadcaster rather than a provincial TV station, they had more considerations to be concerned about. They could not risk having anything that could not be controlled go wrong on live television. Therefore, Zhang Ye's application for the last episode to be broadcast live was denied. His team could only adhere to the old way of recording

first and then broadcasting it later. The only redeeming factor was that the show's effects and quality were still considerably good.

The top three contestants of the first season of The Voice were revealed.

Champion: Dong Hao.

Runner-up: Qian Pingfan.

Second Runner-up: Luo Yu.

On this night of the finale, The Voice was the most discussed topic on Weibo, Tieba, and various forums. This night belonged to The Voice!

"Hai, my Yuan Tong! You could only go as far as eighth place!"

"I like Yuan Tong. She's beautiful and sings well too!"

"I like Zhou Danian. I hadn't expected that he would get eliminated in the third live round. What a pity!"

"Dong Hao got first place? He was definitely a dark horse. He only has average looks, and does not have much personality in his singing voice, but I think that he was particularly good at performing at the right time. He's a typical contest-based participant and on that point, he really had a big advantage over

the others!"

"How could Qian Pingfan only be ranked second! flips table"

"My beloved Luo Yu! Third place is too unfair for you!"

"Dong Hao getting first place is well-deserved!"

"What the heck? To me, Zhou Danian is the true champion! That old man was awesome!"

"No matter how it ended, The Voice was an incredibly good watch. To me, this is the best variety show there is. No other shows even come close!"

"Right! Zhang Ye has again done it too amazingly! It was a pleasant surprise to everyone! I could never have expected that our country could come up with such an outstanding variety show!"

"Teacher Zhang, thank you for putting on such a great show for us!"

"I love you, Qian Pingfan! I love The Voice and I love Zhang Ye!"

"Waiting for the next season! Waiting so hard!!"

"It's definitely going to be the best variety show this year!"

"The show's creativity, stage effects, skills of the host, strength of the contestants, no matter which aspect we look at, The Voice has totally outdone all of those talent shows in the same genre!"

"That was so exciting!"

"The Voice, thank you for accompanying me till the end of summer!"

There were discussions, analyses, appreciation, and criticism as the heated debates came one after another!

.....

On that night, the season finale of The Voice had its viewership ratings calculated in advance. A breakdown of viewership ratings for The Voice from its first episode showed that it had always been doing very well!

First episode viewership: 2.01%

Second episode viewership: 2.12%

Third episode viewership: 2.04%

Fourth episode viewership: 1.95%

Fifth episode viewership: 1.98%

Sixth episode viewership: 2.09%

Seventh episode viewership: 2.13%

Eighth episode viewership: 2.22%!

The average viewership was maintained at above 2%!

Then, for the season finale episode, The Voice once again broke the nationwide viewership ratings record by securing a shocking 2.45%!!

A miracle!

—That was the word that many industry insiders used describe the advent and closing of The Voice of China!

Chapter 727: Skyrocketing Popularity! Good Preparation Is The Key To Success!

At night.

Caishikou.

Zhang Ye returned home very late on this day. He walked unsteadily, obviously looking like he had a few drinks. After knocking on the door, his mother came to open it for him. His home living room was lit up.

His mother asked, "Why did you come home so late?"

"We had a celebratory feast. Since no one left early, it wouldn't be appropriate for me to leave first." Zhang Ye spotted his father sitting on the sofa, reading a newspaper. "Why aren't the two of you asleep yet?"

His mother said, "We were waiting for you, what else?"

"Where's Chenchen?" Zhang Ye asked.

His father pointed to the bedroom. "She went to bed long ago."

His mother was in a good mood, smiling and saying, "Your dad and I just finished watching the news. All the media outlets are talking about The Voice and the reviews are especially positive. I

heard that the viewership ratings for the season finale broke records again? Well done! You've really done me proud!"

Zhang Ye said proudly, "But of course. Who do you think your son is?"

His father reminded him, "Don't get arrogant, there's still a long way ahead of you."

"I know, Dad." Zhang Ye also sat down and picked up a copy of the newspaper. He said, "Let me see what they are saying about my show. I've been so busy all of today, entertaining others during the celebratory feast that I couldn't rest for a minute."

The newspaper evaluations gave a mixed review of Zhang Ye as a person, with each review greatly differing from the next. However, on the issue of his works, especially of *The Voice*, most of the media's comments were consistent. One of the newspapers wrote a rather interesting article. The article explored with wonderment: "Usually, the style of the work reflects the character of person who created it. However, those words do not apply to Zhang Ye. Perhaps many people will wonder for the rest of their lives about one thing—why is that a person like Zhang Ye who attracts so much negative news and is full of negative energy can come up with works that are so unexpected of him and full of positive energy that are also well-loved by the people!?"

His parents went to bed.

When Zhang Ye finished reading the newspapers, he also ambled

back to his bedroom. Without speaking, he turned on his computer and immediately went online to check the Celebrity Rankings Index.

S-list Rankings.

A-list Rankings.

B-list Rankings.

The list was progressively loaded.

Finally, Zhang Ye found his name within the B-list rankings and clicked on it. It opened up the popularity score chart. He purposely went back to three months ago on the chart, the time he had just started preparing for the production of The Voice. He set the chart's table and graph to show his popularity score from that day until the current day.

Starting from the far left region of the graph, he could clearly see that his popularity score had a smooth and stable upward trend, without too much variation. He had been constantly placed around the bottom of the B-list rankings at that time, but when The Voice's second episode was broadcast, his popularity score showed a sudden increase with the slope curving 30 degrees upward. Among the list of 30-40 B-list celebrities, he steadily climbed up the rankings!

36th place!

33rd place!

30th place!

When it reached the period where The Voice's fifth episode was broadcast, Zhang Ye's popularity score had overtaken Fan Wenli's, who was near the bottom of the B-list rankings. He was even maintaining that ascending momentum with the passage of time!

27th place!

25th place!

Most of the popularity he gained was from The Voice, which he was the executive director and overall planner for. There was also his amazing performance as the host of The Voice. Of course, a portion of this popularity was gained from other sources, such as the scolding battle he had online with his industry peers, the palindrome poem, the questions that he had written for those two subject exams in the Beijing college entrance exam, as well as the car smashing incident at Tsinghua University. All of it contributed some portion!

The graph then reached the far right region which indicated his popularity score as of today.

At this moment, Zhang Ye had risen to 22nd place on the B-list Celebrity Rankings Index. From his specified timeline of the data

displayed, he had risen more than ten spots, and judging from the popularity score increase during this time period, it was the highest amount of popularity he had gained ever since his debut!

Importantly, being in the B-list rankings was no longer the same as being in the C-or D-list rankings. Advancing one spot proved to be a very difficult task, let alone advancing more than ten spots. Back then, when Zhang Ye had just broken into the B-list rankings, he tried out many things and still only brought himself up one or two spots out of last place. It was like he was moving at the pace of a tortoise, moving up the rankings bit by bit, slowly advancing like a creeping snail. All of this was actually down to the fact that celebrities in the B-list rankings were also rather well-known people with a good foundation for their popularity. Their popularity scores would not just stay as they were, so even if your popularity increased, the others would also have an increase in their own popularity. Naturally then, promotions in the rankings would be much slower. This was all within reason. However, with The Voice this time, Zhang Ye had bulldozed his way through from the bottom of the B-list rankings all the way to the middle of it. He had even overtaken Chen Guang with his momentum!

As of now, these were the rankings around Zhang Ye's position.

B-list Celebrity Rankings:

21st place: Hu Fang.

22nd place: Zhang Ye.

23rd place: Chen Guang.

While Fan Wenli was at 29th place.

Zhang Ye did not know who Hu Fang was as he had never come across him before. But regarding Old Chen and his wife, everyone knew who they were.

Before *The Voice* was produced, the Chen Guang and Fan Wenli couple was more popular than Zhang Ye. Fan Wenli was ranked a little higher than Zhang Ye, while Chen Guang was ranked much higher. This was due to the fact that both of them were highly ranked within the singing industry, where they were like big shots who were near the top. Meanwhile, Zhang Ye was only a radio host who had dabbled in the local and online TV stations as a host, written poems, given lectures, authored a novel, and proved a mathematical conjecture. All of these activities targeted a smaller crowd and was also at a more complex level, so he definitely had no way to compare to Old Chen and Fan Wenli!

But with *The Voice*, all of that changed!

It wasn't that Chen Guang and Fan Wenli's popularity did not grow. As coaches on *The Voice*, the couple's popularity also greatly increased and their celebrity rankings rose as well. But it was precisely because of Zhang Ye's massive increase of popularity that made him be able to overtake the couple's popularity scores.

Counting the reasons, it was probably only down to the following 2 factors.

Reason 1: Zhang Ye was too good at getting attention. He was the overall planner for The Voice as well as its executive director, even taking on the position of host. Since the audience all knew that Zhang Ye was the overall planner and executive director, they would naturally place more focus on him and the popularity would mainly go to Zhang Ye. He had appropriated a share of the popularity that was supposed to go to the four coaches, unlike with the original version of The Voice produced back in his previous world. Zhang Ye had reversed the roles of the host and the guests.

Reason 2: Because their paths were different, Chen Guang and Fan Wenli might have been dominating the singing industry, but when they stepped out of it, the two could not be considered very active in the greater entertainment circle. Their popularity in the singing industry also came from them walking the well-beaten path. Now that they both had almost gotten all the way to the top, they found it difficult to go any further. Naturally, this path also became narrower with their chances becoming limited. Even if the singing industry was a key industry of the entertainment circle, their potential for popularity was already close to the limit. Even if they could add onto it, there weren't many ways they could achieve it. But it was different for Zhang Ye. This was where you could see Zhang Ye grabbing an advantage over them since he was taking multiple paths, taking part in everything that was happening in the entertainment industry. Novels, poems, shows, exam questions, lectures, there was basically nothing he did not do. So this created a much wider path for the future. Rather than saying that he was almost at his maximum potential, he was just starting out in all of these fields he had dabbled in. As for his original profession as a host, he had never stepped foot into a satellite TV station that had nationwide coverage before this. He had always been working at a local or online television station.

Since it was his first time as a Central TV host, the effects were much more obvious as they came from a qualitative change in his work.

Thinking back to some of the evaluations the experts had of him, Zhang Ye could only chuckle at them. Those industry insiders were not optimistic about him, and even some of his friends and relatives felt that his path to fame was an odd and difficult one since he was only doing things that appealed to the minority. If even Chen Guang, a big shot celebrity who could hold his concerts overseas in some countries found it hard to move up any further, then where could a jack of all trades like you—a host who gave lectures, wrote novels, and composed poems—go? Zhang Ye had ever doubted himself at any time in the past, but in the end, it was because of Wu Zeqing's support and encouragement of him that he was enlightened. She provided him a clear direction. The words Old Wu had said to him back then would never be forgotten by Zhang Ye in his life. The idea of walking many paths was first suggested by Old Wu!

This was also the reason why many singers switched over to acting when they reached a peak in their singing careers. It was also the reason why many movie stars switched to making album or writing novels when they had reached their peak in their respective industry!

Facts had proven Old Wu right!

Facts had proven that Zhang Ye had not taken the wrong path!

When he was initially not that popular, he might not have seen

this. But now that he was a B-list celebrity, the advantage Zhang Ye had by walking multiple paths was gradually beginning to show. Chen Guang could no longer move up, while Fan Wenli was already slowing down in her rise. With celebrities like these encountering a bottleneck in their careers, it greatly surprised many of those industry peers, experts, and the media who were not optimistic about Zhang Ye!

—This was what you called "good preparation is the key to success"!

Chapter 728: A Grand Prize Is Drawn!

(Beginning)

Late at night.

In the dead of night, almost every household was asleep.

Zhang Ye was at his parents' house checking on the performance of his popularity in recent days and slightly summarizing his thoughts about his work for the past few months. Overall, he was pretty satisfied with how everything has turned out. At least when comparing it to how he was doing at the beginning of the year, he was doing much better in recent days. His popularity had also grown exponentially and could not be mentioned in the same breath as the past. Other celebrities might have encountered a bottleneck and slowed down in their progress the moment they entered the B-list rankings, but it was the exact opposite for Zhang Ye. It seemed like he had only just started ascending and heading toward the peak of his career.

His short-term goal was reached earlier than expected, putting him in a very good mood.

After summing it all up, it was about time for the lottery draw.

During the recent college entrance examination question setting, Zhang Ye had spent a good half of his reputation points earned from the first few episodes of The Voice. He used them to increase his understanding and knowledge of this world by reading books related to the social sciences, novels of this world, foreign history,

foreign languages, and all other sorts of books with varying topics. He scanned through all those books once, then by using the Memory Search Capsules, he revisited all the text and images to store them into his mind, increasing his knowledge greatly and getting a better understanding of this world. Although not perfect yet, at the very least he wouldn't accidentally reveal that he wasn't from this world due to a lack of basic general knowledge—this was more than enough as his greatest weakness was slowly being made up for.

As for whether the additional knowledge was enough for him to relearn, Zhang Ye knew that it was not. He did not expect himself to be able to summon the wind and call for rain with just some books, since knowledge from text and images were almost always more passive in nature. It wasn't as if he could practically apply all of the replicated knowledge he had become so familiar with now. It wasn't that powerful, otherwise, what was the point in having teachers? This was why the additional knowledge was just a way to supplement and enrich Zhang Ye and improve himself. He did not expect that he could put them to use any time soon. If there was anything he knew that he could depend on, it was the lottery draw. With the existence of the game ring, it was the most direct and practical help that Zhang Ye could use. This was his greatest trump card!

It had been some time since he had done the lottery draw. He was itching for it!

First, a check to see how many reputation points had been earned!

Zhang Ye was already prepared to have a spin at the lottery with all that he had. He opened up the game ring's virtual screen and immediately saw a long string of numbers appearing overhead.

183 million, 82 thousand Reputation Points!

Hey!

It's a little less than expected!

The figure was a bit less than Zhang Ye's expected amount of reputation. He felt that it was a little low, but still acceptable overall.

He understood that it was because of proving the mathematical conjecture he had gotten so many reputation points at that time, which caused him to have a higher expectation than what he was seeing now. But thinking about it practically, quite a lot of the reputation points he had gained earlier through the college entrance exam questions and The Voice he had already spent earlier. Moreover, The Voice might have high viewership ratings even when taking into account this world's factors and had gotten a 2-point rating, but that still would not compare to the sensation caused by proving a mathematical conjecture. After all, Dale's Conjecture was huge, something that encompassed the entire world, so even if it was just a minority of people in each country who gave it their attention, his reputation points would still increase by a lot. That should not be surprising at all.

As for why the mathematical conjecture did not bring more real

world popularity to Zhang Ye as compared to The Voice, he also knew the reason for it. After Dale's Conjecture had been proven, many people learned of it and were shocked by it. But because Zhang Ye was considered a rookie in the mathematics world, coupled with the fact that proving a mathematical conjecture did not count as entertainment news, or to be precise, it was not considered a mainstream topic within the entertainment industry or of interest to the people, this had created the reason for why proving the mathematical conjecture did not bring Zhang Ye as much popularity as The Voice, even though his game ring's reputation points had increased by a lot. But on the whole, the game ring's reputation points' system still worked rather proportionately with Zhang Ye's popularity score in the real world, except in special circumstances like the situation surrounding the mathematical conjecture where there was some difference to a certain extent on how he gained his reputation points and popularity.

Alright, it was time for the lottery draw!

He would use the first draw and place a small bet to test his luck!

He brought up the lottery draw interface and his eyes scanned the options available. He did not choose the upgraded lottery draw system. Instead, he just lightly touched the option that said "Lottery Draw (One)." This was the lottery draw system that was available prior to the system upgrade. But even if it was an older version and the prize items that could be won from it could no longer help much to Zhang Ye's progress, there were still some exceptions. In the Lottery Draw (One) system, he could win items like the "Difficulty Adjustment Die" which was cheap yet overpowered. The key was that its fail rate was very low, in that

winning an empty treasure chest was unlikely. Compared to the new Lottery Draw (Two) system which had about a 50% chance of landing on an "empty" icon if he did not use the Lucky Halo, the probability of winning a prize was a lot higher in the older version. Zhang Ye had never intended to stop using the Lottery Draw (One) system. He was about to test his luck with it now.

He clicked and purchased the right to play one round of the lottery draw!

100,000 Reputation Points were deducted.

Once the wheel started spinning, Zhang Ye immediately clicked on the Additional Stakes button and added 99 stakes, making it a total of 100 stakes and spending 10 million points for this round of the lottery draw!

Once around!

Five times around!

The wheel spun extremely fast and then gradually slowed down!

"Special Category!"

"Give me the Special Category!"

Zhang Ye whispered under his breath the entire time.

In the end, it came to a stop in the Skills Category zone.

100 Treasure Chests (Small) came spilling out. Zhang Ye took a deep breath and lowered his head to open the chests and reveal the item that he won!

[Basics of Directing Skill Experience Book] × 100.

Basics of Directing? Wasn't this a required course when majoring in directing?

Zhang Ye blinked several times. This skill experience book had him surprised a little, as it was a prize that wasn't too different from what he had expected. It looked like his luck today was rather good.

As a result, without another word, Zhang Ye pressed Lottery Draw (One) again!

It started again!

100 additional stakes!

Another 10 million Reputation Points were spent just like that!

Looking at the spinning wheel, Zhang Ye screamed in his head again, hoping for a prize in the Special Category. This might be the

older lottery draw system, but a prize from the Special Category could still mean getting the rights to purchase normal items from the Merchant Shop. Even if it didn't compare with the newer and upgraded Lottery Draw (Two), it would still be a great help to him. An item that could be bought without limit and at any time he needed it as long as he had the required amount of Reputation Points was much better than getting an item that he might only get to use once, unless that item was on the same level as the one in his inventory—the 1-Up item. However, there still might be a Merchant Shop purchase right to the 1-Up item, so if he could win a Special Category prize that gave him the rights to purchase the 1-Up item from the Merchant Shop, wouldn't it be even better?

So as long as he could land in the Special Category zone, Zhang Ye wouldn't want it any other way. Unfortunately, these outcomes were not up to him and he could only depend upon luck!

Ding!

The wheel stopped. The needle pointed at the Skills Category zone again!

The lottery draw ended!

[Camera Techniques Skill Experience Book] × 101.

When Zhang Ye saw this, he was again very happy with it. He thought about how strangely coincidental this result was. Camera techniques? This should also be part of the syllabus for a directing major, right? The prizes he got today from the lottery draw were

all related to directing work, and were even quite useful to Zhang Ye. Although he was the executive director of The Voice, everyone knew that Zhang Ye wasn't exactly a true-blue director. He was considered someone who had no solid foundations in directing. He had only managed to do the show so well because he had the original The Voice show from his previous world to follow along with, and also the fact that a talent show did not really necessitate much skill from a director. This was not a TV drama or a movie, so it was much easier to handle the program as a director.

Now that The Voice had ended, Zhang Ye's next program was still undecided. He had not started considering what his next program would be, so naturally, if he experienced two types of directing skills to boost his resume, wouldn't it be even better? Even if Zhang Ye were to come across any program that had very difficult shots to handle, he would still risk taking on the job as the executive director. 100 books of both the Basics of Directing and Camera Techniques skills? Together with his experience and the original shows from his world, Zhang Ye believed that he could definitely match up against any director who had just made their debut or graduated from directing school. This allowed him to add even more clout and qualifications to himself. Do you know how important the role of the executive director in a program is? If Zhang Ye could handle the entire process by himself, then he definitely wouldn't let others do it. Besides, with these kinds of Experience Books, he could put them to good use for TV dramas or movie filming in the future!

It was time to "eat" them all!

A total of 201 Skill Experience Books were "eaten" and "digested" by Zhang Ye!

After taking a deep breath, Zhang Ye reopened the lottery draw screen. With some hesitation, his eyes landed on the Lottery Draw (Two) option. With focused determination, he reached out his hand and clicked the new lottery draw system. This was still the lottery draw that he was most anticipating. After all, even though the Lottery Draw (Two) system was much riskier and he had wasted quite a lot of Reputation Points on it before, the prizes that could be won in Lottery Draw (Two) was totally incomparable to those in Lottery Draw (One)!

It was time to give it a try.

With the same attitude as the previous times, Zhang Ye was unwilling to activate the Lucky Halo (Upgraded) as it cost too many reputation points to use. 100,000 Reputation Points for just one second of usage, if kept on for one minute, would force him to spend 6 million Reputation Points. This was almost the same as spending 10 million reputation points in Lottery Draw (Two), so he was exceedingly unwilling to use it!

The total reputation points he had left now was slightly over 160 million. Zhang Ye immediately clicked and purchased one ticket to play!

10 million Reputation Points suddenly vanished into thin air!

The slot machine lit up and the icons in the windows started spinning!

Stats Category...

Empty...

Empty...

Consumption Category...

Skills Category...

Empty...

Skills Category...

No matter which icon showed up on the slot machine, Zhang Ye just kept whispering the same name under his breath—"Special Category." But the probability of the Special Category icon appearing in this version of the lottery draw was way too low. Compared to Lottery Draw (One), it was even lower. In any case, whether it was because Zhang Ye's eyesight wasn't too good or something else, after staring at the slot machine's windows for half a minute, Zhang Ye did not manage to spot the Special Category icon even once!

Eventually, after a long time, he suddenly seemed to have caught a glimpse of the Special Category icon flashing across the slot windows!

That's right! Don't mention getting it, even just seeing it was difficult, so what would you make of the chances to land on that category!

Zhang Ye wasn't confident either. All he did was stare at the slot machine that was coming to a stop, hoping for a miracle to happen!

Chapter 729: A Grand Prize Is Drawn! (Middle)

A moment later, the spinning of the slot machine's windows started slowing down. The icons slowly slid down one by one, coming to a halt. Now, three of the icons could be seen clearly. They were respectively, the Stats Category icon, another Stats Category icon, and finally, an "Empty" icon. From his experience, Zhang Ye analyzed that the slot machine would stop on one of those three icons.

Ba da.

The first Stats Category icon slid past without stopping.

Zhang Ye's mouth was getting dry. "Stop! That's enough!"

With the movement speed of a tortoise, ba da, the second Stats Category icon did not stick. Under Zhang Ye's speechless gaze, it also slid down and the slot machine finally came to a stop on the next icon!

Empty!

Nothing came out!

Zhang Ye looked up in anger. How infuriating! Special Category? This new lottery draw system made it so that it would even be very

difficult to win a prize! Did he really have to resort to activating the Lucky Halo? Zhang Ye could feel the pinch. After all, the 10 million Reputation Points he had just spent had be flushed down the drain. This wasn't a small sum of Reputation Points whatsoever. Like the previous two times when he got the "Empty" category, Zhang Ye had wanted to save on using the Lucky Halo at that time as it would cost a lot of reputation points just to activate it. However, in the end, not only did he not save any reputation points, he even wasted them. If he only knew, he would have activated the Lucky Halo right from the start. Even though it might cost more reputation points, at least he would be guaranteed to win a prize.

It's time to play again!

But I'm not going to believe this shit!

Zhang Ye was triggered. This guy was basically being competitive with himself now. He deliberately chose not to activate the Lucky Halo and wanted to see if he would actually not end up with any prize!

Again!

Zhang Ye spent another 10 million Reputation Points and tapped the lottery draw button angrily!

The slot machine started moving!

It cycled and cycled!

Making lots of noise!

This time, Zhang Ye chose to simply not look at it. He turned away and lit a cigarette, then took out his cell phone and fiddled with it. The virtual screen moved along shakily with the movement of the game ring on his pinky while Zhang Ye insistently refused to look at it. Finally, he heard a "ding" that signaled the end lottery draw round. Only then did Zhang Ye quickly look over. When he saw the results, he laughed loudly. This time, he finally won a prize. The slot machine had stopped at the Consumption Category icon!

Treasure Chest (Medium) was rewarded!

Zhang Ye lowered his head and opened the treasure chest lid. It was a bright and blinding sight, then with a flash, the brightness faded away and he could see a white card inside the treasure chest. It was suspended in midair within the chest, spinning around on its own axis. The card's border was even beautifully patterned.

He picked up the item and saw its explanation text.

[Specified Category Lottery Draw Ticket (White)] 1: Upon activation, the category of a lottery draw prize can be specified, but limited only to the Consumption Category, Stats Category, and Skills Category. This does not include the Special Category of prizes.

Specified category?

Does that mean that after using this ticket, other than specifying the Special Category of prizes, any other category could be chosen?

This item seemed like it wasn't too bad. After Zhang Ye analyzed it for a long time, he felt that this item was really quite valuable. Although the ticket might not look like it was worth 10 million Reputation Points and did not feel like it had much use, but when you think about it carefully...yes, it was really no f**king use at all!

What lousy item was this!

Does it need to be such a lousy item in terms of its cost-to-performance ratio!

Even if this card could specify the category of prizes and prevent the chance of landing on an Empty icon, making it possible to be assured of a prize for the lottery draw, it was an item that was totally not worth the reputation points he paid for it with. If there was no such thing as the Lucky Halo, it might have been OK. But since Zhang Ye had the godly upgraded Lucky Halo, this item he had just received was truly of little use to him. What this ticket could achieve the Lucky Halo could do the same. It wouldn't even need as many reputation points to get the same results. Yet this ticket took 10 million Reputation Points to get from the lottery draw. The only advantage this ticket had was that it could specify the category of prizes he wanted. However, Zhang Ye had never had an objective when playing the lottery draw, neither was he picky about what categories he could get. It didn't matter what he received, as long as it was useful. That was why, with the condition

of the ticket not being able to grant the Special Category of prizes, the item was really of little use to Zhang Ye. Its cost-to-performance ratio was very poor.

He was really down on his luck today!

No way, I won't believe this!

Having used up so many reputation points by now, yet the returns were so barren, Zhang Ye was naturally very unhappy and unsatisfied. He wanted to give it another spin, except that he did not insist on being so stubborn this time around. He was ready to activate the Lucky Halo and put it to use. He had to ensure the success rate and quality of the lottery draw prize, otherwise, how could he do justice to all the hard work he had put into the making of The Voice? All of his reputation points were earned by sweating blood and tears for his work!

He went to the bathroom to wash his face and hands before returning to his bedroom. When he sat back down on his bed, he immediately opened up his inventory and looked for that item, the "Specified Category Lottery Draw Ticket (White)" and used it!

[Confirm usage of item?]

Zhang Ye tapped "yes"!

[Please choose your specified category of items in the correct lottery draw version.]

Zhang Ye chose it for Lottery Draw (Two) and then hesitated for a moment before finally choosing to get a Consumption Category prize.

[Confirm / Cancel]

Zhang Ye tapped "Confirm".

The next moment, when the ticket was activated, it glowed white and then shattered into a million pieces. The now glowing white dots of lights slowly floated toward the slot machine and dived into the Lottery Draw (Two) button, activating the lottery draw interface. Zhang Ye was in no hurry to begin the lottery draw and instead went over to the Merchant Shop interface. He took a deep breath and tapped the Lucky Halo (Upgraded), activating it. In an instant, a white halo hovered over his forehead as it emitted a pulsing glow that rippled outwards. That effect looked amazing and cool!

-100,000!

-100,000!

The Lucky Halo had already started to deduct reputation points as it went down 100,000 Reputation Points every second!

Zhang Ye did not waste time enjoying his suave look any longer. He knew that every second was valuable, so he quickly went back

to the Lottery Draw (Two) interface.

Eh?

This is?

He suddenly saw something he hadn't noticed before. At the bottom right corner of the slot machine, there was a lever-like mechanism unlike the handle lever of the slot machine. This lever was instead smaller by several times, and because the slot machine had many design patterns and colors on it, if one did not look carefully, one would probably have ignored it. It was clear that this smaller lever had been there all along, only that Zhang Ye had not noticed it before.

What would this do?

He had to give it a try!

Zhang Ye cautiously placed his hand over it and touched it, then pushed it upwards once. It resulted in a text display appearing!

[Additional Stakes]

[Total additional stakes: 1]

Zhang Ye blinked, then pushed the lever downwards.

[Reduced Stakes]

[Total additional stakes: 0]

With that, Zhang Ye understood what was going on. This was the additional stakes lever. It was similar to the additional stakes button in Lottery Draw (One) except its interface and operating manner was different, though its function was more or less the same. So it seemed that Lottery Draw (Two) also had an additional stakes function. Since Zhang Ye had his Lucky Halo activated at the moment, and with the Specified Category Lottery Draw Ticket in play, you could say that he was already heavily invested. Naturally, it would be a waste if he only managed to win a single prize!

Add!

Zhang Ye knew that time waited for no man, so he acted quickly and put in some additional stakes!

After he added 10 additional stakes at a cost of 100 million Reputation Points, Zhang Ye finally started the lottery draw. He pulled the lever and activated the slot machine!

The icons slid down one by one at a very fast pace!

All of the icons were without exception displaying the same thing!

Consumption Category!

Consumption Category!

Consumption Category!

Throughout, he could see that every icon was the same, showing the Consumption Category icon. But in fact, there were differences between them because behind each Consumption Category icon was a corresponding treasure chest, and the items in those treasure chests surely had to be different. But since this was not something he could see from the outside, Zhang Ye did not know which one was good and which one was bad.

10 seconds...

30 seconds...

Soon, he learned of the result!

The slot machine windows' final displayed icon was one of the Consumption Category icons!

Zhang Ye tapped the 10 Treasure Chest (Medium) that were all the same size and opened them all at once!

But what shocked Zhang Ye was that the items in the opened treasure chests were, in a never seen before phenomenon, the

exact same item as the previous lottery draw! Nothing like this had ever happened to him before!

[Specified Category Lottery Draw Ticket (White)] × 10.

It was this lousy thing again!?

And it's even 10 of them this time?

This bro spent 100 million worth of reputation points on this?

Zhang Ye was falling apart. He had even resorted to activating the Lucky Halo this time, so why did it end up this way? Why the hell would I need so many specified category tickets?!

However, just as Zhang Ye was about to throw a tantrum and swear, a change occurred in the tickets. The 10 specified category tickets started glowing and a line of words appeared without warning.

[10 lottery draw tickets have been gathered.]

[Confirm merge.]

[Yes / No]

Zhang Ye was taken aback by this and subconsciously tapped

"Yes".

The ten white cards were suddenly shredded and turned into specks of lights floating in the air. After a brief moment, they suddenly started to merge together. After that finished, a black card appeared!

Zhang Ye stretched out his hand with surprise and took it.

[Specified Category Lottery Draw Ticket (Black)]: Upon activation, all categories of lottery draw prizes can be specified!

All?

All categories?

So does that mean it includes the Special Category too??

Zhang Ye swore out loud, then broke out into laughter. This certainly took an interesting twist from despair to hope. It was too goddamn exciting!

100 million Reputation Points in exchange for a prize in the Special Category of the upgraded lottery system that could give him the right to purchase items from the Merchant Shop?

Was it worth it?

Of course it was worth it!

It was way too worth it!

Zhang Ye was then suddenly reminded that his Lucky Halo was still activated and 100,00 reputation points were still getting deducted with each passing second. Immediately, he focused, and without hesitating, he activated the black card that was just formed a moment ago. This time, he did not put in any additional stakes as the Special Category prizes were not items but the right to purchase items from the Merchant Shop. Even if he were to increase it by 100 stakes, the right to purchase items would still be the same quantity. That would just waste his reputation points!

10 million Reputation Points were spent in an instant!

The Lottery Draw (Two) slot machine started shaking!

Looking at the icons on the slot machine as they speedily slid down the slot machine's windows, Zhang Ye was in awe of it all. The reason was none other than that all of the icons on them were now the same!

Special Category!

They were all Special Category icons!

Seeing all of those icons densely packed together, it would thrill any who saw it!

This bro had used up almost all of his reputation points for this now, so it better be something good!

Chapter 730: A Grand Prize Is Drawn! (End)

He was full of anticipation!

In addition to his anticipation, he also felt very nervous!

Zhang Ye did not even blink and just stared steadily at the slot machine, waiting for it to come to a stop. Whether it was a positive or negative outcome, he had already placed all of his bets on it. If he could get his ideal item's purchasing right from the Merchant Shop, it would be the greatest result that Zhang Ye had experienced since he received the game ring. But if he received the right to purchase an item that was basically useless to him, then it would be the worst result in the entire history of Zhang Ye's lottery draw experience!

Heaven?

Or Hell?

It all depended on this outcome!

Finally, after what seemed like more than an hour, the slot machine came to a stop after spinning for a long time. It stopped at one of the Special Category icons!

Ding!

The item came out!

[Received purchasing rights at the merchant shop.]

[Invisibility (Upgraded)]

Invisibility?

And it was even the upgraded version?

Zhang Ye heart was pumping much harder now. He quickly went to the Merchant Shop and deactivated the Lucky Halo (Upgraded) first before tapping on Invisibility (Upgraded) to check out what it was really about. The new item was represented by an icon that was a half-transparent, pudding-like symbol that could have been either hieroglyphic text or a pictograph. The instructive text was displayed below, but the introduction of the item did not talk much about the Invisibility item's function and effect in detail. All it mentioned was how it would help the player achieve a state of invisibility. As for its activation, it was the same as the Lucky Halo!

It would start when it got activated, and stop when it got deactivated.

It was again an item whose usage was counted by the second. Every second that it was used, it would cost 100,000 Reputation Points!

Zhang Ye cried out. It was yet another item that would "suck up"

all his reputation points!

When he had first received the game ring last year, he received an Invisibility Potion during a lottery draw once. Back then, he used it up at the landlady auntie's house and was nearly discovered by Rao Aimin as well. Luckily, he managed to escape at that time. This was why he was not unfamiliar with becoming invisible since he had done it once before. At that time, the effect of the Invisibility Potion could be said to be quite powerful, but the only disadvantage was that the user had to get naked for it to work, since if the clothing was not removed, it would give the whole thing away. But for this Invisibility (Upgraded) that he had just received from the lottery draw, what difference would there be from the unupgraded version of invisibility? Zhang Ye was not sure. He needed to test it out, and luckily for him, there were still some reputation points left over. Although it wasn't a lot, it should at least be enough for him to test out the item.

There was a full-length mirror in the wardrobe of his bedroom. Zhang Ye went over and opened it and stood in front of the mirror. Then, he activated the Invisibility (Upgraded)!

Invisibility was activated!

-100,000!

-100,000!

His reputation points were being deducted!

At the same time, Zhang Ye saw himself enveloped in a flash of light, and in that second, in his shocked gaze his reflection in the mirror suddenly disappeared!

His hair was invisible!

His face could not be seen!

His legs disappeared as well!

This upgraded version could even make his clothes invisible? It masked the entire body?

Just when Zhang Ye thought that this was how it was, he discovered that there was a part of him that could still be seen. His shoes. He took a few steps and observed the pair of shoes seemingly floating around in the air, an image that looked strange and out of place. Zhang Ye frowned at this. Why was it that his clothes could turn invisible but not his shoes?

Eh?

It looked like his socks also turned invisible? Could it be?

Zhang Ye analyzed it and came down to one possible reason for this to happen. He immediately took action and bent down, putting his hands into the shoes to push down his socks a little. The reason for this was to simply push his socks further down so that his ankles could come into contact with his shoes. As

expected, the moment when his ankles came into direct contact with his shoes, the shoes also instantaneously become invisible. They couldn't be seen anymore. Zhang Ye had achieved perfect invisibility without any problems!

So it seemed like the condition for clothing to turn invisible along with him was that it has to be in direct contact with his skin. The reason his shoes did not turn invisible earlier was due to him wearing socks and that those came between his feet and shoes. With this understanding, even in the event he had to wear layers of clothing during the spring weather, as long as Zhang Ye allowed those additional layers' sleeves or collars to come in contact with his skin, he could still turn invisible at any time!

This was way too easy to use!

Just this item alone made the entire lottery draw worthwhile! This function of this item had greatly exceeded Zhang Ye's expectations and imagination. Turning invisible whenever he wanted? Having the ability to disappear if he wanted to disappear? Zhang Ye felt that this was basically a godly technique. The only disadvantage it had was that it cost too much to use, at a rate of 100,000 Reputation Points per second!

Oh right, Invisibility is still on. I should quickly try out other things as well!

Zhang Ye did not wish to be wasteful, so he quickly walked over to the desk and picked up a pen. Suddenly, the pen disappeared into thin air. Then he used his other hand to touch the desk's surface and the rather large desk also became invisible, leaving the

computer, books, and stationery looking like they were suspended in midair!

As expected!

Anything he touched would turn invisible as long as the item he touched was in general a complete item. Even though the computer and some books were placed on the desk, but since they were not a part of the whole, the invisibility effect did not transfer over. As for what could be considered a "complete item," Zhang Ye didn't know how the game ring would determine it. Zhang Ye could only guess at it. But for now, this was all he needed to know.

Seeing that his overall reputation points were getting smaller and smaller, Zhang Ye immediately put a stop to his experimentation and deactivated Invisibility. Then he sat on his bed, trying to calm his excitement!

This was great! What a grand prize he had gotten!

The Heavens had not forsaken me after all! This 100 million worth of reputation points was at least not spent for nothing!

Thinking about it, all of the reputation points he had gathered over many days were used up. In exchange, he received 100 of each of the Basics of Directing and Camera Techniques Skill Experience Books, as well as a godly technique that was Invisibility. All of this left Zhang Ye feeling extremely satisfied.

Opening up the game ring's Inventory interface, Zhang Ye started taking stock of the items he had in it.

[Difficulty Adjustment Die] × 1.

[X-ray Vision Eye Drops] × 1.

[Pause Game] × 1.

[Strength Potion] × 10+

[1-Up] × 1.

Purchasable Items in Merchant Shop: Memory Search Capsule, Taiji Fist Skill Experience Book, Lucky Halo (Upgraded), Invisibility (Upgraded).

He also had Lock Picking, Calligraphy, Higher Mathematics, Computer Programming, Network Technology, Basic Directing, and other directing skills.

The current Zhang Ye was no longer the same person he was a year ago when he had nothing at all. Right now, he was equipped with many skills and items, though not fully armed to the teeth yet. But at least it was still incrementally being added to. His cards were increasingly getting stronger every day and he was getting closer and closer to his goal of becoming an S-list celebrity!

When he laid down on his bed, Zhang Ye was full of an unprecedented confidence. He fell asleep contented.

Chapter 731: Meeting Wu Zeqing's Family

The next day.

With his next program still undetermined, Zhang Ye went ahead with his vacation.

After breakfast, Zhang Ye was in a very happy mood. He hummed a tune that sounded like a [Jingyun Dagū](#) or [a verse from an introductory poem](#) that no one could really make out. Inside his bedroom, he pretentiously set up a desk and placed the Four Treasures of the Study on it. It was rare of him to be in the mood to practice calligraphy. Although his house was not big and did not have much space, he could still make do with it. Since it was only for practice, it did not matter how big the space was as long as there was a brush, paper, and ink.

Jingyun Dagū: storytelling in Beijing dialect with drum accompaniment

The introductory poem is used in crosstalk performances when the crosstalk actors make an appearance on stage. It is usually done in a softer volume, just enough to grab the attention of the audience so that they fully focus on trying to listen to it and not talk among themselves. It is used to quiet an audience before a performance. Also used in opera for when a character first appears.

He picked up a brush and dipped it in the ink.

Then he smoothly wrote out the song he was humming.

"Storytelling, acting to persuade people."

"Walking the middle of three roads."

"What goes around comes around."

"Experience is..."

As he sang, his mother knocked on the door from the hallway.
"Don't sing anymore, you're too noisy!"

Zhang Ye snorted, "What so noisy about it? This is art."

His father also said something at this moment. "Chenchen wants to go out."

"What does she want to go out for? Just let her stay home and watch television," Zhang Ye said.

The door opened and Chenchen walked in. "Zhang Ye, I want to go play with my classmates. I've already arranged to meet up with them."

Zhang Ye smacked his lips disapprovingly. "It's such a mess out there. I don't want you running around outside."

Chenchen was not having any of it. "Zhang Ye, send me there."

His mother said, "Chenchen is going to her classmate's house. A few of her classmates have arranged to have lunch at Mengmeng's house. The place is not far away, so send Chenchen over, and pick her up in the afternoon."

Zhang Ye exclaimed, "I'm busy right now."

His mother stared at him and said, "What are you busy with?"

"I'm dabbling in the arts," Zhang Ye said confidently.

Chenchen came over and looked at the calligraphy on the Xuan paper, then let out a contemptuous "hur hur."

His mother seethed. "You call writing some crappy words dabbling in the arts? Then if I steam some buns, can I call it scientific research!? Stop talking nonsense. Hurry up and send the child there. Her classmates are waiting for her. I just got off the phone with Mengmeng's mother and she informed me that they are already preparing lunch."

Zhang Ye said helplessly, "Alright, I understand." After that, he looked at Chenchen and groaned, "You only know how to cause trouble for me. Old Rao is too much. She said she would return in a month at most, but it's already been three months and there's still no news of her. This bro is going to become a professional nanny soon. Let's go then, Little Grandaunt."

He put on his sunglasses and a face mask. Zhang Ye held Chenchen's hand and led her downstairs. As Mengmeng's house was not situated too far, as it was on Zixin Road, he decided to not drive and just walked with Chenchen straight to Mengmeng's house.

Today's weather was not bad. The weather was cooling and there were clear skies above them. It was quite rare to see clear blue skies in Beijing these days, so it was also a good chance to take a stroll and enjoy themselves.

They reached their destination. It was an apartment complex that still hadn't been torn down, and was located inside an alleyway.

"Chenchen!"

"Chenchen is here!"

"Ah, and Uncle Zhang!"

"Hello, Uncle Zhang."

Her young friends all ran out to greet them.

Zhang Ye smiled and said, "Hello, everyone."

Zhang Ye had met these children before during the school's

parent-teacher meetings. They were in the same class. There were four children, two boys and two girls. However, he was unable to call them by name.

Mengmeng's parents also came outside.

"Yo, Teacher Zhang is here?"

"Teacher Zhang, quick, come into the house quickly and have a seat!"

Mengmeng's parents were very friendly and rather polite.

Zhang Ye quickly gestured with his hands. "There's no need for that. Let the children play by themselves. I've got to go. Chenchen is a naughty girl, so if anything happens, please be tolerant of her. Sorry for giving you additional trouble."

Mengmeng's mother laughed and said, "It's no trouble at all. Chenchen has always been Mengmeng's closest friend."

Mengmeng's father said, "Since The Voice has finished broadcasting, we don't know what other shows there are to watch anymore. Is your new program starting production yet?"

"It should be soon," Zhang Ye said.

He made small talk for a long time.

Chenchen pulled on Zhang Ye's sleeves impatiently and said, "Zhang Ye, you can go now."

Zhang Ye said in a speechless manner, "Whoa, you're chasing me away now?"

Everyone was tickled.

"Alright, I'll come back and pick you up later." Zhang Ye reminded Chenchen again to be obedient and not to cause any trouble. Then he left and strolled east. Actually, he was very worried about Chenchen, even though he always deriding her by picking at her faults. However, when the moment the kid got out of his sight, Zhang Ye could not quite get used to it and was always afraid that she would cause trouble or something bad would happen. He was worried because this little one was very different from the kids her age in that she should not be assessed by thinking of her as a child.

He walked and walked.

He had nearly reached Taoran Pavilion Garden's North Gate. It was just ahead.

Just as he was thinking about whether he should go to the park to enjoy the view of the lake, he spotted in his peripheral vision a BMW 7 Series parked on the opposite side of the road. It looked very familiar. As this color of BMW 7 Series cars were not commonly seen around the area, coupled with the fact that Old Wu

also lived nearby, Zhang Ye immediately walked closer to take a look at the license plate. Heh, so it really was Wu Zeqing's car! What a coincidence! And so he crossed the road and stood beside the car, looking around and waiting.

About five minutes later.

Wu Zeqing's figure appeared from a market in the wide but dark alleyway, carrying large and small bags of stuff and walking in the direction of the BMW.

Zhang Ye waved at her. "Old Wu!"

Wu Zeqing looked up with a smile and said, "What are you doing here?"

"I was just taking a stroll when I saw your car." Zhang Ye pointed at the BMW. "You came to buy some food? Isn't there a Wumart Store on Taiping Street?"

Old Wu said, "That place is a bit more expensive."

"You're not working today?"

"I have a half-day and need to go to the office in the afternoon. Are you on break too?"

"Yes, the entire program team is on break for two days." Zhang

Ye glanced at the things she was carrying and asked, "You bought so much stuff? You have visitors at your house?"

"My relatives came to visit me." Old Wu placed the bags into the car and invited, "Do you want to come over to my place?"

Zhang Ye said nervously, "Aren't your relatives at your house? How can I go there?"

Old Wu smiled. "What about it? It's not like there's a conflict of interest there. Let's go."

Zhang Ye hesitated. "About that, I don't think it's appropriate? Our relationship is still under wraps, so I'm thinking when the occasion is right, we could officially..."

Old Wu smiled and looked at him. "Are you afraid of going?"

When he heard this, Zhang Ye let out an uncontrolled laugh. He was a person who could not take provocation lightly and immediately got ruffled. He threw his head forward, cupping his ears as if he did not hear her clearly. "Eh, what did you just say? I seem to have heard you say that I was 'afraid'? Afraid of going? Me? Afraid of going? Aiyo! Old Wu, why are you so funny? Me? Afraid of going? I have nothing to be afraid of! Isn't that a huge joke! Aiyo, this temper of mine, hurry up! Get in the car! I must definitely go to your house today! Let's go! Start driving!" He got into the BMW and sat in the passenger seat.

Old Wu: "..."

Several pedestrians who were nearby also looked over, wondering to themselves what had gotten into the person wearing a face mask.

Old Wu drove the car off. They reached Old Wu's house within three minutes.

When the car was parked, Zhang Ye coughed and immediately lost all his energy. "Do I really have to go in?"

Old Wu smiled and said, "Yeah."

"Your relatives are all here?"

"No, only my elder sister is here."

"Hai, you should have told me earlier!"

After getting out of the car, Zhang Ye straightened his back. He was not terrified of seeing Old Wu's elder sister, more worried that he would have to see her parents. If her entire family and relatives were all here, Zhang Ye wouldn't have dared to come as the time to meet them was not ripe yet. With his current status and reputation, if Old Wu's family saw him, they would probably demand he break up with Old Wu. Getting Old Wu to agree to be his girlfriend was only the first step. If he wanted to marry Old Wu, then his path ahead was sure to be beset with difficulties.

In the villa.

When they entered the house, Zhang Ye saw a plump figure.

"You're back?" The plump woman looked over.

Old Wu put down the groceries and said, "I brought a friend over. We happened to bump into each other on the way just now."

Zhang Ye immediately said, "Hello." He had already removed his sunglasses and face mask.

The fat woman was stunned. "Aiyo! Hey, isn't this Teacher Zhang? Zeqing, you're friends with Zhang Ye? Why didn't you say so earlier?!"

Old Wu remarked curiously, "Didn't I say that before? Didn't I invite Little Zhang to join Peking University? I was also the one who kinda linked him for the endorsement of Little Mo's Brain Gold commercial."

"You..." Zhang Ye opened his mouth to say something but he did not know how to address her. No one knew that he was in a relationship with Old Wu, but he still couldn't possibly call her Auntie, right? The seniority was also a little bit messy in this case. The woman standing in front of him had somewhat similar features to Wu Zeqing, but they had a wide age gap. She looked in her forties to fifties. He remembered that Old Wu had previously

mentioned that she was fourth in her family. She had two elder sisters and an elder brother. This plump lady was likely the eldest sister in her family.

Thankfully, the plump woman said, "Just call me Fat Sis. That's what everyone calls me."

She even had a nickname? Zhang Ye said in a slightly reserved manner, "Sure, then I will address you as Fat Sis?"

Old Wu gently said, "You two chat first, I will start preparing the food. Some of the food is quite troublesome to make and I'll have to fry them in oil first before marinating them."

Fat Sis waved her off with her hands. "Go ahead, I will chat with Little Zhang." Then she enthusiastically dragged Zhang Ye and sat on the sofa. "If I knew that you were so close to my younger sister, I would have invited you to our home to have a meal long ago. You might not know this, but I have seen all of your TV shows, especially The Voice. I got such a kick out of watching it that I even caught it online several times. It was simply out of this world!"

Zhang Ye said, "Thanks for your support."

"How's Qian Pingfan? I liked him the most. Why didn't he win first place? Is there any conspiracy behind that?"

"No, there isn't!"

"Really?"

"A record label has already signed Little Qian. From what I understand, he will probably release a single sometime later, so that could be considered his official debut."

"Are you familiar with Luo Yu?"

"Yes, I am."

"Everyone claimed that she's a lesbian. Is that true?"

"Heh, of course it is not true. Those are just rumors."

Wu Zeqing's eldest sister was quite a talkative person. She could speak about almost anything and was commenting on everything. Coincidentally, Zhang Ye was also similarly good at chatting. The way they spoke and their natures felt quite similar. The more they talked, the more it felt like they had really compatible personalities. The whole of the living room was filled with the sounds of Old Wu on the chopping board and the chattering between Zhang Ye and Fat Sis.

About a full hour later.

Fat Sis said, "Little Zhang, you're quite a nice person. We must become friends!"

Zhang Ye also said, "That's for sure. If you need any help in the future, just tell me."

"Now that you mention it, I really do have something I need your help with." Fat Sis shifted and said bluntly, "I saw the Brain Gold products you are endorsing for my nephew, Little Mo, selling like hot cakes. In the past, his health products company was only valued at one-tenth of my company. But after having benefited from his association with you, his company has become the market leader in health products. Then that kid started blabbering every day about his goal of getting his company listed on the stock market. As someone senior to him, I'm also feeling the pressure now. Little Zhang, why don't you become my company's spokesperson as well? We can also aim to get listed on the stock market!"

Zhang Ye answered without even thinking. "Sure."

In reality, Fat Sis was just speaking in jest and she did not expect Zhang Ye to really accept. After being stunned for a moment, she said, "I'm serious."

Zhang Ye laughed and said, "I'm not kidding either."

Chapter 732: The Birth Of Plants vs. Zombies!

An idle chat had turned into business talk.

Wu Zeqing's elder sister was likely a woman of her word, so since she brought up the issue as the conversation had somehow steered toward it, she was probably really hoping to get an influential celebrity's endorsement for her company. At the same time, Zhang Ye was not the type to plan things. He just took things as they came and was also a more easygoing type of person.

As a result, they hit it off very well.

They settled an important matter in just a few lines of idle chatter.

Fat Sis thought that this was somewhat hasty, not because of herself, but because Zhang Ye had promised her so freely. Therefore, she decided to give him a brief introduction to her company. "I set up my company some years ago with a partner, with me being the majority shareholder. The company is in the PC gaming industry, and mainly focuses on browser and puzzle games. We're just a small, indie company that cannot compete against those large video game publishers who deal with huge game projects. However, even though we're an indie company, we aren't that small either. We do have a name carved out for ourselves in the industry and have ambitions to get into bigger projects. Some time ago, after our company completed long-term research into puzzle games, we came up with a new project we have invested heavily into. We hope that it can compete with the

top dogs in the market, but as you know about the video game industry these days, the competition is very fierce and depends heavily on advertising campaigns. In many of the recently published games, the ad budget has even exceeded the game development budget for some companies, so we can see just how important ad campaigns are."

Zhang Ye nodded as he listened.

Fat Sis insinuated, "We have also discussed this in our last few meetings and were considering several celebrities, hoping to discuss an endorsement deal with them. But those were all just small-time celebrities. For a big shot like you, truthfully, we haven't even given it any consideration since the endorsement fees are so high, therefore..."

Zhang Ye suddenly interrupted, "I can sense that you're insulting me."

Fat Sis said, "Not at all."

Zhang Ye said unhappily, "But you are. What big shot? What famous person? I'm just a small-time celebrity. What about the endorsement fee? Can you not ridicule me like that?"

"But we have to talk about the money no matter what."

"If you wish to talk about money, then I won't be doing the endorsement for you."

"Little Zhang, are you looking down on me?"

"Not at all."

"But you are. If we don't discuss the endorsement fee, I can't possibly make you do it pro bono, can I?"

"Old Wu is my friend, so how can I ask you for any money? Why are you so funny? I don't need a single cent. All I need is a word from you and we can sign the contract!"

"Little Zhang, it's meaningless if you put it that way. Business is business, even if you're my sister's friend. Anything between the two of you remains so, but business is business!"

"But I think of you as a friend too, unless you don't treat me as one?!"

"It's you who's not treating me as your friend! What you're saying is totally pointless!"

"It's you who's being pointless! It's just an endorsement for a game. All you need is to take a few photos of me and publish them, so why are you still bringing up the issue of money with me? Aiyo, aren't you getting tired of this talk?"

The two of them nearly started a fight, speaking in quick

succession. But of course, it wasn't really a fight. The two of them were actually speaking with humility in every line they said. This kind of a conversation style could only be seen in Beijing throughout the entire country. It was typical of the Beijing style and couldn't really be found anywhere else!

Until noon, the two of them squabbled over the issue of the endorsement fee.

"3 million. I can't afford it if it's any more than that."

"I won't take a single cent from you!"

"With the reputation of Zhang Ye out there, it's worth 3 million, so that's settled!"

"What reputation? I don't have any reputation at all! Who the hell would know who I am?!"

"You're being pointless again, Little Zhang! Really pointless!"

In the kitchen, the food for lunch had been prepared.

Old Wu set the table and placed the dishes on it. Then she looked over with an air of gracefulness and said, "Enough, you two. You've been squabbling for the past two and a half hours, ever since I began preparing lunch. Do you two still have energy?"

Only then did Fat Sis take a breather, take her cup of tea from the table, and gulp down the cold tea in several mouthfuls. "Hoo, I was dying of thirst!"

Zhang Ye, finding it to be the right time now, said, "So it's settled then, Fat Sis."

Old Wu agreed, "Little Zhang's not an outsider anyways. If he's willing to endorse your game, just go ahead and use him. The endorsement fee can just be a symbolic one. Aren't the finances for your company a little tight?"

Fat Sis sighed. "That's not right, that's not right at all! Little Zhang might be a B-list celebrity, but everyone in the industry knows that he commands an A-list endorsement fee, especially in the wake of The Voice. No one would believe it if his fees don't reach several million. Even a payout of 3 million is too shabby!"

Old Wu laughed. "At worst, you can wait until the game is released and everything has stabilized before giving Little Zhang his share through a share of the profits. It's not really that big of a deal."

Fat Sis said, "We still don't know how the game will perform in the current market. The National Gaming Expo is coming up, and the demo version hasn't even been completed yet. There are still many details and kinks that need to be ironed out, so if it fails when the time comes, how would I be able to compensate Little Zhang?"

They began eating.

Zhang Ye was getting tired from talking. He sat at the dining table and immediately picked up the chopsticks to start eating.

Old Wu also sat down, speaking as she ate, "I don't know anything about video games, but you can discuss it with Little Ye. He has a quick mind and many ideas as well."

"Right, I can advise you on some things," Zhang Ye said, still chewing on his food.

Fat Sis did not take this to heart, and even picked up a piece of meat and put it in Zhang Ye's bowl. She said, "Game development is quite different from making TV shows. They are two completely different fields, so even though I know Little Zhang's planning skills are very strong, it's unlikely that he knows much about video games. The genre of this new game that we're developing is a type of strategy-puzzle game in which the player can command a group of soldiers. There will be various types of weapons available while the enemy will be the computer AI's group of soldiers. The different types of weapons and soldiers will deal a range of different damage to the 'enemy.' The player's objective will be to capture a central flag on the map, but even if they do, they will just advance to the next stage where it becomes harder and harder to win. Of course, there will also be boss characters for them to come up against."

She gave a general overview of the game's rules.

Finally, Fat Sis said with a headache, "The game's final version has generally been completed now, but regarding the battle between the soldiers, many of the staff at the company feel that it's too traditional and boring after they playtested the game. There's no novelty to it, nor are the features outstanding. However, the advantage that we have is that our gameplay is quite strong, with many stages available. The preliminary design has 68 different levels, so the only thing left to ponder is how to make the game more interesting and creative."

Listening up to here, Zhang Ye raised his head and blinked several times. "Does it have to be about soldiers fighting a battle?"

Fat Sis glanced at him. "It doesn't have to be. We can change it any time we want."

Zhang Ye hesitated for a moment and smiled, "Then let me share with you an idea. Tell me what you think."

"Go ahead." Fat Sis did not take him too seriously.

When it came to his girlfriend's family, Zhang Ye was unconditional in giving. "Could we change the soldiers that the player will be controlling to different types of plants and fungi that have their own unique offensive or defensive capabilities? And the enemies would be changed into different types of zombies."

Fat Sis was stunned. "Plants? Zombies?"

Zhang Ye stopped eating. He put down his chopsticks and found a pen and paper, and started scribbling on it. "The gameplay that I'm talking about is similar to your game overall. The difference is that the player-controlled assets would be static, which means that it's essentially a kind of tower defense game. With the scary zombies about to invade, each type of zombie would have its own unique features. For example, the Buckethead Zombie is extremely resistant to damage, while the Digger Zombie can dig beneath the yard to bypass plants that are planted on the lawn, and so on." With every explanation, Zhang Ye sketched out simple forms to illustrate it to Fat Sis. "The player will have to defend against the zombies by placing different types of plants on the lawn. There will be several dozen types of plants with different characteristics, like the Cherry Bomb that can instantly kill all enemies within a certain range, while the Chomper can devour the zombie closest to it. The players will have to strategically plan their placement of the plants in accordance to the weaknesses of each type of zombie to gain victory."

Fat Sis was so enthralled by the explanation that she no longer cared to eat. She anxiously asked, "Will there be enough stages though?"

"Why would there not be enough? You mentioned that the game your company designed has 68 levels? In my opinion, that isn't what I'd call enough. If it is according to my design, every plant type would have different attacks, special abilities, and purchase costs. It's also a developing process, with puzzle pieces to collect. There can be different game modes, such as adventure mode, survival mode, puzzle mode, mini-games, a zen garden, etc." He explained the overall concept of each mode before finally saying, "Then, including different areas on top of Day, like Night, Pool, Fog, and Roof, I dare say that this type of game has levels that

are...virtually limitless!"

In the half-hour talk, Zhang Ye sped through his explanation, speaking with more and more excitement as the number of pages he used to illustrate his proposal increased to more than a dozen on the dining table!

Stage layout...

Plant names...

Zombie characteristics and design...

Almost everything was covered in detail!

Fat Sis was incredibly stunned and amazed. "What is the title of this game!?"

Zhang Ye smiled and said, "I hope you can name it...Plants vs. Zombies!"

Chapter 733: The Busy Zhang Ye!

Afternoon.

The design of Plants vs. Zombies had been brought out by Zhang Ye.

At the beginning, it was only Fat Sis who had been listening to Zhang Ye's explanation with an excited look on her face. But as time passed, Old Wu's villa was becoming more and more lively as people knocked on her door one after another.

A youth entered the villa, looking very puzzled. "Fat Sis."

Fat Sis was the one who opened the door for him. She complained, "Little Sun, why are you so slow?"

The youth gave a wry smile. "I rushed over from the company as soon as I got your call, but this address was quite difficult to find."

"Hurry up and come in!" Fat Sis waved him in.

The youth suddenly noticed Zhang Ye sitting in the living room. Shocked, he said, "Ah? Zhang...Teacher Zhang Ye?"

"Don't be surprised by everything, come over here and listen to what Teacher Zhang has to say!" Fat Sis's title for Zhang Ye had also changed. She no longer called him Little Zhang.

Dong, dong, dong.

Someone had arrived again.

"Fat Sis, what's the urgent matter?" A middle-aged man arrived.

"Old Lu, you're here at the right time! Quickly come and listen!" Fat Sis said.

The middle-aged man essentially did not know why he was here. "Huh? Listen to what?"

"There's a new concept for our new game!" Fat Sis said.

The middle-aged man wondered, "Hasn't the concept for our new game already been confirmed?"

Fat Sis said, "Come here and listen, then you'll understand! Hurry, hurry, hurry!"

The middle-aged man did not recognize Zhang Ye but found him rather familiar looking. It seemed to him that this was a celebrity but he couldn't remember the name. He found a chair and sat down.

Zhang Ye was still explaining the concept, not caring who was joining the meeting. He just kept speaking, "There's basically no

limit to the levels in the survival and puzzle modes. The enemies come wave after wave, and as long as the player wants to keep playing, they can continue for six months to a year and it would still be playable. A linear, stage-clearing game can also be done this way. Each time that a stage has been cleared, the next one would just have its difficulty increased with more obstacles."

Fat Sis anxiously asked, "How do we avoid a loss of interest from gaming fatigue if the players can play forever?"

Zhang Ye laughed and said, "That's easy. We just need to create an in-game store where plants' puzzle pieces can be purchased. A player can also purchase premium plants and other items in the store. There are many ways that a player can earn money, like from growing a plant and then selling it back in the in-game store, or by completing challenges to increase your gold and silver coins' amount. This is a kind of endowed progress that can hook a player into the game and increase their anticipation of what comes next. As for gameplay fatigue, mini-games can be added to negate that. Instead of letting the player control the plants, they will be controlling the zombies instead, using all the types of zombies to attempt to eat the enemy's plants. Then there are also mini-games like breaking vases and bowling!"

One person!

Five people!

Ten people!

The entire game development team from Fat Sis' company had come over. There were more than a dozen people sitting around in Old Wu's living room and all of them were listening to Zhang Ye's explanation of the game with their mouths agape.

Everyone was also constantly throwing questions at Zhang Ye.

A female white-collar worker dressed in a business attire asked, "How many different variations of attack can the plants have? Wouldn't it get too monotonous?"

Zhang Ye answered, "You can have as many as you want. For example, the Cherry Bomb can blow up all zombies in an area around it, the Jalapeno can blow up enemies in an entire lane, some plants can shoot two or three attacks at once, some plants can attack targets in the air, some plants can block the path of the enemy, all kinds of attack variations can be created."

A woman asked, "Wouldn't that game take up a very large size then? Is this even a puzzle game anymore?"

Zhang Ye said, "It might sound complicated, but the concept of the game is actually very simple and not complex at all. As long as you create the game as I have envisioned it, the final product will probably be less than 100 megabytes."

Not only did he talk, he also illustrated his ideas.

Sunflower...

Peashooter...

Cherry Bomb...

And so on and so forth.

When everyone took a look at the sketches that Zhang Ye drew as well as the level settings he listed, an image of the game that he was describing formed in their heads, greatly pumping them up!

Fat Sis slapped her thigh. "Awesome!"

A lean-looking youth exclaimed, "This game sounds so cool! Amazing!"

A middle-aged man also gasped. "I've never thought that a simple thing like a puzzle game could be played this way. This is already miles ahead of our previous title, Soldiers' Fury!"

"That's right!"

"This game is really going to be absolutely awesome!"

"I agree! If we can really make this game, then it will surely be wonderful!"

"Just listening to this makes my blood boil with excitement! All the innovation and game mechanics we were looking for is here, so it can be said that nothing is missing whatsoever. It's usually very difficult to avoid any shortcomings and defects in the development of a puzzle game, but none of that can be found anywhere in this game!"

Everyone made constant exclamations.

Fat Sis looked at her company's staff. "Everyone agrees that this is good?"

"It's more than good!"

"Yeah, this is a divine creation!"

"Fat Sis, this game will surely get popular if we make and publish it!"

"Besides, we already have a playable version we can use from Soldiers' Fury. Most of the prep work is already done, so all we need to do now is modify the assets and reprogram some functions. Reusing the game engine won't be a problem, so we can directly base it upon that and it save ourselves loads of production time! I think if we do it fast enough and everything goes smoothly, we can come up with a demo version in time for this year's Game Expo!"

Everyone unanimously thought that this was a good game. In fact, they didn't just think that the game would be good. The game

had already amazed them, and gave them an impulse to quickly develop it so that they could see for themselves how it would look!

Fat Sis nodded and looked excitedly at Zhang Ye. "Teacher Zhang, I really have to take my hat off to you this time!"

Zhang Ye happily said, "I was just making up things along the way."

At this moment, the thudding of footsteps came from the stairwell. Wu Zeqing had changed and was carrying her bag with her down to the living room. "Big Sis, I'm going off to work then."

Fat Sis said, "Hurry, hurry. Let me use your house for a while."

"Little Zhang." Old Wu smiled and said, "Come with me, I need to speak with you."

"Sure." Zhang Ye excused himself and followed Wu Zeqing outside the villa. They stood on the front yard. Zhang Ye asked, "What's the matter, Old Wu?"

Old Wu said in a gentle tone, "My sister's company isn't that big, as for the endorsement fee..."

Before she could finish, Zhang Ye interrupted, "Hai, don't you think I know what to do already? Don't worry, I won't be charging your sister a single cent. We're all family and your sister is as good as my sister. Why would I still ask for any money from her? Why

are you so funny? OK, OK? You don't need to worry about such things, I know what to do."

Old Wu laughed. "Alright then, I'll let you work hard."

"Why are you still so courteous with me? Don't you still have work to handle at the office? Go to work already. I will definitely settle your sister's issue by the end of today." Zhang Ye proudly thumped his chest.

Old Wu left and Zhang Ye came back inside the house.

In the living room, Fat Sis and a few people were discussing something in low voices. When they saw Zhang Ye walking over, they immediately stopped.

Fat Sis suddenly said, "Thank you everyone for coming over. OK, everyone, you can go back for now. I will stay here and discuss things with Teacher Zhang. We'll talk again when I get back tonight for the meeting."

"Sure."

"Then we'll leave first."

"Teacher Zhang, goodbye."

The group of over a dozen staff members said their farewells and

left.

Only Zhang Ye and Fat Sis were left in the house.

Fat Sis looked at him and got straight to the point. "Teacher Zhang, I don't like to beat around the bush, so I'll say whatever comes to mind and not hide my intentions. I really loved the idea that you proposed just now, so I would like to buy the copyright to your proposal and make this game."

Zhang Ye waved it off with a hand. "If you treat me as a friend, don't talk to me about money. I was just randomly talking about this game idea that I had, so if you like it, please use it as you see fit. When the game is made, just don't forget to put my name into the credits."

Fat Sis said firmly, "That won't do. I would be taking advantage of you too much if I did that!"

Zhang Ye threw up his hands. "I won't hide it from you either, Fat Sis. But to be honest, I don't need money. Even if I earn more, I won't be able to spend it. It's not that I am boasting, but among the C-list and above celebrities, I am the only one without an agent. I don't have a need for a management agency to find me any jobs and neither have I attended any commercial performances since my debut. You won't find someone else like me in the entire entertainment circle."

Fat Sis said with a laugh, "That I have heard before."

"If I wanted to earn money, I would be able to get enough by just taking on a few projects. Don't you think so?" Zhang Ye explained, "That's why I'm telling you to stop bringing up the issue of money with me. If you really must, then we can just do it the way Old Wu mentioned. When your game sells well and becomes popular, you can share some of the profit with me."

Fat Sis bit her lip and finally said, "OK, then I will take advantage of you this once!"

Zhang Ye picked up the rough draft illustrations and notes on the table and arranged them properly, then handed it to her. "Hold on to these. If there are any problems with the details, you can ask me again. Like the rate of fire of the plants, the attack and defense of the zombies, for questions like these, I can make a suitable attribute table. When it comes to game development, I'm an outsider. I don't understand computer programing either, but mocking up things like that is my expertise since I am in the field of mathematics after all."

"Great!" Fat Sis felt fantastic now. Having accepted Zhang Ye's favor, she was no longer argumentative. "In your concept, you mentioned an important game character, someone called Crazy Dave? He's the player's guide as well as the in-game store owner? Is that universal throughout the game? If that's the case, then I would suggest that we don't call him Dave or whatever. Why would we name our Chinese game character with a foreign name? I think we should just call him Crazy Zhang Ye instead and make you into a cartoon character. If Plants vs. Zombies truly becomes popular, then it would be able to bring you a lot of fame as well. Similarly, the game can also rub off on some of the reputation that you already have by borrowing your influence. We'll put this point

into the contract. Since we're going to work together, we will do this well and put your endorsement right into the game itself. What do you think?"

Zhang Ye laughed, "That's sounds good."

"OK, then it's settled. I'll go and prepare the contract now and get the profit sharing details in as well. You don't need to worry over this. I'll be sure to get it all done!"

"When do we sign the contract?"

"Tomorrow?"

"Sure, any time is fine with me!"

They had settled such an important affair within a few hours. Further, this agreement only came about because of a spontaneous conversation between the two parties, so that made it even more interesting. Zhang Ye could not have expected that just from him taking a child out and turning a corner on the way back, it could have led to him bringing out a tower defense game like Plants vs. Zombies and putting it into this world!

Fat Sis and her staff had been discussing how this game might become popular and sell like hot cakes, but those were all just assumptions!

However, for Zhang Ye, there wasn't any doubt. He knew that

Plants vs. Zombies would definitely be popular. In fact, it would be popular not only in this country, it would even become very popular throughout the entire world!

Zhang Ye did not have much desire for money. Being in the entertainment circle, what he placed more importance on was fame and visibility. Zhang Ye never learned about game development, and did not know how to do it, nor did he have the energy to handle something like that. The ideas he had for browser games or puzzle games from his previous world would have been left to rot in his mind in any case, since he did not have any use for them. But today's accidental stumble onto this project had opened yet another path for Zhang Ye. He did not know how to make games, but he could surely team up with someone who did. If he could become successful as a game producer and designer, then it would surely bring about a lot of popularity for him. Besides, Zhang Ye also had an endorsement agreement with them. If he could endorse a global phenomenon like this tower defense game, it would definitely help Zhang Ye increase his popularity and fame from sources that wouldn't have known him in the first place!

Today, another door had opened for him.

After Zhang Ye had crossed over into the education, crosstalk, mathematics, and advertising worlds, among others, he now turned his attention to the video game industry. He was officially marching into the puzzle games market!

You couldn't find anyone else as flexible as him in the entire entertainment industry!

Chapter 734: Chenchen Catches A Thief!

Elsewhere.

In the afternoon, at Mengmeng's house.

Mengmeng's mother asked, "Have you finished eating?"

"Yes, I've finished." Mengmeng took a napkin and wiped her mouth.

Mengmeng's father laughed and said, "You ate so little, why didn't you eat the vegetables? You should learn from Chenchen and not be picky about food. You can only grow taller and stronger if you do that."

Mengmeng stuck out her tongue. "I don't like celery and chives."

Little Fatso put down his chopsticks and said, "Auntie, Uncle, I've finished too."

Mengmeng's mother said politely, "Have some more, Auntie will serve you another bowl of rice."

"It's enough, I really can't eat anymore." The terrified Little Fatso waved his hands hastily.

Another boy, Little Chao, said, "Chenchen, Mengmeng, let's go

play outside?"

Mengmeng nodded. "Sure, sure. Dad, Mom, then we will be going out now?"

Mengmeng's mother reminded them, "Watch out for cars, and don't go too far away. Just play around in the alleys so that I can call all of you back."

"OK," Mengmeng replied.

The young children went out in their group.

Little Fatso and Little Chao brought a soccer ball with them and started kicking it around in the alley. Lianlian was riding on Mengmeng's small bicycle and was fighting with Mengmeng over who got to ride it in a fun manner. Chenchen glanced at them and strolled leisurely beside them with her hands behind her back like a small adult, not joining them in their activities.

"Chenchen, come and play with us!" Lianlian signaled for her to go over.

Chenchen gave a scornful pout. "You guys play by yourselves."

Mengmeng offered the small bicycle to Chenchen. "I'll let you ride it."

Chenchen said, "That's not necessary. It's too childish and uninteresting."

Mengmeng didn't know how to react. "But isn't everyone playing with these things? What are the things that are not childish?"

At this moment, the two kids, Little Fatso and Little Chao, who had gone to pick up the soccer ball from the entrance of the alleyway returned. The two of them rushed back with nervous looking expressions and looked very anxious.

Lianlian looked at them and asked, "What's the matter with you two?"

Little Chao said softly, "Little Fatso and I saw someone stealing things!"

Mengmeng covered her mouth. "Ah?"

Lianlian's jaw dropped. "Are you serious?"

"It's true, I also saw it!" Little Fatso was gesticulating as he related what he saw. "A woman's bag was nearly stolen by him, and now he's targeting another person! It's terrible!"

Mengmeng asked anxiously, "What should we do? I will go and inform my parents!"

Chenchen suddenly asked, "Where is he?"

Little Fatso said, "We saw it happen at the bus stop by the entrance of the alley!"

Chenchen took the lead and walked forward. "Let's go and take a look."

When he heard that, Little Chao was terrified. "Ah? Why are we going to take a look at that?"

"Hurry up." Chenchen glared at him. "Are you even a man? Why are you so spineless?"

Little Chao wiped away his sweat. "OK...fine."

Lianlian was more scared and was shivering in fear, but when she saw her classmates following Chenchen, she could only grit her teeth and catch up to them. "Wait for me, wait for me!"

.....

In front of the bus stop.

Everything looked as usual at a glance.

Chenchen turned around and asked softly, "Which one is he?"

Little Fatso furtively pointed at a middle-aged man dressed in a gray shirt and then whispered very quietly, "That's him."

Chenchen asked again, "Does he have an accomplice?"

"Er, I don't know," Little Fatso said confused.

As they were talking, they saw the middle-aged man dressed in a gray shirt making his move. Actually, Little Fatso and the rest did not manage to see clearly how the man did it. They only saw a middle-aged woman going up to a young and pretty lady to ask for directions. When the young lady turned her head to say something, the middle-aged man in the gray shirt immediately stretched out his hand. His movement was too fast and they were too far away, so it was difficult to make out whether he had used a blade or something else, but when the middle-aged man withdrew his hand, he was already holding something that looked like a purse in his hands. He then turned around to walk away slowly.

Mengmeng was getting nervous. "He stole it already!" He stole it already!"

Lianlian pulled at her in panic. "Mengmeng, lower your voice, don't let him hear that!"

The middle-aged man scanned the surroundings just before he left, so thankfully for Mengmeng, Lianlian, and the others, they were just seven-and eight-year-old children who had not attracted his attention. He did not even look at them.

Chenchen observed the surroundings for a moment and hypothesized, "That man has an accomplice."

Little Chao exclaimed, "Where? Wasn't he working alone?"

Chenchen explained, "That middle-aged woman who was asking for directions from the victim was his accomplice. She was responsible for diverting the victim's attention."

Little Chao was enlightened. "So that's how it is! Chenchen, you're really smart!"

A warm-hearted person, Mengmeng said, "Then we should inform that big sister whose purse got stolen by them."

"No, we can't do that." Chenchen looked across the road and said, "It's useless even if we let her know. When that thief committed the crime, he used a pocketknife that was about three inches long as his tool. So it's pointless even if that big sister chases after him. She might end up getting injured instead."

Little Fatso was stunned. "Was there a knife? How come I didn't see it? It's even three inches long?"

Little Chao said, "That's right, I didn't see it either, so how could you have seen it?"

Chenchen dismissively curled her lips. "When I was only three years old, I followed my aunt and practiced the horse stance, standing stump, and started to learn martial arts as well. How can your eyes be sharper than mine? If I say that it is a knife, then it's a knife!"

Little Chao lost his fight. "...Fine."

"Let me ask you guys this, do you all wish to capture the thief?" Chenchen looked at them.

Little Fatso said, "I do, but that man has gotten too far away already. It will be too late even if we call the police now."

Chenchen pointed at that middle-aged woman and said, "He still has an accomplice over there, we will just follow her and find their meeting place or maybe even their hideout. Then we can capture them in one fell swoop!"

These bold claims immediately gave a scare to the other young children!

"What?"

"We're going to follow her?"

"But they have a knife!"

"Chechen, why don't we just call the police? If we get discovered by them, we'll be in big trouble!"

Chenchen said, "We are only young children, they won't notice us. Besides, we should stand up to help if we see injustice, isn't that what everyone should do?"

Lianlian turned pale. "But...but the teachers say that even if we want to act bravely, it should be within one's limits!"

Chenchen looked at her and said, "Comrade Lianlian, as our school's first batch of Young Pioneer members, isn't your level of consciousness too low?"

Lianlian said, "I..."

Little Chao also disagreed, "But..."

Chenchen looked beside her and said, "Mengmeng, how about you?"

Upon hearing that, Mengmeng clenched her teeth and said, "I will do as you say!"

"Very good, this is more like it as a member of our class committee." Chenchen patted Mengmeng on her shoulders and then said to the boys, "What about the two of you?"

Little Fatso hesitated, "This, um."

Chenchen pouted. "As a girl, Mengmeng is brave enough to stand up against the evil forces. Why are the both of you boys behaving like cowards?"

Little Fatso was vexed. "Who is a coward? Who's a coward? I'll go!"

Little Chao also let out a scream. "Son of a gun! I'll go as well! Who's afraid of who! Let's go and catch them! Let's capture them in one fell swoop!" But after saying that, Little Chao's legs and belly were obviously trembling with fear.

Lianlian glanced at them and could only follow along with the majority.

"That's great!" Chenchen nodded in satisfaction. Then she ordered, "From now on, our temporary team of thief-catchers is formally established. I'm the team leader, so all of you have to listen to my orders. Now, I'm going to assign an operation code name to each of you. Mengmeng, your code name is Squash. You are more familiar with this area since you live here, so I will give you a cell phone later and you will be responsible for contacting the police and informing them about the thieves' location at any time."

Mengmeng was dumbfounded. "Squash?"

Chenchen continued, "Little Fatso, your code name is Black Bear and you're responsible for our safety."

"What the hell is this? Black Bear?" Little Fatso stared at her.

Chenchen said, "Little Chao, your code name is Bald Eagle and you're responsible for the alternative route tailing."

Little Chao nearly fainted. "Bald...Bald Eagle? Why does it sound so lame?"

Chenchen looked at the last team member. "Lianlian, you have the most important task. You must keep a certain distance from us. When the moment our whereabouts are exposed and our enemies discover us, you must seek help immediately. Oh, your code name...is Black Widow."

Lianlian: "..."

Mengmeng complained, "All of the names sound awful!"

Little Fatso was flustered. "Chenchen, what is your code name then?"

Chenchen leered at him and said calmly, "It's the same for everyone. There isn't much difference in our code names. My code name is 'Sailor Guardian Imbued with Courage and Wisdom.'"

Mengmeng: "Pfft!"

Lianlian almost vomited blood. "How is that not too different? That is clearly way too different, alright!?"

On the other side of the road, the thief's accomplice was already starting to move west.

Chenchen immediately gave the order. "The target is moving. Bald Eagle, Bald Eagle, cross the road and outflank her from that side. Black Widow, conceal yourself quickly. Black Bear, let's go together!"

Mengmeng stretched out her hand. "Chenchen, give me your cell phone."

Chenchen gave Mengmeng the cell phone she borrowed from Zhang Ye's mother for playing games. Then she said matter-of-factly, "Remember, during the mission, call me Sailor Guardian Imbued with Courage and Wisdom."

Mengmeng rolled her eyes and said, "I got it!"

Chenchen acknowledged and said, "Go on, Squash."

Mengmeng felt that it sounded very weird. "Can I change to another code name? Can I change to something that's slightly firm and powerful? Squash sounds like a weakling!"

"Firm and powerful? Sure." Chenchen thought for a moment and said, "Then your code name will Unbreakable Egg."

Mengmeng remained silent for a few seconds, then she turned around and walked away while wiping her tears from off her face. "...Call me Squash instead!"

That woman who acted as the distraction for the thief had already crossed the road. Her pace was not fast but her eyes were very alert and sharp. She was observing the surroundings closely as she walked with a strong counterspying mindset. After circling the area for a bit, she made a phone call before walking off in another direction.

Chenchen led her team of thief-catchers and followed from a distance.

"Bald Eagle, you are too close to the target. Be careful of your concealment, be careful of your concealment. Squash, wait a little longer before you call the police. It's useless if you contact the police now, they will alert the criminals if they come too early. Even if they capture that woman, there's no evidence and we won't be able to find out where their hideout is. Black Widow, don't look at the suspect. Right, don't stare at her so hard, your cover will be exposed. Just follow us from behind!" Chenchen commanded.

The team members followed her orders accordingly.

No matter how vigilant that woman was, she would never have

imagined that there were five seven-and eight-year-old primary school students shadowing her. Even if she caught a glimpse of a primary school student occasionally, she would still filter out the threat and not treat it as something serious.

Chapter 735: Chenchen Copies Zhang Ye's Poem!

Later that afternoon.

Taoran Pavilion Garden.

Beside the lake, Zhang Ye had not gone home yet. He put on his sunglasses and face mask and came to sightsee at the lake. Since he did not have anything to do today, he just waited around for Mengmeng's parents to give him a call so that he could go and pick Chenchen up and go home. If he had gone home by himself first, he would have to come out again to pick her up. That would have been too troublesome.

The atmosphere here was rather nice. There were many senior citizens who came here for a stroll. In front, an old man who came out to "walk" his bird even had a pocket radio he was tuned into and was playing through the speakers. He was listening to the news at the moment.

"Yesterday night, in an upscale villa district in Beijing's Chun Shuyuan, a burglary took place. There was a reported loss of cash and other items totaling more than 100,000 RMB, along with a safe. According to sources, there was a jade bracelet and some jade accessories worth several millions in it, along with a famous painting. Said painting was bought from an auction at Shanghai last year and was sold for 37 million RMB at that time. The case has been referred to the Municipal Public Security Bureau's Criminal Investigation Brigade. This is also one of the largest cases of burglary in recent years. As of now, there are no other details with

regard to the development of the case."

"Chun Shuyuan?"

"That's not too far from Taoran Pavilion."

"Hai, the security these days is really too lousy."

"It's been so long since we've had such a big case!"

"Around 40 million yuan of property stolen just like that? Tell me, what's the point of keeping your valuables in the safe at home? If anyone chooses to carry away your entire safe, what can you do about it? Thieves these days are far too rampant!"

"I heard that the municipal office has already set a deadline for this case to be solved. They have called for the stolen items to be found within a week from now, but the way I see it, this won't be easy at all. There are so many thieves around, who do we start catching?"

A few of the grandpas and grandmas were discussing the case after hearing about the news.

Zhang Ye also heard it and lamented mentally. He wondered if he should be installing some security nets at home for protection.

As he was thinking, an unfamiliar number suddenly called his

phone. Zhang Ye thought that it might be from Mengmeng's parents, so he answered it as he continued strolling in the park. "Hello?"

The other end sounded chaotic, with many voices talking over each other!

Then he heard a youth say: "Hello? Is this Chenchen's family?"

Zhang Ye was stunned. "Yes, who is this?"

The youth suddenly said: "I am a police officer with the Municipal Public Security Bureau's Criminal Investigation Brigade. Little Chenchen only gave me this number, so I called to contact you."

When Zhang Ye heard this, his face turned pale!

Police?

Criminal Investigation Brigade?

F**k! What serious trouble had the little rascal gotten into again!

Zhang Ye hastily said: "Officer, what's the matter? I am Chenchen's relative. I'm sorry, I'm really sorry, that kid must have gotten into some kind of trouble again, right? Aiyo, I knew it, she's always been so troublesome! I should never have let her out of the

house today! Who did she beat up? Or whose house did she burn down?"

The police officer was getting a little dizzy from this. "It's not like that!"

Zhang Ye quickly said: "Don't worry! I will definitely criticize her! And beat her to death!"

That police officer quickly said: "No, just listen to me first..."

"You don't have to plead on her behalf! This sort of a kid has to be beaten! Beaten terribly so that she'll learn! I will beat her up so badly that she wouldn't be able to recognize herself in the mirror!" Zhang Ye said angrily.

The police officer spoke in frustration: "No! Listen to me..."

Zhang Ye interrupted: "You don't have to worry about this case anymore. Just leave it to me to handle. I will go and pick the kid up and pay however much needs to be compensated. Just help me appease the victim or their family. You must definitely express my sincerest apologies to them. The kid is still young and don't know much, so please don't take it up with her. Let the family members have a go at me instead! I will go over and settle it now! Oh yes, are the economic losses heavy? Are there a lot of casualties?" Zhang Ye asked while trembling.

The police officer couldn't even find the words to respond!

Economic losses?

Casualties?

F**k! Just what do you think this kid is! A monster?

The police officer couldn't even interrupt to say something. All he heard was the other party yammering nonstop, trying to explain himself. He waited for the other party to finish talking before he began explaining: "Sir, you should have listened to me first. Why are you threatening to beat the child up and apologizing? What have you been talking about all this while!?"

Zhang Ye was stunned. "Ah?"

The police officer said: "The child did not get into any trouble!"

"That's impossible!" Zhang Ye thought about it. If she didn't get into any trouble, then why would the Criminal Investigation Brigade call me? Besides, with that wicked personality Chenchen had, even if she did get into trouble, Zhang Ye wouldn't be surprised. "You don't have to give me any face, officer. There's really no need to. Just tell it to me straight, I can take it! But you must definitely give the child a chance to turn over a new leaf!"

What face am I giving to you!

Turn over your sister!

The police officer's next line immediately left Zhang Ye dumbfounded. He heard him say, "Not only did Chenchen not get into trouble, she even rendered a great deed! It's even a really huge deed! She and four of her classmates acted bravely when they saw something wrong being done. They tracked a couple thieves to their rendezvous point and found their gang's hideout, then contacted the police and helped us to corner an enormous gang of burglars in one fell swoop, leading to an arrest of more than 50 criminals! As a result, we also found the stolen property worth 40 million in their hideout in the search afterwards. The huge burglary case that happened in Chun Shuyuan last night was also cracked together with their arrest!"

Zhang Ye was stunned. "What?"

The police officer said, "We're at the crime scene now, taking inventory of the stolen items. So could you come over to pick the child up? We have already informed the parents of the other kids as well as their school teacher!"

Holy shit!

Is this true?

Zhang Ye hung up and hurried over!

.....

At the crime scene.

Outside a remote car garage, the crime scene was currently surrounded by many reporters with their cameras and zoom lenses, while further out, there was a group of observers. The main entrance of the garage was already cordoned off with police tape while some of the criminals were handcuffed and seated in the police vehicles. Some of them had been led away earlier. There were also many police officers from the Municipal Public Security Bureau standing around and maintaining order in the area.

"Don't push!"

"Stand farther away, and no taking of photos!"

"You, reporter, please stand aside, don't get in the way of our investigations!"

But no matter how the police officers harried them, none of the reporters moved. At this moment, they had surrounded the area where five seven-and eight-year-old kids were standing. Shock was written on every one of the reporters' and observers' faces as they could not imagine how those primary school students could have solved a crime!

Not only them, even many of the faces of the police officers were the same. As they conducted their investigations, they would occasionally turn around and glimpse at those children. Though they had been in this occupation for many years, they had never

witnessed such a scene before. The country's largest burglary case in recent years had actually been cracked by a bunch of primary school students. If they had not seen this with their own eyes, they knew they wouldn't believe it if someone told them! Actually, when the report was being made, the operator could hear that it was a child's voice. The first reaction was that this was a prank call and the operator did not believe it to be true. However, later on, in order to be safe rather than sorry, they still sent someone over to check. If they did not go, it would have been OK, but since they did, the involved police officers were all dumbfounded by what they saw!

More than 50 suspects!

Over 40 million yuan worth of stolen property!

At that moment, everyone's expressions changed when they were looking at the children. It was as if they saw a fairy of some sort, wondering to themselves just how smart primary school students were nowadays!

"Kids, how did you all track them?"

"You were all amazing! What gave you the courage to do what you did? What made you guys have the courage to step up to do this?"

The reporters were all trying their best to squeeze in and were asking questions one after another, taking photos as well.

Chenchen, Mengmeng, and the other kids were being revered like heroes as they stood in the center of the crowd.

Little Fatso was getting a little big-headed as he stood ramrod straight. He said, "Our teacher has always taught us that, as a good person, we have to brave and know how to judge right from wrong!"

Lianlian nodded furiously. "Right, that's what our teacher taught us!"

Zhao Mei, their form teacher from No. 2 Experimental Primary School, had also received the call and rushed over to the crime scene. A few other teachers and the school principal also came along together.

When Zhao Mei heard what the children said, she was stunned. She knew it was true that she told them before to be brave and know how to judge right from wrong, but she had never taught them how to solve a case! Weren't you all being too extreme?! Tailing them all the way from Zixin Road to here, and they didn't lose their target? They were not discovered by the criminals either? Zhao Mei knew these children very well. Little Fatso? Don't be fooled by his size, he essentially didn't have the spine! Little Chao and Lianlian? Those two were even more timid, so it wouldn't be possible that they would have the idea to tail the suspects! It wasn't possible that Mengmeng would do it either. That child was a warm-hearted girl. If there was a problem, she would surely let the teachers or parents know first. She wouldn't risk going up against those criminals! Without needing to think much, they were surely led by Chenchen! This was exactly the kind

of thing that she would do! This kid was just like her Uncle Zhang Ye, not afraid of anything. They were both so overly bold they would dare to do just about anything! Zhao Mei would even say that if this incident hadn't happened because of Chenchen, she would jump off a building! It had to be her, no question about it!

However, the school principal of No. 2 Experimental Primary School was feeling very excited and emotional. He stood in front of the cameras and proclaimed, "I am very proud of our students who are brave enough to do this!" Then he looked at the children and said, "You're all fine examples, find examples! After school reopens, we have to organize a study session so that everyone in the school can learn from you all!"

Little Chao scratched his head in embarrassment.

At this moment, Little Chao, Mengmeng, and the other children's parents gradually arrived at the scene.

"Mengmeng!" Mengmeng's mother anxiously ran up to her!

Mengmeng called out, "Mom!"

Mengmeng's mother was still aflutter with fear at heart. "You gave me such a scare! How can you have that much audacity!? What if something happened?"

Meanwhile, Mengmeng's father was extremely pleased. He said happily, "I think it's a good thing that our child is so courageous

and smart!"

Mengmeng's face flushed from embarrassment. She quickly said, "It was all planned by Chenchen. We, we didn't really do much."

"Chenchen?"

"Which one of you is Chenchen?"

"It's her!"

"Quick, take a picture of her!"

The reporters immediately pointed their cameras at Chenchen.

A female reporter who was shouldering her camera said, "It was you who led your fellow classmates and tailed the criminals here?"

Chenchen straightened her back. "Yes."

A male reporter interrupted. "We're all extremely curious. Just how did you all track them? Why didn't the criminals discover your presence?"

Chenchen cleared her throat, and spoke like an adult, "First, I broke down the jobs we had to perform. Squash was in charge of contacting the police, while Black Bear and I were in charge of

acting like pedestrians while we followed them. After a while, Bald Eagle changed places with Black Bear and tailed them on an alternative route. Black Widow served as a backup to our roles."

Lianlian's face burned hot from embarrassment. "Chenchen, don't, don't use our code names!"

Chenchen nodded. "OK, Black Widow."

Lianlian: "..."

Chenchen said, "Second, in our group, those of us who were near each other would communicate by speaking. If we were far apart, we would communicate with actions. Sometimes in our school, they organize games that we also play outside of school, which are for us to play charades. With those basics, even if we're far apart from each other, we can still have some basic communication. After that, we made use of our bicycle and other modes of transportation and followed the criminal suspects closely. Together with our status as children, it added an extra sense of camouflage and deception, making the criminal suspects not notice us. Finally, after experiencing all sorts of difficulties, we were able to locate the criminal's hideout!"

After she explained in detail, everyone at the scene was feeling a little befuddled!

Holy shit!

This thought process...

Those ideas...

This level of expressing herself...

This child was most definitely not typical!

A normal seven or eight-year-old primary school student couldn't possibly be this mature!

Only Zhao Mei and a few of the teachers from No. 2 Experimental Primary School were not particularly surprised at this, because they already knew from school that Chenchen was not much like other children.

The place was lively.

"Teacher Zhao, how does Chenchen usually do in school?"

"Chenchen, will you accept a one-on-one interview with us?"

"I am a reporter with the Beijing Times. We would like to do a feature story about this incident. Mengmeng's parents, could we have a little of your and your child's time? We won't take more than an hour. The interview will be quick!"

"The role models of Beijing will surely be you all!"

"You're all very smart, our little heroes of Beijing!"

"Chenchen, can you say a word or two for our readers?"

"Student Chenchen, what do you have to say to everyone?"

Seeing the messy exchange of words from everyone, Chenchen lightly coughed and got their attention. "Let me say a few words."

Everyone quieted down at once.

The policemen were looking at her, the teachers were looking at her, all of the reporters, and the crowd were looking at her, together with Mengmeng, Lianlian, Little Fatso, Little Chao. Even the criminals who were being taken away had looked at Chenchen.

At this moment, the taxi Zhang Ye was in arrived on scene. When he got out of the taxi, the first thing he saw was Chenchen standing in the center like she was in the spotlight!

He saw Chenchen hesitating for a few seconds before turning to the cameras and speaking in her childish voice!

"Storytelling, acting to persuade people.

"Walking the middle of three roads.

"What goes around comes around.

"Experience is the...fruit! Of! Life!"

The surrounding crowd were dumbfounded by what they heard!

An introductory poem? A doggerel? Why hadn't anyone heard of it before? Did this little girl compose it herself? Is she a prodigy or what? This little girl was truly too extraordinary!

Some people in the crowd immediately applauded in admiration!

"Good!"

"Well said!"

"What a good 'What goes around comes around. / Experience is the fruit of life.'!"

"That poem is too impressive!"

"Well said! Everyone, see how enlightened this little girl is!"

Applause thundered, while calls of how impressive the poem was kept coming one after another!

Many people who had been fooled were now stunned.

Little Fatso, Mengmeng, Lianlian, and Little Chao looked at Chenchen in admiration. They did not expect her to make such a profound speech that had stunned everyone!

Only Zhang Ye who was walking over from a distance away nearly stumbled when he heard that!

F**k!

Wasn't this what I wrote at home this morning?

You little rascal! You were still contemptuously giving me that "hur hur" of yours at the time! But now you're taking what I wrote and using it here? Your sister! Why don't you learn something better instead of learning how to show off like I do!?

Chapter 736: This Chapter Is An Enjoyable Read!

"What an uncommon person!"

"Quickly, record this poem! We will submit it for this evening newspapers!"

"'Experience is...' what comes after 'Experience is'?"

"Experience is the fruit of life!"

"That's right, that's right. The words used were really too exquisite!"

"This little girl is no average person after all!"

The reporters and crowd lavished praise on Chenchen.

Zhang Ye who was watching from a distance away felt angry and tickled at the same time. He had once again experienced just how smart this child was. He merely sang a few lines of that poem in the morning which Chenchen overheard, or it could also be that she saw the calligraphy he wrote of this introductory poem. But just by listening or seeing it once, she had managed to memorize it just like that. If it were another child, or rather, most adults in general, not even they could've achieved something like this.

Faced with all the praise from everyone, Chenchen remained relatively calm and was very cooperative. When the reporters' cameras focused on her, she would turn to face them and pose, though not showing much of an expression.

"Rao Chenchen!" Zhang Ye shouted at her.

When she heard, Chenchen looked in the direction the sound came. After she saw him, she said, "Zhang Ye, I solved a crime."

Zhang Ye stared at her angrily. "What did you think you were doing?! I'll deal with you when we get back home!"

But with his appearance, the reporters were left with their mouths agape!

"Ah?"

"It's Zhang Ye!"

"What is Teacher Zhang doing here?"

"Picking up Chenchen?"

"Holy shit, could he be a relative of our little hero?"

"What the hell! They are relatives??"

"I knew it! I was still thinking how an eight-year-old child could produce such an exquisite poem? It was definitely Zhang Ye who composed the poem privately which then got memorized by this child!"

The police officers also stared blankly at him. Earlier, when they contacted Zhang Ye with the number that Chenchen gave to them, they did not know who they were calling, neither did they know that the person would turn out to be such a big time celebrity. Moreover, it even turned out to be the notorious Zhang Ye whose name was already very well-known within the Public Security Bureau! Beating up a leader's son, beating up a Korean celebrity, and more recently, smashing cars belonging to Tsinghua University. Zhang Ye had dealt plenty with the officers from the Beijing Municipal Public Security Bureau. Within the Bureau itself, the legend of Zhang Ye had already been spread to all corners!

A detective exclaimed, "You are Rao Chenchen's guardian?"

"That's right, I'm here to pick the child up. Sorry for the trouble she's caused," Zhang Ye said.

A senior detective said, "She did not give us any trouble at all. In fact, she has been a great help. Let me express our gratitude on behalf of the Municipal Public Security Bureau's Criminal Investigation Brigade. As reward for assisting in cracking the case, there will be a prize given to Chenchen and her classmates. We will have to seek approval for the reward amount to the higher-ups first, but someone should contact you in the coming few days."

"There's even a reward?" Zhang Ye said in surprise. "Sure."

A female reporter squeezed over from the other side and stood in front of Zhang Ye. "Teacher Zhang, I'm from the TV station. Please let us interview you. Regarding Chenchen, she..."

Zhang Ye immediately flapped his hands. "Stop filming, stop filming. She is just a child, why would you want to get her on the news? Everyone, stop filming now. Those who have already recorded the footage, even if you intend to pixelate the footage, I still won't allow you people to publish it on the news. There cannot be any photos or footage of the children's faces and their figures appearing in the media. This is a form of protection for them!"

A male cameraman said, "Don't be like this, Teacher Zhang. Please make an exception for this!"

A middle-aged reporter said, "That's right, we've even planned the layout for our headlines!"

Zhang Ye firmly said, "I don't care what becomes of your page layout, I'm the child's guardian. And if I don't authorize this, no one can report it on the news without my permission! There's no room for negotiation with this!"

Actually, Lianlian, Mengmeng, and the other children's parents also did not wish for any photos of their children to get published on the news. They feared that the criminal gang might still have some accomplices who had not been captured yet. If those people saw the children's pictures, they could seek revenge. Although this

had a low probability of happening, they still could not take the risk and had to stick to the safe side in consideration of the children. The reason they did not speak up earlier was because this was the first time they were faced with such a situation. They were very nervous and had never dealt with media reporters, so they found it difficult to say anything to them. But with Zhang Ye here, they were relieved. The issue would be easier to handle since the parents knew that Zhang Ye was different from them. As a celebrity, he was more familiar in dealing with reporters than them. With him representing them, there would surely be no problems at all.

After settling the problem here, Zhang Ye turned around and looked for the parents of Mengmeng, Little Fatso, and the others. He ran over to apologize, "Everyone, I'm really sorry for letting your children be in such danger. I will criticize Chenchen later and make sure she doesn't do something like this again. I will pay a visit to everyone again at a later date to express my apologies!"

Zhang Ye had not even ascertained the situation yet, but he knew in his heart of hearts that Chenchen was definitely the one who led the other children along. No one would have done that except her!

Mengmeng's mother repeatedly said, "It's OK, it's OK!"

Little Fatso's father said, "Teacher Zhang, listen to what you are saying. This is a good thing!"

Little Chao's father laughed heartily and said, "Teacher Zhang, you are being too courteous with us. What are you apologizing for? I should be thanking you instead. From the time my child started

kindergarten, he has always been timid. I've always been unhappy that he couldn't live up to my expectations, so now that he has contributed to such a marvelous incident, I can't be more thankful than this. I must thank Little Chenchen for this."

Little Chao chuckled, "Dad, am I cool?"

Little Chao's father gave him the thumbs up. "You did well this time! You have made your father proud!"

Zhang Ye said, "It was all my fault, I shouldn't have let this child leave my side. Whenever she is out of my sight, she will always make something happen."

Chenchen was not very happy about this.

Taking notice, form teacher Zhao Mei walked over. "Teacher Zhang, don't blame Chenchen when you get back home. Although what she did was a little dangerous, the child had good intentions. Acting bravely is to be encouraged. Since it's already happened, and we are happy with the outcome too, don't reprimand the child anymore and encourage her instead. I feel that Chenchen was really capable in handling such a situation. You shouldn't be treating her as a child anymore. For the children in our class, I would be worried if any of them went out alone, afraid that they might get involved in an accident, get kidnapped by someone, or so on. But the only person I don't worry about is Chenchen. She's smarter than everyone else, so you have to consider her as an adult."

Zhang Ye said exasperatedly, "It's precisely because this kid is too smart that why she stirs up trouble for me every day. You even dare to follow a thief? Don't you value your life? You even want to seek out their hideout? Did you think you were [Dong Cunrui](#)?! You must learn to have self-control and not do whatever you want to do. You have to carefully consider the circumstances and not be impulsive. That is what a mature person should be like, do you understand?" he said in all earnestness, and looked at Chenchen.

Dong Cunrui was a Chinese Communist soldier in the People's Liberation Army during the Chinese Civil War who blew himself up in order to destroy a Kuomintang bunker guarding an approach to an important bridge in Longhua County.

It was very well said!

But when the surrounding police officers, reporters, as well as the crowd heard that, every one of them didn't know whether to laugh or cry!

Who is Dong Cunrui?

Besides, Teacher Zhang, among all the people present, the person who is least qualified to speak those words would probably be you!

Learn to have self-control? Have to be thoughtful and not be impulsive? You educate the child with that exaggerated tale full of flowery words, but when it comes to your turn? Why didn't you think of having self-control when you were beating up your leaders? Why didn't you be more thoughtful when you were scolding your peers? Why didn't you calm down when you were

smashing Tsinghua University's cars? If these words came out of anyone's mouth but yours, they would sound reasonable. But hearing it from you just makes it sound totally unconvincing!

Moreover, thinking about it, Chenchen's fearless nature is clearly molded after you. You are surely the one who influenced her!

Yet you want her to be thoughtful?

Did you set a good example in the first place?

You are the child's biggest negative influence! Being a person with this type of personality yourself, you still expect the child to learn anything good from you??

Bullshit!

Chapter 737: A Family Full Of Wondrous People!

Later that afternoon.

Past 4 PM.

After giving their statements and completing the procedures, Zhang Ye took Chenchen back home. On the way back, he nagged, grumbled, and criticized Chenchen, scolding her emotionally. This made the taxi driver look back at them in the rear-view mirror repeatedly, before finally saying some words to try to mediate between them. However, Chenchen did not seem to have any reaction. She just ignored Zhang Ye telling her off, not treating it like it was anything important. Her little head just carefreely looked at the scenery outside the window, angering Zhang Ye even more.

"Did you listen to what I have been saying all this while?"

"Uh huh."

"Don't ever do something like this again!"

"OK."

"That was too dangerous! Did you think that you were me?"

.....

Caishikou.

They returned back to his parents' home.

The moment Zhang Ye opened the door, Chenchen quickly squeezed past him and went into the house.

The first person she saw was Zhang Ye's mother who preparing dinner in the kitchen. "Grandma, I have performed a great deed!" "

His mother was baffled. "Ah?"

Chenchen then walked delightedly into the living room. "Grandpa, I have performed a great deed!"

"What great deed?" His father looked at her kindly.

His mother came out from the kitchen, flicking away the water droplets from her hands. She smiled and said, "Did you help Mengmeng's parents cook today?" Not bad, you are a good girl. When you go to other people's home to eat, you should help out."

Zhang Ye grunted, "Help with what cooking! This damned child led Mengmeng and the rest of her classmates and chased after some thieves! Even the Municipal Public Security Bureau's Criminal Investigation Brigade was activated! Just now, all of the

media outlets in the entire Beijing went down to the scene to report about it!"

His mother said shocked, "Ah? What?"

His father also became somewhat anxious. "What happened?"

Zhang Ye sulkily explained the entire situation, and then started scolding again, "Don't you both think it's infuriating? I nearly got scared to death! If something happened to her, how would I explain to her aunt when she returned?! If she keeps worrying me like that, I won't bother to take care of her anymore. I'll simply hand her over to the country for safekeeping!"

Chenchen pouted.

Zhang Ye glared at her. "Look at her, she's even giving me that look!"

Chenchen said unhappily, "I have performed a great deed."

Zhang Ye sneered, "Come on you, what so great about that deed of yours!"

"I have performed a great deed!" Chenchen insisted.

His mother smacked him. "You rascal, cut it out. Don't always be so mean to her. The largest burglary case in the country has been

cracked by our Chenchen. Isn't this a great contribution?!" His mother went over and patted Chenchen's head. "Well done, Chenchen, you've impressed Grandma!"

Only then did Chenchen feel satisfied. "It was my duty to do so."

His father said with lingering fear, "But it was still too dangerous."

His mother sided with Chenchen and stated, "What's so dangerous about following some petty thieves? Your son even fought off some hijackers barehanded and piloted a plane. Why didn't you say that that was dangerous too?"

His father: "..."

Chenchen nodded and said earnestly, "Zhang Ye, you are too disobedient."

Zhang Ye was furious. "...Do you think I won't beat the crap out of you?"

His mother lightly kicked her son's shin. "Who are you going to beat up? Quickly come and help me with the cooking. We need to sooth the child's nerves. We have to celebrate this incident today! Our Chenchen is too awesome!"

Chenchen had been praised to the high heavens by now. She leaned on the sofa, comfortable, with a heroic expression on her

face. "Zhang Ye, I'm hungry now."

Her actions made Zhang Ye roll his eyes in annoyance. "You are even acting like a lord now?"

.....

Not long after, a phone call came for Zhang Ye. It was a female staff member from the Municipal Public Security Bureau. "Hello, are you family to Rao Chenchen?"

Zhang Ye replied: "Yes."

The female staff asked: "Are you her guardian?"

Zhang Ye said: "I'm considered her temporary guardian. Her aunt who is also her guardian is my friend. She isn't in Beijing currently, so has given the child to my care temporarily. You can talk to me if there's anything."

The female staff member explained in a gentle tone: "OK. We handle special cases like yours separately, so the reward for the people who assisted in solving the case has been expedited and approved at the quickest time. The reward amount for Rao Chenchen is 200,000 RMB in cash. Can you bring her to the Municipal Public Security Bureau to receive the reward tomorrow? There might also be a mini-press conference held tomorrow. Moreover, the victim of the huge burglary case involving the 40 million RMB worth of property stolen from Chun Shuyuan has just

contacted us. He requested that you be here tomorrow so that he could thank you in person. He even made a silk banner to give to Rao Chenchen and her friends. The owner was pretty moved and repeatedly emphasized that we pass the message to you."

"Ah?" Zhang Ye said with surprise: "The reward is 200,000 RMB?"

Chenchen's eyes immediately lit up.

Zhang Ye's parents were also stunned for a bit.

The female staff member said: "That's right. Because this is a major case and the people who helped solve the case were just children, in order to reward such bravery and intelligence, the reward was adjusted to be slightly higher than usual."

Zhang Ye quickly said: "Sure, we'll definitely be there tomorrow."

After hanging up, his mother immediately asked, "The reward is that much?"

Zhang Ye nodded and looked delightedly at Chenchen. "You're still underage and won't have the need for the money yet, so I will help you safeguard the money for the time being. It will be your dowry in the future when you get married."

Chenchen was furious. "Zhang Ye! That is my reward!"

Zhang Ye blinked and said, "It's still your money. I'm just depositing it for you first."

His mother pounded his back. "Don't argue. Why are you eyeing the child's reward? Go to the bank and apply for an account for Chenchen using your name and deposit the reward there. Then let Chenchen keep the card herself for safekeeping!"

Zhang Ye whined, "She only cracked the case largely in part due to my teaching and influence on her, so I deserve a share in the reward as well!"

Chenchen nearly fainted from anger. "Zhang Ye, you don't behave like an adult at all!"

.....

On the same evening.

The news outlets bombarded the public one after another!

On TV, newspapers, the radio, and the Internet, a stunning piece of news was published. When everyone saw or heard this news, their first reaction was disbelief!

"Chun Shuyuan's largest burglary case has been solved!"

"Primary school students cracked the most important case of the country!"

"More than 50 people arrested! Investigations reveal over 40 million RMB worth of property was stolen!"

"Primary school students solved a major case! Tracking down the criminal gang's hideout!"

"Zhang Ye appears on scene to claim child!"

"An alarming insider story! Leader of the primary school students who went after thieves was Zhang Ye's relative!"

When countless of newspaper reports were out, the people of the entire country went into an uproar!

.....

At a restaurant in Beijing.

Ha Qiqi, Zhang Zuo, and some other colleagues from The Voice were eating dinner. Wu Yi had too much to drink and was currently singing loudly on the dining table. Suddenly, the news of the burglary case appeared on the television in the lobby.

"Don't sing anymore, stop singing!"

"Everyone, quickly watch the news! This..."

"This case was cracked by primary school students? Zhang Ye's relative?"

"Holy shit, look at that figure in the footage, that...isn't that Chenchen?!"

Wu Yi sobered up almost immediately and stared at the television with eyes wide!

Footage of Chenchen and her friends appeared on the TV screen. However, due to Zhang Ye and the children's parents not agreeing to let the children appear on screen, the news only showed the backs of the children. They were even masked with pixelation, so that most people still wouldn't be able recognize them. But it was different for the program team staff of The Voice. With the news linking it to Zhang Ye's relative and information that they were primary school students, just by looking at that back of the tiny child, they immediately figured out that it was Chenchen! Back then, Chenchen had spent some time living at Central TV. Ha Qiqi and the others were all very familiar with Chenchen. They all rather liked the "Little Leader" who enjoyed ordering people around!

"It's really Chenchen!"

"Oh my God! Chenchen went after some thieves and solved a crime?"

"I always knew that Chenchen was sharp and clever and that she was also different from the other children. But to solve a crime... how could this possibly be something that a primary school student could achieve!"

Ha Qiqi gave a wry smile. "Chenchen and Director Zhang really are carved from the same mold!"

Zhang Zuo was also amused. "That's right, they are so alike!"

Everyone agreed when they heard that. The personalities of the young and old duo really were exactly the same. Wasn't Director Zhang exactly the same in that he could make something out of nothing while idling around? And if there was a situation going on already, he could create an even bigger event out of it!

.....

It was also crazy online!

Zhang Ye's celebrity friends from everywhere were sending him their "congratulations"!

Yao Jiancai: "..."

Zhang Xia: "..."

Fang Weihong: "..."

Dong Shanshan: "..."

The couple, Chen Guang and Fan Wenli: "..."

Many celebrities expressed their shock!

The netizens also found it unacceptable!

"I've been blinded!"

"Heavens! Aren't primary school students these days too amazing?!"

"What sort of world am I living in now?!"

"Primary school students? This makes it difficult for anyone to look straight into their eyes anymore!"

"This is getting too crazy!"

"I was wrong! I won't ever look down on primary school students anymore in the future! You guys have won!"

"How could this be possible? Is this fake news?"

"It can't be fake! All the media outlets and newspapers are reporting about it!"

"F**k, can it be any more unbelievable than this?! During my second grade days, I was still playing around in the mud. I didn't even know how tell the difference between a boy and a girl at that time! Are primary school students nowadays all able to solve crimes and catch thieves? And it was even the largest burglary case in the country? The gap is too great between then and now!"

"Comparison always ends up torturing people! I'm totally kneeling to the primary school students now!"

"I still don't dare to believe it! It's...it's impossible! This doesn't make sense!"

"Why isn't it possible? Hur hur, take a look at this photo. Do you know who the person was who came to pick up that child? And this news article, take a look at it!"

"Eh, this person looks quite familiar?"

"F**k, isn't that Zhang Ye?!"

"What? She's that wretched Zhang Ye's relative?"

"I knew it! I f**king knew it!"

"If she is Zhang Ye's relative, then everything makes perfect sense! No wonder this child is so wondrous. It's because the adults in her family are also like that! Only with a family member like Zhang Ye could such a godly kid emerge!"

"Hahahaha, I'm dying from laughter! So it turns out that she is Zhang Ye's relative!"

"Teacher Zhang is famous again! How on earth did he teach the kid?! He must have really outdone himself in teaching that kid that she could turn out so well! Not even the world could hold him down!"

"Just two days ago, Zhang Ye smashed some cars at Tsinghua University. After causing such a big incident and not getting into any other trouble for the past two days, it was his relative who took over from him instead? Breaking new ground and getting engaged in community work now? Isn't this family too professional with their reputation! They really are advancing dauntlessly, wave after wave!"

"I nearly pissed myself laughing!"

"Does it need to be this funny?!"

The netizens were very surprised at this!

The people were stunned!

But the reactions were more on the positive side as this piece of news had tickled them a lot. As long as it was any news related to Zhang Ye, it would seem very funny. It even made many of those people who did not really like Zhang Ye previously unable to stop from laughing out loud because this matter was truly too wondrous to begin with!

A comical adult!

With the addition of a comical kid!

Zhang Ye's family was a bunch of f**king wondrous people!

Chapter 738: The New Show Will Launch Soon!

On this day.

In the morning, Zhang Ye drove to Central TV.

After bringing Chenchen to the Municipal Public Security Bureau to settle some matters, he went off to see Fat Sis to get the Plants vs. Zombies endorsement contract signed. With that, Zhang Ye had finally settled all his affairs and his leave had ended as well. Today, he dressed to the nines and had his hair styled before going back to the office.

In the program team office.

The plaque with the name of The Voice had not been removed from the door yet. Everyone had already started working. However, as there was not much work on their hands, they were all happily chatting away instead.

"Hey, Director Zhang is here!"

"Director Zhang, good morning!"

"How were your two days of rest?"

"I saw on the news that our 'Little Leader' has solved a big case?"

"Chenchen is too clever. When that child grows up, she will definitely do well in life!"

Everyone started chiming in with their thoughts and broke out into laughter after that.

Zhang Ye smiled helplessly as he waved it off. "Don't mention that little kid anymore. She's too naughty."

Zhang Zuo laughed and said, "Chenchen is rather cute. If I had a daughter like her, I would be so happy. I have never seen such a clever and resourceful child before."

"You can have her if you want," Zhang Ye offered to him generously.

Zhang Zuo was startled, then said, "Director Zhang, I wasn't serious."

Everyone laughed.

Then, Ha Qiqi asked, "Boss, are there any updates regarding our new program? What kind of program are we doing? When will we start on the production? We were just discussing this and everyone is quite looking forward to it."

Little Wang said, "That's right, that's right."

Wu Yi laughed excitedly. "We are only waiting for your command and will be going all out alongside you again!"

A female staff member flattered, "With you around to lead us, we are confident in handling any kind of program! We are full of confidence!"

Zhang Ye joked, "I don't even have any confidence myself. The new program should go into production soon. As for what kind of program it is or what requirements it has, the station has not informed me to discuss it yet. We will have to see how it goes and how much of a production budget they are going to allocate us. The proposal for the new program still depends on whether they will be generous with the production budget or not."

As one of the more popular hosts around, he only had a short-term contract with Central TV which lasted a year. With a situation like this, Central TV definitely wouldn't let Zhang Ye idle around for too long. When The Voice finished its broadcast run, they would surely have to get started on the new program as well. It should be happening within these few days now. If it was the typical program production cycle, under normal circumstances Zhang Ye's contract would probably expire once he had completed this new program.

Indeed, when it was almost time for lunch, Deputy Director Jiang Yuan of Central TV Department 1 came over. "Is everyone here?"

"Director Jiang."

"Hello, Director Jiang."

"Director Jiang, are you here to give us our next task?"

Ha Qiqi, Zhang Zuo, and the others said, one after another.

Jiang Yuan smiled and said, "That's right, the funding for the new program has been approved."

When he heard the commotion in the workplace, Zhang Ye came out of his executive director's office. "Director Jiang."

"Little Zhang, the station has already given their go-ahead to your team's performance many times, so I'll skip the platitudes." Jiang Yuan smiled and said, "Your results are apparent to everyone and the station also trusts all of you. We also have great expectations of you, so I have specially applied for more funding from our Director of Central TV Department 1 this time. The production budget is 80 million RMB in total. The management held a quick meeting and approved it almost straightaway. Furthermore, if the program production encounters any uncontrollable factors, this production budget can be increased by up to 10% more. With this kind of funding support, let alone the other channels of Central TV, even our own Department 1 has never had something like this before."

80 million RMB?

They could still up it to 88 million RMB?

When they heard this, all of the program team staff became extremely excited. Central TV Department 1 had indeed invested a lot in them this time. No other program team had ever had such treatment before. But coming back to it, the results of The Voice were there for all to see. A huge production budget brought back an even larger return, so who wouldn't be tempted after seeing that? It was inevitable that they would increase the production budget, because the station knew that as long as Zhang Ye was helming the production, no matter how much money they invested into it, they would still be able to recoup back their initial expenditure. Not only did they not have to worry about the production costs, they would even be able to earn back a huge profit. There were now no more doubts about Zhang Ye's standards in program production!

Zhang Ye said, "Thank you for your trust, director. About that, the title sponsorship fee this time and the allocated—"

"Don't even think about that," Jiang Yuan quickly interrupted. "The title sponsorship fee will not be added into the production budget this time as it will go directly into our station's account. Isn't the production budget of 80 million enough for you to make the program? Even if you were to use it to shoot the second season of The Voice, it should be more than sufficient!"

Zhang Ye said, "Well, alright then."

Jiang Yuan added, "Regarding the new program, the station also has some requirements to ask of you. The first requirement is the

title sponsorship fee cannot be less than 80 million."

Zhang Ye felt that this was somewhat difficult to fulfill. "The Voice was a special case. Director Jiang, I cannot guarantee that the new program will also get a title sponsorship fee of close to 100 million, but I will try to fight for at least 50 million."

"Since the station has promised to give you an 80 million RMB production budget, the first thing we want is to guarantee a recoup on that investment. You do not need to be as humble as all of us. Believe in your ability." Jiang Yuan continued, "A tentative target of at least 1.2% in the viewership ratings is the second requirement. The third requirement that management discussed during the meeting was that, even though they feel that singing shows are definitely not doable again in the short term, they want to borrow the momentum generated from that genre and make a similar show. Our goal is still to make a talent show, but as for which type of talent show, we will need you to write up a proposal for the station to go through first. We'll then make the final decision when the time comes."

Zhang Ye replied, "Still doing talent shows?"

Jiang Yuan affirmed, "Yes. For example, a dancing reality show? Or something similar? Of course, this is only our suggestion. Write the actual program proposal first. We'll discuss again on whether it is workable or not."

Zhang Ye could only say, "Sure, I'll think over it first."

After talking for a bit more, Jiang Yuan prepared to go to lunch. "Alright, that's all for now. Oh right, Little Zhang, come by my office after lunch. I have something to discuss with you."

"Sure," Zhang Ye responded.

After Jiang Yuan left, Zhang Ye delegated the problem to the colleagues. "Everybody, give it some thought about what kind of a program is most suitable. Come up with some suggestions. We can have a brainstorming session after that."

Ha Qiqi blinked and said, "Why don't we just go with the dancing reality show idea?"

Zhang Zuo said, "It sounds like it would be a cult program that will lack originality. We can't possibly follow the format of The Voice with the coaches selecting contestants with their backs turned, right? If their backs are turned, they won't even be able to see the poses of the dancers, so how are they going to judge? By listening to the sounds of the dance steps?"

Wu Yi said, "Talent shows really are difficult to make."

A female staff member said, "I'm actually more inclined to doing reality TV shows as the potential for development is greater, but if the station prefers a talent show, then..."

A production budget of 80 million RMB?

A talent show?

The title sponsorship fee and the viewership rating must also be high?

Zhang Ye consolidated the requirements of the station and felt that the difficulty was much greater than before. One after another, popular variety show ideas from his previous world appeared in his head, but in the end, they were rejected in succession by him. For now, he could not think of any suitable program to use.

Which show should they do?

Which show was the most suitable?

Chapter 739: Arguing With The Leader Again!

In the afternoon.

Central TV Department 1's official Weibo posted an update.

The contents were as follows: Central TV Department 1 will invest a hefty 80 million RMB in its next TV show. Estimated broadcast date: TBA. Production Team: From the team that brought you The Voice. Executive Producer: Zhang Ye. Executive Director: Zhang Ye. Host: Zhang Ye. Broadcast Schedule: Friday Primetime Slot.

When this news came out, it immediately made a splash on the Internet.

"Great!"

"Hahaha, Zhang Ye's new show is coming!"

"80 million RMB? That's quite considerable!"

"Quite considerable? That amount is more than enough to shoot a movie, a blockbuster movie in fact. If we're talking about a normal movie production, then it's enough to make three or four of them! They're actually going to spend that much money just on a TV show? If we're talking about our domestic market, I suppose

Zhang Ye alone can command such a price. Besides, haven't you all noticed something yet? Previously, The Voice did not broadcast in a primetime slot, but Zhang Ye's new show has already been announced for Friday's primetime. I'm so looking forward to seeing this new show get even better viewership ratings this time. I wonder if Teacher Zhang can continue writing his legend!"

"Right, The Voice was just a variety show that broadcasted on a normal Thursday night slot and its ratings still managed to get the number 1 spot in the nation. If it was given a primetime slot, it would surely have done much better. I believe that Central TV Department 1 was too conservative in the handling of Zhang Ye back then, so they only gave him the Thursday slot. Otherwise, if he had been given the Friday or Saturday primetime slots, the viewership ratings would surely have been much higher than they were!"

"I'm so looking forward to it!"

"Let's see what kinds of tricks Zhang Ye can pull off this time!"

"This has got to be the most exciting news that I've heard all day. Teacher Zhang, I've always liked you a lot, so I'm cheering for you!"

"Is there any more definitive information?"

"What type of show would the new program be? Why didn't they disclose it yet?"

"I can't wait!"

"Looking forward to 'The Tongue of China' displaying his prowess again!"

"After the recent car smashing incident and with his relative solving a crime case, I think it's time for Teacher Zhang to get back to proper business again!"

The topic was hotly discussed online. Central TV Department 1's new program had entered the early stages of promotion!

.....

At Central TV.

At the cafeteria in the television tower.

While Zhang Ye was eating lunch, some people came up to chat with him.

A TV producer said, "Director Zhang, I heard that your new program will have 80 million yuan set aside for it?"

"It's not in the account yet." Zhang Ye laughed it off.

A program team's female director standing beside him said,

"You're already the darling of Central TV Department 1. Thinking of how my program used to apply for a production funding of 20 million, we had to wait for over a month just to find out that it couldn't be approved. In the end, they slashed it to 15 million. Hai, comparison always ends up torturing people, that's totally true."

Zhang Ye happily said, "Director Chu, don't joke about me like that. I've heard that the different types of copyrights that your program sold fetched tens of millions of yuan. If we base it proportionately to the production costs, your program did much better than The Voice."

"Come on." That female director said, "The copyright of The Voice would definitely sell for much more."

Behind them, a middle-aged man laughed. "I heard that someone from America has already come to discuss The Voice's overseas copyright. I believe they may have already touched base with Central TV about it."

"Is that so?" Zhang Ye asked, not knowing anything about this.

The middle-aged man answered, "I've only heard so, but I don't know specifically."

The female director said, "Director Zhang's contract is a little different from the other hosts. I believe he came as part of the package with the program? So the copyright should still be with him."

"I only hold the overseas copyright, nothing more," Zhang Ye explained.

The female director said, "That's more than enough. If the discussions go well, at least 10 million will go directly into your pocket, and that's just lowballing. Don't forget to treat us to a meal when the time comes."

Zhang Ye smiled. "There's not even a shadow of that happening yet."

He had been working at Central TV for 3 months now. During this time, Zhang Ye had gotten to know quite a lot of people, but mainly just as acquaintances. He could speak to them or carry a conversation in their daily interactions, but none of them really had a close relationship with him. Since the time they spent together wasn't that long, Zhang Ye also did not talk in-depth with them. They would just make small talk, and often kept the conversations short since they weren't that close.

After the meal.

He took the elevator upstairs. Zhang Ye did not return to his office but went directly to Jiang Yuan's office instead. Jiang Yuan had earlier asked Zhang Ye to see him in the afternoon as there was something he wanted to discuss with him.

He knocked on the door.

"Come in." Jiang Yuan's voice came from inside.

Zhang Ye went inside. "Director Jiang."

Jiang Yuan said pleasantly, "You're here? Take a seat."

Zhang Ye did not stand on ceremony and just took a seat. "Is it regarding the program?"

"More or less." Jiang Yuan went over to the water cooler to get a cup of water for Zhang Ye. "I asked you here today because I wanted to discuss something in your contract with you."

"Contract?" Zhang Ye perked up, but played dumb. "What contract?"

Jiang Yuan continued, "I will be honest with you. For the contract that we have previously discussed, there have been many meetings at the management level regarding it. They feel that the contract does not abide by the rules."

Zhang Ye's eyebrows twitched. "Director Jiang, regarding the contract, we have already—"

"Listen to me first," Jiang Yuan interrupted. "I understand as well. Previously, the contract we discussed was done after negotiations from both sides. But because there are many clauses within it that cannot hold up to scrutiny and is not perfect. For example, the overseas copyright that you wanted to keep, that has

never been something like that in Central TV before, nor have there been any similar cases in any other TV stations."

Zhang Ye's contract was indeed different from other people's contracts. Whether it was other hosts or program planners, as long as they had signed an employee contractual agreement, they did not own the copyrights of the works they created during their tenure for the purpose of work. It belonged under the category of obligatory creations in their professional positions, so at most, it would be subjected to year-end bonuses or cash awards based on work performance. There would be no sharing of the copyright fees should it be sold. However, it was different for Zhang Ye as he had earlier discussed the contract with Central TV Department 1 based on his terms. In that contract, he would not be entitled to year-end bonuses or a joining bonus, but in return, he would get to retain his copyright in the event that television stations from overseas wanted to buy it. That was the one and only clause he requested, so you could say that he had brought the program along with him to Central TV Department 1.

So what was the meaning of this now?

Are they intending to break the contract? Did I hear it wrong?

Zhang Ye asked in an unpleasant tone, "What do you mean by that?"

Jiang Yuan looked at him. "The management's decision is that we ought to renegotiate your contract terms. Don't be too hasty now. We aren't targeting you. The main issue here is to standardize the contract to Central TV's contractual rules. Moreover, you don't

have to worry since this is just modifying the copyright clause that is in the contract now. What you have produced and created within your professional role will become Central TV Department 1's copyright, so it's simply just that one clause. As for the others, the contract will seek to increase your performance bonuses accordingly. Your bonuses and viewership rating performance pay are directly linked, and with your standards, the monthly payout for you won't be low at all. In summary, we are just asking for you to give up the overseas copyright. In exchange, we will increase your salary to compensate you. It's the same thing in the end."

Zhang Ye laughed. "Then may I first ask; how much will the monthly payouts amount to?"

"Since we did not discuss your bonuses in the previous contract, you were at a disadvantage. As you know, overseas copyrights are actually not easy to sell. How many of such cases have you ever seen happening in our country's variety show industry? There's basically none. But what we are going to do for you is renegotiate the contract in your favor, so even if the overseas copyright is not sold, you will still stand to gain monetarily in the form of bonuses. With your show's performance, I am estimating that you will receive at least 200,000 RMB a month, maybe even more," Jiang Yuan explained.

Zhang Ye laughed in spite of all this. "What I understand by this is that you are telling me that the contract will be renegotiated not from the next show, but starting with The Voice, right?"

Jiang Yuan acknowledged, "You can give it some consideration first."

Zhang Ye candidly replied, "I don't need to consider. It's a no."

Earlier at the cafeteria, when someone mentioned that an American had come to discuss the overseas copyright for The Voice, Zhang Ye was still doubtful of it. But at this moment, he no longer doubted the veracity of that. Someone from Central TV Department 1 had definitely met up with the American already, and it was likely that they'd also discussed a preliminary figure for the copyright. However, because of the issue with Zhang Ye's contract, Central TV Department 1 could not sell the copyright of The Voice to an overseas party. Therefore, the only choice left was to talk it through with Zhang Ye.

Change the copyright clause in favor of bonuses?

200,000 RMB a month?

Are you trying to deceive an idiot!? If the overseas copyright were to be sold, it would fetch at least tens of millions of yuan! The monthly payout of 200,000 RMB still had to be tied to the viewership ratings? If the viewership ratings drop, so will the pay? Do you think I was born yesterday??

Jiang Yuan frowned. "Little Zhang, the reason a program like The Voice has done so well was not down to only your concept and hosting. You have to know that Central TV Department 1's large platform contributed heavily to the rise of the show's popularity as well. In fact, it's even the decisive factor, since without the platform, The Voice would never have become so popular. This is

not your credit alone to claim. If you insist on biting onto a throwaway issue like the copyright, don't you think you're being too unreasonable?"

Zhang Ye's eyes narrowed. "Director Jiang, first of all, the issue with the contract was brought up by me at the very beginning. When you invited me to join Central TV Department 1 after our discussions, I did not request any conditions except the matter of the copyright. There was no joining pay, no bonuses. Just a basic salary of 8,000 RMB as the host. I worked incredibly hard on the show, came up with the idea, used my personal connections to pull in a title sponsor to fund the production, and finally, also gave up my share of the online exclusive broadcast fees that went directly to Central TV Department 1. So how am I being unreasonable??"

"You have to think from a different perspective—" Jiang Yuan tried to advise.

Zhang Ye refuted. "The one who should think from a different perspective is not me. I dare put it this way: if you had rejected my request to retain my ownership of the show's copyright back when you approached me to join the station, we would've just parted ways on good terms and I would not have joined the station. But now that the contract has already been agreed on and signed, and I have also joined the station and created the show too, then with the overseas copyright nearly sold, you're telling me that the contract agreements that we had don't stand up to scrutiny? You guys even want the overseas copyright for yourselves now? All the money will go to you all? Going back on your word? Burning bridges? Is this the way to do things, if I may ask? It's not like I'm particular about things. Neither do I feel that I have asked for too much. You even mentioned earlier about how many of our variety

shows have had their copyrights sold overseas, right? Basically none? But when I want to retain this 'throwaway' copyright for myself, I am being called unreasonable? What else would you like me to do? I need to ensure that I create a good show, ensure its viewership ratings, and now I even have to control myself from getting too much money? Is this what you mean by being reasonable? That is not called being reasonable, that is what you'd call idiotic!"

Hearing Zhang Ye's tone, Jiang Yuan also didn't bother to hold back anymore. He spoke harshly, "Little Zhang, I suggest that you better consider this carefully."

"I should not be the one considering this matter, nor am I obligated to do so!" Zhang Ye laid down the law, "A contract is a contract, we will continue according to the contractual terms. After the year ends, if you still want to renegotiate the contract, we can talk about it again. But for now, I have no reason to renegotiate the contract!"

Jiang Yuan said, "Go back and think about it again."

"The ones thinking should be you all." This was just what Zhang Ye's temper was like. If people were good to him, they could talk about anything. But if people tried to find fault with him, he would say anything he wanted. "I don't need to speak of how much The Voice has earned for Central TV Department 1 or how much fame and glory it has brought to the station. You guys should know all about that. Besides, you can check around with anyone, but ever since i joined Central TV Department 1, have I not been giving my best to the station? In turn, what you all are trying to do chills me.

I can clearly tell you this: the contract has been written in black and white already and I won't be renegotiating it. If the American wants to discuss the overseas copyright to The Voice, I will discuss it with him or her face-to-face. There's no need for you all to bother yourselves with it!"

Zhang Ye stood up to walk out.

Jiang Yuan was so angry his face paled. He told Zhang Ye, "Don't forget that you still have to fulfill the contract duration with Central TV Department 1. Whatever our station might lack, it definitely won't be a host!"

"What a coincidence." Zhang Ye stopped in his tracks and turned around. "I can teach, crosstalk, produce music, act in movies, and write novels, so it's not like I have to be a host either!"

At the door.

Two staff members were just walking past Jiang Yuan's office at this moment. When they saw the door open and heard Zhang Ye arguing with Jiang Yuan inside the office, the two of them looked at each other, stunned and rooted to the spot!

What was happening?

Why was Zhang Ye arguing with people again??

Chapter 740: Director Zhang Flies Into A Rage!

Later that afternoon.

News started spreading internally at Central TV.

A group of people were heatedly discussing it in private, talking about Zhang Ye.

"Hey, did you hear about it?"

"What?"

"Zhang Ye and a Central TV Department 1's deputy director were arguing with each other!"

"Ah? When did that happen? What's the state of affairs?"

"I heard that a leader from Central TV Department 1 wanted to renegotiate with Zhang Ye over his contract. They wanted him to give up his ownership of the copyright to The Voice and any upcoming shows to Central TV, but Zhang Ye did not agree and they clashed over it."

"Changing the contract?"

"If it were me, I wouldn't have agreed either!"

"Right, based on what can they ask to change the contract?"

"It seems like the overseas copyright fee that Central TV Department 1 has negotiated for is rather high. It's somewhere in the range of 10 to 20 million RMB, so if such a large sum of money doesn't go into Central TV Department 1's account, it wouldn't look good for them. Moreover, this is also a sort of political achievement for Central TV Department 1 since it would be the first time that a domestically produced variety show has ever had its copyright sold overseas. That in itself would already be a huge achievement, but if it were sold under Zhang Ye's name, Central TV Department 1 would end up being embarrassed. It wouldn't look good, so the leaders at Department 1 came up with the scheme of changing the contract terms. I guess they were left with no choice after all."

"But still, they can't force people to resign it."

"Yes, of course they can't, but they can let him waste away. Don't forget that Zhang Ye still has a one-year contract with Central TV Department 1. If Central TV Department 1 decides to freeze Zhang Ye for the remainder of his contract duration and not release him, Zhang Ye can't do anything about that either. Remember our Central TV News Channel's Old Zhu from a few years back? Didn't he get frozen for three whole years after offending someone? In the end, when his contract expired, Old Zhu lost all his popularity together with it. Do you still see him around on television these days? I don't even know what he's up to anymore these days. This is what Zhang Ye will have to face as well. Even though he's very

popular right now, in the entertainment industry, once you don't have any exposure or publicity, you're as good as dead. No matter how much fame you had previously, it will all go to waste. Zhang Ye couldn't afford such circumstances."

"That's right!"

"That Zhang Ye's temper is really too quick. I've heard that he often argues with his leaders, but thought that it was just a rumor. Who knew that he actually turned out to be that way!"

"This problem can't be easy to handle."

"Let's just see how Zhang Ye will handle it then."

"Hai, such things in the professional setting have always made it difficult to distinguish who's right and who's wrong. Furthermore, it involves the leaders' vested interest. We can only wait and see how they resolve it. Teacher Zhang is really unlucky to get involved in such an uncalled-for situation. The media has always reported on how Zhang Ye always gets into trouble at every place that he goes to, but it seems to me that it's just a case of the popular attracting trouble. If Zhang Ye weren't so capable and the show's viewership ratings were just average, the copyright wouldn't have attracted any interest, and there simply wouldn't have been any issues. However, it's precisely because he's so capable that even if he does not look for trouble, trouble comes looking for him!"

"Yeah, there's no way out of this."

The entire Central TV network was made up of many other departments other than Central TV Department 1. It could be described as a large network, but also be seen as a small corporation, since they were all housed in the same building. Besides, as someone had witnessed the argument between Zhang Ye and Jiang Yuan, news of it spread very quickly internally and couldn't be kept under wraps.

.....

In The Voice's program team office.

When the program team staff heard about it, they were all shocked!

"This..."

"Why would they try to change the contract?"

"Yeah, it doesn't make sense whatsoever. Isn't this pushing it a little too far?"

"Aiyo, why did Director Zhang argue with the leader? Will the new show be affected by this?"

"It definitely will. If it isn't handled well, Central TV Department 1 might even give the show to someone else to do! A show with a budget of 80 million, do you know how many hosts would vie for that!?"

"Then what should we do?"

"Director Jiang is being too insincere about this!"

"Shh, keep it down. It's not our place to discuss this."

"Keep it down, my ass. Director Zhang has always been good to us! If we don't speak up for Director Zhang at this time, then who should we speak up for? This is all happening because those leaders from Central TV Department 1 are being too money-grubbing!"

"How did it become like this just when our new show was about to start!"

Ha Qiqi, Zhang Zuo, and the rest also started speaking up. Everyone was very worried about Zhang Ye's situation. Some of them came to a conclusion that Director Zhang would be frozen by Central TV Department 1 over the matter. Just thinking about this outcome made everyone's expression change. Speaking from the heart, they would of course prefer to work with Zhang Ye, even if it meant working harder. Zhang Ye also called for a higher standard of work from them, but they were all willing to put in the effort for him. From a motley crew of a program team, they had now become the best program team in the country. It was truly an honor for them! How great of an honor was this? It was so great that they wouldn't exchange it for anything else!

"Surely they won't freeze him, right?"

"That's unlikely. I don't think it calls for such drastic measures yet!"

"Right, it's not such a big conflict anyway. I'm sure they can still come to an agreement somehow. Let's see how Director Zhang will handle this now. But I wonder, with Director Zhang's temper...this is really difficult to say!"

No one was in the mood to work anymore.

At this moment, Zhang Ye pushed open the door and walked into the office.

Ha Qiqi quickly said, "Director Zhang!"

Zhang Zuo immediately said, "Just let us know if there's anything we can help you with!"

Zhang Ye smiled and waved a hand. "It's nothing, just go on and keep working."

Seeing how Zhang Ye was still able to keep his smile in such a situation, everyone admired him from the bottom of their hearts. He was indeed worthy of his label as the jinx of the entertainment circle, and had been through all sorts of difficulties in this industry before.

Zhang Ye had actually prepared for the worst-case scenario, but he still carried on doing whatever he needed to do as of now. He did not let the problem affect his rhythm at all.

Zhang Ye asked, "Is the proposal written up yet?"

Ha Qiqi said, "We came up with two simple concepts. You can take a look at them first."

Zhang Ye said, "Mmm, it looks fine."

After chatting a little about the new show, Zhang Ye shared some of his views and ideas about it before ending the meeting. All they needed to do now was wait for the funding to come in so that they could start implementing their plans and realize a general development direction for the show. Zhang Ye already had several concepts as well, but he still needed to refine them a little further.

Di di.

Ha Qiqi's cell phone rang.

Di di.

The cell phones of everyone else in the office also went off at about the same time.

"Wah, our salary has been paid!" Little Wang said happily.

Zhang Zuo took a look and immediately exclaimed, "Whoa, 80,000?"

Ha Qiqi also said, "Me too, 87,000 to be exact."

Wu Yi was shocked. "I got 69,000!"

Little Wang also held her cell phone with her mouth agape. "Mine is above 50,000 too! Aiyo, why did we get so much this month? The bonus is 47,000?"

Ha Qiqi suddenly said, "We have Director Zhang to thank for this. He applied for the bonus on our behalf. This payment should be for the work done in the month before last. There should still be another bonus in next month's salary."

Little Wang was overjoyed. "Thank you, Director Zhang!" She offhandedly asked, "Director Zhang, how much did you get? It's definitely many times more than ours, right? Will you be treating us later?"

Everyone laughed.

When Zhang Ye finally took out his cell phone to check, he found no messages on it. "Oh, I haven't received mine yet."

Ha Qiqi stared blankly at him. "That can't be."

Zhang Zuo was also stunned. "Isn't Central TV using an automated payroll system?"

Within the Central TV network, the bank details of every department were different. Some of the newer departments had their bank accounts tied to the Postal Savings Bank of China, while the older departments used China Construction Bank. So when the employees of Central TV Department 1 were paid by the same bank, it was unlikely that there would be a delay since the salaries should all be received at the same time. Even if there were some slight delays for some people, it couldn't be that Zhang Ye alone did not receive the notification, right?

Little Wang said, "Did you activate the salary payment alert?"

Zhang Ye did not answer her and just smiled. "Looks like you guys will have to treat me to dinner instead?"

However, this smile from Zhang Ye made Ha Qiqi, Zhang Zuo, and the others feel a sense of unease. It felt like it was the prelude to Director Zhang flying off the handle!

What happened at the Finance Department?

Why did everyone receive their salaries except for Director Zhang?

Without Director Zhang, there would not have been The Voice.

After Director Zhang had earned so much money for Central TV Department 1, as well as garnered so much reputation for them, why did he deserve such treatment from you? Is this the way to treat your most exemplary employee? Is this how you treat someone who saved the viewership ratings of Central TV Department 1??

Ha Qiqi stood up and said, "I'll go check for you with the Finance Department! What're they doing!?"

Zhang Ye understood what was going on. The anger he had accumulated within him had reached the limit. Do you all really think that I, Zhang Ye, am afraid of you people at Central TV Department 1??

No joining fee!

No bonuses!

The show I created!

The show I produced!

The title sponsorship I pulled in!

Yet now, not only do you not intend to leave the overseas copyright for me, you're even withholding my salary of only 8,000 RMB?

Ha!

Why don't you tell me just what you're trying to play at!?

Chapter 741: Prove To Me That Your Mother Is Your Mother!

It was almost time to knock off.

Some employees at the Finance Department of Central TV had already powered down their computers and were beginning to pack up to go home.

"Sister Wang, wanna join us at a Sanlitun bar tonight?"

"No thanks, I drank too much the other day, so I'm not going tonight."

"Little Liu, what are your plans after work?"

"Me? Hur hur, what else can I be doing? I'm just going home to eat. My boyfriend has already prepared dinner and is waiting for me to return. I won't be participating in any activities today. Maybe some other time."

"Your boyfriend treats you really well."

"Of course. He does whatever I say."

While Little Liu was talking with her colleagues, an unexpected visitor came in from outside.

Zhang Ye strolled into the office, not looking like he was in a rush at all. In fact, he even had a very relaxed expression on his face. Zhang Ye understood quite well why his salary was not paid this time. Wasn't it just a several thousand RMB salary? Central TV Department 1 did not lack this bit of money and neither did Zhang Ye. Central TV Department 1 was using it as a way to warn him, or rather, to describe it more appropriately, to threaten him. Thinking about this, Zhang Ye sneered mentally. If this bro conceded because of their threats, he wouldn't have survived in the entertainment industry and become everyone's common enemy!

Trying to mess with me?

Sure, I'm up for it if you all want to dance!

"Who is in charge of the payroll system for Central TV Department 1?" Zhang Ye asked.

The Finance Department staff were stunned.

"Eh?"

"Director Zhang?"

"Central TV Department 1? Little Liu is in charge of that."

Everyone was a little surprised that Zhang Ye appeared in their

office. Someone pointed him to Little Liu, a pretty girl in her twenties.

Little Liu who was happily chatting with everyone just a moment ago suddenly frowned when she saw Zhang Ye and turned cold. She asked indifferently, "What's the matter?"

Zhang Ye smiled and said, "So you're the one in charge?"

Little Liu said, "That's me, why?"

Zhang Ye nodded. "Do you intend to not pay me my salary?"

"Ah?" Sister Wang on the other side of the room was amused by this. "Director Zhang, are you joking? The salary for Central TV Department 1 was already settled. The system should have disbursed the payment to all employees around 2, 3 PM this afternoon, so how could it be that we intend to not pay you?"

An accountant beside her also said, "That's right. It's all been disbursed already. Everyone from Department 2 and Department 3 has received it as well."

Zhang Ye shrugged. "That's weird then. Everyone in Central TV has received their salary, so why am I the only one who has not yet been paid? Or did it get withheld? It's alright. If they don't intend to pay me or have withheld it, they just need to inform me. At least I have to know the reason for that, right?"

Little Liu coldly answered, "Everyone's salary has already been disbursed."

Zhang Ye replied, "But I did not receive it."

Little Liu shook her head. "That I do not know."

"Then that's it?" Zhang Ye was very amused by her reply. "You are shirking from your responsibility just like that? Alright, since you don't know, then please check where my salary went for me?"

Little Liu immediately refused and looked at her watch. "It's already time to clock out from work. If there's a problem, come back tomorrow to check."

Sister Wang frowned. "Little Liu, it definitely won't take much time to check for Director Zhang."

At this moment, a young girl beside Sister Wang pulled at her, and gave her a look while pouting with an unknown intention. When Sister Wang and several staff members of the Finance Department saw this, they seemingly realized there was more to the situation, and so did not say another word.

Zhang Ye said, "I'm impatient, so I won't wait till tomorrow to find out."

Little Liu said in frustration, "I'm already clocking out from work."

"There's still 5 minutes left." Zhang Ye said, "Is your watch not accurate?"

Little Liu took a deep breath and said firmly, "Alright, even if it's still office hours, I will make it clear to you. The salary that was meant to be disbursed has already been disbursed. Everyone received their share of the salary. If you must insist that you did not receive it, then there's nothing I can do about it. It might be that you have turned off your cell phone notifications, or you checked the wrong bank account, so those are problems not on my side."

Zhang Ye said, "Alright, then please check on which side the problem occurred at."

Little Liu shook her head. "I can't do the checking here and am not authorized to check for you individually either, as it does not comply with the procedures. You can double check again with the issue you are facing. If it's really a case of the salary not depositing to your account, then we can do a check on our side. However, you need to provide proof of that."

Zhang Ye laughed. "What proof?"

Little Liu said, "First, you have to go the bank to print an account statement, then get the bank to prove that you haven't received your salary this month. Second, if the proof is complete, you need to provide a document to prove that this bank account is used for your salary payment with Central TV Department 1. Once you have

all the documentation and proof ready, you can submit them to me and I will report it to the management. I will be able to check for you over here once they verify that there is no problem with the documentation and proof."

Zhang Ye couldn't help but laugh, "You all did not pay my salary to me, yet you want me to provide proof of it?"

Little Liu said calmly, "If you don't provide any proof, we can't check for you."

"Alright, I can go and gather proof, but before that..." Zhang Ye had been all smiles since he came into the office of the Finance Department, but at this moment, his expression suddenly changed. He slapped his hand onto the table in front of Little Liu, which made a loud bang and gave Little Liu a big scare. "...you have to prove to me that you have the right to make me prove that my salary has not been received, and give you proof that my bank account is my bank account!"

These words that sounded like a tongue twister helped Zhang Ye throw the question back at her!

Little Liu was stunned. "I am from Finance, so if I say I need proof, then it means I need proof."

Zhang Ye stared at her and said, "What proof do you have to prove that if you need to see proof, then others have to prove to you with their proof!"

Little Liu nearly fainted from hearing that. She repeated his words repeatedly before finally understanding what he meant and replied in a loud voice, "I am an employee of this department! If what I say doesn't matter, then whose words matter!"

Zhang Ye said, "What proof do you have to prove that you are really from Finance?"

"Everyone here can vouch for me!" Little Liu was becoming agitated by him. "If I'm not from Finance, then who is?"

Zhang Ye said, "Then you have to prove to me first that you're really an employee of the Finance Department before I can get the proof to prove to you!"

Little Liu was furious. "Old Wang!"

A middle-aged man said, "Little Liu really is from Finance."

Zhang Ye looked at the middle-aged man while sneering. "How can you prove that? Also, do you have proof that can prove that you can prove that she is indeed from Finance?"

The middle-aged man was also confused from listening to this, "Ah?"

Proof that can prove that I can prove that she is from Finance?

How the f**k do I prove that!

Little Liu angrily slammed her employee pass onto the table.
"This is my employee pass!"

"Can you prove that this so-called employee pass of yours is indeed proof that proves you are working in Central TV's Finance Department?" Zhang Ye said.

Little Liu shouted, "This is the standardized employee pass we all use! I don't need to prove it!"

Zhang Ye retorted, "Then how do you prove that the person in the photo is you?"

Little Liu was angry and confused. "That is me!"

Zhang Ye asked, "How do you prove it?"

Little Liu: "That is who I am!"

Zhang Ye: "How do you prove that you are you?"

Little Liu was so angry that her face turned green. "I was born to my mother and father! If I am not me, then who am I?"

Zhang Ye looked at her and said, "How do you prove that your

mother is your mother?"

Little Liu nearly vomited blood at this!

Zhang Ye continued on, "How do you prove that your father is your father? How do you prove that your grandma is your grandma? How do you prove that your grandpa is your grandpa?"

Little Liu was gasping heavily for air. She pointed to Zhang Ye angrily and said, "You! You're cursing at me!"

Zhang Ye threw up his hands and denied, "Who did I curse at? I just wanted you to prove yourself to me! If you bring out all of that proof and show me, I will follow your instructions accordingly and get my proof!"

Little Liu: "You..."

"So, show me the proof. What are you waiting for!" Zhang Ye stared at her for a moment, then suddenly smacked the surface of the table and caused the notepad and pen to fly off from the aftershock. Then, he declared loudly, "You can't even provide proof that your mother is your mother, or that you are you! So what gives you the damned right to ask me to prove to you that my bank account is my bank account?"

This barrage of tongue-twisting rhetorical questions sucked everyone in!

Little Liu who had been stifling her anger and suffocating from it suddenly exploded into tears. Having been caught by surprise at Zhang Ye's argument, she was left crying and hitting the tabletop in frustration!

Zhang Ye glanced at her and did not continue wrangling with her. He straightened his sleeves and exited the office just the way he had entered. His pace was an unhurried one. He looked like he was taking a leisurely stroll. It seemed like his visit this time was not to check on the reason for not receiving the salary. It did not feel like he was trying to rush them to disburse the salary either, but just seemed like he had come to insult people and create trouble. Now that his objectives were met, Zhang Ye simply walked off, looking really cool as he did that!

He ended up looking cool!

And at the same time, he left a bunch of employees from the Finance Department with the mouths agape after hearing what he said!

In a department like theirs, they often met with cases which they had no choice but to make excuses for. They could only try to pass the buck or responsibility around. It was often a useful tactic, so everyone here was somewhat skillful at it. However, Zhang Ye had really given them a great lesson today. Hearing Zhang Ye's nonstop barrage of proving this and proving that with proof, they really felt a sense of dumbfoundedness as ten thousand strings of "f**k you" flashed across their vision. Zhang Ye had taken their most overused skill and returned it with full impact! The employees from Finance were also stunned.

Little Liu was considered one of the more glib individuals in the Finance Department. Central TV Department 1 must have notified Little Liu this time and deliberately done this to Zhang Ye. But as result of that, in just a short, one-minute confrontation, the frontline member that was Little Liu had been forced into tears by the words of Zhang Ye! She had lost even though her opponent did not even use a single swear word in the argument! She couldn't even talk back to him!

Damn, what the f**k was this kind of speaking ability of his!

Was that who the famous Zhang Ye was?

Was this who the fastest speaking host of the country was??

Everyone in Central TV's Finance Department looked at each other, feeling somewhat fearful. They had witnessed for themselves today, just how scary Zhang Ye's mouth was! Even though they knew that he was just harassing them, they couldn't refute his words because he had harassed them with the same approach they used. Prove that Zhang Ye's bank account was Zhang Ye's bank account? This was a matter that could have easily been checked through the system. It would take at most ten seconds of their time, but since Little Liu insisted on Zhang Ye giving her proof, he had pushed back the problem in its entirety to her and asked Little Liu to prove that Little Liu was Little Liu. But how could Little Liu prove that!?

This time, they had truly met a tough opponent!

With that fight of his, even with the entire department's employees combined strength, they might still not be a match for him!

Chapter 742: Taunting Whoever Comes!

After work.

But Central TV was bustling!

Generally, during non-holiday periods, when it reached this time of day, other than those who had overtime to clock, most of the Central TV's staff would not stay around at the office longer than necessary. They couldn't wait for the workday to be over so that they could go home to dinner. However, many of them did not leave the office today. Some were having discussions in their offices, while some were chatting in the hallways.

"Something's happened!"

"What's the matter? Why are you still around?"

"Something happened over at the Finance Department just now!"

"Director Zhang was too awesome! I was just looking at the commotion from outside as it happened! The hallway outside of the Finance department was packed with people just now!"

"What went on over there? Spit it out! What did Zhang Ye do again?"

"Central TV Department 1 did not pay his salary, so Director

Zhang took it up to Finance and even made Little Liu, who's in charge of their payment, cry! F**k, it was too awesome! Director Zhang's mouth is simply too godly! He could even wake up the dead with his scolding! He argued with her without even using a single swear word and brought her to tears!"

"Which Little Liu?"

"That woman with a mole on her forehead, who looks especially snobbish. That one!"

"Oh, oh I know her. That girl who curries favor with the leaders and always knows how to speak with reason. How could she have been driven to tears by Zhang Ye? Hai, look at what I'm saying. I should know better since we're talking about Zhang Ye here. Arguing with him? I don't think that anyone in the entirety of Central TV can outargue him!"

"Little Liu from Finance has always looked down on others, arrogant just because she has good relations with the leaders. Looks like she has encountered a tough opponent this time! Does she think that Zhang Ye is like the other employees? That he would just take whatever she says? That she could get Zhang Ye to do whatever nonsense she asked for? How funny! She should use her brain to think for a bit. If Zhang Ye were so easy to talk to, he wouldn't have offended his peers in all the industries he's stepped into, neither would he have garnered such deep hatred from countless people!"

"This time, the commotion is a big one!"

"Do the leaders know yet?"

"They must know. Let's see how this plays out!"

"If it goes on like this, I really wonder how it will end!"

"Eh, a chief from Finance is coming over. It's Little Liu's boss!"

"Did Little Liu make a complaint?"

"Oh, it seems like Chief Lian is heading to The Voice's program team office!"

Are they going to clash head-on? Quick, let's go and take a look!"

"Wait for me, I want to go as well!"

"If there's something to watch, then I will go home at a later time!"

.....

Over there.

In the program team office of The Voice.

When Ha Qiqi, Zhang Zuo, and the others heard the news, they were all startled.

The office assistant, Little Wang, clapped and laughed, "What a good vent! That's how she should have been scolded!"

A different girl said, "He might have vented his frustrations, but this will be troublesome now. The station has already treated Director Zhang in this way, but with another case now, what will happen to him?"

Wu Yi said, "No matter what, she deserved the scolding. She's just a normal employee in the Finance Department, so how dare she try to challenge Director Zhang? Withholding Director Zhang's salary? Based on what? Even if we disregard Director Zhang's status in Central TV, he is also a well-known mathematician as well as an associate professor at Peking University. Anyone who sees him should be showing their respect, but consider her attitude toward him. She's already gotten off lightly if she did cry. If it were me, I would've hit her!"

Ha Qiqi said, "Oh, c'mon, Old Wu, don't cause any more unnecessary trouble."

Zhang Zuo suddenly looked past the door. "Someone's here?"

Ha Qiqi was also stunned when she looked over. "It's Chief Lian from Finance? What's he here for? Did he come to reprimand someone?"

Just at that moment, around four people gradually came inside through the door. One of them was Chief Lian from Finance, who was also Little Liu's immediate supervisor. Another was Little Liu, accompanied by her colleagues from their department. As for the large group of people who followed behind them, those people did not dare step into the office and just stood outside and watched through the glass. They were obviously staff from Central TV who had come to see the commotion.

Tearstains could still be seen on Little Liu's face.

Chief Lian shouted as he stepped in, "Where's Zhang Ye? Where is Zhang Ye?!"

Zhang Zuo was a little annoyed. "What are you shouting for?"

"Ask your Director Zhang to come out now. Why did he make my subordinate cry? Ah?" Chief Lian was very angry.

Ha Qiqi knew him, so she stood up and said, "Old Lian, what's the meaning of this? We didn't look for you, but now you dare come to look for us? Why don't you tell us why Director Zhang did not receive his salary? Other than my boss, everyone else received theirs. Why is that so!"

Chief Lian said, "Old Ha, this is none of your business!"

Ha Qiqi said, "My boss's business is my business!"

At the other side of the room, Zhang Ye's office door opened and he walked out. "Who's looking for me? What's all this shouting for? Are they treating this as their home?!"

When Chief Lian saw him, he stared and said, "Zhang Ye, it's good that you're here. You're also someone with status, a leader of a program team. How could you make a young girl cry? Don't you feel embarrassed by your actions?!"

Zhang Ye was amused. "She insisted that I prove my bank account is my bank account, so let me ask you this, how can I prove that to her? Where in the hell would I go and produce such proof for her? You could have just used the department's system to do a check, yet you denied me that and pushed all the responsibility onto me. She's already gotten off lightly because I only criticized her a little. Besides, I did not scold her. There were also others there at that time. You can ask them if I scolded her."

Chief Lian shouted, "Our Finance Department has our own procedures to follow. If Little Liu asked for your verification, it means that it's necessary. If you don't produce the proof, then how can we check for you? If everyone came over with all sorts of requests like you did and our department processed and checked them one by one, would we still have time to do other things? Do you think we don't have our own basic jobs to handle? Since you couldn't produce the proof, then our judgment is that the salary has already been paid out to you." He said many things, but it was still the same old story!

You still want me to give you proof?

Zhang Ye smiled. "I can't deny it just because I can't produce proof?"

"Of course!" Chief Lian said furiously.

Zhang Ye nodded and asked back, "Alright then, let me ask you something, Chief Lian. Can you prove that you have proof that I am not your grandpa?"

"What?" Chief Lian's face turned green from anger. "Say that again!"

So Zhang Ye really did say it again. "Can you prove that you have proof that I am not your grandpa?" Then he paused to look at the other party. "So? Can you? You can't prove that either right? So by your logic, I am indeed your grandpa."

"Pfft!"

Some of those people who had gathered outside to observe could not hold in their laughter!

Chief Lian suddenly blew up at this moment, "Zhang Ye, I'll curse your grandpa!"

Zhang Ye said, "Can you prove that you have proof that I am not your grandpa?"

Chief Lian nearly vomited blood from anger. "You! Cough cough cough! Cough cough cough!"

After an exchange of just a few lines, Chief Lian nearly suffered a heart attack. When the staff from the Finance Department saw this, they quickly said, "Chief, don't bother with him anymore!"

"Right, let's go. Don't get angry over this guy!"

"We will report this to the leaders. I still think there's room for reason!"

"Chief Lian, don't get so angry! Don't get so angry!"

"Chief! Brace yourself! Please brace yourself!"

Chief Lian was trying to catch his breath and said, "Brace my ass! I am still well and alive!"

The few Finance Department staff held and supported their Chief out, while Chief Lian himself was adamant in staying. As he was being dragged out, he pointed at Zhang Ye while cursing and swearing.

"Zhang! You're good! You're good!"

The Central TV staff who were here to observe all felt rather

speechless. They could only wonder why the chief had even bothered to come when all it took was a moment for him to get abused and defeated by Zhang Ye. Can that fight of yours be any lower? Besides, if you already knew you couldn't outargue Zhang Ye, then why waste time coming here? Weren't you just asking to be ridiculed? Who doesn't know of that mouth on Zhang Ye? Moreover, if we were really going to talk about it, it was the Finance Department that was unreasonable!

"Let's leave."

"Hai, time to go."

"How uninteresting. I thought there would be a hard-fought battle."

"The people from Finance are all full of hot air!"

"But I have to admit that Zhang Ye's mouth is really vicious!"

"Director Zhang will taunt whoever comes at him, whether it is one person or a group!"

"How awesome!"

"Yeah, I was so tickled upon hearing what he said!"

"I've come across quite a number of hosts in my years with

Central TV. Honestly speaking, Zhang Ye is the one I feel can speak the best!"

"I'm convinced. If I had a mouth like Director Zhang, I wouldn't be afraid of anything in this entire world! He can scold people without resorting to a single swear word, yet it sounds even more vicious than scolding with swear words! I'm really speechless at that! The jinx of the entertainment industry, the hooligan of the educational world, all of these labels are not for nothing!"

"The people from Finance have really suffered a big loss of face this time!"

.....

Upstairs.

Central TV Department 1 Director's Office.

Jiang Yuan was seated inside, opposite the Director of Department 1, the current leader of their station, Jiang Naixiong. He was a middle-aged man in his forties. Even though there was the Xióng (literal: Bear) character in his name, his facial features were considerably smart. He wore gold-rimmed glasses and had a head full of hair.

Jiang Yuan said, "That Zhang Ye is starting to behave lawlessly! The Finance Department was made a mess of because of him!"

"How do you think we ought to handle this?" Jiang Naixiong looked at him.

Jiang Yuan pondered for a moment then answered, "I still think we have to criticize and punish him, so that we can show our stand and attitude to everyone. Concerning this matter, the interest of our channel is top priority, and we must not concede to him. We also need to convey this signal to him, to let Zhang Ye know that Department 1 certainly will not give in to him. I'll find another day to speak to him about the contract and make him sign it for sure."

Jiang Naixiong nodded and said, "It's best that the program with the 80 million yuan production budget still go to Zhang Ye. He is capable enough to handle it. If we hand it to others, they might not be able to do as well."

"I understand that." Jiang Yuan replied, "We will just drag him along for now. In any case, this is the first overseas copyright sale that Central TV has, so we cannot let this go through him personally. It definitely has to be through our channel!"

Jiang Naixiong acknowledged, "If he understands this, that is what he should be doing. Actually, he does not lack money at all, so the copyright shouldn't matter to him much. But for a program with an 80 million yuan production budget, a stage for him to show what he can do, that is a chance that can't be exchanged with anything. No other television stations can give him the resources that Central TV Department 1 can provide. I'm sure he understands that quite well. Besides, he still has a one-year contract with us."

Jiang Yuan said, "Understood."

.....

Half an hour later.

An internal email was sent out in Central TV. It was a memo criticizing Zhang Ye's handling of the issue at the Finance Department where he insulted a colleague. All the staff in Central TV received this email, but in it, there was no mention of why Zhang Ye's salary was withheld. It was as if this issue simply had not happened!

Chapter 743: Silence Can Be Very Deafening As Well!

The next day.

At around 5 AM in the morning, the sky was still dark.

Someone had leaked the incident onto the Internet.

Following that, a well-known online media publication published an article: "According to an anonymous source who works in Central TV, the honeymoon period between Central TV Department 1 and Zhang Ye has ended. As of yesterday, due to an issue with the contractual agreement over the overseas copyright, Zhang Ye had his salary withheld. Afterwards, Zhang Ye got into a war of words with the director of Department 1's Finance Department as well as a colleague from the Finance Department. In the end, Zhang Ye was identified and criticized for his behavior. Zhang Ye still has nine months of contractual obligations to fulfill with Central TV, so he now has an awkward standing within the station. The new show with an 80 million RMB budget may be delayed because of this. There is also a possibility of the show's personnel being changed. We will continue to keep track of any further developments!"

Then, a series of other reports were published!

"Central TV Department 1 breaks contract for overseas copyright to The Voice?"

"Zhang Ye wreaks havoc in Central TV's Finance Department!"

"New show might not see the light of day?"

"Issue of the withheld salary? The truth or just a baseless rumor?"

"American production company already in final stages of negotiation with Central TV for The Voice's overseas copyright?"

"Three months into job at Central TV, Zhang Ye stirs up trouble yet again!"

Early in the morning, while many of the office workers were still half-asleep, news of Zhang Ye and Central TV was already overwhelming the Internet, making the rounds online.

"What?"

"Wasn't everything still fine yesterday? Didn't they already announce the new show as well?"

"Teacher Zhang's salary has been withheld?"

"F**k, this looks like the start of something big again!"

"From my understanding of Teacher Zhang, I have a feeling that this will be a big affair!"

"No, didn't you read that Teacher Zhang still has nine months left on his contract? If he really gets frozen by Central TV, what will he do for the next nine months? There definitely isn't a shortage of hosts frozen by Central TV! Counting them, there should be over a dozen such hosts. If the incident has really developed to the stage that is unmanageable, Zhang Ye will find it difficult to escape the fate of being frozen too. Then would he just sit around foolishly at Central TV without any show or work to do? I feel that Teacher Zhang would have considered that already. After all, there is still the new show waiting for him. He should understand very well which is the more important issue here."

"He could always resign if worse comes to worst!"

"Right, there're so many television stations who covet Zhang Ye. Surely someone would be willing to pay the breach of contract fines!"

"You speak of it so lightly. Let's not mention whether he can resign or not first, nor should we talk about whether Central TV Department 1 will release him. If he does resign, then Zhang Ye is in breach of the contract first. That would mean the copyrights to The Voice he has would be invalid along with that, right? Then disregarding The Voice's overseas copyright, Zhang Ye would even lose the rights to produce the second or third season of The Voice of China this way. As long as he chooses to leave his job, all of those copyrights will belong to Central TV Department 1 automatically. They can easily find someone then to make the

second and third seasons of The Voice of China next year. I don't think Zhang Ye would agree to that whatsoever! For such a phenomena variety show, he must definitely retain the copyrights with him!"

"That's true."

"This is a really tricky situation!"

"Why is it that every bad thing always happens to Teacher Zhang!"

"Previous poster, let me tell you why. It's not that Teacher Zhang likes to create trouble, but because his nature is too straightforward. He speaks whatever is on his mind and does whatever he thinks he should do. He does not act otherwise and doesn't know how to curry favor with his superiors either, so naturally, conflicts arise easily. If it were any other person, they would have long since handed the copyrights over to Central TV and this situation would not have even occurred."

"Zhang Ye's grumpy temper is what I like most about him! It's right up my alley!"

"In the entire entertainment circle, there aren't many such people who will display their true nature in public anymore!"

At around 7 AM.

Central TV Department 1's official Weibo sent out an emergency clarification update to refute the issue of The Voice's overseas copyright as well as Zhang Ye's withheld salary!

Some netizens took their word for it.

"See what I said? I knew they were only rumors to begin with."

"Yeah, that news about the salary being withheld gave it away. Central TV Department 1 is such a big department, so how would they lack that bit of money? It's just not possible! It just doesn't make any sense!"

But there were also many others who did not believe this denial.

"If everything can be explained by logic, there wouldn't be so many issues in this world!"

"It has to be real! The whistle-blower has already made their points very clear!"

"For the interest of benefit, some people can resort to any means, so it's not that surprising!"

"Hai, the problem now is that Zhang Ye signed a one-year contract which contains many complex clauses and agreements in the interests of both parties. Therefore, even if Central TV Department 1 decides to withhold his salary, what can he do? Zhang Ye can do nothing about it! I believe that Central TV

Department 1 is still going to continue criticizing him, but if Zhang Ye really decides to stand up against them, it wouldn't just be criticizing anymore, he would definitely be put in the freezer. Moreover, being put into the freezer by Central TV is not like being frozen by other TV stations. We also have to consider Central TV Department 1's status in the industry! They would make sure that Zhang Ye won't be able to get back up after this incident. Hasn't this happened before in the past, like with Old Liao and Old Yan? Didn't they end up in that situation?"

"Let's just wait and see how Zhang Ye deals with this."

"Hai, one can only accept it without making any noise in such a situation."

"Yeah, there's really no solution to something like that!"

"This matter has really left Zhang Ye in a predicament. Since the situation is different this time, I don't think that he can handle it like he did in the past, otherwise, he is going to find himself floundering!"

.....

Later that morning.

While on the way to the office, Zhang Ye received many calls.

Yao Jiancai was the first to call. "Why are you getting into

trouble again? Is what they reported on the news true? Or are they just rumors?"

"It's true." Zhang Ye laughed.

"You're still in the mood to laugh?" Yao Jiancai said in a speechless manner: "We're talking about Central TV Department 1, with whom you still have contract time to fulfill. So please consider carefully before you take any action."

Zhang Ye said: "I understand."

Only then did Yao Jiancai feel reassured. "Alright then."

The next caller was the singer Chen Guang.

Old Chen said: "Are you in a deadlock with Central TV Department 1?"

Zhang Ye laughed a little: "More or less."

"If you had signed a program contract, it might have been easier to handle. You would have been free to do whatever you wanted after the show finished. But the problem is that it's not, so you have to be more careful. From what I understand of Central TV Department 1, they never show any mercy to their artists. If they have to ban them, they will ban them just like that, so this situation is really no joke." Old Chen reminded him: "Right now, they still have to give in to you since you have such a great

program planning ability that no one within Central TV Department 1 can replace you. I believe that in normal circumstances, they wouldn't dare do anything to you, but that's only if you don't do anything rash. Remember, don't beat anyone up!"

Zhang Ye said, "I know that, Old Chen. I'm not that stupid."

"Great. As long as you know what I'm saying, I'm less worried." Chen Guang hung up after that.

The last call was from Wu Zeqing.

Old Wu's first words were: "Are the puppies and kittens starting to jump around again? Hur hur, I've already heard about the matter. Don't worry about it, I'll solve it for you."

However, Zhang Ye immediately said: "Old Wu, don't bother yourself with this. I will handle it myself."

Old Wu gently said: "Listen to me, OK?"

"I really can't listen to you on this." Zhang Ye said nicely with a smile: "I have my own ways and principles to handle the issue. If I needed your help on something, I won't stand on ceremony with you, but I can't let you do it this time."

Old Wu asked: "Then what do you intend to do?"

"I will do whatever needs to be done," Zhang Ye laughed.

.....

He reached the office.

Everyone at Central TV looked at Zhang Ye with strange expressions.

But Zhang Ye did not say anything and just went about doing his own things. After he went into his office, he did not leave it at all. Even Ha Qiqi and Zhang Zuo did not see him all day.

Little Wang blinked. "Director Zhang is behaving really strangely today."

Ha Qiqi also said, "I think so too."

Zhang Zuo sighed like he was about to speak but did not say anything in the end. What could he say? Even for a person like Zhang Ye, he would have to lower his head when going under the eaves, so what else could Zhang Zuo say?

It wasn't until afternoon that Zhang Ye finally came out of his office. He went straight out of the program team office and headed downstairs and left Central TV Tower. No one knew where he went. He didn't come back to the office either.

Everyone at Central TV was discussing fervently.

"There was nothing from Zhang Ye today?"

"Yeah, I thought that he would have gotten into another quarrel with the leaders."

"Doesn't he want his salary anymore? Why didn't he go to Finance to stir up some trouble today?"

"Stir up what trouble? At most, he would be able to vent his frustrations a little. It's clear that Central TV Department 1 does not want to issue him his salary and are doing so to give him a warning, so what can Director Zhang do? Do you think that he can really cut off all relations with Central TV Department 1? If it really came down to that, do you expect Director Zhang to end up having nothing to do anymore? He wouldn't do that for sure."

"True."

"Since Zhang Ye has already fallen silent, that means we're already not far from seeing a compromise."

"Yeah, he's already showing his attitude since he is no longer kicking up a fuss or creating any more trouble."

.....

In Jiang Yuan's office.

He called his secretary in. "Did Zhang Ye scold anyone today?"

The secretary said, "No one. He just stayed in his office all day. I heard that he just left but I'm not sure if he left early or if he took the rest of the day off."

Jiang Yuan was a little shocked. "What? Nothing from him at all?"

"There's really nothing at all. He was just especially quiet," the secretary said.

Hearing that, Jiang Yuan grinned, thinking that the issue wasn't going to be a problem anymore. "That's how it should be. Alright, set up an appointment with Zhang Ye to meet with me tomorrow. Get him to see me first thing in the morning in my office. I'll talk to him about changing the contract again."

The secretary also smiled, and replied, "On it, sir."

.....

At night.

There were countless reporters calling Zhang Ye to request an

interview, but all of them failed. It was as though Zhang Ye had changed totally as a person, keeping his silence!

The reporters started speculating!

The netizens were discussing nonstop about it!

"Why isn't Zhang Ye saying anything?"

"This isn't like Teacher Zhang at all!"

"Say my ass! He's clearly succumbed, can't you all see it?"

"Hai, if Zhang Ye keeps badgering about the matter, not only would he not get a single cent of his salary, even the new show would be taken away from him. It's just a few thousand RMB of his salary compared to the 80 million RMB funded show, which one is more important? It's not worth it to risk that! He can still negotiate with Central TV Department 1 to get a better share of the copyright money before transferring the overseas rights to them."

"A silent Zhang Ye? I'm not used to this at all!"

"This is normal. This is how society works. There're many issues we cannot always fight against! We can only endure!"

"This is so f**ked up!"

The netizens lamented in unison.

The staff at Central TV Department 1 were already working on Zhang Ye's new contract with the instructions from the leaders.

There were also some of Zhang Ye's friends, colleagues, and other people from the entertainment industry who knew that this matter could only come this far.

But as it was, it turned out that the development of this affair was totally different from everyone's expectations!

As of this moment, on this night, explosive news that would cause a sensation throughout the entire entertainment circle was dropped without any warning!

When the news came out!

The netizens were shocked!

Central TV was shocked!

The entertainment circle was shocked!

All of the people in the country were also shocked!!

Zhang Ye had filed a petition against Central TV Department 1 to

take them to court! He requested that Central TV Department 1 release his withheld salary of 8661 RMB as well as demanding a compensation of 100 million RMB!!!

At this moment, everyone realized one thing!

Silence can sometimes be very deafening as well!!

Chapter 744: Zhang Ye Declares War!

This piece of news resulted in over 1,000 replies being left in the Weibo comments section within a minute. They seemed to all swarm in immediately like a bombardment and fill it with shocking comments!

"What the f**k!"

"Holy f**k!"

"Did I see it wrong?"

"Please proclaim to me that this is a fake news!"

"Is...is this real?"

"I'm in the process of being shocked!"

"Unbelievable! It's really unbelievable!"

"Someone, quickly tell me they have got this wrong!"

"Teacher Zhang, holy motherf**ker!! You are too damn extreme!"

"So the reason why Zhang Ye remained silent was because he went to find a lawyer to file a petition during the day! He did not

even bother to argue with them and just directly dealt them a severe blow!"

How explosive!

The Internet was abuzz with activity!

The entertainment circle was in an uproar!

The entire industry was terrified!

.....

At Zhang Ye's house.

An elderly neighbor rushed over and pounded hard on the door.

His mother opened the door. "Yo, Sister Li. You're here? Have you eaten yet? I'm eating dinner with Old Zhang right now. You're just in time, why don't you come in? Come in. Let's eat dinner together."

His father also said something friendly.

However, they heard Auntie Li anxiously saying, "Why are you still eating? I just saw the news. Little Ye is creating big trouble again! He...he went to sue Central TV Department 1!"

His mother: "..."

His father: "..."

Chenchen: "..."

.....

Meanwhile.

At Beijing Television Station.

Everyone in the program team of Do You Remember was working overtime to rush out the program and had just finished.

Suddenly, Dafei shouted in surprise, "What the f**k!"

Executive Producer Hu Fei said in a speechless manner, "Dafei, don't always get surprised by everything."

Dong Shanshan, Hou Ge, Hou Di, and the others also looked over. "What's the matter?"

Dafei was holding up his cell phone with his mouth agape. "Just a few minutes ago, the latest news update reported that Teacher Zhang Ye...has sued Central TV in court!"

"What did you say?" Hu Fei lost his footing and nearly tripped over!

Xiao Lu, Hou Ge, and Hou Di slumped over in their chairs. "Holy shit!"

Dong Shanshan stared blankly into thin air and stayed silent for a very long time!

.....

At a recording studio of an interview program.

"It's time to call it a day."

"Teachers, thank you for your hard work."

The show ended. The host and Fan Wenli, a coach on The Voice, joked as they walked off the stage and prepared to leave.

At this moment, they noticed some of the program staff offstage had shocked expressions as they whispered among themselves. Both of them felt curious about it and subconsciously went over to take a look.

The female host asked, "What are you all looking at?"

An editor gasped, "Sister Yu, the entertainment circle... something big just happened!"

Fan Wenli was stunned. "What's going on?"

A technical director beside them didn't know whether to laugh or cry. "Someone is suing Central TV!"

Fan Wenli's first reaction was that it must be a joke. "How can that be possible?"

The interview program's female host could not believe it either and even laughed. "Who would sue Central TV? Hur hur hur, unless they're crazy! I don't believe it."

Fan Wenli also thought that way. Unless it was a mad man, no one would have done that. However, just as she thought of this point, Fan Wenli's heart suddenly sank. She suddenly remembered a person. If there was anyone in the entertainment industry, whether domestically or overseas, who was crazy enough to sue Central TV, then Fan Wenli could almost confirm that in the entire entertainment industry, only that mad man would dare do it!

The truth proved that Fan Wenli's sixth sense was correct!

She heard the technical director laughing sardonically. "It's Zhang Ye! Because of a delayed salary payment of about 8,000 RMB by a day, it ended up with him...suing Central TV!"

Fan Wenli's expression changed greatly!

The female host also nearly fainted. "Are you for real?"

The technical director answered, "The news already reported about it. They're also talking about this everywhere on the Internet! It's chaos!"

Their conversation was heard by the others around them and it left many of the other staff dumbfounded all at once!

"What did you say?"

"Holy shit!"

"Quick, let me see! C'mon, let me see!"

"Heavens! He really sued Central TV?"

"How bold is this?!"

"The entertainment circle will become lively again this time!"

.....

Beijing Times.

The editorial department of the newspaper firm was in an uproar!

"That's the Zhang Ye I know!"

"He never does things predictably! He's really willing to handle things like this?"

"Who said that he is going to succumb to the pressure this time? Who said that his silence meant he was going to compromise? Bull f**king shit! Zhang Ye is still Zhang Ye, that hooligan is still that hooligan! He's determined not to back down even if he has to perish together with Central TV!"

"This is breaking news!"

"Zhang Ye is too awesome!"

"This piece of news will definitely go down in history as one of the greatest headlines of the entertainment industry. Regardless of whether Zhang Ye or Central TV Department 1 wins the lawsuit, this battle will cause great harm to both sides!"

"I'm feeling a mixed bag of emotions right now. Although Zhang Ye is not tall and does not have a strong stature, when it comes to the 'fighters' of the entertainment industry, Zhang Ye is definitely the top. He's absolutely a true warrior!"

"Hurry up, quickly go and find out the first-hand information about this news!"

"Old Sun, you head to the court! Old Hu, go stake out Central TV Department 1! Everyone, let's get going now! We are already late and have fallen a step behind the others! We must snatch this news away! Everyone, move! Each and every one of you who are working overtime on the entertainment news, go along too! Drop everything else that you're doing for now! You shouldn't be focusing on that for now!"

"Understood!"

"We guarantee that we will do a good job!"

The reporters were crying out in excitement!

This piece of news could really be said to be an explosive one! It was so astonishing that it startled the entire entertainment industry. Many of the celebrities turned their attention to this news in astonishment. There were even celebrities from Hong Kong and Taiwan who were not so familiar with the domestic Chinese celebrities and had come to learn of Zhang Ye's illustrious name for the first time today. In a state of shock, they went to check it out with their friends who were familiar with the domestic situation about who this fearsome person was!

Compared to the reactions of amazement from the outside world, there was only one place which was completely different from

theirs!

That place was Central TV Department 1!

.....

At the home of Central TV Department 1's Deputy Director Jiang Yuan.

Jiang Yuan was eating dinner just a moment ago, but had just knocked over the bowl of rice in front of him and dropped one of his chopsticks to the floor. On the screen of his cell phone he had thrown onto the table was showing exactly that piece of news.

His wife cautiously said, "Old Jiang."

Jiang Yuan angrily muttered to himself, "Madman! He's insane!"

"Calm down, please," his wife urged.

Jiang Yuan slammed his hand on the table. "How am I supposed to calm down?! He even demanded a compensation of 100 million yuan? What the heck is he trying to do?! How does he have the guts to something like that!?"

The other leaders of Central TV Department 1 also had similar reactions to him!

Jiang Naixiong flew into a rage. The other leaders and heads of Central TV Department 1 were also so angry they nearly exploded!

"That damned hooligan!"

"Old Jiang recruiting him to join us was the worst mistake!"

"This is a rebellion!"

They never really expected that there would be a day or year that a host from their own TV station would actually sue them in court. They were not mentally prepared in this aspect at all! But it turned out that such a person had appeared today. For a matter involving just a several thousand yuan salary, he had chosen to go up against them and battle it out in court, choosing to fight to the death and perish together with them!

What madness was this!?

The leaders of Central TV Department 1 were all very angered by this. This was the first time they felt somewhat regretful to have used such tactics to force Zhang Ye to sign over the show's copyright. Their original intent was to solve the matter internally. They definitely did not wish to make it known to the media or even let the leaders of Central TV find out about it. Zhang Ye's contract was decided by the Central TV Department 1 and withdrawing his ownership to the copyright was also their decision as well. The leaders of Central TV simply did not know about this, so it wouldn't do any good for any of them if it was made known to the higher-ups. But right now, they knew that this

matter had already blown out of proportion and there was no way to keep it under wraps anymore. From tonight on, the matter of Central TV Department 1 withholding the salary of a host would definitely be on the headlines of all media outlets. This was obviously not the outcome they wanted to see! Regardless of how Zhang Ye's job or future would turn out, or whether Central TV Department 1 would settle scores with him at a later date, Zhang Ye's actions at this moment had left the leaders of Central TV Department 1 scrambling to take drastic measures!

Zhang Ye had declared a war on Central TV Department 1!

This petition in itself was already a face smacking!

It was as good as smacking Central TV Department 1 in the face!

Their faces were terribly swollen!

And it was very painful!

Chapter 745: The First Person In This World!

At the same moment.

Zhang Ye left the court and went straight back to his parents' home.

After opening the door with his keys, he went into the house and saw Chenchen who was rummaging through the refrigerator to grab some soda to drink. Chenchen glanced at him and said, "Zhang Ye, you're going to be lectured."

Zhang Ye rolled his eyes. "What lecturing am I going to get?"

His parents then walked out from their bedroom.

His mother was very mad. "Why did you go and stir up trouble again?!"

"Why are you two so up-to-date with the news? You two know about it already?" Zhang Ye returned.

"It was everywhere in the news! So how can we not know about it?!" his mother replied angrily.

"Mom, I did not cause any trouble." Zhang Ye smiled and stated, "I was just protecting my legal rights and interests."

His mother said frustrated, "But this is Central TV we're talking about here!"

Zhang Ye shrugged. "So what if it's Central TV? Even a laborer knows how to use legal procedures to protect their own rights and interests if their salary is withheld, so why can't I do the same? It's just Central TV that I'll be suing!"

His mother said angrily, "I nearly died of anger because of you. Why do you always make people worry over you? Isn't it just 8,000 RMB? You can earn that easily with just a fart. Why you must go and challenge Central TV Department 1? How long have you been working for Central TV? Yet you've fallen out with them again! Now that this incident has happened, regardless of how the matter is resolved later or whatever the verdict of the court case is, it will not be a good ending. At that time, how are you going to stay on at Central TV Department 1? When the entire TV station system blacklists you, what will you do?"

His father added, "You are too impulsive. You should have at least consulted us first even if you met with some injustice."

Zhang Ye explained, "But the problem now is not only about the 8,000 yuan salary. That's not the main reason."

His mother was infuriated. "No matter what reason you have, you should not have sued Central TV!"

Zhang Ye replied, "Central TV Department 1 wants to steal my

overseas copyright of The Voice but I refused. It was because of that that they resorted to withholding my salary to give me a warning. If I did not make a firm stand against that, wouldn't they truly think that I'm easy to scare?"

His mother said furiously, "How much can that crappy copyright possibly fetch?! How can it be more important than your job?!"

Zhang Ye glanced at her and responded, "It would fetch at least 10 million RMB and this amount is just a lowball."

When she heard that, his mother was immediately stunned. She exclaimed, "What? More than 10 million RMB? It can be sold for over 10 million RMB? I...f**k Central TV to their second grandma! Sue those bastards! Sue them!" His mother slammed her hand on the table and stood up!

Zhang Ye: "..."

His father: "..."

Chenchen: "..."

Hey, isn't your change in attitude way too fast!

After that, his mother only cared about scolding Central TV Department 1 and she did it for a full five minutes. Finally, she said as she panted, "Son, do whatever you need to do regarding this matter! Just sue them! Ignore what the others will say! Mom will

fully support you! Hmph, even a laborer knows how to use legal procedures to protect their own rights and interests if their salary is withheld, so why can't my son do the same? Central TV? So what if it's Central TV?! Does Central TV have the right to steal our money?"

Zhang Ye was dumbfounded by this reaction. "Mom, that sounds just like what I just said to you."

"Is that so? Oh right, son, are you hungry yet? Have you eaten?" his mother asked.

"No, I haven't eaten yet. I was in court the entire afternoon," Zhang Ye answered.

His mother headed straight to the kitchen. "Wait awhile. I will cook something for you immediately. Eat and drink to your heart's content, then fight it out with them tomorrow!"

"Thank you, Mom. I will go back to my room first and lie down for a bit. I'm feeling very tired right now." Zhang Ye drank some water and then went back into his bedroom. He took off his clothes and laid down comfortably onto the soft bed.

Only at this moment did he take out his cell phone to have a look.

Good god! There were more than a dozen missed calls from his relatives and friends.

Zhang Ye returned their calls one by one. "Hello, Old Yao, you were looking for me?"

Yao Jiancai said: "I called you twice but you did not answer."

Zhang Ye said: "Heh, I was in court just now, so I couldn't answer it."

Yao Jiancai said: "I'm telling you, old bro, you're pushing it way overboard this time! You really scared the shit out of me! Previously when I called you, I reminded you, but you said that you would have a sense of propriety. I thought you had taken my advice to heart, but you basically ended up not listening to my words at all. With your suing of Central TV, how do you think this matter will end?"

Zhang Ye laughed and said: "But I wasn't intending on ending the matter."

Yao Jiancai pleaded: "Listen to this old bro for once. Withdraw the lawsuit immediately. It's still not too late to do that now, this situation is very different from what you've encountered in the past!"

Zhang Ye said: "Hur hur, I know that this time is different, but it's all water over the dam now. Old Yao, I know that you have good intentions, but I can't back off if something goes against my principles. If I take a step back, it will follow with a second step, then a third step with no end to it."

Yao Jiancai sighed: "What if you are put into the freezer?"

Zhang Ye said: "It doesn't matter."

Yao Jiancai asked: "Do you not plan to appear at Central TV Department 1's Spring Festival Gala in your lifetime?"

Zhang Ye replied: "It doesn't matter."

Upon hearing that, Yao Jiancai said helplessly: "Alright, then I won't try to dissuade you any further."

Zhang Ye remarked: "I've been possessed by a 'warrior,' so no one can talk me out of it."

The call had just ended on this side.

Then another call came in from the songstress Zhang Xia.

Zhang Ye: "Grandma Zhang, you called?"

Zhang Xia said in a helpless tone: "An old friend of mine from Central TV came to me and asked if I could talk to you and persuade you to resolve the matter internally."

"Then you—" Zhang Ye was about to ask.

Zhang Xia interrupted: "But I'm not prepared to intervene since I know what your temperament is like. I just called you to check on your current situation."

Zhang Ye laughed. "Me? I'm fine."

Zhang Xia asked: "Are you prepared for everything?"

Zhang Ye replied: "Yes."

Zhang Xia said: "Alright, then I don't need to go any further. If my old friend asks me, I will just say that I could not contact you."

Following that, a number of other friends also called him.

Like Xiao Lu.

Wang Xiaomei.

Tian Bin.

Hu Fei.

They were all anxiously trying to dissuade Zhang Ye from taking such drastic actions.

Hu Fei who was from Beijing Television Station understood this

industry the best and knew how grave this matter was. He even got angry at Zhang Ye, which he seldom did, and wanted him to withdraw the lawsuit. Thinking back, Zhang Ye had Hu Fei to thank for bringing him into the television industry. Hu Fei was Zhang Ye's Bo Le and also an old friend who genuinely cared about Zhang Ye.

But Zhang Ye did not listen to him this time. He had his own reasons for his persistence.

For those who knew and understood Zhang Ye's character, they knew that Zhang Ye had truly been angered this time. The compensation of 100 million RMB was obviously an unreasonable demand. He just stated a random, large amount. Don't mention delaying the salary payment for a day, even if it was delayed for 50 years, it would still be impossible to get 100 million RMB. The court definitely would not accept the demand of 100 million as compensation, yet this amount represented Zhang Ye's anger and attitude on this matter!

100 million?

I will f**king demand this 100 million RMB in compensation!

If you people from Central TV Department 1 are being unreasonable? Then I will be more unreasonable than you all! What can you do to me even if I demand 100 million? Bite me?

.....

His mother finished preparing dinner right as the calls petered out.

While Zhang Ye was dining, he browsed through the news and Weibo on his cell phone. In the end, he discovered that, at this moment, the Internet was utterly overtaken by topics and discussions about him and Central TV Department 1!

It was on the headlines of the largest discussion forum!

The topic on Weibo had garnered more than 200,000 replies!

Zhang Ye had not expected this matter to gain such a great deal of attention. It was so huge that it caused server outages on a large number of forums online. It was as though the entire entertainment circle only had this piece of news to report about tonight. Zhang Ye had lost count of the number of times he had been pushed to the forefront of discussions! Countless netizens rushed over in astonishment to admire at Zhang Ye's "heroic bearing"!

"Demigod Zhang has shown his might again!"

"I can finally see it! As long as Zhang Ye stays in the entertainment circle, this industry will never have a moment of peace!"

"I hope Teacher Zhang will have good luck this time!"

"This is too exciting! This was what I wanted to see!"

"I'm getting a kick from this drama! I can understand why so many people like Teacher Zhang now. It's because he dares to say things we wouldn't dare to say all our lives! It's because he dares to do the things that we wouldn't dare to do all our lives!"

"I like it when people pick a fight or argument with Zhang Ye, because it's at such times that Teacher Zhang looks like he has a divine glow surrounding him! I have an inkling that Teacher Zhang's favorite pastime definitely is not composing poems, nor writing books, nor creating TV shows. What he likes most must be picking a fight with others! This is a unique ability that Teacher Zhang is best at!"

"The first person to declare war on Central TV!"

There were two reasons why the affair had turned out this way.

First, even though Zhang Ye had gotten into disagreements with many of his ex-employers, the organizational scales of those employers were not as large as Central TV's. Furthermore, Zhang Ye had also been banned by the SARFT before. In those incidents, he had always lost the initiative by taking a passive stand at first. Zhang Ye had only started resisting after he got listed as a banned artist. But the clash this time with Central TV Department 1 was different. Zhang Ye doubtlessly could have found a better resolution to this situation, yet he chose to take the initiative in declaring war. Moreover, it was a war against Central TV Department 1, a big brother of the industry! As a result, the shock that everyone received was different from the past!

Second, and also the main reason why this matter had caused such a sensation throughout the entertainment circle, was that in this world, ever since the entertainment circle had come into existence, ever since there was a television station, there had never been a precedent of an artist suing Central TV!

That's right!

Not even once!

In this world, Zhang Ye was the first person!

That was why the entire country was shocked!

That was why the industry was in an uproar!

No matter who won or lost, regardless of the results, history would record this moment today. That there existed a person named Zhang Ye who said "no" to the face of Central TV Department 1!!

Chapter 746: A Flame War Begins!

The next day.

Early in the morning, employees started streaming into the entrance of Central TV for work.

"Did you hear about yesterday?"

"Heyo, who wouldn't know about that!"

"Yeah, it was even on News Simulcast. I'm sure everyone in the country already knows about it!"

"Director Zhang has no chance of staying on in Central TV Department 1 any longer. But come to think of it, Central TV Department 1 has also gotten themselves into a sticky situation now, so no one is better off than the other! I heard that the leaders were all flipping out! Some of the leaders in Central TV Department 1 seem to have taken the matter into their own hands, so it seems like they will be punished as well!"

"Right, this is as good as perishing together!"

"How many people can be as bold as Zhang Ye!"

Everyone who came to work today were all discussing this incident with fervor.

Suddenly, someone screamed in surprise.

"Look, Zhang Ye's here!"

"Are you sure?"

"What?"

"Aiyo, it's really him!"

"Why did Director Zhang come to work today?"

"I don't know!"

"Ahem, could Director Zhang be here...to work?"

"How's that possible!"

"He's already fallen out with the station, why would he still come to work!"

Everyone couldn't be more surprised by his appearance.

But then they saw Zhang Ye slowly making his way into Central TV Tower and headed for the elevator to go upstairs. From the

looks of it, he behaved no differently from usual. In fact, everyone even had an odd feeling that Zhang Ye looked happier than usual, with a grin on his face like nothing was troubling him.

"Did Director Zhang come back to stir up even more trouble?"

"I think he might be here to pick a fight!"

"Maybe he came to talk it through with Central TV Department 1?"

"Come on, let's go and watch!"

Some of the Central TV staff hurriedly followed along and entered the elevator together with Zhang Ye because they felt extremely curious and wanted to see what would happen next. However, it surprised all of them when Zhang Ye did not go to the leader's office. Instead, he headed straight for The Voice's program team office.

Inside.

Ha Qiqi, Zhang Zuo, and the rest were anxiously discussing and holding an emergency meeting.

Little Wang was going around in circles, asking, "What do we do now, what do we do now!"

Ha Qiqi also had a look of despair. "I think this new program is definitely going to change hands and be given to another program team."

"Not only the program." Zhang Zuo despaired, "Even our program team's leader is going to be changed. Director Zhang won't be leading us anymore!"

Wu Yi said angrily, "How did it end up this way!"

After he said that, Zhang Ye stepped into the office. "Yo, you're all here?"

When they heard this voice, Ha Qiqi and the others turned their heads in surprise!

"Director Zhang?"

"Ah?"

"You...why are you here?"

Clearly, they couldn't react to his appearance at the office.

Zhang Ye stood there, blinking as though nothing had happened. "What do you mean by why am I here?" He looked at his watch. "It's already time to start working. If I don't come to work, where would I go?"

Zhang Zuo, Ha Qiqi, and the rest were all dumbfounded by this answer!

The Central TV staff outside were also taken aback by what they heard!

Work??

You've already scolded the leader, made trouble in the Finance Department, and even brought Central TV Department 1 to court. There's already "blood" all over your hands, yet here you are talking about coming to work??

Everyone fainted all at once. Only at this moment did they realize that Zhang Ye was indeed no normal person. His thought process and handling of matters weren't done in accordance to a typical person's logic. However, if you consider things, if Zhang Ye was really just like any other person, he couldn't have possibly brought Central TV to court in the first place! To have met such a wondrous person, this was more than Central TV Department 1 had asked for. As the saying goes, the powerful are afraid of the reckless, the reckless are afraid of those who aren't afraid to die, and those who are not afraid to die are afraid of the shameless! So here we have Zhang Ye, who is reckless, not afraid to die, and totally shameless as well. As a result, he is afraid of no one!

In just a short time, the news of Zhang Ye coming to work like usual had spread all over Central TV.

Everyone vomited at least three liters of blood when they heard that!

"Aiyo, what the heck!"

"Zhang Ye is really tickling my funny bone!"

"Pfft, Zhang Ye is indeed Zhang Ye!"

"His shamelessness is what I admire the most about him. How thick can his skin get?"

"You really can't predict how this guy will act using common sense!"

Actually, for Zhang Ye, he was taking the most logical steps regarding the matter. Although Central TV Department 1 were the ones who came to him to discuss the contract, it was Central TV that he signed the contract with. Zhang Ye did not have much of an opinion about Central TV, and neither did he have any direct conflicts or disagreement with them. It was Central TV Department 1 he had an issue with that made his heart turn cold. In the petition he filed to the courts, he had written in Central TV Department 1 as the defendant. To Zhang Ye, when he filed the lawsuit against Central TV Department 1, it should not have affected him from coming to work at Central TV. Those two were different matters with no conflicts!

On Zhang Ye's "punctuality" and "professionalism," Central TV

was silent. Meanwhile, Central TV Department 1 also did not seem like they were making any moves, because at this moment, both Jiang Yuan and Jiang Naixiong were called to a meeting by the deputy station head!

.....

Upstairs.

At a main conference room used by the management.

Lining the conference table were genuine leather sofas. Seven or eight people were seated in them. Among this group of people were Department 1's Director Jiang Naixiong and Deputy Director Jiang Yuan. The middle-aged man sitting at the end of the table was Central TV's deputy station head. He was the second-in-command and had an air of authority about him.

The deputy station head said, "Old Jiang, why were you so stupid!"

Jiang Naixiong explained, "A problem really occurred with the payroll system, who would have—"

The deputy station head interjected, "Don't try to play dumb with me. Was it really only an issue with the salary? How do you explain the copyright to The Voice? Do you think that the station does not know about it?"

Jiang Yuan quickly tried to take the fall on his leader's behalf. "It was me. I was the one acted without authorization. I did it because the contract with Zhang Ye was way too unreasonable and we had not given it enough thought before that. When I realized that it could cause our station a large financial loss, I wanted to make up for it and get the contract changed. I did all of that in the interest of the station, but the matter with the salary wasn't really done on purpose. It was truly a system error."

"Don't bother explaining to me!" The deputy station head became even more angry listening to them. He pointed to the outside and said, "Go and explain it to the media reporters! Go and explain it to the people!"

Both of them stayed silent.

Another executive beside them was also very angry. "The entire country is now talking about Central TV! Delaying salaries, forcefully stealing an artist's copyrights! They're all making jokes out of us! When I left my house this morning, there were already several reporters camping at my doorstep! They asked for an explanation on why we delayed Zhang Ye's salary payment. How would I know!"

Jiang Naixiong sighed, "We were not diligent enough and brought about this damage to our station's reputation."

The deputy station head reprimanded, "It's not that you guys weren't diligent, it's because you two were stupid! Now look at this! You two have totally 'gained' face for Central TV! Look, just look at all of the newspaper headlines talking about us! How

glorious! We're the talk of the town!" Slamming a fist on the table, he shouted, "I've been utterly embarrassed by the two of you!"

Jiang Yuan muttered, "We couldn't have expected Zhang Ye to sue Central TV."

The deputy station head said, "You think you can get away just by saying that? Just what were you thinking!"

The executive beside them added, "What kind of a person is Zhang Ye? At the Central TV-held crosstalk competition, he caused enough trouble to turn everything upside down. He even got the competition to be ordered off-air! He even risked scolding SARFT! Is this the first time you learned about this person?"

The deputy station head said, "You two have put the station in a very disadvantaged position now!"

They called for a meeting, but it was in fact just a grilling session to criticize and admonish them.

Central TV Department 1's director and deputy director were given a severe dressing down by the two station executives!

.....

Online.

The effects of the incident were still spreading.

Central TV Department 1's famous Spring Festival Gala host, Chen Ye, publicly issued a statement: "The salary was only issued a day late. Was there a need to bring it up and make it a legal issue? Isn't this making a mountain out of a molehill? There are many departments within Central TV, so it's surely understandable if one person's salary is disbursed a few days late due to some miscommunication or problem. It's happened to me before, but if everyone went to court over such a small thing, then we should all just stop doing everything. Everyone can find something to complain about and file a petition in the courts!"

He was purely playing dumb and feigning ignorance.

When Zhang Ye's fans saw this, they surrounded his Weibo immediately!

"Idiot!"

"Bootlicker!"

"Was it simply because of the salary issue?"

"Why did you not bring up the issue of the copyright as well?"

"Teacher Zhang has never offended you before, right? You made rude remarks the previous time when Teacher Zhang squeezed you out of the B-list rankings. Now you're at it again? Are you getting

addicted to this? You're getting all excited now, aren't you? So what if you have hosted the Spring Festival Gala before, what are you boasting for! On fame, talent, and knowledge, which one of those traits are you better than Teacher Zhang at?"

"Idiot Chen Ye! Next poster, please maintain this formation!"

"Idiot Chen Ye! Next poster, please maintain this formation!"

"Unconditionally supporting Teacher Zhang!"

Suddenly, Big Saber Bro appeared out of nowhere: "F**k, I've been too busy at work for the past few days and didn't have any time to come online. How did such a big incident happen? Everyone, charge! Follow me and let's return the scolding! Killllll! My large saber is again again again again again again again again again again again again again again unable to endure the thirst!"

Immediately, Big Saber Bro popped up all over the place!

On Central TV Department 1's official Weibo, Big Saber Bro flamed: "You dare to fire Teacher Zhang? You motherf**king idiots!"

The netizens: "..."

A Zhang Ye fan hurriedly reminded: "Big Saber Bro, they didn't fire Teacher Zhang. They only stopped paying his salary."

Big Saber Bro: "Ah? He didn't get fired this time? What salary are you talking about?"

Another Zhang Ye fan said with some embarrassment: "There's also the copyright."

Big Saber Bro asked: "What copyright?"

"Aiya, it's difficult to explain with just a few words here and there. Just go and read the news," a fan said.

As Big Saber Bro talked to them, she did not idle about and continued with her scolding of Central TV Department 1: "Why should I read the news? I don't care if it's about some salary or whatever copyright, I will scold them regardless! After scolding, we can talk about it again! Charge!"

Zhang Ye's fans: "..."

Chen Ye's fans: "..."

Weibo netizens: "..."

When some of the other celebrities in the entertainment circle saw this, they didn't know how to react. They could only look on and think to themselves, this is what you call a goddamn hardcore fan! Just coming online without a clue as to what was happening,

without even bothering to find out about the situation, the first thing the fan did was charge into battle and start scolding. This was totally what you would call a fan's role model!

A flame war broke out online!

It added more fuel to the fire that was the incident!

Right now, the entire media and entertainment circle's focus was on this lawsuit between Zhang Ye and Central TV Department 1. How the lawsuit would develop, what Central TV Department 1 would do to fight back, and whether Zhang Ye would accept an intervention. Everyone wanted to know who would emerge the victor in this first ever court case between Central TV and one of its artists. This was the very focus of everyone's attention!

Chapter 747: The Court's Verdict!

Today.

It was the day of the official hearing of Zhang Ye's court case against Central TV Department 1!

Online, Zhang Ye's fans were already riled up.

"Teacher Zhang will definitely score a victory in the opening battle!"

"Evil shall not prevail, the truth will live on forever!"

"Teacher Zhang, I'll be cheering you on!"

"It's finally the day of the court hearing! How nerve-wracking!"

"Looking forward to Teacher Zhang's triumphant return!"

"All debts must be repaid! It's perfectly justified!"

In recent days, society's attention had been focused on every development and change that would affect the case. On the second day after Zhang Ye submitted his petition, the court rejected his request for a compensation of 100 million RMB. Perhaps due to the ridiculous amount of compensation requested, after some communication with Zhang Ye, the petition's requested

compensation was changed to about 17,000 RMB, two times the amount of his salary. Two days later, in the first out-of-court mediation session, a representative of Central TV Department 1 agreed to an out-of-court settlement, but were only willing to compensate Zhang Ye his salary for the month. Other than that, there would be no further compensation, so Zhang Ye rejected the settlement. On that same day, Zhang Ye was involved in an altercation outside the court with the representative of Central TV Department 1 and their attorney. This was photographed by the media and the incident escalated even further!

The torches of dispute were being lit one by one!

Today, there should finally be an end to it!

Early in the morning, Haidian People's Court was already overcrowded with people. The parking lot was filled with vehicles, half of which were press vehicles. The entire nation's numerous reporters from the newspapers, media, and television stations were all carrying their camcorders or cameras and waiting outside the entrance. The district court was packed with people on both the inside and the outside, in the front and back yards of the court. There was another group of people on location—the residents living nearby had come to observe the proceedings as well.

"Hello, everyone..."

"Everyone, I am currently standing outside Haidian People's Court..."

"The lawsuit between Zhang Ye and Central TV Department 1 that everyone has been paying attention to will start its proceedings in an hour, but the venue right now is already fully packed with the media and onlookers. Zhang Ye is nowhere to be seen yet, same as the representatives of Central TV Department 1, but we will be reporting to everyone firsthand on the latest updates."

Quite a number of cameras had been set up on location to provide real-time situation reports to the viewing audience.

There were also some reporters who attempted to sneak into court but were stopped by the court officers and staff. The whole of Haidian People's Court was closely guarded, with three times more court officers deployed to guard the place, as if readying for battle.

Suddenly, a BMW X5 arrived at the court grounds.

"Look!"

"That's Zhang Ye's car!"

"Zhang Ye has arrived!"

All it took was a few shouts for all the reporters to swarm over!

Coincidentally, the Central TV Department 1 representative and attorney also arrived in a car behind him.

When the reporters saw this, a large group of them split off towards the other car before it could even come to a stop. Everyone pushed their microphones towards the car's windows, gradually becoming louder and making a commotion with their questions!

"Can you tell us if Central TV Department 1 often delays the salary payment to their employees?" a female reporter asked.

The Central TV Department 1 representative was Jiang Yuan. When he heard that question, he rebuked, "Watch your words. This is not a case of delaying the salary payment. The reason for the late salary payment was due to a system error."

The female reporter questioned further, "Then why did everyone from Department 1 receive theirs except for Zhang Ye?"

Jiang Yuan frowned. "It was an error with the system, how would I know? But his salary has been paid to him now."

A male reporter quickly asked, "Deputy Director Jiang, what do you think the odds are of winning this lawsuit?"

Jiang Yuan answered confidently, "We believe we can win. On this, we have a clear conscience and also believe that the court will hand down a fair ruling!"

A reporter next to the previous one asked, "When the case ends, what are the future plans regarding Zhang Ye's work arrangem—"

Jiang Yuan did not answer. He stepped out of the car and squeezed forward through the crowd. "Make way, make way!"

The Central TV Department 1 attorney stood in front and helped clear the way for Jiang Yuan. "The court will be in session soon. If you all still have questions, please ask after the trial is over!"

They just wanted to quickly get into the court and skip answering the questions from the reporters. However, when they curiously glanced in Zhang Ye's direction, they nearly fainted from what they saw!

Zhang Ye did not look like he had any intention to get into the court quickly at all. Instead, he stood outside with the reporters and began bullshitting. He trumpeted with a strong sense of righteousness, "The labor workforce should not have their salaries held back as it is a form of respect for their contributions and it is also the foundation to keep this society running! There was a Spring Festival Gala host who mentioned online that the salary payment was only late by a day, and feels that I am making a big fuss over a small issue. That is what Central TV Department 1 seems to think as well, so let me ask this! If Central TV Department 1 wanted me to complete a program recording by today, would it be fine if I finish it a day late? If Central TV Department 1 calls me to attend a meeting to discuss something urgent, would it be fine if I went a day late? If Central TV Department 1 wants the endorsement fees for The Voice which goes through our program team's account to be transferred to Central TV because they urgently need the funds, can I do it a day late? Those who have experience in a workplace would know that this is not OK! That is why I wonder: why is it that whatever we do at work, we cannot be

late by a day! That is definitely not allowed! But what about you all? If it is a day late, then it is forgivable? Yet now you're saying that I'm making a big fuss over a small issue? Based on what!? Isn't that a double standard!?"

A number of the surrounding onlookers all cheered at this!

"That's right!"

"Well said!"

"You're absolutely right!"

"Zhang Ye, I'm supporting you!"

"Fight it out with them!"

"I'm sick of these idiots who delay our salaries and act as if there's nothing wrong with it!"

Zhang Ye proclaimed righteously, "To us common folk, the court is not a good place. I am not someone who likes to be in the spotlight, but I am willing to stand up today! Not for anything else but my vindication! I want to fight it out with this unhealthy corporate culture and mindset! I also hope that I can lead by example for all the other artists by being the first to do something like this! Whoever stated that if the television stations infringe on our interests, we would have to stay silent in fear of offending them? Artists are also people! They also have the freedom to

protect their legal rights and interests! What is white—can never be black! And what is black...will never ever be white!"

Jiang Yuan nearly blew up. You are not someone who likes to be in the spotlight? Bull f**king shit!

But when the people heard this, they all broke out into rapturous applause. Everyone who had ever been in a disadvantageous position when they worked for their companies all sided with Zhang Ye at this moment!

"That was very well said!"

"It isn't easy for the artists either!"

"Teacher Zhang, all the best!"

"We will be behind you all the way!"

All that could be heard at the entrance of the court was Zhang Ye's righteous blabbering.

Even the usually glib reporters could only watch with eagerness, unable to say a word to interrupt him. This fellow was far too good at oration!

Zhang Ye continued again all by himself, talking for a long time.

Finally, when a female reporter from Beijing Evening News could no longer listen on, she reminded him, "About that, Teacher Zhang, I think your court will be in session very soon."

Zhang Ye took a look at his watch and exclaimed "aiyo" before hurriedly rushing in.

The reporters didn't know whether to laugh or cry. They wanted to follow in after him but were stopped by the court officers. The court session today was not open to public.

...

Inside the court.

The judge and several court personnel were looking out from the windows in a very speechless manner.

One of them said, "Just how many reporters are there outside? Including the onlookers, there must be several hundred of them out there!"

Another person smiled wryly. "The previous case of the dispute involving a sum of 500 million RMB only attracted seven, eight reporters. That's not even 10% of the numbers that turned out today. Isn't this just a dispute over a salary of just over 8,000 RMB? But look at the commotion it is causing at our courthouse. It started two days ago. There are even reporters who have been calling my landline for the past few days. I wonder how they found

my number; they must really have a good network of contacts!"

A woman said, "The dispute amount might not be high, but this case is different in nature. A celebrity's case involves a lot of things, therefore the impact is wider as well. Moreover, this is the first case in the entertainment circle that an artist is suing a television station, so how can it not have a large effect?"

They were actually feeling rather nervous as well. Now that Haidian People's Court was in the sights of the national media, they would be scrutinized under a microscope. That put a lot of pressure on them!

At this moment, the chief judge spoke with a serious tone, "Pack it in. The court will be in session soon."

...

Tieba.

There was constant buzz among the netizens!

"The court is already in session, right?"

"Yeah, it's time!"

"I wonder how it's going! Why didn't they do a live broadcast of it!"

"Just wait for the court's decision. Hopefully, it will be a fair one!"

"That might not happen as this lawsuit is mainly about Zhang Ye's salary. The Voice's overseas copyright has not yet been sold by Central TV Department 1 without Zhang Ye's knowledge, so that wouldn't affect the judgment here. Didn't the court already reject Zhang Ye's request for 100 million in compensation? It's precisely because the copyright and salary issues are two different things. If we talk about how Zhang Ye's salary was paid late to him by only a couple days, then the court might not support Zhang Ye's petition."

"Right, Central TV still has a lot of influence and standing, so it won't be easy to say who will win this lawsuit!"

"F**k, if Teacher Zhang does not win this lawsuit, I will go and scold Central TV Department 1 everyday!"

...

On Weibo.

"Just what's the situation like?"

"Is there anyone here who is attending the trial? Do a live stream, please!"

"I heard that Zhang Ye did not appoint a lawyer this time. He filed the petition on his own and will be his own prosecutor!"

"Ah? For real?"

"It's true! The newspapers have already reported about it!"

"Damn. Then won't he lose for sure? The opponent is a professional lawyer, how could Teacher Zhang possibly outtalk him?"

"That I'm not too worried about. It's not like we don't know what Zhang Ye's speaking ability is like, so even if it's a lawyer he's up against, he might not necessarily lose to him. But I do worry that Teacher Zhang's legal expertise is not good enough. When they bring up certain laws and regulations, he might not be able to answer them."

"Yeah, this is really going to be quite open!"

"Let's just wait for the decision! Anxiously waiting!"

Suddenly, the Weibo account of a host who had disappeared from the entertainment circle for many years suddenly turned active and was updated with a new post. It simply said: "Zhang Ye, fight on!"

The netizens cried out in alarm.

"Wow!"

"It's Old Luo! An ex-host of Central TV Department 1!"

"After having been banned and suppressed for so many years, Old Luo has finally made an appearance again!"

"Back then, Central TV Department 1 really did bring Old Luo crashing down and even got him banned!"

"Teacher Luo has come forward to show his support for Teacher Zhang! I'm numb. Somehow, I feel like I'm suddenly overcome with emotions. Teacher Luo, Teacher Zhang, you're both heroes of our times!"

Old Luo replied on his Weibo: "I'm not, but Zhang Ye is."

Following that, another two artists who had previously been banned by their provincial satellite stations, and as a result, left the entertainment industry, also publicly showed their support for Zhang Ye!

"It's Old Lao!"

"Big Sister Niu is also showing her support for Zhang Ye!"

"Big Sister Niu, where have you gone too all these years?!"

"They're all veterans!"

"Awesome! Everyone is starting to come forward!"

"I really wish that Teacher Zhang could see this now, so that he knows that he has the support from those in the same industry! It was only because they did not dare to stand up for him in the past! And were pressured not to give him any support!"

...

Outside the court.

The reporters and onlookers were anxiously waiting. Some cameramen who were afraid to miss a shot did not even stop their camcorders from rolling. They were constantly kept in recording mode as they focused on the main entrance of the court.

One hour!

Two hours!

Three hours!

After a long wait, the media's personnel felt it was a little too much and were surprised at how long the hearing was taking.

"Why is it taking so long?"

"It's really slow!"

"What's happening inside? Why is it taking so long to come to a decision?"

"It's just a salary dispute, surely the hearing can't last for three hours?"

"Yeah, Zhang Ye isn't a professional lawyer after all. Without any legal foundation, would he be able to argue with the attorney for so long?"

"Let's wait a little more. It should be over soon!"

"Could there be some changes somehow? Could the lawsuit have been overruled by the judge?"

At 11:40 AM, there was news coming from inside that the trial had ended!

In an instant, the reporters were camping at the entrance with their equipment in hand!

"What's the outcome?"

"How did it go?"

"What was the decision by the court?"

"Who won?"

The media personnel were all fully concentrated with their eyes opened wide!

Shortly after, they saw the court personnel walking out, followed by Central TV Department 1's Deputy Director Jiang Yuan and the attorney. The two of them had rather sunken expressions at this moment, and even the way they were walking out carried a hint of anger!

The media personnel looked at them in shock!

At the same moment, the verdict was also explosively revealed!

Haidian People's Court had ruled in favor of Zhang Ye receiving a compensation from Central TV Department 1, a sum totaling 17,567 RMB!

Zhang Ye won!!

Chapter 748: Just Who Is The Professional Lawyer Here!?

Outside the court.

The surrounding onlookers clamored unceasingly!

"Aiyo!

"Zhang Ye won?"

"Holy shit! Central TV Department 1 actually lost? They really lost?"

"The compensation is twice the amount of the owed salary? That should already be the maximum compensation allowed! Since the salary was only late by a day or two!"

"What the hell! Zhang Ye could even emerge as the victor after suing Central TV Department 1!? How awesome! It's too awesome! This has to be yet another first in the entertainment circle!"

"Teacher Zhang's lawsuit has an absolutely historical meaning to it! It should at least be written into the history books of China's entertainment industry. This is the first time in which an artist has brought a television station to court and even went on to win the case!"

"It really sets your blood on fire!"

"Teacher Zhang is extremely powerful!"

Everyone was marveling at this news!

The reporters outside also reacted shortly and surrounded Jiang Yuan and the Central TV Department 1's attorney, dropping questions on them one after another!

"Can you tell us why you lost the case?"

"Does Central TV Department 1 have any plans to file an appeal?"

"Deputy Director Jiang, what is your view of the court's decision?"

"Mr. Huo, where exactly did you all lose?"

Jiang Yuan had a dark expression on his face. "Make way!"

The attorney, Mr. Huo, also had an unnatural expression on his face. "No comment, no comment!"

Right now, Mr. Huo did not wish to say anything at all. He felt that today was his darkest day in his entire career. In all fairness, from Mr. Huo's point of view, Zhang Ye definitely had the

advantage in this lawsuit as he was the plaintiff; the court was more likely to stand on his side. However, this was not absolute either. The court debate mattered the most in the lawsuit. If they could take the absolute initiative in this area, Mr. Huo believed that their chances of winning this case would be greater. Besides, it couldn't be forgotten that Zhang Ye did not have a prosecuting attorney as he chose to represent himself. Mr. Huo was a card-carrying member of the bar association, so when faced with a layman who knew nothing about the law, he felt absolutely confident and believed that there was a 70-80% likelihood of him winning!

But that was exactly where they lost!

Mr. Huo would never be able to forget that scene in court. It was only at the end of the court debate that he realized that Zhang Ye was even more f**king familiar with the law than he was!!

.....

Three hours ago.

In the courtroom.

The court clerk said, "The court is in session now for the hearing of the case. Please remain quiet! Would the involved parties and legal representatives please enter the courtroom."

Zhang Ye walked in and stood at the plaintiff's desk.

Jiang Yuan and Lawyer Huo both entered the court together and took their place in the dock.

The court clerk said in a serious tone, "I hereby announce the rules of the court. 1. The gallery is to adhere to the instructions by the judge. All communication devices must be switched off and order must be followed in the court. Smoking is prohibited. 2. Silence must be observed at all times during the hearing. Visitors are not to shout, clap, interrupt, or leave the courtroom at any time during the hearing. They are not to cross the bar..." About four or five rules were read. At the end, he turned around and said, "All rise. The court is now in session. The honorable judge presiding."

Then the court case began its opening procedures.

The plaintiff was introduced, and the defendant as well as the legal representative were introduced.

Following that, the proceedings started. It first began with the plaintiff stating his claim as well as the facts and reasons.

Zhang Ye said, "Five days ago, while I was working in Central TV Department 1..."

At the start, it was just the standard proceedings. Zhang Ye spoke with proper bearing as did Mr. Huo. This was not the court debate segment yet, just the opening statements presented by both sides to the presiding judge and other court personnel to have an

understanding and overview of the matter. It was a very slow process and took 30 minutes to complete.

The presiding judge raised questions.

Zhang Ye answered.

The presiding judge raised questions.

Mr. Huo answered.

After the presentation was done, it was finally time for the plaintiff and defendant to submit their evidence!

Mr. Huo was the faster one and made his move first. "I would like to question the plaintiff's lack of communication with my client immediately when he found out that his salary had not been disbursed yet? It is well known that you're a veteran of the television industry and you have worked under several television stations and other employers. According to common sense, you should know how these processes work, so if the Finance Department has a problem, it would be very difficult for them to check the problem immediately. If it was because of a system error that caused the delay in your salary payment by one day, leading you to seek a compensation of two months worth of salary, then my client finds it absolutely unacceptable! We even reserve the right to serve a counterclaim on the plaintiff for suspected fraud!"

At this moment, Zhang Ye who had just sleepily repeated his

words by rote earlier suddenly looked like a different person. His eyes lit up and his back also straightened. It was as though a sword had just been pulled from its sheath. He looked very high-spirited. "Oh, please do go on."

Go on?

What do you mean by "go on"!?

A male judge on the panel leered at him.

Mr. Huo was also not too used to this. He had fought many lawsuits before, but those were all against other professional lawyers. Which of them had ever spoken in an odd manner to him like this before? Didn't their replies always press back very hard on him? "Go on" was a response that he didn't know how to react to.

Forget it, this is just what you'd expect from a layman anyway!

Hai, it would surely be very tiring to fight a lawsuit against a layman. It was too unprofessional to handle it like he always did!

Lawyer Huo was even more certain now that he would have an 80-90% chance at victory, so he added, "I have here several testimonies from the employees of Central TV's Finance Department. They can prove that on the day of the incident, the plaintiff did not engage in proper communication with my client. Other than resorting to scolding, he had also used interrogative techniques on my client's Finance employees and greatly insulted

them with personal attacks. This led the matter of the system error which resulted in the salary not being issued to not be immediately resolved that day. As such, the plaintiff has an undeniable responsibility to this outcome!"

The evidence was submitted to the panel.

The presiding judge and assistant judges had a look at it.

The presiding judge asked, "Plaintiff, how do you explain yourself?"

Zhang Ye had a look at the evidence as well. He smiled while looking at Mr. Huo and stated, "Your mother is your mother, your grandpa is your grandpa. Is this an invective? Why can't I tell?"

Lawyer Huo immediately countered, "Objection! The plaintiff is engaging in malicious slander."

The judge said, "Sustained."

Zhang Ye said, "Your Honor, the evidence the defendant has just submitted was only one side of the story and given out of context. I also have a testimony here which will explain the entire account of the incident. When I realized that my salary was not credited into my bank account, I immediately approached and inquired the defendant's Finance employees. The other party had first used the excuse that it was already time for her to knock off from work, so she refused to help me with my salary situation. Then, she gave

the excuse of having no authority to check the system for details and rejected my request. Finally, she wanted me to go to the relevant departments to get proof that I did not receive my salary, and also further requested that I prove that my bank account was my bank account. In such a situation, I also requested that she produce proof of why she had the right to ask me to produce proof to her. This followed with me requesting that she demonstrate proof that her mother was her mother, and her grandpa was her grandpa. During this time, our exchange of communication was very smooth and harmonious, so in what way did I insult anyone?"

You call this a harmonious communication?

Harmonious your sister!

The people in the gallery: "..."

Mr. Huo immediately said, "The plaintiff is speaking in an insulting manner again. I object!"

After looking through the submitted evidence, the presiding judge kept silent for a second. "Overruled!"

In other words, the court supported the evidence that Zhang Ye submitted to be relevant and agreed that his words were non-invective so denied Mr. Huo's objection.

"Thank you, Your Honor." Zhang Ye continued, "The defendant keeps stressing that the affair started because of me, and that

makes me wonder what their motive and purpose is. I have reason to believe now that the defendant had a premeditated intent to withhold my salary, not because of a system error."

Mr. Huo frowned. "Is the plaintiff able produce evidence of that!?"

"Absolutely. I request to submit the supporting evidence." Zhang Ye took a copy a document out. "This is the payroll system data of Central TV Department 1 and the disbursement data. I won't mention the origin of this evidence for now, but I guarantee the authenticity of it. It will stand up to verification. The evidence shows that only I, among all the employees of Central TV Department 1, did not receive my salary that day. This was not due to a system error, but because someone had altered my records on the payroll system at 2:05:17 PM on that particular day. Then, at 2:09 PM, the records were altered again. That was the reason for my salary not being disbursed on time!" Central TV Department 1 had been busy shaping public opinion and carrying out their crisis management in the past few days, but Zhang Ye had not idled about either.

Jiang Yuan's expression changed. When he heard that, he knew for sure that the evidence was genuine!

Mr. Huo did not expect this either!

Central TV Department 1's payroll system data? There were even details of the time the actions took place? F**k you! How did you get your hands on that! Which internal staffer was spying for Zhang Ye??

But they did not know that it was not only the payroll system of Central TV, even the Korean government's official website could be freely accessed by Zhang Ye. So just with such a simple network security system, how could it stop the world's third-ranked and most wanted hacker with the highest bounty in the world?

The presiding judge and his panel looked through the evidence and started exchanging some words in low whispers.

Mr. Huo retorted, "Firstly, I seriously doubt the authenticity of this piece of evidence. Secondly, there are many reasons for system modification by human factors. It could even be an error caused by a system administrator, so there is no evidence that this was premeditated. Thus, it cannot be a reason for making a subjective judgment for the plaintiff!"

This piece of evidence was very disadvantageous to them. Even if the authenticity of the evidence had not been verified by the presiding judge yet, it was enough of an ominous signal to the judges. Besides, from Jiang Yuan's expression, Mr. Huo could also see that this piece of evidence needed no further verification. It was definitely real. As such, Mr. Huo tried to reverse this situation. He said, "I would like submit additional evidence. This is the labor contract the plaintiff signed with Central TV."

The evidence was submitted.

The presiding judge and his panel started looking through it.

Mr. Huo then stated, "The fifth subclause of the second clause in the contract, as well as the ninth subclause of the fifth clause, clearly state that the relationship between the plaintiff and Central TV Department 1 is not as simple as just employer and employee. It is more of a cooperative relationship as stated by the contract. As you can see, the plaintiff has proposed that he retain a majority of the copyright to the programs that he created. It was only under this premise that he would work together with Central TV alone, while not asking for any bonuses either. Therefore, in such an agreement, excluding the ownership of the copyrights created in the course of professional work, from the fundamental point of view of the contract, Central TV had no obligation to pay a salary to Zhang Ye. This is because the plaintiff contributed the idea to produce a program, while Central TV provided the platform and staff, and helped with the publicity. It was stated clearly in the contract that whatever returns that are generated from the copyright in the course of the program's broadcast would be the actual source of Zhang Ye's salary. Meanwhile, my client has been paying the plaintiff's salary for his work as a host of the station out of goodwill only. Since there is no obligation to do so, we should not be required to pay the plaintiff the amount of compensation that he is demanding!"

It wasn't until this critical juncture that the real battle of legal knowledge started. The real battle had finally begun!

Mr. Huo was greatly looking forward to this segment as the difference between a professional and an amateur would be reflected in this exchange!

Zhang Ye did not get worked up and calmly rebutted, "The Ministry of Human Resources and Social Security's Labor Contract

Law states that: 'Dispatched workers shall enjoy the right of equal pay for equal work as the workers of the receiving unit do.' During my time at Central TV Department 1, not only did I take on the role of a host, I also held the concurrent post of the program's executive director, overall planner, and other related duties. I ought to be receiving a corresponding salary for those roles, and not be exempted from it just because I am receiving an equivalent salary from the copyrights that I already hold in the first place. If that is the case, does that mean I should be paying my own salary?"

Eh?

This guy really knows how to bullshit!

Jiang Yuan was a little surprised as he did not expect Zhang Ye to be able to answer that!

Mr. Huo was also a little taken aback but quickly turned around to retrieve a big stack of documents. He lowered his head and read, "Article 16 states that special works made for hire like drawings of engineering designs and product designs, maps, computer software, and other service works which are created mainly with the materials and technical resources of the legal entity or organization and under its responsibility, or service works of which the copyright is, in accordance with the laws or administrative regulations or as agreed upon in the contract, enjoyed by the legal entity or organization. In the above cases, the author of a service work shall enjoy the right of authorship, while the legal entity or organization shall enjoy other rights included in the copyright."

Zhang Ye looked at him and responded, "I would like to remind the defendant and the defendant's lawyer that it has been stated and agreed in the contract that this was not deemed as a special work made for hire, but a work made for hire with attached conditions. The copyright law states that the copyright of such a work shall be enjoyed by the author, but the legal entity or organization shall have a priority right to exploit the work within the scope of its professional activities. Moreover, I have to state clearly that the copyright ownership was already reflected in the labor contract! Therefore, in the understanding that there are no further disputes over the contract, the defendant refusing to pay my salary is already inconsistent with the Labor Law."

Mr. Huo was about to say something.

But Zhang Ye continued from where he left off. "The Labor Law states that workers shall have the right to remuneration for labor. The rights to remuneration for labor are the workers' guaranteed rights that must not be taken away. According to Article 2 of the Labor Law, this law shall apply to enterprises, individual economic organizations, and workers who form a labor union therewith the territory of the People's Republic of China. Organs of state, institutions, and public organizations as well as workers who form a labor contract relationship therewith shall be bound by this law!"

Lawyer Huo immediately spoke, "The Labor Law—"

Zhang Ye interrupted, "While I was employed by Central TV Department 1, I created monetary value for the defendant, and did actual labor for the defendant. The labor relationship between the two parties is not to be doubted. Then, as an official employee of

the defendant, I have reason to request that the defendant pay me a salary!"

Lawyer Huo interjected, "The plaintiff's—"

Zhang Ye beat him to it again by saying, "According to our country's Labor Law—"

After being interrupted a few times, Mr. Huo was vexed as he declared, "Your Honor, I strongly object to the plaintiff's—"

Zhang Ye interrupted him for a fourth time. "I am not done with my statement yet. May the defendant please cease the interruptions!"

The presiding judge looked at Mr. Huo and said, "Objection overruled! Plaintiff, please continue."

Mr. Huo's face turned blue!

Zhang Ye continued eloquently, "In Article 50 of our country's 'Labor Law,' the words 'delayed without reason' can be understood to mean that the employer did not pay a salary to the worker in a timely manner without good reason! In Article 4 of the Ministry of Human Resources and Social Security's 'The Supplementary Provisions to the Tentative Provisions on Payment of Salary,' it stipulates the conditions for 'without reason' to be: 'The delaying of salary without reason do not include: 1. The inability to distribute salary due to the occurrence of reasons beyond the

Enterprise's control, such as natural disasters and wars; 2. The Enterprise encounters financial difficulties, resulting in cash flow problems. By receiving the Enterprise's Union agreement, the Enterprise is able to delay the payment of salary to the worker. The limitation to the period of delay is determined according to province, autonomous region, or municipality. All other situations regarding the delay of salary will be deemed without reason'!"

Thinking that Zhang Ye was done, Mr. Huo blurted, "Regarding the plaintiff's—"

However, Zhang Ye was still not done. He seemed to be deliberately waiting for Mr. Huo to interrupt. The moment he spoke, Zhang Ye continued, "And the company in question did not encounter any natural disasters or wars that were beyond its control, nor did it have any financial difficulties or cash flow problems that would affect the delay in salary payment. Therefore, the defendant has no reason to not pay me my salary!"

Lawyer Huo blew his top. "The plaintiff's—"

Zhang Ye was composed as he cut Mr. Huo off again for the umpteenth time. "In the circular, 'Measures for Economic Compensations due to Violation or Rescission of Labor Contracts,' from The Ministry of Labor, when an employer deducts a worker's salary or delays the payment thereof, or refuses to pay the salary remunerations for additional working hours to the worker, it shall, in addition to paying the full amount of salary remunerations to the worker within the prescribed time limit, pay the additional economic compensations equal to a certain percentage of the salary remunerations!"

The presiding judge stared at Zhang Ye.

The other judges' eyes met.

The surrounding court staff and people in the gallery were dumbfounded! They were utterly dumbfounded by what they heard!

Furthermore, they suddenly realized to great astonishment that Zhang Ye did not lower his head even once from the very beginning. That was because, unlike Mr. Huo, he did not even have any notes with him. All he did was rely on his mouth!

A professional lawyer was stammering, unable to interrupt despite having a stack of notes in hand!

An amateur plaintiff was speaking without notes, throwing out one law after another!

F**k!

The situation was developing in a completely unexpected way!

Hey! Just who the f**k is the professional lawyer here!!

Zhang Ye still had things to say. "Due to the unending stir in public opinion, it has dealt a severe social impact and caused me a

great deal of emotional distress. I would like to request that the court uphold the principle in favor of the weak found in the Labor Law, as well as the obligations to protect the workers found in a series of articles within Chapter 2 of the Constitution of the People's Republic of China, to seek a compensation of twice the amount of my expected salary plus a symbolic sum of 1 RMB to make up for my emotional distress suffered, as well as a public apology from the defendant. I request that the court support my claims!"

Mr. Huo glared at Zhang Ye as he waited for him to continue.

Zhang Ye said, "Then..."

One second...

Two seconds...

Three seconds...

Zhang Ye was finally done this time!

But this was where Zhang Ye was being extremely sly, as he did not make it clear he had finished speaking. After saying all that, he continued looking in the direction of the defendant and cleared his throat while still moving his lips slightly. He even said "then" to give Mr. Huo and Jiang Yuan the impression that he was not done speaking. That was the reason why they waited for him to stop!

Only when the presiding judge said, "Does the defendant not have anything to say in defense?" did Lawyer Huo react. Damn, he had been tricked by Zhang Ye again. He was waiting for Zhang Ye to finish speaking before launching his counterattack, but the atmosphere in the court did not reflect that. The judges did not know this either. What everyone saw was that after Zhang Ye had finished expressing his opinion, he had left the defendant side of Lawyer Huo and Jiang Yuan in silence. It was as though Zhang Ye had made them admit they were wrong. That made them appear at a disadvantage immediately. Their momentum had been broken by Zhang Ye!

Mr. Huo was feeling extremely shocked!

Shit! He had underestimated his opponent!

He truly failed miserably at an easy task!

Who said that grandson was a f**king host? Who said that grandson was a mathematician or a man of letters? His language logic, language artistry, psychological strategy, and even his knowledge of the law and relevant legal matters made Lawyer Huo suddenly realize with shock that this guy was even more professional than he was!

How did you memorize so many legal provisions?

You didn't even need to refer to your notes?

On top of all that, you could even f**king handily quote without stammering some of the legal provisions and mention in an impromptu fashion? F**k, could it be that you have memorized the entire Constitution and civil law?

However, Lawyer Huo could not have expected that he had guessed it right!

This psycho called Zhang Ye had actually spent a day's time yesterday memorizing every constitution and civil law of this world without missing a single word!!

Chapter 749: Quatrain For A Summer's Day!

Outside.

Firsthand account of the verdict had spread outside from the courtroom in an instant!

...

Zhang Ye's parents' house.

His parents were anxiously awaiting the results with many of his relatives gathered at his house. His first uncle, third aunt, the eldest and third young sisters had all come!

"How long has it been since the hearing started?!"

"It's been almost three hours."

"Why isn't there a verdict yet?"

"Aiya, why is it so slow!"

"My brother will definitely win!"

Suddenly, the house phone rang.

After putting down the phone, his mother couldn't help but cry out loudly, "He won! Little Ye won!"

His third sister immediately jumped up and shouted, "I knew my brother would win! I knew it!"

...

At Yao Jiancai's house.

Old Yao and his wife were both eating dinner.

His daughter, Yao Mi, suddenly pushed open the door from outside and rushed in. She excitedly waved the cell phone in her hand, which still displayed the latest news update. "Dad! Teacher Zhang won the lawsuit! He won!"

"What?" Yao Jiancai immediately said, "Let me have a look!"

"This is the latest news!" Yao Mi passed her cell phone to Old Yao. "Teacher Zhang is too awesome! He is definitely my idol for life! No! Make that two lifetimes!"

...

At Beijing Television Station.

In the program team office of Do You Remember.

Hu Fei brought back the news with him. "The verdict is out!"

Immediately, everyone—including Dong Shanshan, Hou Ge, and Hou Di—on the program team looked over together.

Hu Fei paused for a moment, then said, "Central TV Department 1...lost in the lawsuit!"

Everyone roared!

Xiao Lu said in a stunned manner, "Teacher Little Zhang did not hire a lawyer, so...so how did he win?"

Hu Fei gave a wry smile. "He acted as his own prosecutor!"

...

Central TV Department 1.

Many of the executives were waiting for news of the verdict from the court.

At this moment, Director Jiang Naixiong received a call from Jiang Yuan. "Director."

Jiang Naixiong asked anxiously: "How is it?"

Jiang Yuan stayed silent for a moment, before saying: "—We lost."

Jiang Naixiong gasped and angrily replied: "How can that be? Didn't you say that we had an above 80% chance of winning? And why did the court hand down the verdict immediately? They came to a decision that quickly? Did Old Huo not speak in defense of us?"

Jiang Yuan was present at the court all the while and he understood very well the proceedings and the overall situation. He said glumly: "Mr. Huo has already done his best."

Then, Mr. Huo took the phone and apologized: "I must take the primary responsibility for this case. My team and I underestimated Zhang Ye's legal expertise!"

Jiang Naixiong said in annoyance: "He's only a layman, what legal expertise could he have!"

Mr. Huo muttered to himself, then responded: "If Zhang Ye can be considered as a layman, then more than 90% of the lawyers in China would have their licenses suspended!"

Jiang Naixiong was so angry that he laughed. "Old Huo, are you trying to tell me that Zhang Ye's legal expertise is better than 90% of the lawyers we have in the entire country? Are you trying to be funny?"

"Frankly, it might even be a higher figure than 90%." Mr. Huo said: "A math professor? In my opinion, he seems more like a law professor!"

If someone said that Mr. Huo lost because he couldn't compare to Zhang Ye with his speaking ability, he wouldn't raise an objection to that. After all, everyone knew about that mouth of Zhang Ye's. He was very good at wrangling and scolding others, with hardly anyone able to come up against him. Who in the country did not know about this person? But what Mr. Huo found most unacceptable was that he had lost in terms of his professional knowledge! Zhang Ye easily brought up different legal provisions and confused Mr. Huo with them. As he did not prepare well enough, he had to quickly flip through his notes to prepare his counterargument, yet before he could even bring up the relevant laws, Zhang Ye was already mentioning the next one. Lawyer Huo could only go back to checking through his information for the next counterargument but even that was met with yet another attack by Zhang Ye!

Constantly bogged down!

Unable to take charge!

That was what Mr. Huo felt about this court trial!

He had lost, but after calming down, Mr. Huo was still convinced by the results. He knew that even if he did not take his opponent lightly, even if he had done all necessary preparations, he would

still be unable to win this lawsuit! A lawyer who was even more professional than him, taking on a case he already had an advantage and initiative in, Zhang Ye had no reason to lose this!

...

Online.

The court's decision was already spreading all around!

Some of the netizens screamed in celebration while some people were feeling incredulous at the outcome. They raised an important question at this moment—how on earth did Zhang Ye win?

The media answered them!

The news answered them!

The details of the court hearing were revealed by someone!

"What?"

"F**k, Teacher Zhang acted as his own prosecutor!?"

"I only heard about how Zhang Ye did not hire a lawyer, but I never knew that he was representing himself!"

"Did you guys get it wrong? How could Zhang Ye turn into a lawyer?"

"He was even better than Central TV's lawyer? He did not even need to refer to any notes when he talked about the legal provisions? He left the opposition lawyer at a loss for words and unable to argue back? You guys must be telling us a story, right?"

"Heavens!"

"My titanium dog eyes have been blinded!"

"Does it need to be so dramatic?"

"This must be totally unexpected to everyone!"

"Pfft, Central TV Department 1 has been defeated this time!"

"Not only were they beaten, I'm guessing Central TV Department 1 must feel extremely shocked right now! I bet they were expecting to win for sure when they saw that Zhang Ye did not appoint a lawyer! But it somehow turned out that Zhang Ye even has 'lawyer skills'! This is too damn face smacking! Face-smacking Zhang has done it again!"

"Having provoked him, this must be really troubling for Central TV Department 1!"

"I am still in disbelief!"

"Since the trial's details have already been leaked, then this must be true!"

"What the hell! Zhang Ye is going to gain yet another title—an amateur lawyer who is even more professional than a professional lawyer!"

"Is this the first day you guys learned about him? This is just who Zhang Ye is. Just his existence alone is a miracle. You can't measure him using common sense!"

"But, but how the hell could he be even more familiar with the law than a professional lawyer?"

"Previous poster, why don't you explain to us first why Zhang Ye can fly a plane? Especially commercial airliner?"

"...OK."

"For Zhang Ye, nothing is impossible!"

"From under which rock did this guy burst out!"

"Zhang Ye has even become a barrister? I nearly pissed myself laughing!"

The netizens expressed their shock one after another and said all kinds of things!

It was chaos online!

The news blew up!

Whether it was Zhang Ye winning the lawsuit, or his shocking talent as a lawyer, it felt unacceptable to the people at this moment. Everyone needed some time to digest this bizarre news!

Compared to the buzz in the outside world, the entertainment circle that was most closely implicated with this matter remained silent. Almost no one from the industry issued any statements of any kind, as though they had already discussed prior to stay silent on this extremely sensitive lawsuit. Compared to the excitement online and in the news, this was somewhat odd, and at the same time, somewhat dreary.

The celebrities all had a tacit understanding!

While Central TV Department 1 was scary quiet!

The netizens who noticed this mood started talking.

"Hai, even though Zhang Ye won the lawsuit..."

"This is the beginning of the end!"

"Teacher Zhang will definitely not be appearing on screen at Central TV Department 1 for close to a year! He is absolutely going to get put into the freezer! There is no doubt of that!"

"Zhang Ye can still write novels or teach!"

"Yeah, he also knows how to compose songs!"

"But what's the use of that? His main job is still hosting! Zhang Ye shines the most when he hosts or makes TV shows. If he can no longer appear in or make any TV shows, then even if he continues in the industry by writing novels or other works, he couldn't really make a mark. There would be no way for him to get into the mainstream consciousness of the audience. Everyone knows if that happens, Zhang Ye's popularity will drop drastically by the day. That is the doomed outcome!"

"We'll see in a year's time. I'm sure Zhang Ye can still make a comeback!"

"The celebrities of the entertainment industry are always being replaced, so who knows what next year might bring?"

"Hai, Zhang Ye is done for!"

"Yeah, with the end of this lawsuit, it's also drawing the curtains on Zhang Ye's era!"

"That won't happen! Zhang Ye will definitely be able to make a comeback!"

"I wonder if Teacher Zhang regrets his actions!"

"So what if he won the lawsuit? This move by Teacher Zhang had been, from the start, a move to perish together with Central TV Department 1! He did not plan to win from the very beginning! Because if he loses, then he loses. But even if he wins, he still ends up losing!"

Many of the people were grieving for Zhang Ye.

Many of the entertainment circle's celebrities also felt sorry for Zhang Ye's impulsiveness. Originally, with the abilities Zhang Ye possessed, he could have safely ascended towards the top. Yet he had chosen the path that led to a dead end, a path no other artist in the entertainment industry would have chosen!

...

Outside the court.

A long time after Central TV Department 1's people had left, there was some movement again.

"Zhang Ye!"

"Zhang Ye is coming out!"

"Hurry! Hurry! Hurry!"

"Make way!"

Zhang Ye walked with the stride of a victor, coming out of the courthouse with an impressive demeanor. There were no signs of him being affected by the inevitable freezing of his job by Central TV Department 1 as he walked with confidence.

In an instant, the media all rushed up to him and pushed their cameras and camcorders at him!

A female reporter shouted as she got pushed around within the crowd, "Teacher Zhang! Congratulations on winning the lawsuit!"

Zhang Ye smiled and said, "Thank you."

A male reporter from Beijing Television Station yelled, "What are your thoughts right now?"

Another person who was holding a microphone and had almost squeezed his way through toward Zhang Ye asked, "You won the case against your employer. Can you tell us if you have thought about the situation you will be in from here on out? Are you prepared to spend the next year being frozen by them?"

A female reporter who looked to be over forty and was standing at the outer perimeter of the crowd raised her audio recorder up and shouted toward the interior, "Teacher Zhang, why did you come to a decision like that, which seemed so inconceivable to everyone? Everyone knew how this incident would turn out, and I'm sure you did too, so why were you still so determined to do it? To contest Central TV Department 1 in court? Do you regret this decision?"

Zhang Ye chuckled. "I have never regretted the things that I've done!"

A young reporter quickly followed that question with, "If you were given another chance, would you still take that decision?"

A pretty female reporter added loudly, "Are you willing to give up your job for just several thousand RMB worth of salary? Willing to fall out with such a big channel like Central TV Department 1? Why is that so?"

Of Zhang Ye's decision, no one could understand it!

The people could not understand!

The entertainment circle could not understand!

Central TV Department 1 could not understand!

The media also could not understand!

Perhaps it was more accurate to use the phrase "could not figure out." They could not figure out why there was still a person like him who could be so stubborn, unreasonable, and inflexible in the muddied waters that was the entertainment circle! He would rather sacrifice himself for a consequence he could not afford to bear, by fighting to the bitter end with Central TV Department 1 and hoping they would perish together!

Zhang Ye chuckled and looked at the hundreds of media reporters in front of him. He calmly opened his mouth and recited a poem!

The poem was very short.

Yet it felt grand!

"Lived a hero.

"Died—still the heroic spirit.

"Even today Xiang Yu is remembered.

"He who refused to return to Jiangdong!"

When he finished reciting, Zhang Ye took a few vigorous strides and pushed past the surrounding crowd. He entered his car and drove straight out of the main entrance of the court grounds!

The media were left silent!

The surrounding onlookers also hushed up suddenly!

Even today Xiang Yu is remembered. / He who refused to return to Jiangdong!?

There was also a Xiang Yu in this world. This world also shared some of the history with Zhang Ye's previous world, therefore, after they heard Zhang Ye reciting the poem, many of them fell silent. What a good hero! What a good heroic spirit! Perhaps only a hero like Zhang Ye could follow in Xiang Yu's footsteps. Even in death, he refused to return to Jiangdong!

They suddenly understood something!

They finally figured out why Zhang Ye had made such a decision!

There was no why! It was simply because that was who he was, even in death!

Chapter 750: Central Tv Department 1 Gets Sued Again!

On the same afternoon of the court's verdict.

2 PM.

Caishikou. At his parents' house.

Zhang Ye came home. When he entered the house, he saw that it was full of his relatives.

"Aiyo, Little Ye is back!" his first uncle said.

Zhang Ye smiled and greeted, "Hello, First Uncle. What are all of you doing here?"

His third aunt said, "With all that is happening, how can we possibly stay home?!"

His third sister also rushed forward. "Brother, did you really win?"

"Of course." Zhang Ye said happily, "I really did!"

His mother was pretty happy as well. "Good job, son. You've done well this time! You've done really well!"

His father also nodded slightly in approval.

His first uncle sighed, "Hai, but your job at Central TV Department 1...is definitely gone for good now."

Zhang Ye casually brushed it off. "Let nature take its course. We'll talk about it when the time comes. Mom, hurry up and make me something to eat. The hearing ended at noon and I have not had anything to eat yet."

"You should have said so earlier! Wait a bit!" His mother went to cook some food.

His third aunt also quickly went over to help. The rest of his relatives were busy talking to Zhang Ye, asking all sorts of questions. Everyone was obviously holding back from asking too much and still had many questions.

"Little Ye, when did you pick up law?"

"What went on in the courtroom?"

"Are the things they say on the Internet true?"

Zhang Ye explained to them one by one, bullshitting his way through.

Finally, after he was done explaining, Zhang Ye noticed Chenchen playing with a cell phone on the sofa by herself. He could not help but go up to her and say, "Heh, I was so busy fighting a lawsuit and only made it back with great difficulty, yet you little imp don't even bother to say something to me and only know how to play games."

Chenchen grunted without looking up, her hands swiftly tapping around on the cell phone screen.

Zhang Ye rolled his eyes at this. "Whose cell phone did you take this time?"

His third sister smiled gleefully and said, "It's mine."

Zhang Ye said to Chenchen, "Have you thanked your big sis yet?"

His third sister said in a speechless manner, "If Chenchen addresses you as uncle, why would she call me big sis? Aren't you lowering my seniority this way?!" Saying that, she looked at Chenchen and cooed, "Come, call me auntie instead."

Chenchen glanced at her and tersely came up with 2 words. "Hur hur."

His third sister did not get angry but beamed with joy instead. "Aiyo, she's so cute! Why is she so cute?!"

Chenchen: "..."

His father stated with a laugh, "Chenchen is a very smart kid. That recent 'largest burglary case' was cracked by her. She has already been commended as one of this year's national student role models. She is even the youngest recipient and received quite a large sum as a reward. There was also a silk pennant the Public Security Bureau presented her."

Only at this moment did Chenchen put down the cell phone and add, "It was the Deputy Chief of the Municipal Public Security Bureau who personally presented the silk pennant to me."

His third sister praised, "Wah, Chenchen is so amazing!"

Chenchen nodded in acknowledgment.

His first uncle also praised, "That incident was even reported on the news for two straight days. Heroes are truly borne from youth!"

Zhang Ye couldn't help but laugh, "Don't praise her too much. If you do, she'll get cocky."

...

After the meal.

His relatives gradually left.

Only then did Zhang Ye go back into his room and power on the computer to go online. He was browsing through the news when he noticed that the netizens were bubbling with excitement. The atmosphere was hectic with even more discussion and chatter than before the court case. It was like a pot of water that had reached its boiling point. A poem had also been pushed to the front page of Weibo by the netizens with their endless commenting and crazy forwarding of the subject. The amount was explosively increasing by the thousands!

It was that Quatrain for a Summer's Day!

It was a poem by [Li Qingzhao](#) from Zhang Ye's previous world. He had brought it into this world now. Zhang Ye used it to express his conviction to his principles and how he would not retreat from them!

Li Qingzhao was a Song dynasty Chinese writer and poet. She is considered the greatest woman poet in Chinese history.

This poem resonated with many of the people!

"That's so great!"

"I can feel my blood burning with excitement!"

"I like Zhang Ye so much! I really, really like him!"

"Face-smacking Zhang has not composed a poem in a long time,

but when he does, it is always an earth-shattering one!"

"In the entire entertainment industry, what I like about Zhang Ye is how he can express feelings from deep within! It's not that I am stepping on or belittling the other celebrities, but how can anyone compare to him? There's really no way!"

"What a good 'Even today Xiang Yu is remembered. / He who refused to return to Jiangdong'!"

"How much of the mood of our ancient scholars can we still feel these days? How much of those feelings can still be preserved in modern works? Zhang Ye's poems really possess such a power that can draw you in suddenly. It can really make one feel ashamed or sets their pulse racing hard! In my opinion, this is what literature is truly about, this is what you call the highest level of literary arts!"

"Teacher Zhang is bursting with cool!"

"Teacher Zhang is still as valiant as before, what a good act of showmanship he's put on!"

"So what if he offended Central TV Department 1? F**k that! Just fight it out with them!"

"Right! Big deal if he doesn't work for them anymore! Supporting Zhang Ye! Fight it out with them to the end!"

"Those who are still scolding Zhang Ye are f**king cowards!"

"That's right! Let me see who still dares to say anything bad about Zhang Ye! I'll be the first to take it up with them!"

"I won't allow any of that either!"

On the Internet, no one was reaching out to Zhang Ye and trying to teach him what to do anymore. He shouldn't have fallen out with Central TV? He shouldn't be so impulsive? All those voices had disappeared! It was replaced by a sea of Likes that cheered for Zhang Ye. Countless Zhang Ye fans were out in full force to show their support—but of course, this was only limited to the general public. Those who were from the entertainment circle mostly stayed silent, adopting a wait-and-see attitude about the situation. Chen Ye and some others of Central TV Department 1 also chose not to go against the riled up public by picking on Zhang Ye again. Similarly, those celebrities who had had their frustrations vented through Zhang Ye's actions found it wise to not say anything that went against Central TV Department 1 either. At a time like this, it was too sensitive to comment about anything.

The people applauded!

The industry insiders kept quiet!

An entire afternoon passed with such an atmosphere. Until evening, as the matter started to die down, with the noisy chattering online slowly burning away. The netizens had already shouted what should have been shouted and said whatever should

have been said.

Some people summarized it this way: "In this case, there is no winner. Central TV Department 1 has lost their face and reputation, and attracted the disgust of the people. It still remains to be seen how badly the future viewership ratings would be affected, but it will surely be affected to a certain degree. While Zhang Ye has won the lawsuit, he has also thrown away his job, and is likely to be frozen for close to a year. But all that just for his vindication? In this lawsuit, both parties have suffered losses!"

But suddenly, a piece of news was announced that caught everyone off guard!

No one had expected to see this news. In an instant, it restarted the incident that was already coming to an end, pushing it to yet another climax!

At 8.20 PM.

An ex-host of Central TV Department 1, Luo Yiqiang announced that he had officially filed a petition to the Haidian People's Court and would be suing Central TV in court. He demanded that Central TV Department 1 return his endorsement fees they withheld, as well as his salary and bonuses before he was put in an inactive role, totaling a sum of 175,000 RMB! Although the legal entity on the petition's accusation was Central TV, the content of the petition was actually pointing at Central TV Department 1! Not even a day had passed but Central TV Department 1 was getting sued again!

It caused an uproar!

After Zhang Ye's case, the netizens and the entertainment circle were stunned once again!!

Chapter 751: From This Day Forward, I Will No Longer Remain Silent!

This piece of news was too surprising but also very uplifting!

"Holy f**k!"

"Old Luo, you're really awesome!"

"Old Luo, well done!"

"You've finally emerged again! You finally spoke up!"

"My eyes are tearing up. Back then, Central TV Department 1 really destroyed Old Luo's career!"

"Sue them! We'll all support you, Old Luo! Everyone knew who was in the right and who was in the wrong regarding what had happened at that time! Why...why did you only start speaking up now?!"

Luo Yiqiang replied on Weibo: "Thanks to those friends who have been supporting me all this time. I know that this petition is somewhat late, but it still arrived after all. Regardless of the verdict, I will definitely fight in this lawsuit against Central TV Department 1. This is because a poem kept ringing out in my ears this afternoon. It constantly appeared and I was unable to hide from it—Lived a hero. Died—still the heroic spirit. Even today

Xiang Yu is remembered. / He who refused to return to Jiangdong!
Thank you, Zhang Ye. You have created a good start for artists like us in the entertainment circle! From this day forward, I will no longer remain silent! Dear entertainment circle, I'm back!"

Old Luo's fans all came surging over!

"Old Luo, we were waiting for you all this time!"

"Sue them! And then come back! Everyone really misses you!"

"I'm so excited! Old Luo, you're finally coming back! Zhang Ye, I represent all of Old Luo's fans to thank you! And @ZhangYesFanClub, if you guys need any help in the future, just say the word! If you have a war to fight in the future, count us in as well! We will definitely do our best! Without hesitation!"

Big Saber Bro represented Zhang Ye's fan club and replied: "Thank you, my friends from a distant place. If you need any help, you can also tell us." Then, she declared with an air of dominance: "Teacher Zhang Ye's fans might not be good at many things, but we make up for that in numbers!"

Old Luo's fans responded!

"Thank you, friend!"

"Old Luo will be fighting a lawsuit soon, so we could really do with your people's advice and experience!"

"That's right, we have to build on the momentum for Old Luo somehow!"

"Is there any experience you can impart to us, my friend?"

Big Saber Bro replied: "We don't have any experience, we only scolded them! Continuously scolding them! Continuously scolding them for 24 hours! Scold them until they have nothing to say! Scold them until they are speechless!"

Old Luo's fans: "..."

Zhang Ye's fans were too overwhelming. In recent days, all the netizens saw for themselves how very awesome this fan club was. It was just like what the leader of Zhang Ye's fan club, Big Saber Bro, had described. They had too many members such that it looked like the entire Weibo and Tieba netizens were all his followers. If there was someone who said something bad about Zhang Ye, they would counter back with hundreds of replies to scold the other party. Just the day before yesterday, there was an incident of someone who insulted Central TV Department 1 on Weibo with some vulgarities. Within an hour of that, Zhang Ye's fans had forwarded it everywhere in crazy numbers and bumped the popularity of this post to the top 10 trending topics on Weibo's main page! Only when Weibo's staff chanced upon the scolding did they hurriedly delete the posts that they forwarded. From this incident alone, everyone came to know about the combat strength of Zhang Ye's fan club. They were way too united. In peacetime, you might not see them around, but when something happened, they would all rush forward together!

Just when the countless netizens and industry insiders were shocked by this news, yet another ex-executive director of a program team at Central TV Department 1 who had gone into obscurity for a long time suddenly appeared!

Bai Fei announced on Weibo: "I have started to officially collect evidence and entrusted my lawyer to file a petition against Central TV Department 1 in the near future. Regarding the plagiarism case back then, I think it's time they gave me an explanation! From this day forward, I will no longer remain silent!"

Following that, another ex-staff member of Central TV Department 1 who was also Bai Fei's colleague posted: "I will be suing Central TV Department 1 together alongside Bai Fei. From this day forward, we will no longer remain silent!"

There came one!

Then came another two!

"Director Bai?"

"Director Bai has come forward too!"

"My god, everyone is starting to come out now!"

"How exciting! What a spectacular sight!"

"Central TV Department 1 has more than enough on their plates already!"

"No one will remain silent anymore!"

"Who says that there isn't a winner in this lawsuit started by Zhang Ye? The winner was clearly Zhang Ye! He only paid the price of being unable to produce or host a program within the next year, but in exchange, he awakened the spiritless soul of the entertainment circle! He awakened everyone's minds and passions! This is a war that started with Zhang Ye! This is a war that's destined to enter into the annals of the entertainment circle!"

"This is too cool!"

"There are actually this many people responding to Zhang Ye!?"

"What I want to see now are the expressions on the faces of the Central TV Department 1's leaders!"

"No need to ask! Their faces must have the most interesting expressions on them!"

Yes.

It was indeed most interesting.

At Central TV.

Jiang Naixiong, Jiang Yuan, and seven or eight other leaders of Central TV Department 1 were in a meeting that lasted from the afternoon until evening. They were discussing how to handle the court's decision for them to pay the compensation and whether they should continue on to the appeal process. Then, just before the end of the meeting, the secretary rushed into the meeting room from outside without knocking, looking flustered!

"Boss!" the secretary huffed anxiously.

Jiang Yuan said with a straight face, "Don't you know how to knock?"

The secretary said loudly, "Something big has happened!"

Jiang Naixiong immediately asked, "What's the matter? Say it!"

The secretary said, "Luo Yiqiang has sued Central TV to court! Then there's also Bai Fei and his program planner. They have announced on the Internet that they plan to file a petition against us in the near future. They have even hired a lawyer!"

Jiang Yuan was deeply shocked. "What did you just say?!"

The secretary said exasperated, "It's already making a splash in the news!"

Jiang Yuan's cell phone had been turned off during the meeting. He immediately turned it on to make a call and find out more about the situation.

Jiang Naixiong's face turned blue!

Several of the other leaders of Central TV Department 1 couldn't help but curse and swear as well!

"That bunch of lunatics!"

"They've all gone mad!" They have all gone f**king mad!"

"Zhang Ye, you bastard! He was the one who started it! All of this!"

"Look at this now, everyone has come to sue us!"

"We shouldn't have recruited Zhang Ye back then! I mentioned before that the guy was just like a ticking time bomb! Now look at it! Look! This is such a heavy price to pay for that!"

"That damned hooligan! He's really too much!"

Some of the executives of Central TV Department 1 really hated Zhang Ye to the bone. But it was already useless to be saying or scolding him now!

Jiang Yuan did not say another word. He knew that at this moment the station heads must have already received the news as well, but he was still unsure how furious they would be. They had truly screwed up this time. It was initially just a small case regarding the late payment of salary, but who could have expected it to become such an earth-shattering mess! They had even drawn the fire to themselves now! They had to face another two lawsuits??

On the same night, the news headlines were published one after another!

The people felt heartened!

Other than Central TV Department 1, the media employees were enjoying this explosive feast of news. They were the busiest people tonight, as almost all of the societal and entertainment news reporters seemed to be working overtime!

"Central TV Department 1 plunges into a crisis of confidence!"

"The most recent trending activity—suing Central TV!"

"A flame has been ignited by Zhang Ye within the entertainment circle!"

"The artists' will to safeguard their own rights has begun spreading rapidly!"

"Central TV Department 1 should do some self-reflection!"

"Central TV Department 1 has lost, but they did not lose because of their lawyer's quality, nor did they lose because of public opinion. The reason that they lost was because of...their arrogance!"

Chapter 752: Zhang Ye Takes The Bar Exam!

The next day.

Zhang Ye received a phone call in the morning.

It was from his program team's Assistant Director Ha Qiqi.
"Hello, Director Zhang, did I disturb your sleep?"

"No, I'm up," Zhang Ye said, as he sat up in his bed and patted the still asleep beside him Chenchen several times to wake her up.
"What's the matter?"

Ha Qiqi said: "It's like this. I just got notified by the station while I was still at home. Everyone from our program team was given the week off. Zhang Zuo and the others received the news as well, but I was afraid that you might not know about it as I guessed the station probably did not inform you, so I called to tell you about it."

Zhang Ye said indifferently: "Alright, so be it."

Ha Qiqi then asked: "Is everything alright on your end?"

"What could possibly happen to me?" Zhang Ye laughed and stated: "I can still eat, drink, and sleep as usual."

Ha Qiqi was surprised by this response. But thinking about it, if

there really was any trouble, it should be Central TV Department 1 worrying instead. They had just lost a court case and needed to deal with another two lawsuits soon. All of this had left the executives of Central TV Department 1 with a huge mess that was more than they could handle!

The call ended.

His mother opened the door and came into the room. "You're up already?"

"Yeah," Zhang Ye yawned.

But Chenchen did not budge an inch and was still fast asleep.

His father asked from the hallway, "Are you going to work today?"

"A colleague just called me to inform that we have been given the week off, so I don't need to go."

His mother snorted, "They don't want to see the sight of you for even a minute longer. That must be the reason why they gave all of you such a long break." Regarding the incident of the artists banding together to get back at Central TV Department 1, his parents knew about it from yesterday's news. At the time, his mother had even applauded joyously and stayed in high spirits for the rest of the evening.

Zhang Ye understood very well that he had smacked the face of Central TV Department 1 extremely hard this time. Otherwise, they would not have given them such a break like they did.

"Go wash up, then come out for breakfast." His mother went back into the kitchen and continued cooking.

Zhang Ye hauled Chenchen up with him. He got out of bed to brush his teeth and helped Chenchen wash up as well.

During breakfast, his father asked while eating an egg, "What are your plans for the coming days?"

Zhang Ye shrugged. He said while chewing on a fried mantou, "I don't know yet. I don't have anything to do for now, so I might as well take this opportunity to rest for some time."

His mother inquired, "Are you just going to stay at home?"

"Where would I go?" Zhang Ye returned.

Suddenly, a voice sounded from the TV, "Today is the deadline for the registration of this year's National Judicial Exam. According to reports, the number of applicants this year has surpassed the previous year. According to an anonymous source, it is estimated that the number has increased by around 7%..."

Zhang Ye remarked with interest, "The bar exam is starting soon?"

His mother said, "It has been some time since the registration started, isn't that so?"

Almost without thinking, Zhang Ye seemingly declared as if he were joking, "Alright, since I'm just going to be staying at home and doing nothing, why don't I take the exam and earn myself a law license."

His mother was surprised by this. "Can you even pass?"

"I've fought a court case before, what can't I do?" Zhang Ye boasted.

His father looked at him. "The people taking the exam are all law students and staff. There aren't many non-law professionals who would attempt it!"

Zhang Ye said, "This exam is not limited to legal professionals only. Why can't I just register for it?"

His mother said in a speechless manner, "You can register for it, but can you pass the exam? It was just a coincidence that you won the lawsuit. It's not like lawyers only debate cases involving salary disputes, there are also divorce cases and property lawsuits. You're just a broadcaster. What do you know about law? You're still far from it! The Judicial Exam is mainly designed to test the legal knowledge of a candidate in a wide range of subjects. It is not something you can just pass by frantically making some last-minute effort to look at the labor laws or some other laws. This is

on a completely different level."

Zhang Ye chuckled and said with an unyielding tone, "Then what if I manage to pass?"

His mother was amused. She replied, "If you really think so, go ahead and attempt it! You child!"

"I don't believe that I can't do it." Zhang Ye smiled and said, "Alright, I will attempt it then. I will go and register after breakfast. There isn't any license in this world that I, Zhang Ye, can't obtain!"

Chenchen sleepily let out a terse "hur hur."

His mother also curled her lips. "Keep bragging. Just keep bragging."

Zhang Ye rolled his eyes. "Alright, you just wait and see! Hmph, I'll show you!"

He bickered back and forth with his parents for a long time. Actually, he did not have much confidence either. He had only won the lawsuit this time because he memorized the entire Constitution and civil law, not because he had the standards of a professional lawyer. He had never eaten any Legal Profession Skill Experience Books before, so strictly speaking, there was still a certain disparity between him and a real lawyer. You couldn't become a lawyer just by memorizing some laws and regulations. It would have been easy

for him if that were the case. But when faced with a challenge, Zhang Ye had never shown fear. Since he could foresee that he wouldn't have any work or activities in the coming couple of weeks, and staying home would be a waste of time, why not find something to do instead? If he could appear in the news, it would help maintain his popularity. Besides, earning an extra certificate was also a good thing. An additional skill would mean an additional way to gain fame. This had always been the way Zhang Ye had led his life up until now.

After breakfast.

Zhang Ye immediately turned on the computer to understand the registration process and syllabus of the Judicial Exam. First, he found that there were some differences between the Judicial Exam of this world and his previous world. The main difference was the time between the registration and the actual examination was not as far apart. In his previous world, he would have to register a few months ahead of time, but over here, he could take the exam five days after the registration deadline. The efficiency of the process was very high.

He filled in the application form.

Then prepared a photocopied proof of identification and other relevant documents.

After he was done, Zhang Ye drove to the registration venue immediately. He wore his sunglasses and queued for about half an hour before it was his turn to enter.

The staff in charge at the registration desk did not recognize Zhang Ye at first because he was wearing a face mask and had sunglasses on, which concealed his face very well. But after seeing the photocopied identification and the other registration information he submitted, a few of the staff suddenly exclaimed with alarm!

"Zhang Ye!"

"Holy shit!"

"You...you are Teacher Zhang?"

"What did you come here for? Did you come to register??"

A few of them were dumbfounded. They could never have expected that Zhang Ye would actually come to register for this year's judicial examination. Hey, did you walk through the wrong door, good sir? Are you even still a goddamn host? Why would you come and attempt the bar exam?! Can't you just host your programs obediently? Must you be such a jack of all trades?!

However, when they remember how Zhang Ye had just represented himself in a lawsuit yesterday, their shock slightly subsided. In their opinion, Zhang Ye probably did have a bit of a legal background, or perhaps he had prepared very well for that case by reading ahead on the legal provisions and planning on how to take on the opponent lawyer. Otherwise, he couldn't have possibly won the case against Central TV Department 1. However,

to represent yourself in court and taking the Judicial Exam were two different cases. Each year, the Judicial Exam covered a wide range of subjects in the legal assessment criteria, so unless you were some self-taught genius, there wasn't much of a chance that you could pass the exam if you were not a graduate from a school of law or a person involved in legal work. The entire exam's passing rate was less than 10%, so you could imagine how difficult it was. Even for those who studied law, a majority of those people would still be unable to pass it!

That female staff member exclaimed, "Are you really here to register?"

"Of course," Zhang Ye said, feeling a little lost for words. "If not, what am I here for?"

"Uh, alright." The female staff member had no choice but to go through the formalities for him. Finally, she looked at Zhang Ye and said with good intention, "Teacher Zhang, the Judicial Exam this time is likely going to be more difficult than the previous years'. We have just received some internal news, so if you really want to take the examination, then you have a lot of prep work to do."

Zhang Ye blinked. "Or why don't you recommend some study materials to me?"

The female staff member coughed once, then looked at the door and saw that it was closed rather securely. After that, she quietly pulled open her drawer and took out around eight books which were very thick. "I'll give these to you."

Zhang Ye asked, "Is this appropriate?"

The woman smiled and replied, "These contain my personal notes and information. I'm giving them to you in my personal capacity."

The two judiciary exam board staffers beside them pretended not to see, and lowered their heads to photocopy and stamp the documents.

"Great, then thank you so much!" Zhang Ye was very grateful.

The women said, "If you can memorize all these, you might barely churn out a pass. But if you want to be assured of a pass, then there's still some more books you have to review. Anyway, it's only going to be helpful if you can read more, especially those law books that have case studies. Unfortunately, I don't have those type of books here with me."

Zhang Ye took the books and responded, "I won't say anything else, other than you have my thanks!"

The woman waved it off. "There's no need to thank me. I'm a fan of you after all."

This was the advantage of being a celebrity. It made it more convenient to handle things, as people tended to give them some respect!

...

Leaving the registration venue.

Zhang Ye went back into his car, but did not start the engine. Instead, he took a book the staff member gave him and flipped through it speedily. Then the second book and the third book. After he finished flipping through all the books, Zhang Ye immediately went into the game ring's Merchant Shop and bought some memory search capsules.

He had almost used up all the reputation points from the previous draw, and also used up a lot when he memorized the Constitution and civil law later. Thankfully, he received a lot of news coverage recently and had accumulated some reputation points again, which was enough for him to use. Zhang Ye started using the capsules to memorize all the books one by one without missing a word!

He memorized everything in a little less than an hour.

Zhang Ye felt that it was still not enough for him to pass, and that it still wasn't enough. Therefore, he started the engine and stepped on the accelerator. He headed straight for the bookstore in Xidan. After he put on his face mask and sunglasses, he went straight to the legal profession section. Without stopping, he randomly picked out a book and started flipping through the pages. Following that, he picked up another one, and another one!

When many of the surrounding customers at the bookstore saw this, they found it to be both funny and ridiculous. They wondered to themselves who this person was. Are you even reading? You just started flipping through the pages the moment you picked up the books. At that speed, can you even see the words at all? After reading for a while, you even rested your eyes momentarily? Did you go crazy??

It wasn't that no one noticed that he looked like a certain celebrity, but to be behaving like this in public in a way no one could understand made them subconsciously not link this to Zhang Ye. They somehow believed that it was impossible for big shot celebrity to appear here!

10 books...

20 books...

30 books...

Knowledge of the legal profession rapidly increased by the second inside Zhang Ye's mind!

Chapter 753: The National Judicial Examination Begins!

On this day.

Today was the first day of this year's National Judicial Examination.

Some rumors kept on coming up on Weibo during the past few days.

"The National Judicial Examination has started!"

"I heard that Zhang Ye is taking part in it as well?"

"Those are definitely rumors."

"But there are so many people saying so. There's no smoke without fire, right?"

"He still has a ton of trouble to deal with at his job, so how can he possibly have the time to attempt this judicial exam?!"

"I think it's just a rumor as well. As a host, why would he attempt a bar exam? Does he really want to become a lawyer in the future? Even if he passes the exam, he still has to work as an intern in a law firm for a year before he can obtain a law license and practice in court. Why would he take the exam then?"

"It might not turn out that way, since most people don't understand how Zhang Ye thinks."

"F**k, the previous poster is right. I can't come up with any response to that."

"Whether it's true or not, we'll find out today."

...

Beijing.

At the entrance of No. 66 High School.

At one of the exam venues borrowed from a high school for the National Judicial Examination.

At this moment, there was still another hour before the start of the exam and groups of examinees were gradually arriving. In order to prevent any cheating or substitute examinees, the security check inside the hall was very strict. Just the security staff alone numbered more than 20 people.

"Please produce your ID card and exam admission slip."

"That will do. Please enter the venue."

"Next."

Inside the BMW X5 parked on the side of the road.

Zhang Ye was happily talking to his mother on the phone.

Zhang Ye said: "I've arrived."

His mother was a bit speechless. "Were you serious about taking the exam?"

"Of course. Didn't I say already say so earlier?!" Zhang Ye said exasperatedly.

His mother said: "I thought you were just joking."

"Why would I joke around about this?" Zhang Ye laughed. "Alright, I need to hang up. It's almost time to enter the exam venue. In any case, just wait for the news of my impending victory."

His mother said: "Don't score too low. If the newspapers report about it, you'll be made into a laughing stock."

Zhang Ye said: "Stop putting me down like this. Hmph. We'll let the facts do the talking."

After hanging up, Zhang Ye got out from his car. However, a call from Dong Shanshan came in.

Zhang Ye answered the call as he walked to the examination venue. "Hello, old classmate. Is something up?"

"Of course." He could hear Dong Shanshan laughing on the other end. She said: "There's a lunch meetup over here at noon. Director Hu Fei is treating. Since they're all your old colleagues, do you want to join us?"

Zhang Ye looked at his watch. "I can't make it today. I'm gonna be busy the entire day."

Dong Shanshan laughed and stated: "You're basically out of a job. What can you be so busy with?"

"I'm taking the Judicial Exam." Zhang Ye said: "I'm already at the exam venue."

Dong Shanshan was startled. "Huh? You're really going to take the Judicial Exam?"

Zhang Ye said: "Yes, I really am."

Dong Shanshan replied: "Whoa, I thought those were just rumors on the internet."

Zhang Ye laughed and said: "Let's end the call here, I have to go now. We can arrange to meet up another day instead."

After Dong Shanshan set down the phone, she immediately told Hu Fei and the rest of the people in the office about this. When they heard that Zhang Ye truly went to take the judicial examination, the group nearly fainted there on the spot!

Xiao Lu wiped away her sweat. "Only Teacher Zhang would try to dabble in so many things!"

Hou Ge didn't know whether to laugh or cry. "He's really doing things too randomly!"

Dafei said, "Teacher Zhang was a professional broadcasting host at the start, but look at what he's become now. He carries so many titles, such as mathematician, musician, poet, advertiser, crosstalk actor, etc. So many that I can't even count them with the fingers on my hands. Now Teacher Zhang is even going to attempt the bar exam? Is there any end to it?! Isn't he dabbling in too many fields? In the whole of China, no, in the entire world, there isn't likely to be another person who has more occupations than Teacher Zhang!"

Hou Di laughed and said, "Teacher Zhang must have really become addicted to fighting court cases!"

Hu Fei opined, "Little Zhang is someone who does things whenever he feels like it, but whether he can pass or not is a

different story. The pass rate for the Judicial Exam is only at a few percentage points."

Xiao Lu agreed. "Teacher Zhang is probably just doing this for the fun of it."

His old colleagues were totally lost for words.

At the same time, the examinees of the judicial examination were also equally at a loss for words.

At No. 66 High School's examination security checkpoint, many of the staff and examinees were stunned!

"It's Zhang Ye!"

"F**k, he really came!"

"The rumors online were true!"

"What the hell is happening?"

"Aiyo, quickly take a picture and post it onto Weibo!"

Zhang Ye's appearance at the No. 66 High School exam venue stirred up quite a big commotion. But Zhang Ye just went into the examination hall like nothing was happening and found his seat.

...

On Weibo.

It was becoming very lively at this moment; there was a constant stream of news regarding Zhang Ye being released!

"Is that for real?"

"He really did go and take the exam then?"

"I don't know what to say anymore!"

"Oh god, why are there always f**king traces of Zhang Ye in every industry?!"

"Previous poster, you're getting too ahead of yourself. Teacher Zhang isn't likely to pass at all. I gave it a try once before and went to take the Judicial Exam. However, the questions were way too difficult. It's impossible to beat it unless you are in the legal profession!"

"That's right, the Judicial Exam is too difficult!"

"Teacher Zhang is simply omnipresent. I'm really curious about what score he can achieve. If he really manages to pass this year's Judicial Exam, then oh the fun we'll be seeing!"

"That's right, it will definitely be super interesting!"

"Awaiting Zhang Ye's advancement into the legal world, hahaha!"

"Previous poster, you're thinking too much. Don't make your expectations too high. Teacher Zhang's final score might turn out to be very low. But of course, I'm just speculating, because this is Zhang Ye we're talking about after all and he cannot reasonably be measured using common sense!"

The discussions online were so intense that they could overturn the heavens.

Many of Zhang Ye's friends also popped up.

Yao Jiancai posted on Weibo: "This must be fake news, right? Has it already been verified to be true?"

Someone replied with a picture taken at the examination venue.

Yao Jiancai: "...so it's actually true?!"

Someone asked: "Teacher Yao, you're very close with Zhang Ye but you didn't even know about it?"

Yao Jiancai replied: "What do I know? Who knows what triggered him again? Ha, a layman attempting the Judicial Exam?"

Could you please leave the legal world alone and in peace? I'll be waiting for him to score a zero and watch him make a fool of himself to everyone. I really don't believe that he will pass!" Old Yao indulged in the mockery of Zhang Ye on Weibo and even created a poll to guess how Zhang Ye would score. Everyone else could see from this just how good their friendship was.

There were only two options in the poll.

1: Zhang Ye will score 0 points.

2: Zhang Ye will score below 100 points.

Note: The National Judicial Examination's cumulative score is 600 points and the passing score is 360 points.

Dong Shanshan voted for option 1 and even posted a smiley face.

Skit actress Ci Xiufang voted for option 1 as well.

Chen Guang voted for option 1. "I don't believe he can pass either!"

Following him, Fan Wenli also voted and chose option 2. Then she commented: "Director Zhang still possesses some legal knowledge, so he can probably score at least 100 points. However, hmm, it's likely to be just around the region of 100 points."

Several celebrity friends who were on good terms with Zhang Ye treaded on him, teasing in all sort of ways and waited to see Zhang Ye make a fool of himself. Everyone was extremely amused!

The people were also amused!

These two words of "Zhang" and "Ye" had become a synonym for "funny." Every time there was an incident or news related to him, the netizens would be entertained for a long time. This guy always managed to do something that the people loved to see and hear.

However, there were also those who were not amused by this.

Like in the legal world.

After seeing this news, the members of the bar association did not know whether to cry or laugh. Zhang Ye was taking the Judicial Exam? Actually, such a famous person attempting the Judicial Exam was an affirmation to their legal world, yet they could not smile. Although they had not personally met Zhang Ye before, they were already tired of hearing about him. This person was someone who constantly fought with his peers, every day! He was someone who would offend everyone in any industry he went into! From the hosting world to the literary world, from the literary world to the calligraphy world, from the calligraphy world to the crosstalk world, from the crosstalk world to the education world, no matter where he went, that profession would end up in a mess. But now he was planning to advance into the legal world??

Get lost!

Hurry up and get lost!

Regarding Zhang Ye's arrival, the lawyer circle was put on high alert. It wasn't because they were too cautious nor did they act this way based on some hearsay. It was simply because this guy's reputation was just that terrible!

However, after some thought, they were more assured since they felt that their worries were actually unnecessary. Zhang Ye was just a layman. In their opinion, it was impossible for him to get through this highly specialized judicial examination. Moreover, they'd heard that this year's exam questions were extremely challenging!

Chapter 754: The Results Of The National Judicial Examination Are Released!

At the examination venue in No. 66 High School.

In the classroom farthest on the left on the second floor.

Zhang Ye was seated at a table in the fifth row near the windows. He got out his stationery and then closed his eyes to focus and prepare himself for the exam, not affected by the large crowd of examinees who were all staring at him.

A female examinee gathered up her courage and walked over to him. "Teacher Zhang, could I get your autograph?"

Zhang Ye opened his eyes and smiled. "Sure."

"Really? Thank you so much!" The female examinee was thrilled, then quickly handed him her notebook.

Behind her, the other examinees also rushed forward to him when they saw this!

"I want it too, I want it too!"

"Teacher Zhang, can I get your autograph as well!?"

"I especially like those poems of yours!"

Zhang Ye did not refuse anyone who asked and signed for them one by one, thanking them at the same time. "Thank you for your love for me."

At this moment, two exam proctors walked in and nearly fainted when they saw what was happening. They said, "Everyone, quiet down. What do you think you're doing? Return to your seats. We'll be starting the exam soon."

Only then did the examinees settle down and return to their seats.

The first paper in the morning tested the comprehensive knowledge topics, including but not limited to: jurisprudence, constitution, economic law, international law, international private law, international economic law, legal ethics, and professional responsibility. All of them were multiple choice questions.

Very quickly, the exams were handed out.

Zhang Ye immediately started answering the questions. He scanned through the first question: A. Then, the second question: D. Then, the third question: D. His speed of answering was extremely fast, as if he did not even need to think. Looking at the questions, the answers appeared in his mind almost immediately, which he marked on the answer sheet.

Before noon.

The first test ended.

When the exams had been submitted, the examinees began chattering.

"It's too difficult!"

"What's the matter with the questions this year!"

"They made it so difficult! It's like they're purposely trying to rip us off!"

An examinee seated beside Zhang Ye asked him, "Teacher Zhang, how did you do?"

Zhang Ye replied, "It went fine."

That examinee did not believe him. "This test was really difficult, so even if you can't pass the exam, it's not a big deal. Even those of us who are in the legal profession and studies are not likely to do well on this test. I think the first test has already eliminated many of our chances of qualifying for the law license!"

Later that afternoon.

The second test began.

The second paper tested the criminal and administrative justice system. It included topics such as: criminal law, criminal procedural law, administrative law, and administrative procedural law. It too was multiple choice.

Zhang Ye answered the questions rapidly like it was routine for him, and except for a few questions that made him think a bit, the other questions were all answered without any hesitation. He could basically find a "template" of all the questions in his memory, whether it was just a simple legal provision or a case study that had appeared in the books he had flipped through.

A few hours later, the second test was handed in.

"The second test was OK."

"Yeah, the difficulty was average."

"Is that so? Why did I feel that it was very difficult!"

"I feel the same, but it was still much easier than the first test."

"Hai, this time, the odds are totally against us!"

"Tomorrow's still an exam day, so let's work hard and do well, everyone!"

After leaving the examination venue, Zhang Ye did not go home. Instead, he checked into a hotel in the vicinity of Capital Library and went to the library to "charge up" on even more knowledge.

...

The next day.

The third test started.

It was still a multiple choice format test, this one on the civil and commercial legal systems. It included topics like: civil law, commercial law, and civil procedural law (arbitration system).

In the afternoon, it was time for the fourth test, but this time the format was no longer multiple choice, but example case study questions. It included a mix of the topics tested previously: criminal law, criminal procedural law, civil law, civil procedural law, administrative law, and administrative procedural law. This was also the most difficult test in the Judicial Exam, and whether one could pass or pull ahead from the others would all depend on how well they did on this test. But what gave the examinees a great headache was that this year's fourth test was of an extremely difficult level. There were many case studies listed in it that were not common and were greatly disputed. This raised the difficulty level severalfold!

When the last test finished, complaints by the examinees were heard everywhere!

"What the heck was that!"

"They're purposely trying to fail us!"

"That was way too difficult!"

"I was getting dizzy going through that test!"

"The pass rate was 9% last year? I think it will be good if we hit 5% this year! I think that might not even happen. Perhaps 4%? 3%?"

"I'm numb. Looks like I have to come back next year!"

As he walked out of the examination venue, Zhang Ye could hear the people around him complaining. He blinked his eyes at that, not having much of an opinion on the difficulty of the exam. It wasn't that he felt that the exam was too easy, just that he did not have a concept of the difficulty. After all, he did not have any foundation and experience in law before this, and had not taken law exams before, so he did not know what would be considered easy or difficult.

He returned home.

His parents had already prepared dinner and were waiting for him.

His mother asked unconcerned, "You're back? How was the exam?"

Zhang Ye chuckled. "It was fine."

His mother pursed her lips and said, "Oh come on, quit your bragging. If you screwed it up, so be it. What's the big deal about that. Your dad and I already heard about it, that this year's Judicial Exam was especially difficult."

Zhang Ye rolled his eyes at her. "What do you mean I'm bragging? I really think I did alright."

His father waved him off. "Just come and eat dinner. Take Chenchen to wash her hands first."

Then his mother mentioned, "There are a lot of people making predictions about what your score for the exam will be."

"Really? I'll take a look afterward." Zhang Ye took Chenchen to wash her hands and then ate dinner. After dinner, he went back to his room and turned on his computer to browse the Internet.

If he didn't check, it would have been fine, but when he saw it, he nearly vomited blood! That Old Yao! He even created a poll for the prediction of my scores? Old Chen and Old Fan also joined in on the fun?! I'll score 0 points? Damn you all, why don't you all just go to hell! Aren't you all looking down too much on this bro?! You

people really don't know a treasure even if it's placed in front of you!

Zhang Ye immediately logged into Weibo and posted an "angry" emoticon!

The netizens were all tickled!

"Ahahahaha!"

"Zhang Ye has appeared!"

"How funny! Director Zhang has been totally trampled over!"

"Teacher Zhang, are you done with the exam already?"

"I suppose Teacher Zhang has already been brought to tears by this year's Judicial Exam!"

Yao Jiancai came online very quickly and posted on Weibo: "How many points did you get, old bro? I wonder why you chose to go and make a fool of yourself instead of concentrating on your main occupation."

Zhang Ye: "..."

Chen Guang was all laughs. "Old Fan and I made a bet on how

many points you'd score. I bet on you scoring below 50, my wife bet that you'd get below 100. The loser will have to do the dishes for an entire month."

Grandma Zhang Xia also posted: "Little Zhang has always given people the impression that he is amazing at everything he does. Look like we can finally witness this kid becoming the joke this time. It feels like so much fun, hur hur."

Zhang Ye: "..."

Many of his celebrity friends had come to make fun of him!

Even the veteran songstress, Grandma Zhang Xia, came to rib him a little!

Zhang Ye constantly rolled his eyes, and thought, Great! You guys are great! Everyone is waiting for me to make a fool of myself? You guys are so mean! Hey, this is incredibly infuriating!

At the same time online, a number of news articles were published.

"Zhang Ye laughed at by a multitude of celebrities!"

"This year's National Judicial Examination will be the blemish of Zhang Ye's life!"

"The Judicial Exam says to Zhang Ye: See you again next year."

"Just how difficult was this year's National Judicial Examination? Famed host Zhang Ye leaves examination venue in tears!"

When Zhang Ye read that, he nearly fainted from anger. When the heck did I leave the examination venue in tears? In tears your sister! Are you guys organizing mobs to come ridicule me!?

Hmph, just you wait!

We'll see who gets the last laugh when the results are released!

There was another point about this world's National Judicial Examination that was different from his previous world. This world had a greater focus on the judicial examination. They dedicated large amounts of human resources into organizing it, allowing there to be almost no waiting period between registration and the sitting of the examination. This turnaround time was only five days. Then there was the assessment of the exams. Since the first three tests were multiple choice, they could be automatically marked by machine. It wouldn't take long at all. As for the fourth test, they employed a large number of judiciary professors and assistants to handle the grading. It was similar to the college entrance exam in which the wait for the outcome and results did not take a long time.

...

A few days later.

The ridiculing online still continued.

"Why isn't Teacher Zhang coming online anymore?"

"Do you need to ask? Hehe, it must be because he's too embarrassed by the fact that he didn't do well on the Judicial Exam!"

"Teacher Zhang, it's not a big deal. You have to hang on!"

"Yeah, Teacher Zhang, don't be beaten down by these difficulties! You can do it, you can do it for sure next year!"

"Come out, Teacher Zhang. We won't laugh at you, I promise, hahahaha!"

"Previous poster, your laughter has betrayed you!"

"Hey hey hey, you guys are being too inhumane here. Teacher Zhang has failed at the Judicial Exam and is already feeling very down. Why are you all still gloating over it!"

"We hardly get to see Zhang Ye mess up. This opportunity doesn't come by easily!"

"Pfft, I really wish to know right now how much Teacher Zhang scored on the Judicial Exam. The results should be released soon, right?"

For the past few days, an atmosphere of ridiculing Zhang Ye had been building up, whether it be the media, fellow celebrities, or netizens. Everyone partook in this ridiculing. Zhang Ye was the butt of everyone's jokes!

But on this day, when many people were still laughing and making fun of Zhang Ye on Weibo and the forums, the National Judicial Examination results were released!

"Wow!"

"It's released, it's released!"

"They've published the list of examinees who passed!"

"Quickly go and take a look!"

"I've waited so long for this!"

In an instant, countless people flocked to check the results!

"What? The pass rate is that low?"

"Aiyo, why did most of them only get 100-200 points? That's far too low!"

"The Judicial Exam this year was really difficult! They couldn't do anything about that!"

"I think this pass rate is not even 4%, right?"

"Where's Zhang Ye? What's Zhang Ye's score?"

"I don't know, I can't find it!"

"Eh, there were three people who scored 0 in the entire country. I presume that they did not even attempt the exam? But why isn't Zhang Ye one of them? This doesn't make sense! It completely and utterly doesn't make sense!"

"Huh, Zhang Ye's name is not among those who scored below a hundred points either?"

"It's not there either."

"Whoa, Teacher Zhang's not bad. This means that he scored over a hundred, right?"

"Haha, in the case of Teacher Zhang, scoring above a hundred is already considered quite good!"

Suddenly, someone exclaimed: "Oh f**k, you guys. Come and look at this quickly!"

Someone asked: "Look at what?"

That person said: "Look at Zhang Ye's score, what else!!"

A netizen said, "But we haven't found his name yet! Where is it?"

The person said: "Why are you're looking from the bottom! Start from the top of the list! Hurry!"

"The top?"

"Why would we be looking at the top?"

"Yeah, it's not like he can score that high, right?"

But as it turned out, when the countless netizens and Zhang Ye's celebrity fans rushed over to check, when they had a look, everyone was so shocked by what they saw their jaws dropped!

The National Judicial Examination results list.

First place: Zhang Ye!

Cumulative score...600 points!!

Chapter 755: Going Down Into The Annals Of The Judiciary!

"Holy motherf**king shit!"

"^^^^^^!!!"

"What kind of a score is that!"

"Zhang Ye scored 600 points? He got a perfect score in all four tests?"

"How could that be!"

"Oh my god!"

"Damn, just what the hell is happening!"

"This guy must be shooting up or something!"

"F**k, this isn't how the story was supposed to have developed!"

The netizens were dumbfounded!

The media were dumbfounded!

The entire country was dumbfounded!

Those who were just laughing and making fun of Zhang Ye a while ago, waiting to see him become a joke, now felt as though they were going to vomit a great deal of blood. No one could have expected such an outcome; they were all utterly confused!

Yao Jiancai's Weibo immediately got updated with a post of a dumbfounded emoticon, followed by: "Damn! Is this for real?"

Chen Guang was also stunned. "How is this possible!"

Fan Wenli followed close behind with a post of her own: "Oh god!!!!!!!!!" with a long string of exclamations!

Grandma Zhang Xia: "..."

Dong Shanshan also showed herself. "A perfect score on the National Judicial Examination!?"

Hu Fei appeared too. "How could that be!"

Hou Ge screamed: "Teacher Zhang, you must have been possessed by some spirits!!"

Hou Di was shocked. "How can someone get a perfect score on the National Judicial Examination?"

Dafei: "Yeah, how does anyone get a perfect score on the National Judicial Examination?"

Xiao Lu: "What the f**k!"

Tian Bin: "What the f**k!"

Ha Qiqi: "What the f**k!"

Zhang Zuo: "What the f**k!"

Luo Yiqiang: "What the f**k!"

Finally, even the elusive Zhang Yuanqi had something to say about this. No one could believe this results list they were looking at!

Why?

What do you mean why!

In the history of China, ever since the National Judicial Examination officially began, there had never been anyone who had gotten a perfect score on it. Yes! Not once, ever! Rather than talking about 600 points, there had hardly even been a case of someone getting 500 points. Disregarding the first three tests, since those were multiple choice tests that had given answers, the fourth test had case study analysis questions that did not have

perfect answers. It was just like a composition topic in the language tests, no standard answers. Together with the fact that the law itself could never cover all areas, the deviation in possible answers was even greater, so the exam graders did not have any predetermined answers in mind. As a result, the grading was all based on the judgment of those graders and the boundaries of the law. Even if you could score perfectly on the first three tests, as long as you were deducted for 10 points on the fourth test, you still would not achieve a perfect score. This could be because some of your viewpoints might not match with the grader, so even a deduction of a hundred points was the norm!

But for Zhang Ye?

He did not get penalized whatsoever!

Perfect score? This was truly impossible! It didn't make any sense at all!

There had never been anyone who thought about a perfect score situation for the National Judicial Examination; not even the question setters had given this any thought. Further, wasn't this year's judicial exam known as one of the most difficult in recent years? That was the reason a lot of people could not accept this outcome. This result had blinded an untold number of eyes!

The scores of the National Judicial Examination in this world were open, which meant they were public for all to see. This was to allow people to scrutinize the results and check if anyone had cheated, thus the results of all the exam takers could be seen at a glance. Just by looking at the scores of the other candidates ranked

behind Zhang Ye, one would know!

Second place: Tian Tian, cumulative score of 451 points!

Third place: Yu Chun, cumulative score of 449 points!

Fourth place: Xiao Chaokuo, cumulative score of 447 points!

Fifth place: Chen Huali, cumulative score of 447 points!

All of their scores were in the four hundred range! This was also the batch with the highest scores in this year's National Judicial Examination!

But Zhang Ye?

600 points! He scored almost 150 points more than the second place examinee!

When this number was placed together with those other top scorers, it formed a vast gulf between them. The feeling it gave was that Zhang Ye did not take the same exam as the others!

What kind of a concept was this difference in scores?

It was like the difference between the heavens and the earth!

The people were all very shocked. Just what kind of a common sense-defying knowledge of the law did you need in order to get a perfect score!?

The netizens were in an uproar!

"Did someone say that Zhang Ye was brought to tears by the Judicial Exam? Brought to tears your grandpa!"

"Who said that Zhang Ye wouldn't be able to score above a hundred points? Who was it that said that!?"

"This is too scary!"

"My face is swelling!"

"Mine is swelling too!"

"Your sister, mine is swelling up as well!"

"Everyone was saying that Zhang Ye would score zero points, but in the end, he f**king got a perfect score instead! Face-smacking Zhang is not called Face-smacking Zhang for nothing! This time, he has smacked all of our faces! This face smacking was way too painful and too harsh!"

"I was still waiting to see Teacher Zhang make a joke out of himself! So where's the joke now? Where did the joke go!"

"What joke are you still talking about? That Zhang Ye fellow must already be making a joke out of all of us! I'm crying! Teacher Zhang, I guess you're still more ruthless than we are! I am utterly convinced! Utterly!"

"How on earth did you study about all this legal knowledge and stuff!?"

"Yeah, how did you do it?"

"Are you actually on drugs or something!?"

Nobody had the impression that Zhang Ye had cheated. The reason for this was because there was no way he could have done that. If the answers were the same, the graders would have immediately given it zero. That was probably the reason for those who scored zero this time. Furthermore, the examinee ranked second behind Zhang Ye only scored 451 points, so even if Zhang Ye was coincidentally sitting behind or in front of this person in the exam hall, he couldn't possibly copy the answers from an over 400 points exam paper and turn it into 600 points on his end! If one of them had gotten 449 points and the other 450 points, then it might still be possible. But a difference of almost 150 points, how could anyone possibly have copied that in such a situation! That is why everyone knew that this perfect score by Zhang Ye was a true reflection of his standards!

But the more they figured it to be this way, the more they didn't know whether to laugh or cry!

"Teacher Zhang is going crazy!"

"He was already crazy to begin with!"

"The history of the legal world needs to be rewritten. After the many years of the National Judicial Examination being held, a heaven-defying examinee who got a perfect score has somehow appeared! F**k, and even more surprisingly, this person who got a perfect score is not someone borne of the legal world! He's just a layman! Teacher Zhang has also conveniently given the legal world a great big slap across its face! After studying so hard for many years, with the legal world deliberately nurturing their talented legal professionals, but in the end, those talented legal professionals discovered that they were no better at the law than a layman! Just think about it, think about how face smacking that is!"

"Zhang Ye only has two skills in his life. 1: Smack faces. 2: Doing a run-up before smacking faces!"

"Pfft! This is brilliant!"

"Hahaha, why is everyone so funny!"

Everything was chaotic online!

...

At home.

Zhang Ye's parents pushed his bedroom door open!

"Son! You passed? Did you really pass?" his mother said, looking extremely surprised. She had found out about it from the news!

Zhang Ye chuckled, "Yes."

His mother asked in shock, "How did you manage that!"

His father also remarked with disbelief, "Perfect score?"

Zhang Ye was full on flaunting by now, as he started bragging, "Well, it's just an exam with a cumulative score of 600 points. If the exam was based on 1000 points, I would have scored 1000 points too! I've already told you before, the Judicial Exam is just child's play to me. Heh, but you guys didn't believe me and insisted that I was bragging. You two even ridiculed me daily! Mom, so what do you think now that you've witnessed how capable your son is? There's no certificate in this world that I cannot qualify for! Heh, how hard can it be!"

His mother was getting excited. "My son...is going to become a lawyer in the future?"

Zhang Ye laughed. "I still won't be considered a lawyer yet, unless I go and earn a law license. But I guess I can be considered a legal professional now, hur hur. Anyways, I have no intentions on

becoming a lawyer. Taking this exam was just a way for me to jump into more professions and get on the news to maintain the public's awareness of me."

At this moment, his cell phone rang.

It was Yao Jiancai who was calling. The first thing he said was: "What has gotten into you! How did you manage to achieve something like that! Are you really intending to at least dabble once in every field there is!"

Zhang Ye laughed heartily: "That will depend on the situation."

Yao Jiancai said: "You're really great!"

Zhang Ye stated: "Old Yao, I remember that you were posting a lot on Weibo to ridicule me in recent days. What were you saying? Oh, right. You said that I wouldn't score more than a hundred points on the Judicial Exam, didn't you?"

Yao Jiancai: "...Aiyo, my food is still cooking. I better go and watch the heat!"

Du du du, the call disconnected.

Zhang Ye was amused. Following that, he received many calls from his other friends!

There were some who were shocked!

There were some who could only force a smile and accept it!

There were also some congratulatory calls!

...

Meanwhile.

At the work group in charge of this year's National Judicial Examination. More than 20 people had gathered in a large conference room for a meeting.

The leader of the group said, "I've just received notification from the superiors. They want us to review Zhang Ye's exam again to see that there really aren't any problems with it."

A female legal professional gave a wry smile and said, "There really aren't any problems with it."

The group leader said, "Check it again anyway. This incident has caused quite a commotion and many of the other examinees and insiders of the legal field are in doubt. We have to give them a proper explanation no matter what."

A man seated further down the table said helplessly, "I was the one who graded a part of Zhang Ye's fourth test. On more than one

occasion, I tried to look for reasons to deduct points, but...I truly couldn't find a reason to. Even for some case studies that fell outside of legal boundaries, even for some inconclusive case studies, he could answer them very skillfully and managed to steer clear of the more controversial points. So then...how can I find any reason to deduct points?"

A middle-aged woman beside him added, "On top of all that, there was not even a single spelling mistake. The answers in his fourth test were truly perfect and there's nothing to be picked on at all. From just a few sentences, you can see that his legal knowledge has already accumulated to a certain level. It feels like he has all the legal provisions and case studies of the past 50 years all fully memorized! Of course, I understand that that's impossible. That is an unrealistic conclusion, yet it's what I feel!"

A middle-aged man sighed. "Where did this man learn all the laws from!"

Someone else said, "I don't blame the people in the field for having their doubts. When I first saw Zhang Ye's exam, I was in disbelief too! Even if I were the one taking the exam, I would definitely be unable to answer as well as him!"

"Hai."

"If we let Zhang Ye into the judiciary, I wonder if that will be a blessing or a curse."

"He got a perfect score on the Judicial Exam. Can you deny him

from joining this circle?"

"What I am worried about now is precisely the future stability of the legal field!"

"Right. Before Zhang Ye took the bar exam, he won a lawsuit against Central TV Department 1. Now that he has a lawyer qualification certificate, couldn't he poke a hole in the sky?!"

"At that time, we'd have to inform the supervisory association for them to monitor the situation closely."

"Do we still need to inform them? I received a call from them earlier. The moment they knew that Zhang Ye passed the National Judicial Examination, the people from the supervisory association listed him as a key personnel on the watchlist of legal practitioners!"

"They're that quick to act?"

"It's because his reputation precedes him!"

"Getting onto the watch list on the same day as passing the Judicial Exam? F**k, this is totally unprecedented! But then, when it comes to Zhang Ye, I think there's no harm in being warier!"

Everyone was full of worry and felt extremely helpless about the situation. No matter what they said, no matter what they did, no matter how careful they were, they could not deny the fact—as of

this moment, Zhang Ye was their peer!

...

Elsewhere.

The media had been ignited!

Report after report was bombarding the public!

"The first ever perfect score in the National Judicial Examination!"

"Today, Zhang Ye has once again demonstrated his heaven-defying talent!"

"Perhaps there really is such a person in this world who even the heavens have to look up to!"

Zhang Ye passes the National Judicial Examination as the top candidate with a perfect score!"

"The unprecedented! Zhang Ye will go down into the annals of the Judiciary!"

Chapter 756: Back To The Office For Work!

The next day.

At Bayi Lake, Central TV Tower.

The moment Zhang Ye stepped into the entrance of the TV station, it became lively!

"Hey! Zhang Ye is here!"

"It's really him!"

"Director Zhang finally came back to work!"

"Did you guys see the news yesterday?"

"I saw it! A perfect score on the Judicial Exam, what an unprecedented achievement!"

"That was way too f**king cool!"

"My son also took the Judicial Exam last year, so he has some understanding of things in this aspect. Yesterday, he told me with great shock that 502 points was the highest score ever in the history of the Judicial Exam, and that that was also the only time someone scored above 500 points. No one else other than that person had ever scored above 500 points, but Zhang Ye went ahead

and easily broke this record by almost 100 points. He also said that the whole legal field is in shock!"

"It was indeed amazing!"

"How did he achieve that kind of score?!"

"That's who Zhang Ye is, a godly person!"

"Zhang Ye's been all over the news for the past few days, almost always ending up as the headline of every newspaper. After The Voice ended, Zhang Ye did not release any new works either. If it were any other celebrity, their popularity would definitely gradually decline or at best maintain at the same level. But Zhang Ye? Not only did his popularity not drop, it probably increased by a lot too. Based on the latest Celebrity Ranking Index that was updated yesterday, Zhang Ye has again moved up another spot in the B-list rankings!"

His human rights activism was relieving him of everyone's hatred for him!

He was totally stealing the limelight!

And his popularity had risen again!

In recent days, Zhang Ye had been in a rather good mood. Ever since he showed up to work today, he had a relaxed expression and was even humming a melody while taking the elevator up to the

office.

Upstairs.

At the program team office that was originally The Voice's.

When Zhang Ye came in, everyone in the office stood up.

"Ah, Director Zhang!" Little Wang said with some surprise in her voice.

Ha Qiqi smiled and greeted, "Good morning, Director Zhang."

Zhang Zuo greeted, "Good morning, Director Zhang. Congratulations on successfully passing the Judicial Exam!"

Wu Yi gave him a thumbs up. "Yeah, you're still the best."

Zhang Ye smiled and stated, "That's not worthy of any congratulation. I just took the exam for the fun of it. My main profession is still program hosting, so I'm already back here at work."

Zhang Ye did not think much about the astonishment from everyone. He could tell from their comments just how difficult the Judicial Exam was, but Zhang Ye really did not give much thought to it. This guy had just straight up memorized all of the relevant legal books of this world that he could get his hands on, and made

a photographic memory of all legal provisions and theoretical knowledge in his mind without missing a single word. During the examination itself, Zhang Ye mostly answered the questions as though it was a reflexive response, so it would be weird if he could understand the difficulty of this judicial examination. However, Zhang Ye was still satisfied with the outcome and his rising popularity was a nod to that. At least he did not waste his time for nothing in the past few days and his reputation points were not wasted either. Now, he had moved another step closer to the A-list celebrity rankings!

After Zhang Ye bought some dumplings from downstairs, Zhang Ye did not go inside to his office but looked for an empty seat and sat down with them outside. He chatted with everyone as he ate. "Has there been anything going on here for the past few days?"

Ha Qiqi gave a wry smile. "In which aspect?"

"All aspects," Zhang Ye replied.

Ha Qiqi said with an undertone, "In all aspects...there's actually nothing going on at all, and I mean, like really nothing."

Zhang Ye was tickled. "What do you mean by 'really nothing'?"

Zhang Zuo threw his hands into the air and said, "Our team has idled around for many days now. After that incident, there was no more news regarding the new program. As for other jobs, the higher-ups did not give any tasks or assignments to us. In recent days, no one other than the people from our program team has

stepped foot in our office, so we didn't do anything either. We just stayed around in the office and played some online games or chatted around. The higher-ups have probably already forgotten about our program team and many of the colleagues even shun walking near our office."

Little Wang corrected, "It's not that they have forgotten. They must have already abandoned us."

Zhang Ye looked at them and said, "I was the one who dragged everyone down, sorry about that."

Zhang Zuo hurriedly said, "Listen to what you're saying. How could that be?!"

Ha Qiqi added, "If it wasn't for you, would our program team be enjoying this glory today? Would there be us? If you put it like that, you're treating us as outsiders, Director Zhang!"

Wu Yi also understood. "Ever since Central TV Department 1 set their eyes on your copyright, they were prepared to leave us behind, so we can't blame you for this."

Zhang Ye waved it off and stated, "No matter what the reason was, the lawsuit between Central TV Department 1 and me was my personal decision and choice. If anyone gets affected in their future work because of this, let me apologize in advance. But if anyone wants to quit or no longer plans to stay on at Central TV anymore, you can tell me and I'll help you contact some people. I will definitely find you a good workplace. Although my reputation in

the industry is quite poor, I still command some respect."

Ha Qiqi remarked, "Why would we leave if you're still around?"

Zhang Zuo followed up, "It's still too early to say this, but perhaps there's still a chance of the situation reversing."

A female staff member asked, "Then, Director Zhang, what should we be doing now?"

Little Wang said, "Right, please assign some tasks to us."

"Now?" Zhang Ye considered for a moment then replied, "Everyone, you can watch some movies for now."

Someone gave that suggestion some thought and immediately observed, "That's right, we should watch some movies to recharge ourselves with ideas!"

Another person said, "There are many things in a movie that are worth learning from, and that will give us plenty of help on the production of our program."

Yet another person said in admiration, "Director Zhang has really got foresight. He's right. We can't be dispirited and not do anything just because the higher-ups aren't bothering with us. We must continue to constantly improve and enrich ourselves!"

Everyone cheered up at this and even shouted some encouraging messages one by one!

However, when Zhang Ye heard that, he was speechless. Then he coughed and uttered, "Aren't we just sitting around with nothing to do? So it doesn't matter if everyone chooses to watch movies or play games. Just be doing something, it's fine."

Everyone: "..."

F**k, you mean there was no other meaning to that? So they could really do as they liked?

Ha Qiqi consoled, "Listen to Director Zhang and do whatever you all want. The salary is still getting paid to us anyway, so let's just treat this as a break of some sort. Isn't that good?"

Little Wang exclaimed, "Then, then can I play online games?"

Zhang Ye laughed and said, "Why not? No one will bother us anyway."

Little Wang replied delighted, "Wow, that's sounds good! I never thought we'd have it so good!"

Zhang Ye maintained, "That's right, our lazy days will officially start now. Whatever you guys thought was inappropriate to do in the office in the past, I now give my approval for you to do it. Just do whatever you feel like doing. As long you don't destroy the

office, it is acceptable to me. If you wish to take the day off, I will approve it. Even if you're absent from work, I'm fine with it. None of that will be considered skipping work."

"Alright!"

"Thank you, Director Zhang."

"Man, aren't we too relaxed here?"

"Is it appropriate?"

Zhang Ye smiled and declared, "If I say it's appropriate, then it's appropriate."

Actually, when Zhang Ye wasn't around in the office for the past few days, they were playing browser games or watching movies and dramas, but back then they were mostly doing it sneakily. If there were people passing by outside the office, they would instinctively minimize the window for fear of being seen by the executives. But now that their director, Zhang Ye, had given his explicit permission for everyone to play games or watch movies as they liked, it left them feeling a little unused to it.

The moment Zhang Ye went back to his office, everybody started to become active.

Little Wang launched a very famous overseas strategy-puzzle game called Fishing Master to play.

Little Li beside her blinked at this and said, "You're really going to play just like that?"

Little Wang replied, "Didn't Director Zhang already say that we could?"

"Damn, you're seriously helping yourself!" Little Li nearly fainted.

Little Wang chuckled. "Why wouldn't I help myself? I'm just following the instructions to play games, so do you guys want to play as well? This game is extremely good and is very popular both domestically or overseas, and is the pinnacle of strategy-puzzle games at the moment. The key is that we can even join a network within some of its features to exchange items with other people."

Ha Qiqi looked over. "I've also heard about this game before."

Zhang Zuo said, "I've already completed that game, but since I have nothing to do, I'll play again with you guys."

"I'll play as well."

"Little Wang, how do I connect to the network?"

"I'll also play! Let's catch some fish together!"

"Ah, I caught a big one! It's golden in color!"

"What? Give it to me, give it to me! Give it to me quickly!"

"Go away, I'm not giving it to you, I caught it!"

"Aiya, that golden fish is a necessary item to fight the boss. I've been stuck on that level forever!"

Suddenly, the whole program team office of The Voice was noisy with mouse clicks and keyboard tapping, as well as everyone's excited screams. It truly was a lively atmosphere!

At this moment, a few Central TV Department 1 staff who were passing by saw this scene from the outside. The few of them looked at each other with their jaws dropped!

F**k!

What the hell was this?

This group of people were not working but playing games together instead? Aren't...aren't they enjoying themselves too much?!

Some people thought that Zhang Ye's program team would have a difficult time after the incident. But as it turned out, their program team had turned into the most f**king carefree office in

the whole of Central TV! Don't you guys know that you've been blacklisted already? Do you know that you've been placed in the frozen cellar by the station? Why are you people still so unaffected by it?! At a time like this, you people can still be playing games together so happily?

What the hell!

We've seen people be unaffected by problems before, but we've never seen people who could be so unaffected like you all!

Those staff members were feeling angry and tickled at the same time. They had been working so hard in recent times that when they saw this sight, they naturally felt that it was very unfair. They had the thought of telling them off, but when they remembered that Zhang Ye seemed to have come to work today, none of them dared to go in to tell them off. Who could ever outtalk Zhang Ye? In the entire Central TV Department 1, was there still anyone left who would dare to provoke this fellow? Being helpless to stop them, they could only walk away silently. Out of sight, out of mind, whatever!

The staff on Zhang Ye's program team spent the entire morning playing games and enjoying themselves. During this time, there were countless waves of their Central TV colleagues passing by outside their office. Even the chief of a department in Central TV Department 1 saw this sight. This left each person feeling even more speechless than the last. But in the end, no one said anything. They just stayed as far away from here as they could.

No one dared to bother them.

And no one could be bothered to do so either.

Central TV Department 1 was currently mired in two lawsuits. Although the lawsuits had pointed to Central TV as the legal entity, they were primarily targeting Central TV Department 1 as they were the department involved in the incidents. Many of those who had been implicated by these incidents in the past were busy helping Central TV Department 1 collect evidence and talking to those other staff members who had also been involved. Then, there were still their own programs to manage, so they were almost going crazy with the mountains of work they had to handle. The executives of Central TV Department 1 were also very busy as they not only had to prepare for the hearing in court, they also had to reshape the public's opinion of them and handle public relations as well. There was still large mess to clean up, so who currently had any time to bother with Zhang Ye?!

Chapter 757: The Impending Reveal Of The New Game!

In the afternoon.

Zhang Ye went to the cafeteria to eat lunch. However, the moment he stepped in, he immediately became the focus of everyone's attention, with many of them stealing glances at him. Everyone shunned him, subconsciously keeping a given distance away from him. Some of his acquaintances who would usually nod at him had opened their mouths to speak when they saw him, but ended up stopping short of actually speaking.

Right now, Zhang Ye was like the god of plague at Central TV Department 1.

But Zhang Ye did not mind this. He casually walked up as usual to line up for his food. He could hear the people around gossiping about him in whispers. Zhang Ye simply laughed it off.

"I heard that Zhang Ye's program team was playing games the entire afternoon yesterday."

"Yeah, how cool. I'm so envious of them."

"What are you envious for? Their program team is as good as banned!"

"They can play games every day and still continue to receive their salary. If I could spend my days this way, I'd rather get banned!"

"Haha, you? It's not that I want to speak ill of you, but even if you wish to get banned by Central TV Department 1, you're not qualified enough to do so. Besides, you're neither ambitious nor have any greater goals. All you want to do is earn your salary by doing nothing. But Zhang Ye is not like you. He aims to be an A-list celebrity, so even though a ban sounds good to you, for him, it's as good as a fatal blow. Moreover, he's also bound by the contract he signed with Central TV Department 1 for at least another half a year or so."

"The freezing of Zhang Ye has already begun."

"I wonder what Zhang Ye will do this time."

"What else can he do? With the contract stipulations, he can't leave for any other TV station either. I heard that Beijing Television Station contacted Central TV Department 1 with the intent to bring Zhang Ye into their fold. They were even willing to buy out the remainder of the contract, but as I understand it, the Central TV Department 1 leaders only had one word for them—No!"

"It seems like Mango TV also wants to bring Zhang Ye on, but that didn't go through either."

"Seems like they're trying to drag it out so that Zhang Ye meets his contractual liability!"

"For the next half a year or so, I'm afraid that Zhang Ye has to fritter away his time together with Central TV Department 1. Due to the lawsuit and the Judicial Exam, his popularity exploded in recent days, but after all this cools down, his popularity will surely slide if he cannot produce any new variety shows or get any screen time. In fact, I believe it will cause his popularity to drop drastically!"

"Yeah, I think so too."

"Hai, Zhang Ye's coming over."

"Let's go, let's go. We should stay far away from him."

"There aren't many people in the entirety of Central TV Department 1 who'd dare talk to him anymore. If any of the leaders sees it, who knows if they would suddenly get implicated together with Zhang Ye or not. Whoever gets too close to Zhang Ye now is only asking for trouble. The Department 1 leaders lost the lawsuit, so they're definitely biding their time to see when they can settle the score!"

"Actually, I still quite like Zhang Ye as a person."

"Then you better get farther away. This is a fight between gods! We can't get afford to get involved!"

...

After lunch.

Back at his own office.

Zhang Ye was playing some music on his computer, listening to Zhang Yuanqi's new song. He thought it wasn't too bad, so he repeated it. It didn't at all feel like he was getting frozen by Central TV Department 1.

At this moment, his cell phone rang.

He looked at the caller ID and saw that it was Beijing Television's Hu Fei.

Zhang Ye laughed as he answered the call: "Hello, Brother Hu."

Hu Fei said: "Is it convenient to speak now?"

"Yes, it's fine. Why're you looking for me?" Zhang Ye asked.

Hu Fei said: "I spoke to the station head about you yesterday and indicated that I would like to bring you back over to our station, first to help you out of your situation, and second so that the two of us can have a chance to work together again. Beijing Television Station called for a meeting over this matter and came to a decision that they could buy out your contract, but after communicating with Central TV Department 1, they were rejected. What's more,

Central TV Department 1's stand on the issue was very firm. It does not seem like they will let you go under any circumstances, so your old bro, me, is powerless to do anything about it."

Zhang Ye gladly replied: "Thanks, Brother Hu, for worrying about me."

Hu Fei questioned: "Tell me honestly, what do you plan to do now?"

Zhang Ye answered: "I don't have really any plans. I'm just going to take it one step at a time."

Hu Fei sighed: "Then you'd better be ready to get frozen for seven months."

But Zhang Ye chuckled at that. "I don't intend to prepare for something like that."

"Oh? What do you mean by that?" Hu Fei knew something was up.

Zhang Ye laughed and said: "Back then, even the SARFT could not keep me banned, so can Central TV Department 1? Besides, who decided that if I don't do hosting, I won't be able to get exposure? If I really want to gain greater exposure, I have many ways to do so."

After ending the call with Hu Fei, Zhang Ye received a long-

awaited call.

It was from Old Wu's elder sister!

Fat Sis sounded very excited on her end. "Little Zhang!"

Zhang Ye immediately asked: "How is it, Fat Sis?"

"It's a success! Haha, we managed to rush it out on time!" Fat Sis said very excitedly: "It was too motherf**king close! But we finally managed to rush it out on the day of the deadline! Just a moment ago, the Plants vs. Zombies character models, data attributes, as well as the beta test, were all completed! The final version still needs a few days, as we need a QA period to fix any bugs and other issues. But the demo version is definitely not going to be an issue. We've already created it with a total of three levels. It's perfect!"

Zhang Ye snapped his fingers. "It's great that it got completed on time."

Fat Sis said: "All thanks to your attribute table. It saved us a great deal of design hours. For the movement speed of every type of zombie, their attack frequency, the planting speeds, etc, all of those actually require a vast amount of man-hours to test. As the balance of the game is very important, with the attribute table that you supplied to us, it has simplified our workflow by a lot. You're truly one of our country's top math professors. Even my company's software programmers are convinced and in great admiration of you. They claimed if the task was left to them, they probably couldn't have finished it even if they had two months!"

Zhang Ye laughed: "It was nothing. I just happen to know some math, that's all. For anything else, I wouldn't be of any help."

Fat Sis was in a good mood. "Tomorrow is the start of the annual National C-G Gaming Expo. Almost all of the well-known video game companies and publishers in the country are going to be there, as well as the national media and gamers from all across the country. You'll be making a trip to the Gaming Expo, right? You could see just how spectacular this industry is. On top of that, this year will set a record for the number of new releases. The titles are increasing year by year. MMOs, RPGs, action games, browser games, mobile games, puzzle games, anything you can think of, there's a genre for it. I can give you some tickets if you want to come look around tomorrow. It's at the National Convention Center."

Zhang Ye did not even give it a second thought and spoke: "I'm free these days anyway. Of course I'll go."

This world's gaming expos were very similar to Zhang Ye's previous world's. However, there would likely be some difference. Zhang Ye had unfortunately never attended one back in his previous world before, so had never seen the legendary booth babes with his own eyes. Now that a game of his was going to be exhibited, he definitely had to go and take a look.

Fat Sis laughed heartily: "Great! The Expo will be using digital admission passes this time, so I will send them to your cell phone. Our entire company, from top to bottom, is full of confidence about this game you've designed. It's an unprecedented level of

confidence that I've never witnessed before. After holding it in for so many days, it's finally time to showcase our new game to all the gamers in the country!"

After putting down the phone, Zhang Ye smiled.

Put me into the freezer?

You're all being too naive!

I am not limited to making programs and hosting. This bro knows more things than you can even imagine. Just look, the chance to increase my popularity has come my way again, isn't that right?

Chapter 758: The Debut Of Plants vs. Zombies!

Later that afternoon.

An internal email was circulated within Central TV Department 1.

Having just read it, Ha Qiqi said, "The management has just informed all departments and program teams to send someone to the head office to collect the admission passes for tomorrow's National C-G Gaming Expo."

Zhang Zuo said, "Oh, it's part of the employee benefits?"

Little Wang asked, "Is the Gaming Expo any interesting?"

A youth beside her replied excitedly, "Of course it's interesting!"

"It's a good place to be. Every year, there are always countless beautiful girls!" Wu Yi remarked with a chuckle.

Another youth also appeared to be very excited. "Those admission passes are really difficult to get. You can't buy them off the market anymore now, and because they're all digital admission passes, you can't find them in the black market anymore either. There's basically no more supply available. I bet Central TV Department 1 had an arrangement with the organizer and was

allocated a portion of the admission passes, otherwise we wouldn't be getting them. You guys might not know this, but the price of a single admission pass to the National C-G Gaming Expo has been speculated to be in the high hundreds, but even at that price, you might not be able to get one!"

"I've always wanted to go as well!"

"I was planning to book my admission pass last week, but I missed out!"

"It's being held in Beijing this year! This is an incredibly rare opportunity!"

"That place is like heaven for gamers!"

"AD Ha, help us get a few passes!"

"Yeah! AD Ha, we're all depending on you!"

There were several video game fans in the program team, but several guys who weren't video game hobbyists also shouted in excitement when they heard this. They'd all long since heard about this gaming expo!

Ha Qiqi looked at them. "Alright, I'll go enquire about it." With that, she proceeded upstairs.

After about half an hour.

Ha Qiqi came back seething in anger.

Little Wang hurriedly asked, "Sister Ha, what happened?"

Everyone looked over as well.

Ha Qiqi said with annoyance, "The management is taking this too far! All the departments of Central TV Department 1 were allocated a few admission passes—some even had close to ten passes—but only our program team did not get any!"

Little Wang exclaimed, "Damn!"

Wu Yi was also furious. "Isn't this supposed to be part of our benefits? We're also official employees, and since everyone else got them, why aren't we given our share as well? Aren't they totally targeting us!?"

The door opened behind them.

Zhang Ye came out from his office. "Whoa, what's the matter here?"

Ha Qiqi immediately complained, "Director Zhang, not only has the management abandoned us this time, they're even taking away our employee benefits!"

Zhang Ye laughed amused. "What are you saying?"

Once again, Ha Qiqi related the entire situation.

After hearing it from her, Zhang Ye could more or less understand the whole situation. This was still within his expectations. "Don't worry, it's just a few admission passes right? They don't want to give us our share? Then we'll just go there on our own!"

Little Wang seemed a little startled. "How can we go?"

Zhang Ye gave a smile and said, "Who wants to go?"

"Me!"

"Me too!"

"Director Zhang, I want to go as well!"

"Me too, me too!"

More than half of the staff raised their hands.

Zhang Ye did a count and then nodded. "Alright, let's meet at the convention center tomorrow. I'll arrange for your tickets."

Little Wang said with amazement, "Director Zhang, you even know people in the video game industry?"

Zhang Ye smiled in satisfaction. "I know a few."

Little Wang said, "It's still Director Zhang who can get things done with his reputation!"

"That's great!"

"Thank you, Director Zhang!"

...

The next day.

Saturday morning.

September's Beijing weather was getting unpredictable. A large amount of rain had fallen on the first two days of the month and it became cold just like that. The weather was moody.

Zhang Ye changed into a long sleeve shirt and pants, ate some breakfast, then headed straight to the convention center.

The National Convention Center was located in the north, and

the name of this place sounded very grand as well. But this wasn't where the country's leaders held their meetings; it was just a place that was rented out. It was basically no different in concept from the National Agriculture Exhibition Center, just that the name of the place was more glorified and the area it covered was several times larger.

When he got there, he was stuck outside the parking lot as there were too many cars. Zhang Ye waited in a line for a full twenty minutes before he could enter. After he found a spot and parked his car, he hurriedly called Ha Qiqi and the others.

"Hello, where are you guys?"

"Director Zhang, we're waiting at the main entrance."

"Where they check your admission tickets?"

"No, the place where we enter the convention center."

"Oh OK, I see you guys. See you in a bit."

After hanging up, Zhang Ye waved to them from afar.

In their group, Ha Qiqi, Little Wang, and the rest all saw Zhang Ye. They slowly pushed and squeezed forward against the stream of the crowd and walked towards Zhang Ye.

Little Wang exclaimed, "There's too many people!"

Ha Qiqi gave a wry smile. "I'm about to fall apart. Why are there so many people?"

Zhang Ye, who also underestimated the turnout by a lot, said, "Yeah, I spent almost half an hour trying to park my car. No wonder they limited the amount of admission passes sold. If they didn't, the halls inside would probably be fully packed to the brim. Then there wouldn't be any need to hold a gaming expo. Other than people's heads, we wouldn't be able to see anything." Saying that, he walked up to the front of the group and led them. "Let's go and get our passes verified first. We'll go inside and see what to do next."

...

Elsewhere.

Outside the main entrance, Jiang Yuan also arrived at the convention center. He seemed to have brought his child with him, a teenager who looked to be 15 or 16 years old. He was sticking close to Jiang Yuan.

A few employees of Central TV Department 1 who had arranged to meet up saw Jiang Yuan.

"Director Jiang!"

"Director Jiang."

"You came too?"

Jiang Yuan nodded and said, "I brought my son to have a look."

Those several lawsuits in recent days had nearly driven him crazy. Now that he got the rare day off, he decided to come out and take a breather. Since his son kept asking for permission to come to the Gaming Expo, Jiang Yuan, who would be a little worried if his son went alone, decided to accompany him.

They were lining up to verify their admission passes.

At the same time, more and more people from Central TV also gradually started showing up around them.

"Yo, Old Xu!"

"Little Zhou, you managed to get an admission pass as well?"

"Yeah, many of my program team colleagues needed to work overtime, so I managed to get one."

"Director Sun."

"Hey, Teacher Chen Ye?"

"Teacher Chen also came to visit the Gaming Expo?"

Chen Ye had also arrived. He laughed and said, "I am here for work. I will be shooting some footage here to prepare for an interview program a few days later. " Having said that, he ran over next to Jiang Yuan and greeted him. "Director Jiang."

Jiang Yuan nodded. "You're here?"

Jiang Yuan's son greeted, "Uncle Chen."

Chen Ye smiled and said, "Hey, Little Qi. School starting again?"

Chen Ye's appearance suddenly brought on a number of bystanders. As a famous host who had hosted the Spring Festival Gala, almost everyone could recognize him easily.

"Oh! Chen Ye!"

"Teacher Chen also came to take a look around the Gaming Expo?"

"I think he came because of his job."

"Yeah, just look at the staff members and camera equipment behind Chen Ye."

"I spotted a celebrity! How exciting!"

"Yeah, I've finally gotten to see him in person!"

Comparatively, Zhang Ye was keeping a much lower profile. He was wearing a face mask and sunglasses again, so unless it was someone who was familiar with him, it wasn't likely that anyone could recognize him.

People were being admitted one by one after having their admission passes verified.

But Zhang Ye had still been recognized by people from Central TV Department 1!

"Ha Qiqi?"

"Old Wu?"

"Isn't that The Voice's program team staff?"

"That person wearing sunglasses walking right in front of the group is...Zhang Ye?"

Those people from Central TV Department 1 felt a little shocked.

"How could it be?"

"I thought they didn't get admission passes?"

"Yeah, I heard about it yesterday too. They weren't issued any admission passes!"

"How did they get in?"

"Did they buy them themselves?"

"The admission passes were no longer for sale! Where would they get them?"

Jiang Yuan frowned.

Chen Ye also stared at Zhang Ye.

When it was time for Zhang Ye's group to enter, he took out his cell phone and scanned it about ten times. When everything was done, he led the group and walked casually into Hall 1.

Once they were inside, Ha Qiqi whispered, "Director Zhang, behind us are..."

Zhang Ye chuckled, "I know, I saw them too."

Ha Qiqi made a noise in acknowledgment, but did not say anything else.

Little Wang, Wu Yi, and the others saw this and understood as well. They also pretended to not have noticed the Central TV Department 1 executives and colleagues. In any case, they had come here on their own, so it had nothing to do with Central TV Department 1.

Right now, Zhang Ye was not interested in that bunch of people. The only thing he cared about was whether the game he suggested to develop could be catapulted to fame in this largest gaming expo in the country. He knew that the Plants vs. Zombies booth was located somewhere in Hall 2. However, Zhang Ye did not plan to head there directly. Instead, he wanted to take a look at how the other video game companies handled this event first, as well as assessing the games they were showcasing. This would help Zhang Ye understand how developed the game market of this world was and its circumstances.

This exhibition hall mainly held the video game companies that published online games and xianxia-type RPGs.

When Zhang Ye's group came to the first game's booth, they were stunned by the scene over here!

Booth babes dressed in ancient costumes!

These booth babes were all dressed in similar outfits as they gracefully danced in unison!

This was for a game called The Immortals Descend!

Other than their group, there was also a group of nerds watching as they surrounded the booth. All of them looked very excited.

"Ahhh!"

"This is too exciting!"

"They're really, really beautiful. And those legs are so long!"

"This game is great! This game must be fun to play!"

"F**k, you haven't even tried it out, bro!"

"I don't need to try it out! It'll definitely be fun!"

Ha Qiqi, Wu Yi, and the others were also here for the first time. They were taken aback by what they were seeing. They might not know what the game was like, but the booth babes this exhibit employed were of exceptionally high quality and could make anyone's eyes shine. Their waists rotated sensuously as they dance. Even the female visitors couldn't help but watch them for a bit.

Little Wang remarked in a stunned manner, "Is this what a gaming expo is like?!"

The youth beside her sniffed and said loudly, "We really made the right choice to come here today! This place is just like heaven! Thank you, Director Zhang! Thank you for organizing this!" He immediately went up, wanting to give the game a try, but the entire floor was quickly filled up by eager fans and a line was formed for the dozen or so consoles with demos. Regretfully, he came back to join the group.

After that, they went to the next booth.

This was the booth for an MMORPG with 3D graphics called Spiritual Realms: The First War.

A group of people were all staring straight into the booth. It was yet another group of beautiful girls, this time dressed like fairies. Some of them even wore cat or bunny ears, wagging their tails and smiling to the visiting gamers. It left them wanting for more, especially when a few booth babes revealed a great portion of their long, slender legs. The geeks were all extremely excited by the sight of this.

"I like that girl!"

"I like the one who has the bunny ears on. She's so pretty!"

"I want to try this game out!"

Suddenly, another large group of passersby were attracted and

ran over to take a look!

Compared to the first two booths, it seemed a little quiet over at the third booth. Although the game consoles with the demos were all taken up, there was not much of a line there. The visitor flow was much more normal. When he looked at their booth babes, Zhang Ye understood immediately. There were only two booth babes employed by this game exhibit. One stood on the left and the other on the right of the booth, making them seem like greeter girls. Their costumes were not too outstanding either, but the important point was that they were wearing too much. As a result, the atmosphere at this booth was less exciting.

Having looked at all this, Zhang Ye couldn't bear the heaviness in his heart. He felt that he had taken the Gaming Expo too lightly this time. Would a game become famous just because it was good? That might not necessarily be true. Look at this, just look at this! This is what reality looks like. It was the first time Zhang Ye had doubt about the debut of Plants vs. Zombies. How could a tower defense game like theirs ever compare to the booth babes these MMORPGs invited?!

Slutty!

Too slutty!

Zhang Ye felt a sense of anger from within. This kind of an atmosphere was too disgusting, and was too unworthy of being promoted. It was little wonder that action had been taken against those gaming expo exhibits back in his previous world, where they had been issued with "dress code restrictions"! It was clearly for a

good reason that they did something like that!

Ha Qiqi glanced at him. "Director Zhang, what's the matter?"

Zhang Ye did not even lay his eyes on the group of beautiful girls and just said, "Let's go on ahead and see what there is."

"Uh, OK." Wu Yi and a few other guys from the program team looked at Zhang Ye in a curious manner, wondering to themselves why Director Zhang did not even look at all these beautiful girls.

They went on ahead.

The fourth booth farthest on the left side was also bursting with popularity. This was the booth of a famous game development company's single player RPG. The booth babes they showed off numbered a total of 17! Although, among them, there were some who were beautiful and some just average-looking, the main attraction here was their short skirts. All dressed the same, the gorgeous girls made those nerdy gamers who had gathered around this booth scream. With a loss of judgment, they urgently rushed up to line up to try out the game!

Many of the reporters who were there also came running over and surrounded this booth, busily snapping photos. Attracting the attention of the media would be a great help to the marketing of the game!

Zhang Ye was despising this!

Shameless!

Too shameless!

Continuing on, they saw even more of such scenes. Zhang Ye's heart was getting heavier and he became even more pessimistic. Were they comparing to see which game's quality was better or was it a competition of whose booth babes wore less!? Why aren't you all putting the focus on the games instead! Can you all not be so vulgar! You all are going to judge the game based on the beautiful girls and their long, slender legs? Where are your principles, people!

Dirty!

Too dirty!

The more Zhang Ye saw, the angrier he became. It seemed like the debut of Plants vs. Zombies was going to just be a failure now, so he prepared himself for this worse possible scenario.

It was now 9 AM.

After making a round in the large Hall 1, Zhang Ye said to his fellow colleagues, "Let's roam around freely now. It's OK if we're separated, so feel free to line up and try out the games you like."

Ha Qiqi asked, "What will you be doing?"

Zhang Ye said, "I'm heading to Hall 2 to take a look there."

Ha Qiqi smiled and said, "Then me too. I'll go along with you."

Little Wang said, "I'll follow Director Zhang too. I want to have a look at the puzzle games there. I think Fishing Master 2 has come out!"

Zhang Ye, with a heavy heart, brought the two of them along with him to Hall 2. As they headed to the booth of Plants vs. Zombies, he looked at the surroundings filled with booth babes in all kinds of costumes. He could only denounce this vulgar atmosphere in his head, wondering if Old Wu had any say in regulating these things. He wanted to give her some feedback about this, knowing that such an unhealthy atmosphere could not go on any further. He decided that it had to be firmly boycotted and resolutely eradicated from the scene!

Otherwise, the consequences would be terrible!

Over time, the nation would be in peril!!

Finally, they arrived at the exhibit of Plants vs. Zombies!

When they had just arrived, before Ha Qiqi could make out the title of this game or learn what genre it belonged in, what she saw left her utterly shocked!

Also surprised, Little Wang exclaimed, "Aiyo!"

There were gamers everywhere!

A sea of gamers!

A group of media reporters had also gathered around here, busily snapping away with their cameras!

Then, they saw that there were 20 booth babes standing around the exhibition zone of the Plants vs. Zombies booth, divided into two groups. In one of the groups, they were dressed in bright colors of red and green, with floral patterns printed on their dresses. Some of these booth babes were also wearing hats with plants decorations on them and were in low-cut dresses. Among them, there were even two booth babes who did not even wear dresses and just stood there in their bikinis. They were basically showing everything! At the other side, the other group of booth babes were dressed like zombies. Some of their faces were stained with "blood," some had rotting "wounds" on them. And their dresses were also rather torn and tattered, some so tattered that it was unable to cover much on the skirt end, while some of the others had blood stains on their tattered dresses. It was almost no different from not wearing anything, as their legs and bikinis were in full view. It was an image that would give people a nosebleed!

Sexy!

Revealing!

With a tinge of gore!

This was likely this year's National C-G Gaming Expo's exhibition booth that most pushed at the limits!

The gamers were dumbfounded!

The media was dumbfounded!

Zhang Ye was also dumbfounded!

F**k!

What is going on with you all!

Why are the booth babes you employed also wearing so little clothing! And they're even wearing less than the others? Even more revealing than the others?

F**k that!

You all have simply...

Executed it beautifully!!

Executed it way too beautifully!!!

Chapter 759: The Organizers Are Alerted!

At Hall 2.

In front of the Plants vs. Zombies booth.

The crowd began to stir as countless nerds screamed over the dance music. Many of them nearly had nosebleeds as they stared fixedly at the booth babes' figures with eyes wider than the last, not wanting to miss a thing!

"Heavens!"

"This is too exciting!"

"I can feel my blood spurting out already! This is too exhilarating!"

"These are what professional booth babes are all about!"

"Hey, don't push! Stop pushing!"

"Can the person in front please duck a little?! I can't see a thing!"

"Dammit, this is getting to be too hot! They're wearing bikinis right from the start?"

"This must be a good game! It definitely has to be!!"

"I want to try playing the game!"

"Hey, don't cut the line! Dammit!"

"Compared to this game's booth, the other booths hold back way too much with their clothing choices!"

Everyone was bubbling with excitement as they crazily crowded their way inside. Some of them went to try out the game while others went straight to the booth babes and had their friends take photos for them as souvenirs!

Little Wang stared, her eyes wide. "This is too popular!"

Ha Qiqi looked around and said, "There aren't many people at the booths around here. Heh, those people have all been attracted to this game's booth instead."

At the moment, the four or five game booths next to the Plants vs. Zombies booth were practically deserted and quiet. Only a few booth babes dressed rather plainly stood scattered around the area, while there were hardly any gamers there. The staff of those video game companies looked aghast and were left gnashing their teeth as they stared at the Plants vs. Zombies booth, unable to do anything about it. They could only watch helplessly as the large group of gamers was drawn over to the other side. In contrast, the difference in the popularity between them was poles apart.

Over here.

The staff at this booth were very busy!

"Please line up, please line up!"

"One by one!"

"Hey, don't cut. That guy over there, please keep your distance from the booth babes, thank you!"

Of all the Plants vs. Zombies staff, Zhang Ye had only seen one or two of them before, and did not know the rest. There was also no sign whatsoever of Fat Sis. But giving it some thought, as the CEO of the video game company, Fat Sis was probably not going to personally participate in prominent activities such as this. However, all the planning and the attires of the booth babes were definitely handled and approved by Fat Sis herself.

Well done!

This was exactly the type of effect that he wanted!

Zhang Ye, who was standing not too far away, also looked very excited.

Little Wang took out her cell phone and sent a message to her

colleagues: "Come quickly to Hall 2. There are a lot of pretty girls in bikinis over here. It's definitely more popular over here than where you are!"

After just five minutes, Wu Yi and the others arrived!

"Where are they?"

"What bikinis? Is it true?"

"Holy shit, it really is true!"

"This...this, this is heaven!"

"I have a nosebleed!"

The Voice's program team staff were all dumbfounded by what they saw!

More and more people were gathered at this side of the hall, creating a commotion that only got bigger and bigger. Not only did they attract almost everyone from within Hall 2, even visitors from Hall 1 and 3 rushed over with curiosity when they heard about it. They wanted to see what the excitement was about. When they saw it, everyone was stunned with astonishment!

Revealing!

It was too revealing!

Suddenly, those who were trying out the games in the booth also exclaimed loudly!

"This game is really fun to play!"

"The creativity of this game is just godly!"

"What a surprise! I thought this game wouldn't amount to much!"

"Is this still a puzzle game? Surely not, right? Why does this game play like a real-time strategy game?! Aiyo, this game design is too awesome and so enjoyable to play!"

"Old Liu, come here quickly. This game is awesome!"

"Seriously? Let me try it!"

"First, plant a sunflower to produce 'sun' so that you can buy and plant other plants."

"Whoa, it can even be done this way?"

"Yeah, this design is so cool!"

"I've already completed the demo! Damn, why does it only have

three stages?! I haven't had enough!"

"Which company's game is this? How did they make something so awesome?"

"I don't know. I've never heard of the company's name before, so it probably hasn't been established long or have any well-known titles to it, otherwise I would surely have known about them."

"Hehe, my friend, is this game really that fun? Aren't you exaggerating? You guys must be saying so because the booth babes are wearing so little, right?"

"F**k off. It really is fun to play!"

"Right, if you don't believe us, wait for your turn and try it out yourself!"

It was a very lively atmosphere at the booth. It could be said that at this moment, this was the most popular game booth at this year's National C-G Gaming Expo. The amount of people gathered here kept increasing and the scene was almost getting out of control!

Zhang Ye, Little Wang, Ha Qiqi, and the others who wanted to try out the game got into the line too, but there were already dozens of others in front of them. There were a total of ten game consoles with demos and every line was similar. Judging by this, even if they waited in line until noon, they still would not get to

play. Moreover, at the end of the long lines, there were two lines of gamers that stretched all the way to the entrance of the other game booths, occupying their areas!

The other video game companies were barking in anger!

The staff at the booth to the east said, "This is too much!"

The staff at the booth to the north said, "It's only a puzzle game! Is there a need for this?!"

The staff at booth #271 to the south said, "It's only skimpy clothing! Are they competing over the game's quality or fighting to see who can wear the least clothes?!"

In the end, the organizers of the expo were alerted. The security guards came to disperse some of the crowd to maintain order. In the end, it wasn't known why, but even some of the organizers' managers arrived. They had a quick discussion after they witnessed the scene, then made several calls before finally ordering that the booth babes at the Plants vs. Zombies booth be withdrawn!

The staff of the Plants vs. Zombies booth were not having any of this. "But why?!"

The organizers' manager said, "You have affected the other game booths. A lot of them have jointly lodged a complaint against your booth. Besides, your booth babes' attires have seriously violated

the rules. They must to go immediately. Her, her, and her. They can remain behind, but the rest wearing bikinis must go. Otherwise, we will penalize you and take away your rights to put on an exhibit here!"

They were just following procedure as the clothing of the booth babes at this booth had indeed crossed the line. It would not be a problem if there were only the gamers around, but since there were also many reporters from all over the country present, if they reported in the media about this matter, it would definitely attract quite a controversy. If they as the organizers let this matter slide, it would definitely affect them greatly as well. This was why they decided to deal with the matter at once.

Upon hearing that, the players were not happy either.

"What's the matter?!"

"Isn't this great?!"

"That's right, it isn't easy for them pretty girls either!"

"They're very well covered!"

"I feel that they're dressed within the limits, so based on what are you asking them to leave?"

"Don't make them leave! We still want to see them!"

Many of the nerds began to boo loudly.

But the organizers maintained their stance and insisted on dealing with this matter as a violation.

Zhang Ye was also extremely annoyed seeing this. Why are you treating this as a violation? What rules have they violated?! Isn't this still quite acceptable?! Don't they still have their clothes on?! What's wrong with wearing bikinis? What's wrong with it? If this is unacceptable, then all the beaches in the entire country should be cordoned off! All the malls in the entire country shouldn't be selling bikinis anymore! What wrongs have the bikinis committed? What crimes are the bikinis guilty of? The bikini is one of the greatest inventions in human history. What you all are doing right now is an insult to the collective wisdom of mankind! It's a lack of respect for the masses!!

A conspiracy!

There's definitely a conspiracy afoot!

This is utterly despicable!

Zhang Ye exploded with anger and cursed all eight generations of the organizers' ancestors!

As for him previously mentioning firmly boycotting and resolutely eradicating such behavior, and how over time the nation

would be in peril, this guy had obviously clean forgotten everything he had believed!

Chapter 760: An Instant Hit!

"Take them away, take them away."

"Hey, manager, please cooperate with us a little."

Under the strong urging from the organizers, more than half of the booth babes of Plants vs. Zombies were withdrawn and only some girls with attires that could pass the regulations were left behind. The video game company's staff felt very down, but could not do anything about it since it was the official authorities who asked, so they could only do as they were told.

As a result, after those booth babes left, a majority of the people who had gathered at this unusually popular booth started leaving in an instant. Everyone was saying "how boring" as they walked away.

As for the game?

What sort of crappy game was that?!

Plants vs. Zombies? When have plants ever been able to fight zombies?!

There was hardly anyone who could understand the casualness of the game's name and felt that it wasn't very attractive. In addition, when the visitors saw the banners introducing it as a puzzle game, many of them lost their interest immediately. Since they had spent

a lot of money to come to this expo, if they were to find something, they would rather look at those large-scale RPG games or MMO games made by the huge video game companies. Who would come here to play some puzzle games, especially a demo version of it? As a result, without the gimmick of the booth babes, the crowd naturally dispersed with only a few of them remaining behind.

Zhang Ye hated this greatly!

Little Wang, who had also lost her interest, remarked, "Director Zhang, let's go too."

Ha Qiqi turned and pointed to a booth. "That's the display booth for Fishing Master 2. Let's go and have a look?"

This was the game that their entire program team was playing in the office.

However, Zhang Ye said, "Go on ahead by yourselves. I want to walk around on my own."

Ha Qiqi looked at him and said, "Alright. We'll come look for you in a bit."

She walked off with Little Wang and the others.

Zhang Ye remained standing where he was. He was still thinking about the promotion of his game with a heavy heart. A promotional event filled with positive energy and booth babes was

spoiled by the organizers just like that. Their attire has violated the regulations? Bullshit! For show! This is all for show! If they only did things for show every day, then over time the nation would be in crisis!

The crowd dwindled in numbers with many of the gamers going over to the surrounding booths. Gradually, the game booths nearby regained some popularity.

Zhang Ye heard some of the staff at the booth behind him saying things.

"Hmph, such dishonest methods!"

"It's a good thing that the organizers cleared up this mess in time."

"What plants and what zombies? They were just depending on their booth babes showing some skin to attract people, so how can their game be any good? If they have the time to plan that, they should be spending it on making the game instead!"

"That's right. Just look, everyone has left after the booth babes left, right?"

Those staff were talking loudly without reservation.

When he heard that, Zhang Ye got frustrated. He turned around and strolled over to that shooter game's booth and glanced at the

screen of the demo. He grunted, "What lousy game is this?!"

When a female staff member heard that, her eyebrows twitched but she still greeted him with a smile. "Sir, you can try out the game first before giving your evaluation about it."

Zhang Ye glanced at the screen again and snorted, "What lousy UI is this!"

The female staff member's eyebrows twitched again as she forced a smile and said, "Although the UI is an extension of the design theory in a traditional shooter, our game's graphics are the industry's..."

Zhang Ye snorted again, "What lousy graphics are these!"

The female staff: "..."

Seeing the booth of his game still lacking visitors, Zhang Ye could not help but feel a sense of anger and injustice. So he decided to stand around longer at this shooter's booth, one moment walking to the #1 demo console to make some insulting remarks and the next moment strolling to the #3 demo console to say a few words of criticism.

The staff were driven mad by this!

Big Bro! How did we offend you?! What was all that about? Why did you trample on us the moment you got here?

Suddenly, Zhang Ye, having seemingly sensed or heard something, turned to look behind him. He frowned when he realized that his staff members had bumped into the staff of Central TV Department 1 and were in the middle of what looked to be an argument. Isn't that person the secretary of Central TV Department 1's deputy director, Jiang Yuan? Not knowing what was happening over there, Zhang Ye headed over immediately.

In front of him.

Dozens of the Central TV Department 1 staff were gathered at the booth. Some of them were playing games inside the booth, while the others stood there looking at the group consisting of Ha Qiqi, Wu Yi, and the others.

Jiang Yuan's secretary said, "You all had better pay attention to who's around you!"

Ha Qiqi retorted, "Why should we pay attention to that?"

Little Wang said angrily, "Today's a day off and we bought the tickets by ourselves, so why can't we go around as we like? Do we still have to get approval from the station?"

The secretary said angrily, "So you guys still remember the station? In the whole of Central TV, who doesn't know that you people have all been playing games during working hours! Those who don't know better might even think you all are working on the development of games!"

A veteran Central TV Department 1 staffer said, "Little Ha, your group is indeed in the wrong."

Another middle-aged staff member in the Central TV Department 1 group said with a grave tone, "Your program team has caused big trouble this time. Just because of a small issue, it has damaged our Department 1's reputation, yet you all are still not working diligently to make up for it, but instead playing games or watching movies during office hours every day. And now, you all did not greet us after seeing us here and just pretended not to see us? It's not that I want to tell you people off, but I can't bear to see things go on like this any longer."

Another person reprimanded them, "It's only because Director Jiang is taking his kid around the front that he did not see this. If he was here, he would definitely be angry at you all!"

It was clear that these fellows were determined to follow along in their leaders' footsteps.

Ha Qiqi, Little Wang, and the others got a little bit angry, but as they were still considered inexperienced at Department 1, there were certain things they could not say nor was it good for them to sass too much.

However, at this moment, unknown to them, Zhang Ye appeared right behind them.

"Whoa, who is telling stories to my people again?" Zhang Ye

spoke without giving them any face at all, "Why don't you tell me a story as well?! I really enjoy listening to stories!"

Little Wang called out happily, "Director Zhang!"

The Voice's program team staff immediately straightened their backs as though they had gained a supporting pillar!

When the group of Central TV Department 1 staff saw Zhang Ye, they were startled a little!

Jiang Yuan's secretary said with a darkened expression, "Zhang Ye, what are saying? Your staff pretended like they did not know us and did not greet us when they saw us. What kind of behavior is that?!"

Zhang Ye looked at him and said, "Are you the country's President or the Secretary-General of the United Nations? We still have to greet you if we see you?"

The secretary was infuriated. "You..."

That old staff member said, "Little Zhang, how can you talk in that way?"

"This is how I always talk!" Zhang Ye had always spoken in a manner that did not give face to anyone, no matter their rank or qualifications.

The several Central TV Department 1 people also knew that Zhang Ye was a thorn in everyone's side; not even calling him a thorn was enough to describe him. This fellow had become the largest tumor in Central TV, so much less the several of them, even the executives of Central TV Department 1 could not do anything regarding this person. Just a court case alone was enough to them pay Zhang Ye's salary in obedience, which was even two times the amount he was supposed to receive. So the several of them definitely weren't going to be able to do anything to him. As a result, they walked away quickly after lecturing them for a bit and did not bother to reason further with Zhang Ye.

From a distance away, Jiang Yuan who was bringing his son around saw all that had happened. His heart turned cold. The freezing of Zhang Ye's career had already begun. Zhang! From this day forward, you can only watch helplessly as your popularity declines day by day. I want to see how much longer you can last like this! Let's see if you can still laugh in the future!

Little Qi said, "Dad, there's a Plants vs. Zombies booth over there. What an interesting title! I want to try out that game!"

Jiang Yuan's expression changed immediately, as he said with a kind expression, "Sure, sure."

The people of Central TV department 1 walked off.

Little Wang said to Zhang Ye, "Director Zhang, thank goodness you came over just in time, otherwise, we would surely have gotten

bullied by that bunch of people! Just because we didn't greet them, they used that as a reason to give us a lecture? That's too unreasonable!"

A female editor said while gnashing her teeth, "Our program team has become a target for everyone now. Back then, when The Voice was still being broadcasted, who wasn't courteous whenever they saw us? Didn't they always give us a thumbs up whenever they saw us? But look at this now, they are slaughtering the donkey the moment it leaves the millstone! Anyone can come and trample all over on us!"

Ha Qiqi gave a grim smile and said, "As long as Director Zhang is around, who would dare to trample on us as they please? Just look at what happened. The moment Director Zhang got here, that bunch of people ran away!"

Little Wang clapped happily and said, "That's right, they only risked telling us off. When they saw Director Zhang, all of them ran off in fright!"

Zhang Ye said in amusement, "Am I that frightening?"

Wu Yi put it in a nice way, "Director Zhang is well known for his reputation!"

Everyone chimed in one after the other, but Zhang Ye's focus was not here. He was still thinking about the matter regarding his game. The reason he came by today was because of this business. In his current situation, it took a lot of effort to earn more

popularity. After putting in so much effort, Zhang Ye definitely wanted to earn any popularity that the Plants vs. Zombies game could gain him. As a result, he had to ensure that this game could become an instant hit, otherwise he would actually let those people who were waiting to see him make a fool of himself get what they want.

What should he do?

The organizers had already left, so should he get those bikini booth babes to come back? Engage in a round of guerrilla warfare with the organizers? When the enemy advances, we retreat. When the enemy retreats, we pursue?

Good idea!

While this guy was fantasizing about what he could do, a voice suddenly came from the clamor not too far away!

"Old Yu, come quickly, come quickly!"

"What's the matter?"

"F**k, this game is too cool!"

"Plants? Zombies? What's with all of these?"

"You'll understand when you play it! Hurry up and start lining

up! The line will soon be long!"

"Wah! Why are there so many people all of a sudden?"

"It's because this game is really fun!"

Zhang Ye was stunned and quickly turned to look. He saw that the Plants vs. Zombies booth that was still rather empty a moment ago was now packed with a sea of people again!

"Aiyo, this game is really the best!"

"I didn't think much of it when I saw the name earlier, but how did this game turn out to be so fun?"

"Yeah, I was also initially attracted to this booth because of the booth babes and thought this game was just going to depend on flashy showmanship to attract gamers. I didn't expect that I would get hooked on this game after I tried it out! This is definitely the best puzzle game I have ever played in my entire life! Besides, is this really considered as a small-scale game? This is the first time I've realized that puzzle games could actually be made into something like this! There is nothing about the innovative gameplay I can criticize!"

"It's really fun!"

"Brother up ahead, have you finished trying out the game yet? Can you please hurry up? A lot of us are still waiting over here!"

"Is it my turn yet? Is it my turn yet?"

Not only were the gamers who wanted to try out the game joining into the long line, there were also countless gamers who joined the long line after they were tempted to try it out from watching others who played. When it was empty, there was not a single person, but as the amount of people increased, the resulting chain reaction was also becoming more and more obvious! With the ruckus and shouting over here, the majority of those visitors who had left after watching the booth babes' performance were coming back once again!

Zhang Ye laughed as he saw this!

Indeed, quality goods need no advertising!

Like I said, for the most popular puzzle game of this bro's previous world, how could it not even cause a ripple in this world!?

Chapter 761: This Game Is A Zhang Ye Creation?

There was an explosion of interest for the demo at the booth!

Voices of unexpected surprise by the gamers were constantly sounding!

Ha Qiqi wondered and asked, "The booth babes have already left, but why are there still so many people?"

"Plants vs. Zombies?" Little Wang hesitated for a moment, then said, "How can a game with such a title be any fun? Could these people be shills paid for by the video game company? Why are so many of them praising the game? How much money did they spend to employ them!"

Shills?

Shills your sister!

Zhang Ye rolled his eyes at her.

Wu Yi came up from behind them. "Looks like there's a lot of praise for this game, I'm also gonna give it a try."

Wu Yi went to join the line. When Little Wang and a few others from The Voice's program team saw that, they were also itching to

give it a try. Ultimately, they ended up joining the line to give the game a try as well.

When it was their turn to try, their indifference at the beginning turned to shock!

When the game started for Ha Qiqi, she was startled for a moment!

It was the same for Wu Yi. He immediately started clicking the mouse and was so focused on the game that he couldn't hear his colleagues talking even though they were right beside him. His full attention was squarely on the game.

Little Wang even exclaimed, "This game is ten times more fun than Fishing Master! Is this a new game or a sequel? Why haven't I heard about this game before if it's this fun?"

Wu Yi marveled, "After just two levels, even a person like me who doesn't usually play games is getting a little addicted. This creativity, graphics, design, and the attention to detail! This should be a game made by some foreign company, right?"

A female editor pointed at something. "No, look there. It's a domestic video game company."

Wu Yi said unbelieving, "There's actually a domestic video game company that can create such an excellent product?"

Little Wang immediately waved to the area outside the booth. "Director Zhang, come and try, come and try it out!"

Zhang Ye laughed, "I'm fine here, thank you."

"It's super fun, really!" Little Wang praised loudly.

Thinking about it, Zhang Ye also joined the line. Of course he knew how good this game was. Back in his previous world, be it Plants vs. Zombies or Plants vs. Zombies 2, he had played them both. The reason he was going to give the game a try was mainly because he wanted to see how close to the original game Fat Sis's company had managed to make it. He wanted to know if they closely followed his plan and design. In addition, if there were any bugs he could inform Fat Sis to get them fixed in time.

Once he started the game, Zhang Ye had a good grasp of it.

The restoration level was very high!

It was probably at about 90% of the original game!

Knowing this, Zhang Ye began to feel reassured. He knew that Fat Sis and her staff had made this game in accordance to his design, without adding any modifications of their own. The design of the plants, the zombie's speed and health, the graphics style, every plants' cooldown times—they were mostly all the same as the original.

At this moment, a few media representatives from a video game magazine and some newspaper publishers headed over when they heard about the popularity of this booth. Extremely curious of all that was going on, they also joined the line to give the game a try. As a result, the few of them ended up looking at each other, and could see the shock in each other's eyes. Immediately, they lowered their heads again and continued to research this game. Judging from their expressions, they were quite stunned with amazement at this Plants vs. Zombies game, and simultaneously felt that it was incredible!

A domestic video game company?

It's even a small, unknown video game company?

And yet their game is fantastic! But no one has ever heard of a domestic video game company that had such standards! Which rock did they pop out from under?

What exactly was a puzzle game? To the countless people in this world, their concept and understanding of a puzzle game would surely be simple graphics, simple gameplay, and simple controls. However, on this day, Plants vs. Zombies had made them open their eyes and made them get a renewed understanding of puzzle games. Real-time strategy? Combined with tower defense features? Looking at those demo versions with their grayed out game modes, there was even an adventure mode included? Zen Garden? Mini-games? The depth of richness of this game and replayability was simply many times greater than other puzzle games! If puzzle games could be segregated into large, medium, and small, then Plants vs. Zombies was clearly considered as a mega-scale puzzle

game!

These video game media personnel were in disbelief!

Around them, the gamers who had tried out the game also thought that this game was a great surprise to them!

"I have a feeling! That this game will definitely be an instant hit!"

"This is really uplifting for our countrymen!"

"Yeah, can you think of a time when a video game company from our country made such an amazing puzzle game? In the past, haven't we always just been imitating the foreign games and picking up their leftovers?"

"Although I don't wish to admit it, the development of our country's puzzle games is much poorer than puzzle games from other countries. Their game production standards are ahead of ours by four or five years, like that very popular Fishing Master which was developed overseas, and was only licensed by a domestic video game company. If I have to say it, then there are no puzzle games made by our domestic video game companies worth mentioning. But all of that has changed now! A worthy name has appeared! This game is definitely world-class standard!"

"Not only that! I think that Plants vs. Zombies is even leading the overseas standards by a couple years! I've never heard of any foreign video game companies that could create such an excellent

game! It's way too much fun!"

"When does it go on sale?"

"I can't wait!"

"Fuck, I've always pirated games in the past, but I think I should definitely support the original this time! It's so rare that we finally get a game that can match a foreign-made game!"

...

At Hall 3.

Some of the staff members at several game booths were chatting.

"Eh, why is the crowd getting smaller and smaller?"

"Yeah, where did everyone go?"

"It's not even lunchtime yet. Weren't there a lot of people just a while ago? Why did it become so deserted now? It has never been like this in the past years, has it?"

"Don't you all know yet?"

"Know about what?"

"A lot of the visitors have gone to Hall 2. I heard that there's a puzzle game being exhibited there, a game called 'Plants hitting Zombies' or something. It's such a hit that all the gamers have the booth surrounded. More than twenty of those video game magazines and media outlets have also gone over to take a look. It seems to be causing quite a sensation, but I don't know about the details myself."

"Puzzle game? How can a small-scale game like that be any fun!"

"What? Rather than coming to try out our large-scale 3D graphics games, everyone went over there to play some puzzle game instead? How's that possible! Those people must be confused, right?"

"I wonder about that too!"

...

At the booth of Plants vs. Zombies.

Right now, this place was extremely packed, with the visitors gathering and extending to the outside of the booth for dozens of meters! It was basically full of people!

When the organizers received news of this, they flew into a rage, thinking that this exhibit must have gotten the bikini booth babes to come back to their booth. They immediately brought a team of

security personnel and rushed over, but when they got there, they were dumbfounded by the scene they saw. Rather than the bikini booth babes, they saw that the booth babes who were within the dress code had all been nudged out of the booth to some place else instead. The entire booth was filled with gamers! A sea of gamers!

What...what was this situation?

Fuck, why are there so many gamers gathered around here!

And they were still wondering why the other games' booths in Hall 2 were so empty. So it was because everyone had come running over here!? Are you guys giving out games or giving out cash? The popularity over here is getting too hot to handle!

Inside the booth.

Zhang Ye and the others made their way out from the booth after they finished playing a demo of the game. Only after they left did they notice that Jiang Yuan, his kid, and the dozens of Central TV Department 1 staff were all lining up to try out the game.

Jiang Yuan also saw them, but did not make any direct eye contact. Central TV Department 1's relationship with Zhang Ye had completely broken down, and since they couldn't get their hands on The Voice's overseas copyright from him, the overseas license deal that they had already completed negotiations on with the foreign party—worth a large sum—couldn't be completed. Not to mention Zhang Ye's court case that everyone knew about which had left them all embarrassed. Whether it was a matter of image or

interest, their relationship was ruined beyond all repair. The only relationship that the two parties had right now could only be described with one sentence: Fight it out! Let's see if our Central TV Department 1's freezing of artists is more powerful or whether you, Zhang Ye, have more endurance! In Jiang Yuan's opinion, this battle was already decided the moment it started. No matter how many lawsuits Zhang Ye could win against them, he could not escape from the "freeze" they had in place for him! Making a celebrity lose their source of popularity in less than a year would definitely be a fatal blow to them. It was as good as a death sentence! Since it had already come to this, no matter how capable Zhang Ye was, Jiang Yuan could no longer be bothered by the sight of him anymore. He had basically caused so much trouble for them at Central TV Department 1 that the executives of Department 1 hated him to the bone!

"Dad, is it our turn yet?" Little Qi asked impatiently

Jiang Yuan replied, "It should be our turn soon. There's still five more people ahead of us."

Little Qi said angrily, "Why are they so slow? Tell them to hurry up!"

Beside them, Jiang Yuan's secretary suddenly called out loudly, "Director Jiang, let Little Qi come over to this line. It's my turn over here!"

"OK." Jiang Yuan let Little Qi run along.

After a short while, a young staff member from Central TV Department 1 flanking him fawned, "Director Jiang, come over to my line. I've got a spot for you!"

Jiang Yuan did not stand on ceremony as the console with the demo was coincidentally situated right beside his son. He strolled over casually and picked up the mouse to accompany his son to test out the game.

Innermost of the booth.

A woman who was in charge of the booth for Plants vs. Zombies finally freed up some time to welcome the media. "Hello, everyone. Sorry to have kept you waiting. I will start accepting interviews from the media now." Looking at her, she seemed very excited, probably because she hadn't expected such an explosive scene today. She had just gotten off the phone a moment ago after making several calls to report to the company on the situation here.

At this moment, more than 15 media outlets surrounded her!

They included those from the video game magazines, newspaper firms, and even Central TV!

A reporter from one of the top video game magazines in the country quickly kicked off the interview. "This is just the first day of this year's National C-G Gaming Expo, but your company's game is already getting all the headlines. You're even outclassing other titles like Spiritual Realms: The First War, The Immortals

Descend, and other anticipated MMO and RPG titles that the gamers were looking forward to for a long time now. It could be said that this is the greatest dark horse to emerge in this year's National Gaming Expo! Can you let us know if you all had anticipated this?"

The manager smiled and said, "Our company is extremely confident about our game, but honestly..." Her eyes swept across the booth. She gave a wry smile and continued, "...we really hadn't expected this at all. Thank you, everyone, for your love!"

A reporter from the newspaper firm hurriedly asked, "How much money did you all invest into the game?"

The manager hesitated for a moment. "I can only say it was in the tens of millions."

A media reporter from Beijing asked, "I tried out the game just now, and it's absolutely amazing. Our country's puzzle games are still only in the infancy of development, but to suddenly have a product that is so amazing pop up from nowhere, can you explain to us how you all did it? Isn't this leap too great? What inspired your company to create this Plants vs. Zombies?"

Hearing this, the manager could only smile. "Regarding the inspiration, I actually don't know about it either."

"Ah?" The media personnel were all taken aback by this reply.

The surrounding gamers were also in disbelief when they heard that. You don't know about it either? The fuck? You're the publisher! If you of all people do not know, then who would?

The manager laughed and said, "This game was actually done with the aid of a patron."

"Patron?"

"What patron?"

"Can you clarify what you mean by that?"

Nobody could understand this explanation.

...

Not far from them.

Little Qi was clapping and exclaiming, "This is so fun! Dad, this game is way too much fun!"

Also surprised, Jiang Yuan played two stages and commented, "Yes, this game is indeed different from other puzzle games. Even I, who has almost never played any games before, got the hang of it quite quickly, hur hur. This game is really quite interesting! Quite interesting!"

Even the director enjoyed playing it?

Jiang Yuan's secretary immediately observed, "Director Jiang, your evaluation of the game is spot on. This game truly is very enjoyable to play and easy to get the hang of. It suits people of all ages, whether they're young or old!"

Another person from Central TV Department 1 remarked, "I didn't know that puzzle games could also be this much fun!"

The person from Central TV Department 1 who had earlier clashed with Ha Qiqi and the others said, "When it gets released, I'll be buying a copy for my son. He will definitely love this game."

Little Qi said, "Dad, I want one too!"

Jiang Yuan smiled. "Sure, I'll buy it for you. Even I'm getting interested in this game after playing it. A game is just like a TV show. It depends on how innovative it is, which is where this game excels in. I wonder which company created this game that even got me interested even though I don't usually play games."

Zhang Ye looked over.

When they heard Jiang Yuan, his secretary, and the rest of the group praising the game nonstop, Ha Qiqi, Little Wang, and the others who were standing outside shot them a glance.

But suddenly, the next line from the manager who was taking

questions from the reporters about Plants vs. Zombies astonished everyone at the scene!

In the face of all the media outlets' microphones and cameras, the manager chuckled and said, "The patron. Well, since I was just coming to it, let me make use of this chance to make an announcement here. Plants vs. Zombies will officially be launched next week, and for the endorsement of the game, we have already discussed with a big shot celebrity. That person is Teacher Zhang Ye, who will be acting as our spokesperson." Before the crowd could react, she threw out another bombshell of an announcement. "Teacher Zhang also happens to be the patron I just mentioned. I myself really do not know what inspired this game, because it was all from Teacher Zhang Ye. He contributed to the game's name, Plants vs. Zombies, the character models, the graphics palette, technical support, mathematical attributes, level designs, and many other things. The entire concept of the game was by Teacher Zhang Ye, so you can say that this game was a collaboration project between Teacher Zhang Ye and our company!"

At that moment, the entire venue burst into an uproar!

"What?"

"Damn! Teacher Zhang came up with the concept?"

"Ah?"

"Fuck, is this for real?"

"Did Zhang Ye cross over to the video game industry as well?"

"What the hell!"

"It's Zhang Ye? Seriously, again?"

The media was stunned!

The gamers were dumbfounded!

No one knew how to react anymore!

Ha Qiqi was staring with her eyes wide!

Little Wang stared dumbfounded at Zhang Ye, who was next to her!

Wu Yi shouted out "fuck" and went into shock!

Then, after the shock, Ha Qiqi, Wu Yi, and the others suddenly turned their sights in unison to Jiang Yuan, his secretary, and the entire group who were still playing the Plants vs. Zombies demo. They looked at them without batting an eyelid!

Jiang Yuan's face turned green!

Jiang Yuan's secretary let out a swear and dropped the mouse in his hand!

The other Central TV Department 1 staff, who were just praising how good this game was, were all staring at each other with their mouths agape. Their faces flushed red and paled at the same time, their expressions looking somewhat distorted!

Zhang Ye's?

Having praised the game so much, they discovered now that this game was created by Zhang Ye?

Suddenly, a few gamers in the crowd suddenly cried out.

"Eh, look at that person who's playing the game! Why does he look so familiar?"

"Eh? Isn't, isn't that the person who was fighting the lawsuit with Zhang Ye?"

"Oh, I remember, I remember! I saw him on television a few days ago. He is Jiang Yuan, the Deputy Director of Central TV Department 1! The Central TV Department 1 executive who did not issue Teacher Zhang's salary to him, and even tried to steal his copyright!"

"Surely not? He was really enjoying the game just now and even praising it to the high heavens."

"Yes, that's him! That's definitely him!"

Jiang Yuan: "..."

His secretary: "..."

When those words were said, the entire venue quieted down. Everyone was staring at Jiang Yuan and the people from Central TV Department 1 with subtle looks in their eyes!

Silence!

Dead silence!

At this moment, it was as though the sound of face smacking was reverberating out from nowhere, as the invisible hand smacked across the faces of Jiang Yuan, his secretary, and their group of people!!

Ha Qiqi mouth twitched.

Little Wang held in her laughter until her face turned red!

The Central TV cameraman who was holding the camcorder up for the interview was also dumbfounded, as he stood still where he was!

Wu Yi also stood there in amazement for the longest time. He had seen before how Director Zhang face-smacked others, but this was the first time he was witnessing such a harsh face-smacking!

This was far too ruthless!

This face-smacking was so hard that it nearly left its victims shitting in their pants!!

Right now, Jiang Yuan only had one thought. If there was a sewage pipe in the ground, he would have definitely crawled inside to escape all this!

Zhang!

Fuck your grandpa!!!

Chapter 762: How Lively It Was!

Zhang Ye became famous!

Plants vs. Zombies also became famous!

And yes, even Central TV Department 1's Deputy Director Jiang Yuan became famous along with them!

...

Monday morning.

Zhang Ye arrived at Central TV Tower for work. However, he discovered that his colleagues of Central TV Department 1 gazed in awe at him. Those who usually stayed an arm's length away from him were now avoiding him like the plague. It was as if anyone who walked within ten meters of Zhang Ye's vicinity would experience an imminent disaster. Among all of them, it was the Central TV Department 1 staff who behaved the most prominently in this manner, looking like they couldn't want for more than to stay at least a hundred meters away from him!

Zhang Ye was made speechless by this, thinking to himself that they must be insane. Did you guys really think that I had deliberately wanted to smack the face of Central TV Department 1's Deputy Director? It was just his bad luck that he appeared in the wrong place at the wrong time, so what could I have done?

Thinking back on the scene that happened at the Gaming Expo, Zhang Ye couldn't help but find it funny, too.

Jiang Yuan was indeed very unlucky. To be fair, Zhang Ye hadn't really planned on giving him a face-smacking; he hadn't even intended to do so. That was because all he could think of that day was the reception Plants vs. Zombies would get, so how could he have been bothered by anything else? Yet Jiang Yuan had to bring his people along and put themselves in the line of fire. It was just a coincidence that on this occasion, the venue and the setting of everything was "just right." So who could be blamed for what had happened?

By now, news of this incident had spread throughout Central TV.

At the main entrance, in the elevators, in the offices, this topic was constantly brought up in discussions.

"Who did you think Director Jiang has offended this time!"

"Pfft, looks like this incident has really blown up quite a lot!"

"Be quiet, don't let people hear us talking about this."

"I know; everyone knows that."

"Hai, Central TV Department 1's Jiang Yuan has really suffered a big loss of face this time. How many times does he have to suffer a downfall at Zhang Ye's hands? The face smacking he received—

even I'm beginning to feel painful on Director Jiang's behalf!"

"Yeah, I saw it on the news yesterday. Even though the footage was focused on the manager of the Plants vs. Zombies booth, Director Jiang, his secretary, and some other people of Central TV Department 1 could all be seen on the left side of the shot. At that time, Director Jiang was even playing Plants vs. Zombies with a delighted expression, having fun as he tried out the game. He looked like he was full of praise for the game. When I replayed it a few times to watch again, I felt the pain as well! It was too painful! The pain from that slap on the face is unlikely to fade for Director Jiang and the others for several months at least!"

"Yeah, I agree. So many of the people at the station who saw the footage cried with laughter. This is really going to be fun to watch from now. How do you think Central TV Department 1 will get out of the embarrassing situation this time?!"

"They can't!"

"Face-smacking Zhang isn't called Face-smacking Zhang for nothing!"

"But it's really not Zhang Ye's fault this time. It was seriously bad luck on the part of Director Jiang. He put himself into that situation!"

"Let's stop talking about this already. If we go on any longer, I won't be able to hold it in anymore and will feel like laughing. Just how on earth could it be so coincidental!"

"Zhang Ye too. How did he end up going to the video game industry and stirring up something again!?"

"Since Central TV Department 1 has already put him into cold storage, what else can he do except take up another side job?"

"I heard that the game is really fun to play!"

"That's right. A colleague from my office went to the Expo. And I quote directly from him: 'I've never seen such a classic puzzle game before.'—His praise for it was that high!"

"That Teacher Zhang, he's really a godly person!"

"He might be a godly person, but we better steer clear from him to be safe rather than sorry!"

"Yeah, that guy is gonna tear Central TV Department 1 apart soon!"

Suddenly, a car arrived outside.

The people who were just arriving for work were slightly startled. They immediately stopped their discussions!

"It's Director Jiang's car!"

"Shh, the main character has arrived!"

"Let's stop talking!"

Even though no one said anything, they could not help but turn their attention Jiang Yuan's face as he got out from his car!

It was an extremely stern expression!

Other than being stern, there were no traces of any other emotions on his face!

At first, this stern expression helped in his show of strong mental fortitude. However, after he got out of his car and noticed countless eyes focused on him—even with over a decade of experience as a boss who had acquired a thick skin—he couldn't help but lose his footing while dropping his stern expression!

"What are you all looking at?" Jiang Yuan shouted, getting angry from the embarrassment!

Everyone dispersed immediately.

His driver, also his secretary, got out from the driver's seat afterwards and was also visibly angry, so much so that his neck even turned red!

How embarrassing!

This was too damn embarrassing!

If not for the exception of a meeting today, the secretary would surely have asked for the day off. In all his life, he had never felt so embarrassed. He was even shown on television as they got hit with a resounding slap under the watchful eyes of all the citizens in the country. No matter how thick their skins were, they couldn't take such a forceful slap!

...

Upstairs.

When Zhang Ye stepped into the office, he heard Ha Qiqi, Little Zhang, and the others gossiping.

Little Wang laughed loudly. "It's sucks that you guys didn't go. You missed a once-in-a-lifetime show!"

Wu Yi said, "The images and scenes at that time, well, they would really be difficult to describe in words! We went to visit the Expo with Director Zhang, but who could have expected to witness a face smacking as well! That trip was well worth it! Hella worth it!"

Zhang Zuo regretfully patted his thighs. "I didn't go because I'm not interested in games. Aiya, if I had known, I would have gone even if my whole body were broken!"

Those from the program team who did not go to the National C-G Gaming Expo all badly regretted it. The way they had been treated by Central TV Department 1 in recent days could be seen by everyone. As such, they were so angered that they already had a list of grievances they could not air, and hated Jiang Yuan and the rest of the executives. Now that such an incident had occurred, it brought them great joy. But the only awful thing was that they didn't witness this face smacking with their own eyes. This gave them a great deal of regret!

Suddenly, someone interrupted, "Whole body broken? Wouldn't that just make you cremains?"

"Director Zhang!"

"Haha, Director Zhang is here!"

"Director Zhang, quickly tell us about that event!"

"Yeah, how the hell could they be so unlucky!"

Seeing that Zhang Ye had arrived, everyone was even more fired up.

Zhang Ye laughed and said, "I don't know why they were so unlucky either."

Zhang Zuo quickly asked, "Then how did you get into video game development?"

Zhang Ye casually answered, "A friend asked me for help, so I just did them a favor."

"Just doing a simple favor like that has probably caused a big commotion in the gaming industry!" Ha Qiqi said flatteringly, "Right now, on the Internet and in the media, everyone is discussing Plants vs. Zombies!"

Zhang Ye blinked. "Is that so?"

Little Wang said, "Just have a look for yourself online!"

When he went back into his own office, Zhang Ye had Little Wang get him a cup of tea and then turned on his computer to browse the Internet. Sure enough, news of the game was raging like a storm online!

There were already plentiful of reviews of the game, Plants vs. Zombies, and analyses of its items. The demo of the game was released last night over the Internet and the number of downloads was constantly increasing!

"It's truly a good game!"

"Recommending it with my life on the line!"

"How cool, this is how a game should be!"

"Yes, after I finished playing Plants vs. Zombies, when I take a look at all the puzzle games that I played in the past, I find that those games were really out to scam us and take us for a ride!"

"A product of Zhang Ye's! Is surely a product of good faith!"

"Why did Zhang Ye jump over to develop games now!"

"That guy has never done things by the book. Who knows what goes on in his head? Though I am appreciative that he chose to be such a jack of all trades this time! Otherwise, from where would we get such a good game?"

"Actually, I was wondering at the start why such a good puzzle game could have originated from a domestic video game company. I knew that our domestic market did not have the capabilities to create something like that. But it was only after I watched the news that I realized the game was actually produced by Zhang Ye himself. Only then did it dawn on me that a puzzle game of this standard could only have come from the mind of Zhang Ye! Did you guys read the firsthand reviews by videogames.net? They gave Plants vs. Zombies a score of 9.9 out of 10! It's the top score in the history of puzzle games!"

"Videogamereviews.net also gave them 9.8!"

"I'm just waiting for the official release of the game now!"

"Yeah, whatever scores it gets are all for nothing. What matters most is still its sales. I heard that it will be launched in another two days. I wonder how it will fare."

"A creation of Zhang Ye's will surely do well!"

"That's right. Just based on Zhang Ye's name on this game, I'll definitely buy it!"

Online, the video game fans were applauding the game with wave after wave!

As the celebrity spokesperson of Plants vs. Zombies, Zhang Ye would naturally do his best for it. After logging into Weibo, he immediately posted a promotional review regarding the game.

Meanwhile.

News of the game was appearing all over the place!

"Puzzle game comes out on top at National C-G Gaming Expo!"

"Reviews of Plants vs. Zombies are out! Likely to set off a flurry of domestically produced puzzle games!"

"Zhang Ye makes his move into the gaming industry!? Citizens express their shock!"

"Even before his lawyer qualification certificate has been filed away, Zhang Ye breaks into the gaming industry!"

"Zhang Ye: A versatile celebrity?"

Of course, there were also some tabloids that were fearless and unafraid of trouble, daring to write any kind of headline!

—"Central TV Department 1's Deputy Director Jiang Yuan drops by personally to support Zhang Ye's new game. Pictures included!"

—"Approving even after losing a court case. A leader's love for his employee!"

—"Face-smacking Zhang smacks faces again, Jiang Yuan flees with his minions from Gaming Expo!"

—"Central TV Department 1 begins placing him in cold storage, but Zhang Ye strikes with another slap across Department 1's face!"

There were all kinds of headlines!

How lively it was!

Chapter 763: Launch Day!

Noon.

Fat Sis called him.

Zhang Ye had just finished eating lunch at the cafeteria and was taking the elevator to go upstairs. In the face of several of his Central TV Department 1 colleagues who saw him as the god of plague while looking down and whispering to each other, Zhang Ye was not affected by it and did not bother them. When he reached his floor, he got out from the elevator alone and answered the call.

Zhang Ye: "Fat Sis."

The moment Fat Sis started to speak, she no longer addressed Zhang Ye the same as before. It was becoming even more casual now. "Zhang'er, the demo of our game has created a big splash!"

Zhang Ye laughed: "Haha, I saw it."

Fat Sis was very emotional. "Right now, the public media is promoting our game for free, I guess this is all down to your influence. Those reporters and media outlets all seem to shoot up whenever a story gets linked to you! The gamers are also giving you a lot of face. When they heard that you were the game's designer, they were all very supportive of it! In the past, Big Sis did not know how many fans you had, but looking at it now, it seems like you really have a lot of fans!"

Zhang Ye: "Everyone's just giving me a little face."

Fat Sis: "The game will officially be launched three days later!"

Zhang Ye: "OK. I'm just waiting for that day to come."

Fat Sis: "The entire company is looking forward to it as well! What are your expectations of the sales?"

Zhang Ye: "What is the distribution method?"

Fat Sis: "For the company's previous game, we did it the traditional way by distributing the game by physical CD-ROMs. As a result, we suffered a loss on our base costs, so let's not mention that anymore, fuck! This time around, we will definitely not do that again, since I can see that sales of physical media is just going to go downhill. This is the world of the Internet now, so the distribution of Plants vs. Zombies will be via Internet downloads. The download itself is free and will be free to play for three days, but after that, there will be a requirement to register to purchase a serial code. However, we've been thinking about what to set the price as for a long time now. We feel that a price between 5 and 15 RMB would be more suitable, but that has not been decided yet, so I would like to listen to your opinion about this."

Zhang Ye thought over it for a bit and replied: "Then let's set it at 5 RMB. A higher price would affect the popularity of the game, so why don't we go for quantity over profit margins? And lay the foundations for this game first? With a solid foundation for the

game, there will be other ways to seek profit in the future."

"Eh, based on what you're saying, do you mean that there will be a Plants vs. Zombies 2?"

"That's a must."

"Hahaha! Good!"

"Let's not get too ahead of ourselves now. Nothing is confirmed as of now."

"I understand. We've already laid out all the preparations, so now, it all depends on this last step! The company has put everything on this; we even took out a loan for it. If Plants vs. Zombies does not sell well, then the company will have to be shuttered!"

"Damn, surely it won't come to that, Fat Sis!"

"I know, I'm just readying myself for the worst case scenario! But I, of course, have also made plans for the best case scenario, haha!"

After putting down the phone, Zhang Ye went back to his office and sat down, crossing his legs. In his mind, he went through the entire process once over. Generally speaking, he was quite optimistic and was full of confidence for this game, Plants vs. Zombies. He distinctly understood that this game had a good lead on all of this world's puzzle games, which had been verified by the

video game market in his previous world. But even though the game was good, the sales figures definitely wouldn't mirror that of the original's. This world had its own rules and also slight differences.

For example, the distribution channels.

The debut country of the game's release.

The business model.

Both worlds had its differences and Zhang Ye could only guarantee a 95% similarity in game replication of Plants vs. Zombies from his previous world. But he could not dictate the distribution channels and regions in accordance to his previous world. He did not have the power to do so either. This was a game that was made by foreigners in his previous world, but he couldn't possibly choose to launch this game in an overseas market first, right? As such, Zhang Ye could only do his best and leave the rest to the market forces!

Have crossed into a new industry this time, Zhang Ye was undoubtedly placing great importance on this game, knowing that he couldn't afford to make a mistake. Having been put into the freezer for so many days now by Central TV Department 1, his popularity was already slipping. Right now, he could only depend on Plants vs. Zombies to help him achieve another rise in his popularity! In the B-list Celebrity Rankings, the competition at this level was so fierce that an industry outsider couldn't understand it. If a celebrity was a B-lister, their name would be very well-known to the people. Basically, more than half the country's people would

have heard of or been able to say their names. This was a level of stardom that had an established fan base, so the unpredictability in standings was also greater. Who knew when one of these B-list celebrities might suddenly get a break in their acting career and star in a popular movie with a box office earnings of over 1 billion RMB? If that happens, their popularity would surely skyrocket. It wasn't an uncommon or unusual occurrence at all. Zhang Ye naturally knew this and understood the principle of not progressing but instead regressing in popularity. In the world of entertainment, what did people compete on? To put it bluntly, it was just a competition of popularity. Zhang Ye could not let himself have no progress at all!

...

On Weibo.

A group of haters suddenly appeared out of nowhere, discussing about things that were about Zhang Ye but were targeted at discrediting Plants vs. Zombies instead!

"Are you all blind? What's so fun about this game!"

"Just look at the graphics and you'll know. It's such a rubbish game!"

"Plants fighting zombies? That's a bunch of nonsense!"

"Only a retard would play this type of games!"

"If this game's sales cross 500,000 RMB, I will jump off a building!"

"Haha, you're thinking too much. 500,000? If it even gets 200,000, they would be laughing already! Don't be taken in by those video game magazines that praised the game to the high heavens after trying out the demo. When it gets released and sold, not many people will bother to buy it! Even if anyone wants to play, everyone would rather download the game after it has been cracked and pirated!"

"When a person gets popular, gossip will fly." This saying applied to games too.

Quite a number of supporters of Plants vs. Zombies immediately launched a counterattack, and both groups of people started flaming each other!

...

It was bustling with activity online, but it was not quiet at other places either.

Like in the entertainment circle, many of the industry insiders were following this matter very closely. They talked about all sorts of things in private.

"I don't even know what to say anymore!"

"Why did this guy go and dabble in games now?"

"I've never come across such a disreputable celebrity before. He's totally unpredictable!"

"Hur hur, I think I already understand what's going on. Zhang Ye's main profession is actually being a jack of all trades. Starting from last year, I couldn't quite figure out what Zhang Ye's main profession is! But then again...this Plants vs. Zombies game is really very fun! Zhang Ye might have offended lots of people before, but he's still a really capable person, I gotta admit that!"

...

The gaming industry was also getting noisy.

"That Zhang Ye is already a big shot celebrity, so why did he still come over to try and take our jobs?"

"Who knows what that guy is thinking!"

"This game is being praised by everyone right now, but the sales might not necessarily turn out well. The market for our domestically produced games is rather weak right now, especially in the puzzle game genre which just built itself up not too long ago. Although everyone has said many good things about Plants vs. Zombies, and have built up a lot of anticipation, the domestic game market has always been rampant with piracy. It's mainly foreign

video game companies and publishers dominating the market, so if we're hoping that a domestically produced puzzle game can stand out in this market? Difficult! It is going to be extremely difficult!"

"Indeed, the sales figures probably won't be too high."

"But it's still a good start. At least our country can still produce a puzzle game that we're proud to show off. Even if it fails, it's fine. This is still a moral victory for us!"

"That's right. There definitely has to be someone to open up the market for our domestic games! Even if it gets loses money!"

"We can only wish them luck on their release!"

"The sales might not turn out badly either. Who knows? Our domestically produced game might be able to create a miracle this time! Who is to say that our domestically made games will always perform worse than foreign games?"

There were also some unfriendly voices against Plants vs. Zombies in the gaming industry, but the majority of the industry professionals still strongly supported it. In fact, the CEOs and game designers of several video game companies even publicly showed their support for Plants vs. Zombies on Weibo by giving Likes and forwarding it. It was very rare that Zhang Ye's crossover into another industry was not met with a call for boycott or doubt, but instead received the blessings of countless video game industry professionals!

The reason was simple. Due to the current state of the domestic gaming industry, domestic games basically weren't mainstream. They only accounted for about a quarter of the market share. The rest was dominated by foreign video game companies. Those who were selfish might think that Zhang Ye was here to steal their jobs, but anyone with a little bit of common sense would know that it wasn't the time for an internal conflict in the domestic gaming industry. For only a quarter market share, what was there to fight for? Even if someone won the fight, so what? What they needed to do now was get the market share back from the foreign companies, and with Zhang Ye's astounding puzzle game, this was their chance to carve out a bigger market for domestic games and also an opportunity to increase the size of the pie!

This battle was not only for Zhang Ye to fight alone.

This battle was between all domestic games fighting against the intrusion of foreign games!

The laypersons watched the buzz, while professionals examined the skills! Almost all the industry professionals in the gaming industry had given the demo of Plants vs. Zombies a try, while some of them had played it over and over to research it. Although this was just a demo and the full version of the game had not yet been seen by anyone else, just this tip of the iceberg had already given them a boost. If they had to pick a game to compete against the foreign games, then from the creativity, graphics, gameplay, and many other aspects of the game, it was without a doubt only Plants vs. Zombies that would stand a chance. All of the video game industry professionals had very high expectations for it and thoroughly anticipated the day the game would be launched!

They wanted to see what kind of results that famous and legendary Zhang Ye could bring after crossing over into their industry!

The industry professionals were all waiting to see what would happen!

The media was looking to fan the flames of hype!

The gamers were all gearing up in anticipation!

The focus of everyone, Plants vs. Zombies was about to usher in its launch day!

Chapter 764: Rave reviews!

Launch day.

It was still an hour away from launch.

In the morning, Zhang Ye held in his hands the documents that Fat Sis had sent to him. He went through it several times in earnest, analyzing the information for domestic sales of puzzle games in recent years. In the data, it not only included the domestically produced casual puzzle games, but also an abundance of foreign puzzle game titles.

Flying Leopard.

Casual domestic puzzle game.

Price: Free.

Sales numbers: 800 downloads on launch day.

Kamikaze.

Japanese turn-based strategy puzzle game.

Price: 9 RMB for mobile version. Not available for PC at the moment.

Sales numbers: 16,000 downloads on launch day.

Fishing Master 2.

Country of origin: America.

Price: 19 RMB for PC version, 6 RMB for mobile version.

Sales numbers: 95,000 downloads on launch day.

And so on.

This was the current distribution of numbers for the casual domestic puzzle games in China. It could clearly be seen from the data of the 27 titles of games the disparity of the domestically made games to the foreign-made ones. The domestically made game, Flying Leopard, had apparently taken a year's time and a cost of 10 million RMB to develop—and was temporarily free to play—only managed a figure of 800 downloads on launch day. Describing it as a miserable result was already a nice way to put it. Then, looking at the foreign-made games, most of the titles had downloads crossing 10,000 on their release days, with the best performer being Fishing Master 2, which built on the success of Fishing Master 1. Its popularity showed with their market share in addition to receiving close to 100,000 downloads on launch day. With this momentum, Fishing Master 2's sales figures would cross 1 million downloads in only a matter of time, and shouldn't be difficult to achieve either.

Of course, the results of Fishing Master 2 still couldn't be compared with those large-scale, famous RPG series, among other popular titles. Nor should they be mentioned in the same breath, since how could you compare a game that was measured in megabytes to one that was measured in gigabytes? And that was the status of puzzle games. The Fishing Master series had an absolute dominance in the puzzle games genre, and was also one of the most popular puzzle games as well!

After reading through the document, Zhang Ye had a heavy heart.

The situation was grim!

The domestic games market did not have much hope!

Now, it just depended on how Plants vs. Zombies would perform. Not only did he want to make a stand for himself, he also wanted to help domestically made games make a stand for themselves... Uh, although it was true that Plants vs. Zombies itself was a foreign-made game to begin with, but then who would know about that in this world?

Hmph!

If this bro says that it is a domestically made game, then it is a domestically made game!

You gonna bite me??

...

The countdown toward the release began!

Three minutes.

Two minutes.

One minute.

At 8 AM, Plants vs. Zombies was officially launched as the resources were made available for download in this world, done in accordance to this world's market conditions with a new method of distribution!

Zhang Ye clicked to download the game. The internet speed was quite slow and the game that was only several hundred megabytes actually took five minutes to download and even got stuck at 90% downloaded. Sitting at his computer, Zhang Ye did not feel like there was any progress at all. But unknown to him, at this moment, many other people were experiencing the same issue!

At a game download website, an uproar kicked up in the comments section!

"Why can't Plants vs. Zombies be downloaded!? My gosh!"

"Why don't you try a different downloader? I can download the game!"

"Me too, but it's really slow!"

"It's slower than a glacier! What's going on!?"

"Same for me, and I have a fucking 100 Mbps connection! But why does it feel like I am back in the era of dial-up? 5 kilobytes per second? Just how slow can it get!"

"Fuck, there are too many people downloading this!"

"Let's switch to a mirror and try! There should be many other servers providing this game for download!"

"Don't bother, it's all the same. I came over from a different server, but the speed over there is about the same. Hai, let's just wait a while!"

"Hahaha, my download is done! I'll go ahead and play first!"

"Fuck you, previous poster!"

"flips table!"

"What dogshit server is this!"

"Who the hell is causing this internet slowdown in my home?"

"It's so slow that I'm crying!"

There were countless comments!

The swearing from tens of thousands of people was a very shocking sight!

...

At Beijing Television Station.

In the program team office of Do You Remember.

A loud shout of surprise rang out in the office. "I succeeded in downloading it!"

It was Hou Ge. After his exclamation, he quickly proceeded to install the game. It didn't take long for the game to be installed. Within thirty seconds, he was at the game's menu.

In that moment, Dafei, Hou Di, Xiao Lu, and a few others all surrounded him immediately.

Xiao Lu said in frustration, "We're all on the same network! Why

is my download taking so long?"

Hou Ge chuckled, "It's down to character, our character!"

Dafei urged, "Hurry up and start the game!"

Hou Di said, "I can't wait any longer. Since this game was produced by Teacher Zhang, it definitely has to be fun! I've even resisted playing the demo!"

Hou Ge clicked his mouse with a swagger. "It's starting, it's starting!"

The game commenced!

Unlike the demo, this full version of Plants vs. Zombies did not bring the player directly into the game mode. Instead, there was a tutorial mode to help players become familiarized with game, and the game character that appeared to guide the player made Xiao Lu, Dafei, and everyone else freeze!

Was this Zhang Ye?

An NPC?

Crazy Zhang Ye?

Looking at that 2D cartoon character that vaguely resembled like Zhang Ye, everyone suddenly didn't know whether to laugh or cry.

"Why is Teacher Zhang also appearing in the game as a guest character!"

"Seems like this video game company really respects Teacher Zhang a lot."

"No duh. This game was designed by Zhang Ye in the first place. Do you think it would be difficult for him to make an appearance in it?"

"Hehehe, Teacher Zhang's pretty smart about it, even endorsing himself all the way into the game. Can you imagine if this game really blows up? How much would Teacher Zhang's popularity increase by? This is goddamn equivalent to pervasive soft advertising for him. You can't shut him out even if you wanted to!"

"I was still wondering why Teacher Zhang crossed over to making games. So it was because he had ulterior motives instead. Who says that Teacher Zhang is being too much of a jack of all trades? In fact, I think that rather than a jack of all trades, he knows exactly what he is doing. Even though taking the bar exam and making games do not seem like logical moves, all those activities actually affect his popularity and exposure to the media!"

"Stop rambling and just play the game!"

...

Peking University.

School had reopened, but on this day, the campus was quieter than usual. The people who would usually take a stroll beside the artificial lake were nowhere to be seen.

Some students who were passing by the area were surprised at this.

"Eh, why is it so quiet around here today?"

"Everyone's in their dorms."

"In their dorms? Aren't they going to get breakfast?"

"Don't you know? Today is the launch day of Plants vs. Zombies!"

"Aiyo! It's today?"

"So do you understand now? Teacher Zhang has always been good to us in the past, teaching us his knowledge and leading us to scold the foreign dignitaries. Even during the recent student recruitment, he helped Peking University stop Tsinghua University's antics. Knowing this, who among us do not appreciate him? Who wouldn't be moved? We don't know when Teacher Zhang can come back to teach us. Since he's releasing a new

product now, we must support him even if it kills us! The Vice Chairman of the Student Council of Peking University and a few other officers of the council have already started calling on everyone to show their support for Plants vs. Zombies!"

"That's right! I won't acknowledge any teachers in the school except Zhang Ye!"

"We must give our support! No two ways about it!"

"Fuck, I better get back to my room then! I have to download the game and purchase a serial code as well!"

...

At one of the female dormitories.

Crosstalk actor Yao Jiancai's daughter, Yao Mi, had already started playing Plants vs. Zombies with a few of her friends. All that could be heard coming from the dorm room were exclamations, laughter, and excited voices.

"Aiya, the zombie is approaching, it's approaching!"

"Are you stupid! Plant the Peashooter!"

"Haha, you got the zombie! Ah, another wave is coming!"

"Ah, I don't have enough 'sun' anymore! I have no resources!"

"Why are you guys so terrible? I've already passed the third level!"

Yao Mi was the first to pass the first three levels of the game. After she had completed the third level, a popup appeared and prompted her to enter a serial code. She needed to buy a serial code before she could continue playing. Without even hesitating, Yao Mi immediately made the payment online. It was only a few yuan, an amount that not too many people would care about. Afterwards, she continued clicking her mouse excitedly as she began the fourth level. The more she played, the more addicted and excited she got!

"This is so fun!"

"I can't stop at all!"

"Mimi, tell us why our Teacher Zhang Ye is so awesome!"

...

A video game company in Beijing.

The Gaming Research Department employees had arrived early for work today. No one was idle as all of them were here to do the same thing: download Plants vs. Zombies! Other people might play games for entertainment and leisure, but for them, it was for

work, in order to learn from the experience of others.

In the office, the game's soundtrack reverberated.

"Hai, the full version of the game is quite different from the demo!"

"You've only just realized? There are so many game modes, but they're still grayed out at the moment!"

"The levels are also different. They're much richer than in the demo. I was just mentioning that if the levels are just going to continue on so monotonously, the repetitive levels will surely cause gameplay fatigue. But after I said that, the next level immediately went into night mode. There's a difference in the strategy of fighting and the type of plants that can be planted in night mode as compared to day mode? How interesting!"

"The person who designed this game must definitely be an expert! If you go on further in the game, there's even a pool mode. Reading from the introduction, there's also a roof mode. There are different strategies for fighting in each mode, so not only does that increase the playability of the game, it also does not cause gameplay fatigue to the player! Is...is this really a creation of Zhang Ye's? Without seven or eight years of experience in game design, how can he possibly have grasped the mind of a player so well? The demo was already amazing, but this full version is even better. After completing a level, I want to go on to the next one immediately. I think that after this level, it's be enough. But then somehow, I still go ahead and click to start the next level!"

"If this game doesn't go viral, I could never justify that!"

"Zhang Ye is indeed just like his reputation!"

"Who knows, Plants vs. Zombies could really lead the charge for our domestically developed video games!"

"This is such a godly game! It's really too goddamn godly! There's actually a day when our domestically made games could come up with such a godly work!? How encouraging!"

The industry insiders were exploding with excitement!

The Internet also exploded with comments from the netizens!

"This is so fun!"

"So the demo really was just the tip of the iceberg!"

"Is this really a game made by a domestic video game company? Did Zhang Ye really come up with the entire design of this game? This is too incredible! I can't believe this!"

"A boost for our domestically made games!"

"I've already recommended it to friends and relatives!"

"This game truly is constantly full of surprises! The more I play it, the more fun I have!"

There were also celebrities who posted on Weibo.

A C-list singer named Wang Qiqi posted a link to Plants vs. Zombies with the accompanying words: "It's so good I'm crying!"

A movie star named Chen Qi posted: "Recommending a good game my friend recommended to me. It's called Plants vs. Zombies. Please support domestically made games!"

Zhang Ye did not know those two people, neither had he come across them before. The reason for their recommendation posts was clearly because this game had truly touched them.

Naturally, Zhang Ye's friends did not idle around either.

Chen Guang and Fan Wenli highly recommended it!

Yao Jiancai highly recommended it!

Dong Shanshan highly recommended it!

At the same time, the media was also making its moves!

A few video game websites had already published their analyses and review of the full version of Plants vs. Zombies. The reviews were very good, just like how the industry insiders rated it! Websites, newspapers, and other entertainment media's reporters did not idle around either. A puzzle game that clearly had nothing to do with the entertainment circle had actually been pushed to the front page or into the headlines as the topic generated massive interest! It was like a wildfire!

"An amazing, classic domestically created puzzle game! "

"Can Zhang Ye continue writing his cross-industry legend?"

"Some industry insiders frank opinions: Not optimistic of Plants vs. Zombies' sale figures!"

"Good but unable to attract an audience?"

"A legend of a domestically made puzzle video game might have begun! "

"Possibility of poor sales? Don't be too pessimistic, don't speak too soon, just remember! The creator of this game is—Zhang, Zhang Ye! "

"The turnaround of domestically made video games? "

Chapter 765: This Guy...Is Actually A Professor?

The Internet was flooded with positive comments!

At home.

After Zhang Ye finished playing a few levels of the game, he exited from it with great satisfaction. When he browsed through the comments and news online, he was delighted. Seeing that everyone had actually given him so much face, he suddenly rolled up his sleeves and shook his hands about as a simple warm up. Without wasting any time, he got into his spokesperson of Plants vs. Zombies mode immediately, except that this spokesperson—uh, kind of didn't have much moral integrity!

On Weibo.

A D-list female actress with the Weibo handle of "Beautiful Little Fanghua" posted on Weibo with an attached picture of steamed buns and bean gruel: "What a sumptuous breakfast. Thank you, Mom. It's so delicious I'm crying!"

When the post was just submitted, [the sofa was immediately snatched!](#)

Obviously, the female actress did not close Weibo straight after posting, but waited to see the comments from the netizens. Who could have expected that, just a second after she posted, someone

immediately commented on it!

Whoa!

Aren't you reacting too quickly?

That female actress giggled as she lowered her head to read, but she was shocked by what she saw!

This name...

This person...

The person who snatched the sofa turned out to be a celebrity as well, the person who was the focus of attention everywhere, Zhang Ye! However, the comment posted by him couldn't be anymore shameless: "Shh, don't make a sound, don't make a sound. Let me quietly share with you a secret. There's a new game called Plants vs. Zombies that is extremely fun to play. I am telling you this, but don't you go telling anyone else!"

That female actress immediately felt overwhelmed by this. This was Zhang Ye! He was the infamous and most miraculous person in the entertainment industry right now! Although he had a terrible reputation, he was still a true B-list celebrity who was popular throughout the country. He was obviously not at the same level compared to her, a small-time actress who hovered around in the D-list rankings. Seeing that it was the legendary Zhang Ye who snatched her sofa, she felt very flattered.

She replied frantically: "This game recommended by Teacher Zhang must be fun!"

Further down in the comments, her fans were also shocked!

"Ah? Teacher Zhang?"

"Aiyo! We have met a god!"

"Hahaha, Teacher Zhang, do you have any shame? This game is obviously made and endorsed by you, so should you be promoting your game in this way?"

As they were messing around and joking there.

Elsewhere, Zhang Yuanqi also had some activity on Weibo. She posted a picture of an airport. "I have just arrived after my flight. Thanks for the warm reception from my fans."

However, the sofa was snatched by Zhang Ye again. "Shh, don't make a sound, don't make a sound. Let me quietly share with you a secret. There's a new game called Plants vs. Zombies that is extremely fun to play. I am telling you this, but don't you go telling anyone else!"

Zhang Yuanqi: "..."

Her manager, Fang Weihong: "..."

The two of them replied with a string of ellipses, showing how speechless they were!

At yet another place.

Crosstalk actor Tang Dazhang, who had a great enmity with Zhang Ye, posted on Weibo: "The weather in Kunming is quite nice. It's so enjoyable to perform here."

Many of Tang Dazhang's fans saw the update on Weibo at the first moment were ready to reply. But after they had just finished commenting, they were shocked to find that they did not get the sofa. The first comment had actually appeared within two seconds of Tang Dazhang posting on Weibo!

Aiya!

Who was it that was so fast?

Are you trying to take off from the runway?

When they saw it, Tang Dazhang's fans were all stunned. Isn't that Zhang Ye, the fucking adversary of Teacher Tang Dazhang?!

Zhang Ye posted: ""Shh, don't make a sound, don't make a sound. Let me quietly share with you a secret..."

Tang Dazhang nearly vomited blood!

Tang Dazhang's fans: "...(*&^%^%...^#@!!"

Zhang! Why are you shameless? Why are you so shameless? Back then, you derided Teacher Tang in the crosstalk competition, yet you still have the cheek to come to Teacher Tang's Weibo to promote your game?? How can you be so fucking shameless?! I've seen hooligans before, but I've never seen such a hooligan as you!

Following that, another crosstalk actor who had a past grudge with Zhang Ye was struck by this misfortune!

That crosstalk artist posted: "Recently, the weather has been cloudy and rainy. I can feel my arthritis acting up again."

Zhang Ye once again snatched the sofa for this post. "Shh, don't make a sound, don't make a sound. Let me quietly share with you a secret..."

That crosstalk artist: "..."

From 9 AM to 10 AM, Zhang Ye snatched the "second floor" on more than 20 celebrities' and public figures' Weibo posts. All of them were the first reply to each post and the content was all the same. He used a sneaky tone that was employed in marketing talk for medicinal treatments to promote Plants vs. Zombies!

All the celebrities were totally lost for words!

The netizens also fainted one after another!

"Teacher Zhang! That's enough, that's really enough of you!"

"Pfft, do you have to have such low moral integrity?!"

"Damn, just how fast is your reaction speed?!"

"I'm so shocked that I peed my pants! What the fuck is this reaction speed? He managed to snatch the sofa every time?"

"Teacher Zhang, can you stop constantly appearing and disappearing so mysteriously?! How much of an endorsement fee did you actually receive? You're working so hard! You're being way too professional!"

"Hahahahahahaha!"

"Godly reaction speed!"

"What the hell! Kneeling down!"

"I've been shocked into a daze!"

"Teacher Zhang, are you on drugs?!"

They had seen celebrities doing promotions before and had also seen them sparing no effort and working hard to promote their works or products they'd endorsed. But Zhang Ye's shameless promoting style was the first time everyone had witnessed something like this! This really lacked morals! It would have been fine if it was some average D-or E-list, small-time celebrities doing this, but you are a very well-known and famous big shot, B-list celebrity. Even within the fiercely contested industry like the entertainment circle, you belong in the top tier, so you...you are far...too...ah!

However, Zhang Ye did not feel embarrassed at all and was still tirelessly going around to carry out the great cause of "snatching the sofa."

In the following stretch of time, to the amazement of the netizens, one after another, celebrities were met with Zhang Ye's "violent sellout." The most impressive thing that left everyone full of admiration was how Zhang Ye always managed to snatch the sofa successfully from under the noses of the celebrities' millions of fans each time!

If it happened one time, it might have been accidental!

If it happened two times, it might still have been accidental!

But what about 20 times? 50 times?

The netizens and celebrities from the entertainment circle were

shocked. First, they were shocked by the speed of Zhang Ye's fingers. Second, they were shocked by his qualities of persistence and shameless perseverance!

...

Shenzhen.

At an entertainment company.

A B-list female actress and singer, who had met with Zhang Ye's "violent sellout" on Weibo earlier, turned to look at the staff member beside her with a stunned face. As she was not particularly familiar with Zhang Ye, she pointed with a blank expression at her cell phone screen showing the Weibo interface. "This guy...is actually a professor at Peking University?"

The staff member smiled wryly. "Yes."

The female actress asked again, "A literary artist?"

The staff member exclaimed, "Yes."

The female actress asked for the third time, "Part of the judiciary?"

The staff member closed his eyes. "Yes."

The actress wiped her sweat away and said, "I didn't study much, so don't try to fool me like that!"

[In Chinese netspeak, the OP is known as 'First Floor', while the first to comment is referred to as the 'Second Floor', or 'SF'. When translated to English, this acronym is sometimes referred to as 'shā fā' which means sofa. Another explanation is that whenever a post is made, the first person to reply usually comment with 'so fast' which is usually irrelevant to the content posted, and just for the sake of getting first. Thus, 'so fast' is simplified to sofa and when a netizen snatches the sofa, it just means that they got the first comment or reply.]

Chapter 766: Selling Like Crazy!

There were traces of Zhang Ye all over Weibo!

He was everywhere!

He was like a shadow that followed you everywhere!

The only reason he could snatch the "sofa" on these celebrities' posts was naturally because he had a method to do so. First off, this fellow was a hacker, the most wanted hacker with the highest bounty in the world, so he definitely used some underhanded means to help himself snatch the sofa. Second, the key reason was because Zhang Ye's hand movement speed was now a far cry from the past. Ever since he had eaten that many Fruits of Agility, his reaction speed had greatly improved. It was the same reason behind his reciting speed; his hand movement speed had also reached a peak. Therefore, no common netizen was able to snatch the sofa from him!

Zhang Ye's promotions had performed beyond expectation, with countless netizens watching on in laughter. Regarding the launch of Plants vs. Zombies, more and more people knew about it by now!

"This joker!"

"Zhang Ye's messing around again, haha!"

"Even though he has been put into the freezer, Teacher Zhang is still so entertaining every day!"

"Is it really a fun game? I'll go and try out Plants vs. Zombies as well then!"

"Supporting Zhang Ye!"

"This promotional campaign is simply astonishing! I'm pretty sure there will be other celebrities doing the same in the future! It's low cost, has a low barrier to entry, and has good effects. This campaign of Zhang Ye's has really touched into a new field of advertising!"

"It's impossible. Who can imitate this style of promoting their products?"

Such promotional techniques might look very straightforward and simple, but in fact, in the entire entertainment industry, only Zhang Ye alone could carry it out. Even if other people followed his strategy down to the letter to do their promotions, they couldn't achieve much of an effect. The reason was simple. First, you needed to have the technique and speed to ensure that you could snatch the sofa successfully. If your comments were a few pages down, who would notice? Even if people noticed, the effect wouldn't be as great, so a majority of those who would want to use this method were already be eliminated. Second, you'd still need to be somewhat of a big shot to do this. A small-time celebrity couldn't carry out such a method of promoting their products. If you were a D-or an E-list rookie and quite unknown in the entertainment circle, would you try and snatch the sofa of those

big shot celebrities' posts and use their platforms to promote your own works? This was obviously not going to earn you any fans. This way of doing things would only devalue the efforts; furthermore, it could possibly offend others. But if you were a big shot, then it probably wouldn't happen this way, since even if everyone did not know each other personally, they would still give a certain amount of face to each other. Even with good hand movement speed and celebrity status, there was still the final requirement to manage something like that. That is, you'd need to have thick skin, reaching to the point of shamelessness!

With a large enough celebrity status.

With a quick enough hand movement speed.

Add on shamelessness to that.

—None of those factors could be missing.

The only person with these three qualities right now in the entertainment circle was Zhang Ye!

That was why this promotional technique could only be managed by Zhang Ye and no one else!

...

Noon.

Zhang Ye's antics finally caught the attention of the official Weibo staff. They had probably noticed him early on, but chose to let it slide at the beginning, thinking that his promotions for the game would stop soon after it started. But as it turned out, Zhang Ye did not even have to thought of stopping. From the morning, he had been snatching the sofas of posts, all the way until noon. It was as though his account had turned into a sofa-snatching specialist account. The Weibo staff found it both funny and annoying. They asked for instructions from their department leader, then grit their teeth as they issued a soft ban on Zhang Ye's Weibo account, stopping him from posting any further!

The reason for the ban: Advertising spam!

When Zhang Ye, who was at home, saw that he could no longer post any comments, he silently cursed under his breath and decided to stop since he had been banned. He shook his tired wrists and then went to get a glass of water. He was actually getting tired already.

He had now done all he could!

The rest was up to Plants vs. Zombies itself now!

...

At Fat Sis' company, everyone was up to their ears with work!

"Has Dayu Video not submitted the animated promotional trailer yet?"

"Uh, they said that they'd get it done today, Fat Sis."

"Go and hurry them up. I've already paid yet they're not getting our jobs done? What the hell!"

"Yes!"

"Fat Sis, quickly have a look at Weibo. Teacher Zhang has been advertising everywhere on Weibo by stealing the sofa on those big shot celebrity posts for the past three hours. Hmm, he's even sacrificed his account and gotten a soft ban!"

"Look at Teacher Little Zhang! Dedicated! He's totally dedicated! Come on, everyone. We have to learn from Teacher Little Zhang and get things moving now! Today is the launch date of our new game, and an important day for the game. The results we'll see in the future will all depend on the effort we put in today! No one should screw up at this critical juncture!"

"Yes!"

"Rest assured, Fat Sis!"

Everyone replied in unison!

Fat Sis asked, "Have the download numbers been calculated yet?"

A person said, "Not yet, but Little Hu is already contacting those game download websites, since we don't have access to their data and can only get it from them one by one. In any case, even if we calculate the data, it's only the statistics for the past four hours."

Fat Sis said, "Four hours worth of data will provide enough of a clue on how we're doing. The players will only need to pay after the first three levels of the game. We're only four hours into the launch now and there are still many players who might have downloaded the game late and not passed the third level yet, so there's no point to look at the serial codes sold for now. It won't be an accurate reflection of the numbers, but the most important thing to know right now is still the number of downloads and popularity of the game. The number of people who download, the number of accounts created—those are the most direct and the most reliable numbers we can check, and those are what I want to know. I will only be able to stop worrying if it can exceed Fishing Master 2's number of downloads!"

"Alright, I will go and hurry Little Hu up!"

"Go on!"

Fishing Master 2 was this year's most popular puzzle game, and since their game was also in the same genre, they definitely had to use it for comparison. Fishing Master 2's launch day downloads numbered close to 100,000, which was the figure for the 24-hour window. So if their Plants vs. Zombies could manage around 20,000 downloads in a four-hour window, then they could say they

had succeeded. If it outperformed and got close to 30,000 downloads during that time frame, then they could say for sure that their game had brought some vindication to domestically made games by outdoing Fishing Master 2's results!

But how did they do?

No one knew at this moment!

Everyone was desperately busy and feeling very nervous. Whether their company could be revived all depended on this day. The company had bet everything it had on this release!

Suddenly, a scream sounded from the office across theirs!

"Fat Sis! Fat Sis!" It was Little Hu from the Operations Department!

Everyone looked over at that instant!

Only to see the office door bursting open and Little Hu stumbling into the office. As she was running too quickly, she did not watch her step and even bumped into the door frame, making her clench her teeth in pain, but not enough to slow her pace, as she ran into the office. She held the data documents with excitement, looking overwhelmed!

Fat Sis quickly asked, "Is it out already?"

Little Hu said with a pant, "It's, it's out!"

Fat Sis immediately asked, "How many downloads? Speak, quick!"

A deputy CEO of the company also asked anxiously, "Spit it out, Little Hu. How many downloads are we up to at this moment?"

Everyone's eyes were fixed on her.

Little Hu's face was flushed, not from the running, but from her excitement as she waved the documents in her hands and said, "The number of downloads for the four hours after launch is... 47,000!"

When everyone heard this, the large office suddenly burst out in jubilation!

"47,000?"

"Heavens!"

"Hahahaha!"

"It's a success! We did it! We really did it!"

"Why are my eyes turning red? I think I'm gonna cry!"

"We've returned back to business this time! It's a hit!"

"Teacher Zhang is way too amazing! I'd said that this game would be no problem! That it would definitely be popular!"

"In the future, let's see who still dares to look down on our domestically made video games!"

Everyone was yelling in surprise!

Someone even threw all the documents in their hands up into the air!

They were all too excited and no one could control their emotions!

Even the company CEO, Fat Sis, had tears in her eyes. She smacked her hand on the table and repeatedly shouted, "Good! Good! Good!"

The company's Deputy CEO nearly shed a tear as he said in a trembling voice, "47,000 downloads in four hours. Then wouldn't that mean we would definitely surpass Fishing Master 2's 100,000 downloads after 24 hours?"

However, just as they were all celebrating, Little Hu from

Operations interjected, "No! No! Fat Sis, CEO Chen, it's not like that!"

Everyone froze.

The Deputy CEO said, "What do you mean by 'it's not like that'?"

Fat Sis was also scowling. "Did you report the wrong statistics to us?"

"Ah?" Everyone thought that this better not be it, otherwise they'd have been happy for nothing!

Little Hu hurriedly waved her hands and said anxiously, "No, I haven't reported it wrong! It's, it's just that you all understood it incorrectly!" She quickly handed over the documents to Fat Sis. "The 47,000 downloads in four hours are not our game's total downloads, b-but the figures from just one of the game download websites, called 77gaming dot net! I still have not managed to get ahold of the other websites for their number of downloads! They have not sent those over to us yet!"

When she said those words, the entire office fell silent!

Fat Sis was startled. "Say that again?"

Little Hu said, "This is just one of the websites' download statistics!"

The Deputy CEO looked shocked, "D-did you get it wrong?"

Little Hu wiped away her sweat. "I thought it was calculated incorrectly too, so I asked 77gaming dot net several times for it, but the numbers they sent to us were always the same!"

Silence!

It was silent again!

47,000 downloads was just one figure from the website of a company among several dozen other companies? No one could believe this! Because...because this was too frightening to be true! If it were real, then the figures were totally unimaginable!

Fat Sis gasped, "Let's go! Lead the way!"

Little Hu knew that they did not believe her, so she quickly led everyone over to the Operations office to "reconcile" the data.

The other employees could no longer be bothered with the work they had on hand. They marched over to the Operations office together and filled that office entirely, both on the inside and outside!

Fat Sis personally handled this matter, even calling 77gaming.net's manager to verify the situation. In the end, the

statistics were verified to be true! There was nothing wrong with the numbers. On top of that, during the time she spoke with them, the internal calculation at 77gaming.net for Plants vs. Zombies' total downloads had already gone up to 50,000!

Fat Sis put down the phone dumbfounded.

All the company's employees were also dumbfounded, not saying anything for a long time!

Then, gradually, all the other partner websites began sending over their download statistics!

Fenghe.net: 30,000 downloads!

A certain download host: 70,000 downloads!

A certain software search engine: 26,000 downloads!

Etc, etc, etc!

These were all the statistics for the four-hour window since launch!

Just four hours worth of data!

It was selling like crazy!!

Plants vs. Zombies...was selling like crazy!!!

Chapter 767: Steamrolled!

"Is that real?"

"Oh my god!"

"These statistics are too exaggerated!"

"Aren't, aren't we defying all logic with this?"

"I have a hunch that our company is going to create a shockwave both domestically and overseas this time!"

Everyone sucked in a breath as some stood still, while others were clutching their thumping chests, and some were so excited that their hands were trembling. They didn't know how to express themselves at this point anymore. At this moment, they felt that even if they screamed or cheered, nothing would come out, because these statistics were so unbelievable that this group of people couldn't regain their senses to cheer due to the shock!

The Deputy CEO shivered and said, "Fat Sis."

Another deputy CEO was sweating profusely from his forehead as he sought for instructions. "Should we publicly announce these statistics? Announce it now?"

Fat Sis had at least twice the mental fortitude they had, yet at this

moment, her forehead was also sweating profusely. She wiped away her sweat and said, "Don't announce it yet. No one will believe it even if we announce it now. Let's just keep a low profile for now and finish all the promotions and work scheduled for today. We can announce the overall statistics after 24 hours instead!"

"OK!"

"I-I understand!"

Fat Sis suddenly remembered. "Oh yes, inform Teacher Little Zhang about this. He's the biggest contributor and has a share in this game, so there's no need to hide it from him."

"Yes, ma'am!"

Fat Sis gave a wave of her hand. "Hurry up and get back to work!"

Her voice trembled slightly and sounded a bit weak—this was clearly because her heart was beating too fast which caused her blood flow to increase too quickly, resulting in this adverse effect.

...

Caishikou.

At Zhang Ye's parents' house.

Zhang Ye immediately received a call from Fat Sis's company and was informed about the number of downloads for Plants vs. Zombies in the past four hours. After hearing this figure, Zhang Ye took a deep breath as he knew that it was a foregone conclusion from here. No one could stop the rise of Plants vs. Zombies anymore! However, he did not gasp in shock like the group of people at Fat Sis's company. First, Zhang Ye had experienced more things in the past, none of which were less impactful than this event. As a result, his mental fortitude was naturally quite good. Second, Zhang Ye was likely the only person in this world who knew about the background of Plants vs. Zombies. Back in his previous world, be it however much money this game had earned or the amount of downloads, he knew it all quite well!

...

Online.

The heated discussions kept increasing!

"Hurry up and download Plants vs Zombies! It's so fun! I guarantee this on my honor!"

"I'm numb. Who were the ones who trash-talked this game two days ago? That person kept saying how this game was garbage, but when I downloaded the game to try it out, I ended up getting hooked after playing! Previously, playing such puzzle games were just for leisure and to relax ourselves. But Plants vs. Zombies is no longer simply for relaxation. You'll get addicted to it! It's

comparable to playing a real-time strategy game! How satisfying!"

"How many downloads has it gotten?"

"I don't know!"

"Who has any idea? Please reveal it to us!"

"They haven't even announced it yet, so who would know what the exact numbers are?!"

"I feel that the number of downloads of this game definitely won't be lower than Fishing Master 2. The worst outcome is that they will be on par! Otherwise, I could never justify that!"

Many of the netizens downloaded the game and had an enjoyable time playing it. On seeing the overwhelming discussion about Plants vs. Zombies online, everyone knew that there were a lot of people playing this game as well. However, they did not know exactly how many and could only wait for the statistics to be released, which would be the most reliable information.

Many people were waiting to see the results of Plants vs. Zombies!

At around 3 PM.

A staff member at a game download website suddenly updated

with a post on Weibo: "Everyone should prepare themselves mentally for the number of downloads for Plants vs. Zombies, as it has probably exceeded everyone's expectations. I don't have the overall statistics for the number of downloads of this title with me, but using the number of downloads and traffic flow to our website, we can make a rather accurate estimate. Don't blame me for not warning everyone, so everyone better be mentally prepared for it!"

When the netizens saw this, they pounced onto it right away!

"Just how many downloads is it?"

"Dammit, don't keep us guessing!"

"Are you trying to cliffhanger us? What are the number of downloads of the game on your website?"

"Your sister, hurry up and tell us!"

"Why must we be mentally prepared? Could it be that Plants vs Zombies might exceed 200,000 downloads on launch day? Aren't you thinking too much? The downloads for Fishing Master 2 on the first day were only about 90,000, but Plants vs Zombies might be double that? It can't be that much, right? I know that Plants vs Zombies is very fun, but Fishing Master 2 is a classic sequel from the Americans and is also inheriting the success of Fishing Master 1. It's not just some pushover!"

"Why are you only telling us half the story!? You're really

cliffhanging us!"

"Could it really reach 200,000 downloads on the first day of launch?"

"Fuck, if it's really like that, then wouldn't Plants vs. Zombies be defying all logic?"

"Or it might only reach 150,000 downloads?"

"Even 150,000 downloads would be considered very high!"

Everyone was left guessing at what would happen next!

A few gaming industry insiders appeared as well and joined in the guessing and analysis together with everyone.

However, those people who had the information stayed silent at this moment and did not say a word. A reporter at a video game magazine called up a website operator to make an inquiry, but the reply they got was to be mentally prepared, without getting any exact figures!

This was too suspenseful!

But the more they felt this way, the more curious they became!

One hour...

Two hours...

There were some things that could be hidden from gamers but not industry insiders. As professionals in the same circle, each of them had their own network of contacts. Very quickly, many industry insiders obtained the information on the number of downloads for Plants vs. Zombies through various channels!

At this moment, the gaming industry suddenly went quiet!

It was as though the mute button had been pressed and everyone immediately fell silent!

Under this very odd atmosphere, the critical time period of the first 24 hours of launch was ushered in for Plants vs. Zombies!

The next day.

At 8.20 AM.

Under the focus of the entire country, the video game company that produced and published Plants vs. Zombies officially announced the figures of the total downloads across all the game download websites. The download figures for the 23 websites were listed one by one, with the total downloads of Plants vs. Zombies after 24 hours tallying:

1,580,000!

"Ha, it's released!"

"The results have finally been released! I nearly died from the waiting!"

"How much is this?"

"Eh, why are there so many zeros?"

"Wait, let me count the number of zeros!"

"Ten, hundred, thousand, ten thousand, hundred thousand... one, one million!?"

With the initial glance, everyone still could not grasp the big picture, but when they started to count the zeros one by one, everyone got a fright from the numbers in front of them!

"What?"

"Holy fuck!"

"1.58 million?!"

"The-these numbers..."

"G-go to hell!"

"Why is it so fucking high?!"

"What kinds of numbers are those?"

The gamers were dumbfounded!

The media reporters were dumbfounded!

Even those industry insiders who were already mentally prepared were also dumbfounded!

This was obviously not an amount of downloads that a small-scale puzzle game should have received. Let alone puzzle games, even those famous RPG, action, and FPS games—their first day sales couldn't achieve such a volume either! Much less a casual puzzle game for niche audiences!

More than a million downloads?

If the statistics weren't wrong, then it must be the gamers who had gone crazy!

Wasn't Fishing Master 2 a great game? It was the most popular

puzzle game nowadays, and the number of downloads for it on release in the domestic market was only about 100,000! Moreover, the game could only set that kind of heaven-defying record because it had accumulated a high amount of popularity from the prequel! But Plants vs. Zombies? It was a brand new game made by a video game company that no one had heard of before, and it was even a domestically made game? The number of downloads on release day had even surpassed Fishing Master 2's downloads by a factor of ten??

The video game industry was in an uproar!

The gamers exclaimed in disbelief!

In recent days, the reputation of Plants vs. Zombies was very well-known and widespread; the feedback after trying out the game was also great. A lot of people commended endlessly about it and the industry's appraisal of it was very high. But even so, after these results were published, the people were still stunned, and nearly even fainted from shock one after another!

More than 1.5 million downloads on launch day!

Ignoring all the puzzle video games published in the world this year, just from looking at the launch day statistics of all the puzzle games in the history of this world, there had never been a result like this either!

This had broken all records in the history of puzzle video games!

And it had broken the old record by several times over!

The closest result to this record by Plants vs. Zombies was set five years ago by a game called My Orchard! It was released in America and the number of downloads on launch day locally was 420,000! It was the bestselling casual puzzle video game in the history of the entire world! But Plants vs. Zombies was between three and four times more downloaded than this long-standing, number one puzzle game in history!

"Oh my god!"

"Oh my god!"

The Internet blew up with countless shocked comments!

Their domestically made games had actually scored a victory over a foreign-made game? And it wasn't simply just a victory, they were fucking steamrolled!

According to calculations from the downloads on launch day, could it be that Plants vs. Zombies might have a chance to head toward 100 million downloads within six months or a year??

Thinking of this, everyone was stunned again!

100 million downloads?

Is this even a fucking puzzle game anymore?

Is this still a puzzle game meant for an extremely niche audience!?

Chapter 768: Pirated Copies Start Appearing!

On the same day.

The news of this was appearing all over the place!

"Plants vs. Zombies latest attack!"

"Launch day downloads set new record!"

"Industry insiders predict: Plants vs. Zombies to reach 100 million downloads within six months!"

"Zhang Ye—A person who keeps rewriting his legend!"

"Zhang Ye gives invaluable boost to domestically developed games!"

"The future looks bright for domestically made puzzle games!"

"Plants vs. Zombies steamrolls all similar genre games in this quarter!"

"Zhang Ye has written his name into the annals of China's gaming industry! An insurmountable achievement for puzzle games that others may never beat has been made!"

All of the media was harping about it!

The game was selling like crazy! Newspapers were also selling like crazy!

"What a great feeling!"

"We've really given the foreigners a run for their money this time!"

"Those sales numbers, they're too damn unbelievable!"

"Those other foreign-made games that went on sale in the same period were still boasting about how they wanted to achieve sales of several million or tens of millions during their promotions, but look at this now! They didn't even get close to Plants vs. Zombies!"

"Plants vs. Zombies is on fire! Zhang Ye is also on fire!"

"Thinking about how Central TV Department 1 was trying to put Zhang Ye in cold storage, it really feels like they have been living in their own world all this while thinking that it could work! Zhang Ye is such a godly person. Whichever industry he goes to, he can always shine! How do you stop someone like that? How can you stop someone like that? How laughable are those Central TV Department 1 execs, thinking that they could have the last say in things!"

"Yeah, even the SARFT couldn't keep him down, so who does Central TV Department 1 think they are?"

"Right, if Teacher Zhang intends to keep his popularity, he can just make a game every two months. Not only can he maintain his popularity, he might even gain a significant amount of popularity!"

"It's just a pity about Zhang Ye's program planning talent. Hai, I really like those variety shows he created!"

"I like them too, but I guess there's no way to avoid that. Central TV Department 1 has already cut off his path in the area, so there's no hope that we'll see Teacher Zhang's programs for at least the next half a year or more. We'll have to wait until his contract with Central TV Department 1 runs out. Hai. So during this period, Teacher Zhang will have to find other, unconventional ways to keep increasing his popularity!"

In the following few days.

The download numbers for Plants vs. Zombies continued to soar. The speed at which it increased made the netizens and industry insiders watch while somewhat aghast!

2 million downloads!

5 million downloads!

8 million downloads!

The numbers were skyrocketing!

Ignoring the outsiders, even the staff of the video game company that made Plants vs. Zombies were shuddering at this. It was like they were in a dream, afraid they would wake up at any moment!

Many of Zhang Ye's friends congratulated him.

Big Saber Bro: "Teacher Zhang has created yet another glorious achievement!"

Dong Shanshan: "Congratulations!"

Fan Wenli: "A milestone for domestically made games! An insurmountable achievement!"

Yao Jiancai: "@ZhangYe get me a serial code for the game, quickly!"

There were also a few gaming industry insiders who left their comments for Zhang Ye.

Yellow Star Game's Deputy CEO: "Plants vs. Zombies has opened the door for the gaming world. I have never been so confident of our domestic games market than I am today!"

A famous video game producer: "This is our domestic games

market's counterattack!"

In the past, their understanding was that casual games were only meant for niche audiences. This was true both domestically and internationally. Many people don't seem to take such puzzle games seriously, believing that they were made by small, indie game companies that did not have the resources or money to develop a proper game. But today, Plants vs. Zombies had changed everyone's mindset with a flick of the wrist! A niche genre? Puzzle games were definitely not a minor genre! It had a massive market that no one could have expected in the past! Looking at the number of downloads of Plants vs. Zombies, would a minor genre video game create such a miracle?

Therefore, puzzle games were also part of the mainstream video game genres!

Although the barrier to entry was low, and the price of such games was low or even free, these were exactly the advantages that puzzle games had. Due to its lightweight size, with the games taking up some tens of megabytes to over a hundred megabytes or so, it made it very convenient to download. If you felt like playing, you'd only take a minute to download and install it. On top of that, the low cost model of such games also attracted a larger group of players, making small profits but with a large volume. The budget needed to produce a puzzle game definitely wasn't going to be greater than that of a large-scale RPG or MMO. In the past, everyone thought that the puzzle game genre was niche because they did not have Zhang Ye's capabilities to make a game that was like Plants vs. Zombies! Not because this genre was underperforming!

The gaming world couldn't be more excited!

Zhang Ye had opened up a path for them, a path that would help them disrupt the movement of foreign games. Due to the differences in technical standards, they were still temporarily unable to create those exquisite 3D-rendered, large-scale games. Other than having a slight advantage in the domestic games market with their xianxia genre video games, they were no match for foreign video game companies in the genres of first-person shooters, fantasy, action, etc. Compared with them, they were of a different class, as some did not have the budget, while others did not have the technical capabilities. However, it was different for puzzle games since they did not have much of a technical barrier to them. What did these games depend on? Creativity! It was creativity that would brighten your eyes! Plants vs. Zombies had given them a good start and let those domestic video game companies struggling on the verge of bankruptcy see the light at the end of the tunnel!

...

On the fourth day after the launch of the game.

Fat Sis officially invited Zhang Ye to a celebratory feast held at The Peninsula Beijing Hotel. All thirty-odd employees of the company were present as well!

There was an abundance of dishes.

There was no lack of alcohol either.

Fat Sis raised her wine glass and declared, "Zhang'er, a toast to you!"

The two Deputy CEOs of the company chorused, "A toast to you!"

"Let's not stand on such ceremony." Zhang Ye clinked his glass with theirs. "This is the collective effort of everyone, not mine alone, so let's not give a particular toast to anyone and just drink together."

One of the Deputy CEOs had taken just a sip of white wine and his face had immediately flushed red. "We've really done ourselves proud this time!"

Fat Sis asked, "Zhang'er, do you think that Plants vs. Zombies can exceed 100 million downloads?"

Zhang Ye laughed. "I don't know, but I think there's a good chance."

A female staff member said excitedly, "It's definitely not going to be a problem! We've already reached 8 million downloads today! I think we can finish the week with 10 million downloads!"

Another staff member added, "Yeah, the sales figures are also out. Paying customers stand at 47% of all users and there are literally millions of yuan coming in every day!"

Their company had initially developed their previous game with an investment of a few million RMB. But after Zhang Ye made his changes to it, although the outlook of the game had changed drastically in Plants vs. Zombies, the core game engine was still the same and there was no need to rebuild the game from scratch. Therefore, even though the publicized investment amount of Plants vs. Zombies was over ten million, it was just a figure of speech and did not reflect anything too accurately. If they were to exclude Zhang Ye's endorsement, copyright, and production fees, the entire sum the company invested was just several million RMB, which was also the maximum amount that their company could afford at that time.

But now, their returns were obviously going to be much greater!

The daily earnings of Plants vs. Zombies were almost about to offset the entire investment into this game! The remaining sales were pure profit! This time, they were going to earn big!

During the dinner, the atmosphere was extremely warm and the staff were all visibly excited.

After some pushing around of wine glasses, Fat Sis looked at Zhang Ye and brought up the matter of the endorsement fee again. "Zhang'er, the game is selling like crazy because of you. You were the one who designed this game, but we have yet to talk about your endorsement and copyright fee. We had a management meeting at the company yesterday and touched on this matter. Whatever is between you and me shall remain private, but we still have to keep business as business and make everything clear beforehand."

Zhang Ye gave a wave of his hand. "Fat Sis, we can talk about this in the future. I don't have any need for money right now, nor do I have anywhere to spend it on."

"But still..." Fat Sis replied.

"Why don't we do it this way." Zhang Ye smiled. "When I need the money in the future, I will ask you for it!"

Fat Sis thought about it and decided, "Fine. I will convert some shares for you and make you one of the company shareholders. As for the amount of the share, I will discuss this with my sister and see how to suitably deal with this. Once I have the details, we can meet again and discuss it. If there're any requests you may have, you can let me know as well."

Zhang Ye bluntly responded, "There's no need to discuss this with me again. Just talk to Old Wu about it and I will listen to her."

These words sounded a little strange.

Fat Sis gave him a look and asked, "You seem rather close with my sister."

Zhang Ye, realizing what he'd said, quickly added, "Yes, Old Wu is my old boss, so whatever my old boss says, I definitely have to accept."

Only then did Fat Sis realize.

Suddenly, a phone call came in.

Fat Sis answered it. "Hello...Yes...What!?"

After she got off the call, Fat Sis did not look too good and everyone gathered around her anxiously.

The Deputy CEO asked, "What's the matter?"

Zhang Ye also asked, "What happened?"

Holding back her anger, Fat Sis said, "There's a pirated version of Plants vs. Zombies that's appeared online!"

"Ah?"

"How could that be!"

"How did it happen so quickly?"

"This is bad news!"

Everyone's faces turned pale!

Pirated version? These were the words that a video game

company feared hearing, something that was as bad as taking their livelihood away! The domestic games market already wasn't good to begin with, so if their games were pirated, then what would there be left to make money from? Their earnings would surely take a hit and they might even end up with nothing!

Actually, they had already made preparations for this before the release of the game. Piracy was not a stranger to any video game company, and they knew that it was impossible to avoid it. But even though they were prepared, they couldn't have expected the pirated copy to come so quickly, so quickly that it caught them off guard!

Fat Sis said, "Previously, our company's released games would take a very long time to get pirated, with some taking up to six months or so. That was because our games did not sell well and there weren't exactly many players either, therefore there wasn't any commercial viability for the pirates to spend too much time cracking those games. However, this time, Plants vs. Zombies has become so incredibly popular across the country that those pirates and opportunists must have laid their eyes on this game immediately! They're out to steal our livelihood! Those bunch of bastards!"

Zhang Ye frowned. "They can play even without the serial code now?"

The group of employees beside them started checking online for more information!

Fat Sis nodded. "After the first three levels of the game, they

don't need the serial code for the game to work anymore, but that only works until the sixth level. Right now, this pirated copy of the game is not fully cracked and there are still a lot of bugs in it. Many of those who play the pirated version will have the game crash to desktop once they complete the sixth level, which is why we don't need to be too worried for now."

One of the Deputy CEOs said, "We can't not be worried! This game has only been released for a few days and there's already a pirated copy going around. It's only a matter of time before they crack the entire game. Besides, now that many of the players who had intended to purchase the game know about this, who knows if a majority of them will decide to not pay for it anymore and just wait a little longer for the pirated sources. This will affect our sales so much that it's surely going to be a devastating blow to us!"

Fat Sis nodded and said, "Yes!"

Everyone's hearts felt heavy.

Plants vs. Zombies was only just budding, with the media and industry both holding such high hopes for it that they even announced that the game would be able to get a hundred million downloads. But as it turned out, it took just a few days for the pirates to come and destroy its potential! If the game was fully cracked, then how many more official sales of their serial codes would take place? If they depended on domestic market physical sales, there would still be sizable earnings. Together with advertising and other partnerships, they could receive an income from those channels, but the sale of the game's serial code was still the most basic source of earnings for the company and also the

largest chunk of it, so this was a channel that they couldn't afford to lose!

At least, they couldn't lose it so quickly!

"What should we do now?"

"Those bunch of wicked pirates!"

"Fuck their ancestors!"

Faced with this unexpected bad news, many of them began cursing. They were no longer in a celebratory mood. With this bad news, the progress that Plants vs. Zombies had gained for the company would all come to naught!

Grasping the situation, Zhang Ye thought for a moment and then stated with a smile, "Hmm, why don't we do this? I'll give it a try and see if we can bring the piracy under control."

The Deputy CEO was taken aback by this suggestion. "What are you going to do?"

The other Deputy CEO replied, "You can even bring piracy under control? How are you going to control it?"

Zhang Ye did not answer them and just said, "I'm going to make a call. Like I said, we can only give it a try."

Chapter 769: The Pirates Piss Their Pants!

Many netizens already knew about it.

"Something bad has happened! Plants vs Zombies has been cracked and pirated!"

"I can't play. It's always crashing to the desktop!"

"There should be a fully cracked version in a few days."

"Plants vs. Zombies is in danger! Those software pirates are very ruthless people!"

"We should have guessed. The video game company that made Plants vs Zombies is just a small, unknown company that has limited technology and is inexperienced. Their anti-piracy techniques are definitely not comparable to those big companies. So it wasn't surprising when that step of purchasing a serial code to continue playing Plants vs Zombies got cracked so quickly. The encryption technique of Plants vs Zombies must be at the most basic level! If it were the other, bigger companies, they'd have ensured that their game wouldn't be pirated for the next three months!"

"It's too late to say anything now!"

"That's right, since the pirated version is already out, we can't expect this version of Plants vs Zombies to be able to make much

money anymore! At most it can only earn some reputation!"

...

Outside.

Zhang Ye found a spot with no one around and leaned on a rather clean wall in the corridor. Then he took out his cell phone and browsed through the names, finally pressing the name "Dong Zhiqiang."

Du, du. Two rings later, the call connected.

Dong Zhiqiang laughed heartily on the other end of the call: "A rare guest, Teacher Zhang. What made you suddenly think of me that you would give me a call?"

"Director Dong, are you busy right now?" Zhang Ye laughed too.

Dong Zhiqiang replied: "Kinda. There haven't been too many major cases in recent days."

Zhang Ye asked: "Is everyone doing well?"

"Everyone is fine. They're still talking about you when they're free, especially Fan Yingyun." Dong Zhiqiang asked: "Why? Is there a reason you're looking for me?"

Dong Zhiqiang—Director of the National Internet Surveillance Bureau's First Department. Previously, in order to help Zhang Ye avoid custody, Rao Aimin asked her junior to help him get attached to the Internet Surveillance Bureau's First Department to work for a short period of time. He even experienced the Sino-Korean hacker war together with them, so their relationship was really quite good and they still kept in contact with each other. However, they were still in the dark about the role Zhang Ye played in the Sino-Korean hacker war. Fan Yingyun also known as "Big Saber Bro" or "Fan" worked in this department too. With several levels of relationships, nobody considered each other as outsiders anymore.

Zhang Ye said: "I wouldn't come to you if I didn't have something to ask of you. Hai, actually, I should have paid you a visit personally, but because the issue is quite urgent, I had to call you instead."

"There's no need to be so polite with me. If there's anything you need help with, just say it," Dong Zhiqiang said without hesitation.

Zhang Ye said: "It's like this. Didn't I create a game called Plants vs. Zombies recently?"

Dong Zhiqiang happily replied: "I know about it, of course. The entire team is playing it in the office every single day. Since there is not much work to handle now anyways, I turn a blind eye and let it slide."

"There's already a pirated version of the game out."

"This fast?"

"Yes, so I hoping to ask for your help. Can you strike a blow at the pirates?"

"Ah?"

"The software pirates these days are too rampant, so there should be a serious crackdown on them!"

"You've worked with our Internet Surveillance Bureau before, so you should know that this area doesn't fall under our jurisdiction. Frankly, ours is the serious crime unit for network security. We're all dealing with international network crimes, cyber-financial crimes, and national security defense," Dong Zhiqiang said, a little bemused by this. "For pirated games..."

Zhang Ye refuted him, claiming: "Don't you look down on piracy. This is a very severe issue and will cause harmful effects to the safety of the people. Do you know how rampant the pirates are now? Whether it is games, movies, or novels, no industry can prevent piracy from happening. Because of piracy, the economic losses every year are in the valuations of billions or tens of billions of yuan. Meanwhile, how much money can a cyber-financial crime involve? If it's tens of millions of yuan, it will be labeled as a major case, right? But what about piracy? It costs several billion in losses! So this is a major case for sure! It's an earth-shatteringly major case!"

Dong Zhiqiang: "..."

Earth-shatteringly major case? What?!

"Do you know how many families and people's lives have been destroyed because of piracy? Do you how many people became homeless because of piracy? My heart is grieving, Director Dong! This really makes me heartbroken! This kind of crime should not be tolerated as it is not only a loss of personal earnings but a loss of earnings for the country as well! Faced with this sort of behavior, we must have zero tolerance for them! We must strike them with a hard blow! We absolutely must not show any mercy to them! I volunteer myself to lead from the front and be the vanguard. We will make an example out of the piracy of Plants vs. Zombies first!"

Initially, his claims were somewhat true, but the longer he went on, the more unreliable his argument became.

Dong Zhiqiang also knew about Zhang Ye's eloquence as they were already old acquaintances, so he immediately interrupted: "Alright, Teacher Zhang, I understand what you're getting at. Why not? Since there aren't many major cases to handle for the next few days anyways, I'll get the employees to handle this matter. Since it's for you, they'll surely be diligent in handling it."

Zhang Ye replied: "Alrighty then. Thank you, Director Dong."

Dong Zhiqiang laughed: "You are a brother of our Internet Surveillance Bureau's First Department, so why are you being so courteous with me? Just treat everyone to a meal after it's settled."

"That's for sure." Zhang Ye stated: "You all can pick the place."

Since Director Dong agreed, Zhang Ye knew that there would definitely be no problem. The Internet Surveillance Bureau was well known for its reputation, and Zhang Ye knew that only he had such a privilege to seek help from them. If it were other people, there would be no chance that they could get help like this. Even it was just a simple task, a serious crime unit like the Internet Surveillance Bureau would not be bothered to handle cases like online piracy.

When he returned to the room, everyone started questioning him.

"How'd it go, Teacher Zhang?"

"Can you really get our game's piracy under control?"

"Has it been settled?"

Zhang Ye said noncommittally, "It's should be settled soon. Let's just wait for the news."

...

That afternoon.

At 4 PM.

A district police station in the suburbs of Beijing suddenly received an order from their higher-ups to cooperate with the Internet Surveillance Bureau's First Department to arrest a criminal suspect in their area of jurisdiction. As for the exact details of the case, the higher-ups did not specify it to them.

Internet Surveillance Bureau's First Department?

That serious crime unit in the National Internet Surveillance Bureau?

The same Internet Surveillance Bureau's First Department that had uncovered the transnational internet criminal network, involving five deaths and over a billion yuan worth of funds some time ago?

The district police station suddenly went on guard, as though they were facing with a formidable enemy!

Everyone became nervous and were put on high alert!

"Hurry! We've been dispatched! Don't inform the local police post; our district police station will handle it directly! We have to ensure that the information does not leak! Everyone, hand over your cell phones and all communication devices! Contact the Armed Police Force immediately and ask them to deploy 10...no... deploy 20 armed police officers! Remember! Everyone is to wear their bulletproof vest! Be careful and protect yourselves! I repeat, collect your arms and put on your bulletproof vest! Be careful and

protect yourselves! We have a major case on hand! Everyone, let's move out!"

With a command from the captain of the district police station, a wide net was cast immediately!

...

At 5 PM in the afternoon.

Inside a house in the suburbs of Beijing.

When Zhang Guangwen was surrounded by more than thirty armed police officers, he was left staring down the barrels of all those guns in tears!

He pissed his pants!

He truly pissed his pants!

The captain of the district police station asked coldly, "What is your name?!"

Zhang Guangwen trembled and said, "Zhang...Zhang Guangwen!"

The captain of district police station shouted, "Put your hands behind your head and squat down!"

Zhang Guangwen didn't know what to do and kept flailing his arms about. "Policeman Bro, Policeman Uncle, what is...what is this..."

Seeing him still moving about with his hands touching his pocket at times and looking like he was reaching for a "weapon," all the police officers brought up their guns in alarm and shouted, "Don't move! Do not move! We're warning you! Put your hands behind your head immediately! Otherwise we will shoot!"

There was a policeman holding an unknown equipment sweeping through the room nervously. He seemed to be sweeping the place for explosives!

Zhang Guangwen began to cry. He acknowledged that he was not a good person, but he couldn't be considered an evil person either. The most he did was to dabble around with technology, cracking some games when he had nothing to do and selling them to the pirates to make some money. He swore that he had never committed any heinous crimes before! The present situation in front of him had nearly scared the shit out of him. More than thirty armed police officers wearing bulletproof vests had come to arrest me?

I am done for!

This is going to end with a death sentence!

And it's not even going to be a normal death sentence! This is

going to be an execution with me getting shot several times until I die!

My life is over!!

Zhang Guangwen's eyes rolled backwards and he fainted.

At this moment, a call from the Municipal Public Security Bureau arrived.

The head of the Municipal Public Security Bureau asked: "Have you arrested the person yet?"

The captain of the district police station answered: "Yes, we have caught him. We are searching for weapons or bombs in his house at the moment!"

The head of the Municipal Public Security Bureau was stunned. "What weapons? What bombs?"

The captain of district police station was also stunned. "Isn't this person a wanted international criminal? This bunch of fugitives can do anything and it would not surprise me if there were weapons in his house!"

The head of the Municipal Public Security Bureau said: "What weapons are you talking about? He's just a person who cracked and pirated some games. The Internet Surveillance Bureau's First Department wanted to give the pirates a warning. That's why I

issued an order for you all to arrest and interrogate him!"

Ah?

They are software pirates of games??

Fuck, why didn't you say so earlier?! We even put on our bulletproof vests for this!

The officers of the district police station vomited blood at this all at once. "...%%^^%###@! !!"

Didn't the National Internet Surveillance Bureau's First Department only specialize in major or serious crime cases? When did they responsible for arresting pirates? When did they become so "close" to the citizens?!

...

Meanwhile.

On the Internet, the pirated Plants vs. Zombies download resources suddenly and completely disappeared within the hour. Not even a trace of it could be found anymore, as though it had never appeared to begin with. There were even four pirated game download websites that had been shut down and were totally inaccessible now! Several other pirated game download websites were still accessible for now. All the other games were still available online, except for the cracked version of Plants vs.

Zombies, whose game resources had all been deleted and the game discussion board was also shut down and deleted!

It was like a land beset by war!

The pirate websites were facing a monstrosity of an enemy and even the managers of the websites were scared shitless after the Public Security Bureau or Internet Surveillance Bureau paid them a "visit"! Since they were in this business to earn their living, they couldn't have not heard of the famous Internet Surveillance Bureau. They did not know whose foot they had stepped on that warranted such a mighty organization like theirs to be alerted! Later, when the pirates knew they were being investigated regarding the piracy of Plants vs. Zombies, the choice of these pirates and pirated games hosting websites was clear: Delete all related resources—they could not afford to offend such a serious organization as the Internet Surveillance Bureau!

This was an organization involved with major international crime! If the pirates offended them, they might just get framed for some major international crime which they could not possibly bear the accusation of!

Hence, their networks were cleaned out!

Except for the insiders, no one knew what was going on!

Some of the netizens were still wondering!

"What the hell is happening?"

"Why are the pirated sources of Plants vs. Zombies all gone?"

"Fuck, how absurd it is! They really are all gone. Even the pirated resources of Plants vs Zombies hidden in my cloud storage host can't be found anymore!"

"Is this a crackdown on piracy?"

"That can't be. Why can I still find other pirated games then?"

"That's right. Why is it that only the pirated version of Plants vs Zombies is gone?"

"Holy shit! Even the pirates are selective on the games they pirate? Maybe they saw that Plants vs. Zombies could take up the difficult task of propping up and reviving the dreams of our domestically made video games, so they have all collectively removed the pirated resources of Plants vs. Zombies? Because they want to support domestically made video games?"

"My eyes are getting teary!"

"Previously, I was prejudiced against pirates, but today, this matter has made me change my opinion of them! Their hard work behind the scenes without asking for returns has seriously touched many people! I thank you on behalf of Teacher Zhang Ye! You guys are the best! You guys are the heroes behind the scenes, the

conscience of the industry!"

The piracy issue was solved!

The number of downloads for Plants vs. Zombies continued to increase rapidly again!

9 million downloads...

9.5 million downloads...

What followed next was Zhang Ye's rise in popularity. A few days ago, after Zhang Ye's period of being placed in cold storage had started, his popularity had been stagnating for a while and had even showed signs of declining. But after the release of Plants vs. Zombies that became popular throughout the country, Zhang Ye's popularity curve on the celebrity rankings immediately reversed, with the curve turning around and going upwards as his popularity rose steadily!

He moved up another spot in the B-list rankings again!

He surpassed a B-list movie star and was now occupying a spot firmly in the middle of the B-list!

Moreover, under the continued popularity of Plants vs. Zombies, even though his popularity did not explode by a lot, it at least guaranteed that Zhang Ye's popularity would not fall in the coming couple of months. Taking advantage of the inertia of the game's

popularity, Zhang Ye's popularity would be able to maintain an overall upward trend. Since he had been put in cold storage by Central TV Department 1, he had finally found a temporary solution for his source of popularity. All this made it extremely worthwhile and not in vain for Zhang Ye to have taken the world-famous game from his previous world and brought it into this world!

Chapter 770: Inviting Old Wu Home

Saturday.

It was a little after 6 AM in the morning. The fresh autumn air made for unusually good weather.

Zhang Ye was still sleeping in under the covers when he was awakened by clattering coming from the living room. Shortly after that, his bedroom door opened and his parents were standing at the door with Chenchen, dressed to the nines.

His father called out to him, "Little Ye, we're leaving now."

Zhang Ye replied helplessly, "You guys were actually serious about going to Tianjin to play?"

"Didn't we tell you yesterday?" His mother said with a laugh, "Since we have nothing to do during the weekend anyway, we just wanted to bring Chenchen out to enjoy ourselves. If you get hungry, order some takeout for yourself."

Chenchen asked, "Zhang Ye, do you want to go?"

Zhang Ye mumbled, "I would like to, but you have to ask my mom if she'd let me!"

His mother leered at him and picked up her suitcase. "Why would

you go? Just stay at home! If you follow us around, could we still enjoy ourselves? You'd attract too much attention and get us surrounded by people wherever we go. They would definitely want to ask you for your autograph, making it difficult for us to move around. So you should just stay at home and sleep all you want. We will be coming back on Sunday night anyway."

Zhang Ye turned back around to continue to sleep. He said, "OK, I understand."

Dong. The door closed.

His parents left. Only Zhang Ye was left in the house. He actually felt quite tired since he didn't get enough sleep, but after his family left the house, he somehow couldn't fall back asleep. After he tossed and turned and yawned several times, Zhang Ye patted his mouth a few times before grabbing his cell phone from the nightstand. He went onto the internet and browsed around casually. Now that Plants vs. Zombies had solved the pressing issue of his source of popularity, which had now stabilized, Zhang Ye was no longer too worried. He had taken the past few days off and did not go to work, unafraid of getting into any trouble with Central TV. This fellow was in fact hoping that Central TV Department 1 would fire him, so that his contractual issue could be solved and so he could go seek a new job at another television station. However, he knew that Central TV Department 1 would never allow him to leave.

With his popularity constantly rising, and the freedom to take days off, this wasn't too bad.

Suddenly, his cell phone vibrated.

Di di. There was a message from his instant messaging app. The message came from the alias "Water Lotus Moon"—which was Wu Zeqing's online username.

Water Lotus Moon: "Are you up?"

Zhang Ye took a look and broke out into a smile as he replied: "Just now, how about you?"

Water Lotus Moon: "Same here. Big Sis is still lying in bed right now."

Zhang Ye: "Is it your day off today?"

Water Lotus Moon: "Yes. Is there anyone beside you right now?"

Zhang Ye: "There's no one here. What's up?"

Just as Zhang Ye was wondering why Old Wu was asking him that, a di di sounded and one picture was sent over, followed by a second, a third, a fourth and...

He was about to reply when he received an invitation to join a video call.

Zhang Ye quickly tapped to answer, and a moment later he could see Wu Zeqing on the cell phone screen.

"Old Wu," Zhang Ye said with a rather dry throat.

Wu Zeqing put her hair up. "Did you get it?"

Zhang Ye nodded furiously. "Yes, I did. It was very nice!"

Wu Zeqing nodded. "I feel like I've slimmed down a little recently, so I wanted you to have a look. Did I slim down?"

"Yes, a little, but it's not that obvious." Zhang Ye gulped. "You look good no matter what!"

Old Wu: "How have you been recently?"

Zhang Ye: "I've taken a few days off and been recharging myself with this break. Everything's great."

Old Wu: "Do you really not want me to help regarding the issue with Central TV Department 1?"

Zhang Ye smiled and said: "There's no need to. Our relationship is not public and it's not really suitable. Besides, I have my own ways of handling it. I'll let nature take its course, so don't worry about it."

Old Wu nodded. "Alright then, Big Sis will respect your decision."

Zhang Ye, wanting some approval, asked: "The Plants vs. Zombies game that I made should have brought quite a lot of fame to your older sister's company, right? I'm sure they at least won't be forced to close now."

Wu Zeqing smiled in the video call. "My sister came to ask me yesterday about how many shares she should give to you, but since I don't have a grasp of such things in this area and I don't understand it well either, I did not decide for you."

Zhang Ye sighed: "It doesn't matter how many shares I get. Your older sister is also my older sister; we're all family. If we talk about money, it won't be good. Actually, I've never cared much about money. You should know that as well. What I care about is whether it brings me any fame, whether it aids my development in the entertainment circle. Everything else is secondary. I actually have to thank your sister this time. If not for her company which had already created the skeleton of the game and their entire team's trust, Plants vs. Zombies couldn't possibly have been made so successfully. And my popularity wouldn't have gone up so quickly either. In fact, it would have gone down instead."

Old Wu said: "Hur hur, my older sister and my nephew both owe you one."

Zhang Ye waved it off and said: "Look at you. You're my girlfriend. Why do you keep harping about owing this and owing that? You make yourself sound like an outsider." Then he immediately changed the topic. "Why are we still video calling?"

About that, my parents went to Tianjin for a short trip and there's no one at home. Why don't you come over for a bit?"

Old Wu said gently: "Now?"

Zhang Ye replied: "I haven't had breakfast yet and I'm getting a little hungry."

In the video call, Old Wu turned her head, probably to take a look at the clock, and then turned back to say: "Alright, send your address to Big Sis. I will get ready and take a shower first. It will probably take an hour for me to get there."

Zhang Ye said: "Don't be like that. Our places are so near to each other. It shouldn't take an hour to get here. It just a five-minute drive away. Don't bother showering. Even if you go a year without a shower, you will still be beautiful. Just come over straightaway. You can make something for me to eat when you get here. This bro is so hungry that he could faint at any time now! I can't wait any longer!"

Old Wu held her hair in front of her eyes, checking to see if it was dirty, then said, "Alright, Big Sis will be there in 20 minutes then. What do you want to eat?"

Zhang Ye: "Anything is fine."

Old Wu: "OK, I'll be hanging up then."

On the screen, the image was shifted to Wu Zeqing's lower lip and chin before a click tone sounded and the video was cut off.

Putting his cell phone aside, Zhang Ye took a deep breath then rolled out of bed. It was a little cool inside the house now, so he took out a pair of long johns and changed into them before stepping into his slippers to head outside to wash his face and brush his teeth. Afterwards, he scrambled about to arrange the stuff in the living room and bedroom, sweeping the floors and mopping them, doing it all very diligently. Thinking of, this was actually the first time he was bringing his official girlfriend into his house, so he thought that he should at least leave a good impression on Old Wu.

Chapter 771: Marrying Old Wu Next Year?

Not long after.

The doorbell rang.

Zhang Ye looked at his watch and saw that it wasn't even 7 AM yet. It was only a little more than 10 minutes since he had gotten off the phone with Old Wu. He hurriedly went to open the door. Sure enough, Wu Zeqing was standing at the door. Old Wu was dressed simply but elegantly, with her hair in a bun, looking very demure and gentle.

Zhang Ye exclaimed, "That was fast!"

Old Wu smiled and said, "Didn't you say you were hungry?"

"Come in, come." Zhang Ye moved aside to let her into the house.

Old Wu wiggled the steamed buns in her hands and said, "I bought some steamed buns from downstairs. Eat them in the meantime. Big Sis will cook something nice for you around noon." Saying that, she glanced around at the surroundings.

Zhang Ye laughed and said, "My home is rather small and can't be compared to your place."

Wu Zeqing looked around the living room. "It's quite nice."

"What would you like to drink?"

"I'll help myself."

"Sure, just treat this place as your own home. No need to stand on ceremony around here."

"You're my boyfriend. Why would I stand ceremony with you?"

"Great. There's tea and coffee on the coffee table. I'll leave you on your own over there. Let me have something to eat first." Zhang Ye was already taking the steamed buns over to the table. Without even getting any chopsticks, he reached out his hand to take a steamed bun to eat.

However, Wu Zeqing slapped the back of his hand with her hand. "Have you washed your hands yet?"

"I brushed my teeth and washed my face just now," Zhang Ye said.

Wu Zeqing made him put down the steamed bun. "Go wash your hands first."

"Let me eat one first."

"Go and wash your hands first."

"...Fine, I'll do as you say."

Zhang Ye couldn't refuse her and just did as he was told. He went to the bathroom to wash his hands. When he came back out, he saw that Wu Zeqing had placed the buns onto a plate and even placed a pair of chopsticks down for him—Old Wu had always been that considerate in her actions and did things in a very thoughtful way.

After lunch.

Zhang Ye led Old Wu to his bedroom. "This is my room."

Wu Zeqing looked around and commented, "The wall looks a bit yellow. It's time to repaint it."

"Hai, it's because of my smoking. We'll talk about it again when we renovate." Whenever Wu Zeqing was beside him, Zhang Ye felt very relaxed and calm. He naturally laid down onto his bed, rubbing his temples and yawning uncontrollably.

Old Wu said, "You're tired?"

Zhang Ye said, "No, I was woken up by my parents early this morning. I got up too quickly and have a headache now."

Wu Zeqing nodded, then smiled and said, "Come here, let me

massage your head."

Zhang Ye faked concern. "Is that appropriate?"

"Then forget it," Old Wu said.

Zhang Ye coughed and shifted himself closer to her. "Don't say forget it. I was just being polite. If you insisted a little further, I would have accepted it. Why are you speaking in such an unpredictable way? Come, massage me."

Old Wu smiled and placed one of her hands into his hair and squeezed gently. "Are you still in a deadlock with Central TV Department 1?"

Zhang Ye nodded. "For sure."

Old Wu asked again, "Do you need me to help you handle it?"

"Didn't we talk about this last time? I don't need your help on this matter." Zhang Ye waved it off determinedly and said, "You've probably already heard about the game that I made. The popularity of Plants vs. Zombies is constantly rising, even though it can't be compared to the popularity brought on by The Voice or other TV shows. But it isn't that bad at all. It should at least help me maintain my position. Do you think it will be that easy for Central TV Department 1 to put me into the freezer? This bro has worked in the entertainment industry for some time now. If it's that easy to bring me down, then this bro had better not continue

on in this profession anymore! Old Wu, don't interfere with this matter. You promised me before."

Old Wu nodded. "OK, Big Sis will not interfere for the time being."

Zhang Ye laughed and asked, "What do you mean for the time being?"

While Old Wu rubbed his head, she calmly replied, "If Central TV Department 1 really pushes it too far and violates the regulations, Big Sis intends to give them a warning. They've resorted to removing the dissidents with unscrupulous means to achieve their political objectives. All that is making the industry an unhealthy and messed up place. Although Central TV Department 1 is not directly under my charge, the SARFT is still responsible for them. As Big Sis has been transferred over there for some time now, I've created a network and it shouldn't be a problem if I need to deal with them. You don't have to worry about troubling me. Big Sis is not someone who's afraid of trouble."

"I understand."

"What is your plan after the puzzle game?"

"I haven't thought of it yet."

"Haven't thought of it?"

"Yes, with the Mid-Autumn Festival approaching, I'll think about it after the Festival."

Zhang Ye was not one who would plan beforehand and very seldomly prepared for rainy days or mapped out a strategy before he did something. This was his style and he did everything by instinct. As such, Zhang Ye appeared somewhat odd to outsiders. He varied between being intelligent and stupid from time to time and had a one-track mind. Only Wu Zeqing, a few of his family members, and some friends understood him well, while other people were unable to truly figure out Zhang Ye's approach to things. All they knew was that this fellow had a spirit that would kill anyone who stood in his way, even if they were God or Buddha!

"Old Wu, have you been busy recently?"

"Well, not too bad."

"Is your health alright?"

"Yes."

"Have you been sleeping well?"

"Yes."

"Have you been eating well?"

"Yes."

"Shall we get married next year?"

However, Wu Zeqing did not get trapped by those words of his. She just ignored his last question, but lifted up her head to look at him with a smile. "That will depend on the situation."

Zhang Ye blinked. "What do you mean by depending on the situation?"

Wu Zeqing replied with a question, "What suddenly made you bring up the matter of marriage?"

"I was just saying, ahem. It was just a joke." Zhang Ye was used to speaking nonsensically and was actually not mentally prepared for marriage either, but he was worried that such a good woman like Old Wu herself would leave him one day, and delaying the event only increased the chances of that happening!

To that, Old Wu said, "Why don't I arrange a day for you to come meet my family at their place?"

Zhang Ye said excitedly, "That's would be good!" But thinking about it, he started to doubt himself a little. He asked, "But the way that I am, would your parents like me?"

Old Wu shook her head. "Big Sis does not know."

Zhang Ye asked again, "Then do you like me?"

Wu Zeqing laughed. "You're passable."

"What do you mean by passable?" Zhang Ye nearly vomited blood!

Old Wu replied, "Hur hur, listen to what you're asking. If Big Sis did not like you, would I have agreed to be in a relationship with you? Would I have let you into my house?"

Zhang Ye nodded vigorously. "I like hearing that." Then he said, "But I really lack confidence in myself. I'm afraid that your family members will object to our relationship, so I was hoping to meet your parents only after I'd achieve more, like becoming an A-list celebrity or something. Otherwise, I don't think that I'm worthy of you."

Old Wu said gently, "My family members and I are just normal people, what's there to be worthy of? If we really discuss about marriage next year, Big Sis should be the one worried that your family members will not take a liking to me. After all, I'm much older than you and it's somewhat improper. Would your parents not have any ill feelings?" If it were anyone else who said that, it would definitely mean that they were being modest or saying comforting words. However, when Wu Zeqing said those words, it didn't sound fake at all. Old Wu was precisely the kind of person who would do the things she said, and the things she did were exactly what she thought. She did not look down upon others and

didn't think too highly of herself either. This was the quality that Zhang Ye most liked about Old Wu.

Zhang Ye said flatly, "That won't happen. You are so beautiful, if my parents knew that you are my girlfriend, they would surely die happy!" After saying that, perhaps not feeling too confident about his words, he added, "That's probably what would happen!"

Old Wu smiled, did not say anything, and continued to rub his head.

Suddenly, Zhang Ye stretched out his hand, wanting to hold Old Wu's other hand that was on the bed. But as he was leaning towards the side of the headboard, the distance was a bit far and he couldn't reach her hand. So, he tried again, but still could not reach it.

When Wu Zeqing saw that, she moved her left hand forward slightly and considerately placed it at a spot where Zhang Ye could reach.

Only then did Zhang Ye grab hold of her hand and he couldn't help saying, "Old Wu, if we want to be together in the future, there will surely be a lot of trouble and obstacles ahead of us, so don't you run away in advance, OK?"

In turn, Old Wu patted his hands. "Didn't you say that you will become the greatest superstar in the world? I will accompany you all the way to the end of this journey."

Zhang Ye clutched her hands even more tightly. "That's fantastic!"

Chapter 772: Awarded The Abel Prize!

Morning. 8 AM.

Zhang Ye, who was currently having an intimate chat with Old Wu at home, suddenly received an unexpected phone call. It was so unexpected that he did not even manage to get prepared for the sudden news!

"Hello, is this Teacher Zhang?" A young man's voice sounded from the other end.

Zhang Ye said: "Yes, that's me. Who is this?"

The young man said: "Hello, I am an administrative staff member at Peking University."

Zhang Ye said in an uncertain tone: "Peking University? Oh, hello."

The young man sounded very anxious. "I would like to ask if you're currently in Beijing?"

Zhang Ye said: "Yes, I am."

"That's great then! Could we have you make a trip to Peking University right now?" the young man said immediately. "We just received a notification fax a few minutes ago from the American

Abel Math Foundation saying that you have been selected as the recipient of this year's Abel International Math Prize. The contact who is overseeing this nomination is already on the way to Peking University, and we have already informed the university board and the School of Mathematical Sciences. Everyone is already on their way here!"

Zhang Ye was a little taken aback: "Abel Prize?"

"Congratulations, Teacher Zhang!" the young man said happily. From the tone of his voice, it was not just a complimentary happy voice but one that sounded very excited: "You have really done everyone at Peking University proud this time! This Abel Prize is very well-known in the international mathematics scene. Ever since its introduction, you're the first Chinese citizen to receive it! In the past 40 years, there has never been a Chinese person awarded it!"

"Really?"

"Yes!"

"Thank you. Alright then, I will be over in a bit."

"Don't delay any longer. It's best that you leave your house immediately. Dean Pan and the others have already heard the news and have canceled their day off to come back to the campus!"

"Sure, I'll be right there!"

"OK, we'll be waiting for you!"

After hanging up, the Dean of Peking University's School of Mathematical Sciences, Pan Yang, also called.

"Professor Zhang, have you heard?" Pan Yang sounded very excited as well.

Zhang Ye laughed and said: "I just found out. I don't know how to react right now."

Pan Yang laughed heartily: "Same here. I still thought that for an international prize like this we would have to wait until your proof of Dale's Conjecture had been verified before there would be a chance to be selected. Who knew that it would come so early? But then again, this is how it should be, since even if Dale's Conjecture hasn't been completely proven, the basic train of thought has already been set. The few proofs by contradiction methods that you raised in the process have all contributed greatly to the worth and meaning of mathematics. That alone would have been enough to earn you a selection for the award. Awarding you the prize before the conjecture has been proven isn't going overboard at all in this case, since you have solved one of the most difficult mathematical conjectures in the world!"

Being praised so highly, Zhang Ye also became rather polite and said: "It was all thanks to Dean Pan's guidance."

Dean Pan said happily: "Don't put it that way. I wouldn't dare

take any credit for this. Still, congratulations to you!"

"Congratulations to you too," Zhang Ye said.

Dean Pan said: "I'm almost at Peking University already, so you should hurry up and get over here as well. We'll discuss further once you're here. Oh yes, remember to dress nicely. The media has been notified, so there will also be many people here!"

"Sure." Zhang Ye ended the call.

In his room.

Wu Zeqing understood just from listening. "You've been awarded a prize?"

Zhang Ye smiled proudly and said, "They mentioned it was called the Abel Prize or something."

Old Wu nodded and turned around to open his wardrobe. She found him a suit and handed it to him. "Hurry up and go then. Wear that suit so that you'll look more formal. Where's your tie?"

"In the lower drawer." Zhang Ye pointed.

After getting dressed, he checked himself out in the mirror while Old Wu helped put on his tie in a meticulous manner. She tied it quite nicely the first time round, but was somewhat unsatisfied

with it, so she undid and tied it twice before she was satisfied.

"It's good now," Old Wu said.

Zhang Ye felt a little embarrassed. "I'd just invited you over but I have to go out now. Why not you stay around and wait for me since it's also your day off? I'll be back in the afternoon once I'm done over there."

Wu Zeqing agreed, "OK."

"I'll be going then."

"What do you want to have for lunch?"

"I like everything you cook."

On the way to Peking University, while he was stopped at a traffic light, Zhang Ye picked up his cell phone to check on the so-called Abel Prize to find out what it was about. Perhaps the people of this world were very familiar with it, but Zhang Ye was not the same. Strictly speaking, he was not someone of this world.

It was revealed online that this prize was not the most prestigious award in the field of mathematics. But even if it was not the most prestigious, it was still a very well-known international award. Its value was worth its weight in gold and the selection process of its recipients was very strict. This was essentially standard practice for all international awards. If you did not have an achievement

that was greater than someone else's achievements, you didn't qualify for the award. On top of that, this greatness mainly stemmed from being a foreigner, or more specifically, a westerner. For a Chinese citizen qualifying for this award, the qualities assessed were even more stringent and you'd need to be greater than great to have a chance to receive the award. To quantify all past international awards recipients, if it was down to two people, a westerner and a Chinese citizen who had similar achievements, then the chances of the westerner getting the award was ten times greater than the Chinese citizen's chances. There was still a chance that the outsider might win, but if anyone were to say that there was not prejudice? Zhang Ye would not believe it.

In the decades since the founding of the nation, Chinese mathematicians had obtained some achievements and awards in the international arena. But for an important international award like the Abel Prize, it was still very rare with almost no one ever getting them. The Chinese mathematicians had only ever received some secondary awards on the international level, or a mathematics award that was given out domestically. Many of the prominent mathematicians on the grandmaster level had always missed out on those international awards!

Because of this, now that Zhang Ye was about to receive this Abel Prize, it was truly going to be a great achievement. This would also be the first time that a Chinese citizen would be receiving this award in history, so it had an even greater historical meaning to it. If it had to be put in a nicer way, then it could even be said that this was the first great step the Chinese mathematics field had taken into the international arena!

...

At Peking University.

When the car drove up to the school gates, there was already a huge crowd gathered!

"That's Zhang Ye's car!"

"Professor Zhang is here!"

"Professor Zhang!"

When the more than 20 reporters from the media who had rushed to Peking University saw Zhang Ye's car, they rushed like mad toward him and stopped him just outside the school gates. Further up at the school gates, many of Peking University's students and staff were holding up a banner. It was a large red banner which was freshly printed with something like "A warm congratulations to Peking University's Associate Professor Zhang Ye from the Math Department on being awarded the Abel International Math Prize" and so on written on it. The banner was already secured on the left end while the right end was currently being held up by several people on a ladder, trying to secure it to the school gate. As there wasn't much time to react, the turnout was relatively low, yet the atmosphere was very warm!

Those Peking University students who lived in the dormitories had come out to witness the commotion.

The people sent by the media also gradually arrived in droves. Many of those reporters had driven their cars here and had to run over after parking. They arrived while they were still panting, obviously because this piece of news had come too suddenly, leaving everyone with very little reaction time!

Seeing this, Zhang Ye naturally did not just drive straight to his destination. He found a spot on the roadside and parked there.

"Professor Zhang, congratulations!" a female reporter from Beijing News Channel shouted.

Zhang Ye smiled and said, "Thank you. I've also just found out about this news."

A reporter from a newspaper firm raised an audio recorder and asked loudly, "Professor Zhang, what are your thoughts on becoming the first person in Chinese history to be awarded the Abel Prize?" As Zhang Ye held many different posts, when faced with different situations, the reporters would all address him differently. Sometimes, they would call him Teacher Zhang, other times Professor Zhang.

Zhang Ye answered, "I've only been selected for the award. I haven't received it yet."

A reporter laughed. "All that is left for you to do is to fly to America to receive it. Why don't you first tell us about your thoughts?"

Zhang Ye laughed heartily at that. "I will talk about it afterwards." Then he squeezed past them to go inside.

If it were another mathematician here today, a low-key academic worker would surely not be used to such a scene and might not even be able to handle all of these media personnel. But it was different for Zhang Ye, since this fellow not only dabbled in mathematics, but was also a big shot celebrity in the entertainment circle. Facing these reporters was part and parcel of his job, and whether it was an entertainment reporter, a news reporter, or an academic journalist, he could handle them all.

Soon after, a group of Peking University Math Department's teachers and professors came to welcome him.

Dean Pan led the group. "Haha, Professor Zhang, congratulations, congratulations!"

The teachers and professors from the School of Mathematical Sciences behind the Dean also offered their congratulations.

"Congratulations to you!"

"Professor Zhang, you've really done those of us at Peking University proud!"

"This award came so unexpectedly and surprisingly too!"

"We've all come out to welcome you, Professor Zhang!"

Everyone was in a joyous mood. The honor of Zhang Ye's achievement in the global mathematics field was also an achievement for the Chinese mathematics field. Similarly, it was even more of an honor for their Peking University's Math Department, thus, everyone felt very excited about it. The glory that Zhang Ye had brought to their Math Department was clearly not just any glory. Even the Chinese Academy of Sciences, which had so many Math Fellows, had never been selected for the Abel Prize. But today, Zhang Ye had been given the nod for the award, so what kind of glory was that?

Zhang Ye felt very flattered and quickened his pace. "Don't put it that way. I haven't done that much to deserve all of you senior teachers coming out to welcome me. Everyone is praising me too much."

An old professor from the Math Department said while stroking his beard and laughing, "Don't be so modest, kid. If you go out there and get more international math awards for our Peking University, I'd be more than willing to welcome you here every day!"

Pan Yang said with a smile, "Old Professor Sun, the award is not for our Peking University. That's an individual award he's getting."

The old professor stared at him. "Isn't Little Zhang part of Peking University as well? If Little Zhang gets an award, then it means that we get the award too! We're all family, what's the difference?"

Everyone from the Math Department laughed, thinking no one else would dare to claim things as they wanted, like how he just did. However, they all knew that Old Professor Sun didn't mean any disrespect. He was just an old man who was truly happy, happy for Peking University and also for their Chinese mathematics field. How many years had it been since China had someone as talented as Zhang Ye appear? A level that even many of them old veterans could not reach had now been reached by a twenty-something-year-old mathematician. The validation of the proof for Dale's Conjecture was still ongoing, so it wasn't yet time to say that the conjecture had been proven. But thinking about it, it was really just a matter of time before Zhang Ye's proof of Dale's Conjecture would be validated. At that time, without a doubt, Zhang Ye would surely reach an even higher level. It might even be possible that by then, the highest award in the global mathematics field might no longer be just a dream. They would even stand a chance to fight for it!

Amid the celebratory atmosphere, the leaders of Peking University also arrived one after another. There was even a head of the school who rushed back to the university when he heard about the news, despite being down with a flu and had originally taken a few days off to rest at home.

Several of the school heads met up outside the school gates.

"Is the news true?"

"It's verified to be 100% true! We have confirmation from the Abel Foundation!"

"That's great! From now on, there will no longer be any doubt about our Peking University's place in the Chinese mathematics field. Even internationally, our rankings will surely leap forward!"

"What about Zhang Ye's suspension?"

"Reinstate his classes! Get it done immediately!"

"Yes! Quickly get in touch with the school's administration and get this settled immediately. Remember, don't put today's date as his reinstatement date and use last month's date instead by keying it directly into the database. Otherwise, if the media finds out about this, it won't look good for us. As for the resuming of classes, we will let Zhang Ye decide it himself. We can't schedule his classes at fixed times, so let's just leave the schedule to him. If he has the time, he can come back to Peking University to hold classes or talks. But if he doesn't, we won't force him either. There's no need to arrange his class by time, just give it some freedom!"

"OK, I'll have someone get it done!"

After exchanging a few words, Zhang Ye's reinstatement as a teacher of Peking University was settled. At this point in time, no one would have the nerve to demand that Zhang Ye continue his suspension from school. On this point, the suspension had actually been given to protect him in the first place, so that the incident involving the insults to the foreign dignitaries would blow over. Otherwise, if they had the intention to fire him, they wouldn't have needed to take an extra step by suspending him. As for those teachers and leaders of Peking University who had conflicts with Zhang Ye, they wouldn't dare oppose the school's decision to

reinstate Zhang Ye at this point in time either. There was an abundance of teachers at Peking University, so it wouldn't matter to the school if they were around or not. However, for a teacher like Zhang Ye who could qualify for an award like the Abel International Math Prize, there was only one of him. It was so clear that even a fool could see who was more expendable!

Ten minutes later, the Mathematics Association's personnel arrived!

Another ten minutes later, even people from the Chinese Academy of Sciences came to offer their congratulations!

Chapter 773: Zhang Ye Turns Hostile!

At Peking University.

More and more people came to congratulate him.

Old Wu's childhood friend, Xin Ya, was here.

Fellow Liu and Fellow Qi of the Chinese Academy of Sciences were also here.

Finally, even the people from the Education Bureau and the Beijing Municipal Committee were here as well. They were all out-and-out ranked officials. This clearly showed how authoritative the Abel Prize was to be able to attract so many people into coming here!

An auditorium was opened to the public and used to accommodate the people of the Chinese Academy of Sciences, Mathematics Association, media reporters and members of the public. It could be considered the public meeting ever held here. This was not a press conference because the Abel Foundation had only selected Zhang Ye for the award but not yet convened the award ceremony for this year. Therefore, they could not announce to the public that Zhang Ye had already received the award for the time being, and it was still too early to hold a press conference or something similar. That would have to wait until after he received the award.

"Professor Zhang." Xin Ya found him.

Zhang Ye looked at her. "Oh, it's Professor Xin."

Xin Ya simpered. "Congratulations to you."

When Zhang Ye saw her expression, he did not try to sound friendly either. "Thank you."

Noticing this, a female teacher from the Math Department standing beside them could not help but laugh. "Professors, are the two of you are still bearing a grudge against each other?"

The recent incident between Tsinghua and Peking University fighting over the recruitment of students had caused quite a stir. Zhang Ye argued with Xin Ya at Tsinghua University's main entrance and he even smashed a few of Tsinghua University's cars. Who still did not know about that incident? So when the two of them met on this occasion, many people's attentions were focused on them in concern.

Xin Ya grunted, "How would I dare to bear a grudge against an Abel Prize laureate?!"

Upon seeing this, Pan Yang smiled as he walked over to smooth things out. "Eh, Professor Xin is here too?"

"Of course I have to be here." Xin Ya gave a disdainful look and said, "This person has written out the entire conjecture proof and left all the verification process to our group of mathematicians to

work on tirelessly day and night. Now that he has won an award, shouldn't we also get some credit for it? How could I not come?" The verification process of the proof to Dale's Conjecture has been ongoing all this while. Except for those mathematicians from abroad, Xin Ya was one of the main driving forces among the local mathematicians and had given much help in the verification process of Zhang Ye's proof to Dale's Conjecture.

A Peking University math teacher said, "Professor Xin definitely has some credit in this process. Professor Zhang should treat you to a meal afterwards."

"That's right." Dean Pan also smiled and said, "Get Little Zhang to treat you."

Xin Ya glanced at Zhang Ye. "Will you be treating then?"

Zhang Ye looked at her. "Sure."

"What are we going to have?" Xin Ya asked.

Zhang Ye replied, "Why don't we have some stewed meat?"

Xin Ya said, "...I've worked incredibly hard for you during the past six months and you're just going to treat me to some stewed meat that only costs a dozen yuan?"

Zhang Ye said, "A big bowl worth 20 RMB is fine too."

Xin Ya nearly fainted hearing that. "What's the difference?"

Zhang Ye said, "There's 2 more pieces of stewed meat."

Xin Ya: "...(%amp@^^#%^#@!!!)"

Everyone came to help smooth things over.

They thought the relationship between Zhang Ye and Xin Ya was very bad, but in fact they did not know there was still a level of relation with Wu Zeqing between them. Although the two of them snapped at each other, they bore no grudges. With Old Wu between them, they definitely wouldn't get into a real fight and just bantered instead.

...

At around 10 AM, the person from the Abel Foundation arrived.

This person was named Johannes. He had pale skin and a big nose and looked to be in his 30s. He was an American, but he did not fly here from America today as he was already in China. He was also one of the better mathematicians in the American mathematics field, and although he had never received any awards on the international level, his standard was still extremely high. The reason why he was already in China was because he had been participating in the verification process for Zhang Ye's proof to Dale's Conjecture. As Zhang Ye was selected for the Abel Math

Prize this time and Johannes was also one of the committee members of the Abel Foundation, this coordination work naturally fell on Johannes's shoulders. Moreover, it was said that his wife was a Chinese American, so Johannes knew how to speak Mandarin very well.

"Hi, Johannes," Xin Ya greeted him.

Johannes nodded in acknowledgment. "How are you, Xin?"

Xin Ya said with a look of surprise, "I did not expect that you would be here."

Johannes smiled and said, "My research lab is located at the Abel Foundation. I'm also one of the administrators there responsible for matters on academics."

Although they had both worked together on the verification process, they were not familiar with each other as they did not communicate much.

Finally, Zhang Ye met Johannes. They went to a quiet spot by themselves, probably because they had some matters to settle and did not want others to disturb them.

"Hello, Zhang." Johannes looked at him.

Zhang Ye smiled and said, "Hello. How should I address you?"

"I'm Johannes." Then Johannes proceeded to say, "First, there's something I need to say before anything else. I was part of the selection process for this year's Abel Prize and I have also participated in the verification process of your proposed proof to Dale's Conjecture, but all of us know that the verification is not complete yet and that there's still a lot of validating work to do. Therefore no one can claim that you have solved Dale's Conjecture for now. At the very least, we will have to wait until the final step of the validation work is completed and reexamined before submitting it to the International Mathematical Union for approval before it can be confirmed. In the current global field of mathematics, Dale's Conjecture is still not considered as solved yet, so I would like you to know that this is an exceptional case for the Abel Foundation to award the Abel Prize to you this time. It was a rather forced nomination for you to get the award and there's even a chance that it will be withdrawn if any errors are found in the verification process making the proof invalid. The Abel Foundation is also taking a risk here, and well, Zhang, please forgive me for putting it so bluntly but this is how it is."

Initially, Zhang Ye was still smiling nicely. When he heard that his wife was a Chinese American, he had quite a good impression of him. But in the end, when he heard those words from him, Zhang Ye's expression became indifferent and he gave him a sidelong glance. "Oh. Then why did you all still select me for the award?"

Johannes explained, "In recent years, there haven't been too many people with outstanding contributions to the field of mathematics. Because of how famous Dale's Conjecture is, the proof that you came up with has naturally gained the attention of the world's mathematicians. Because of this recognition, an

exception was made by the Abel Foundation to select you for the Abel Prize. Otherwise, based on your age and experience, it would be impossible for them to hand out this award to a person in his twenties, especially when said person is a Chinese citizen."

Zhang Ye gave a dry laugh and said, "Do you have a problem with China?"

Johannes shook his head. "No, I don't. What I meant was that the Chinese mathematics field's contributions to the international mathematics scene have never been much. Besides, my wife is also Chinese, so I'm not prejudiced against China at all."

"Regrettably, she's an American citizen." Sometimes, good and bad impressions could change very quickly. Zhang Ye then smiled and said, "When a Chinese person gets American citizenship, I don't consider them a Chinese citizen anymore."

Johannes replied, "I don't have other meaning by saying all this. I was just conveying a fact to you and did not want you to misunderstand that the barrier to entry for our Abel Prize is very low."

Zhang Ye retaliated, "Which one of your ears heard me say that the barrier to entry to the Abel Prize is low? Right from the beginning, you were the one who kept mumbling to yourself, imagining that I thought that your award's barrier entry was low, imagining that I was thinking about this and that. Why are you being so ridiculous, bro?"

He spoke those words rather quickly and they even carried a Beijing accent. Johannes did not fully understand him, but did not bother to take it up with him either. He got straight to the point and explained the various things he needed to take note of during the award ceremony.

First, he had to speak in English when he was receiving the award.

Second, he had to give a general overview of the proposed proof to Dale's Conjecture before receiving the award. There was no need to illustrate the entire process, just an introduction of some of the more important points in the process to the mathematics field's guests who were there.

To put it bluntly, other than this unverified proof to Dale's Conjecture, Zhang Ye had no other contributions to the field of mathematics. In the addition to that, he was also too young. As a 40-year-old veteran mathematician, Johannes was on the committee for the Abel Prize. This time, he represented the Abel Foundation to inform Zhang Ye of his nomination for the award, so he would naturally throw his weight around, thinking that it was rather appropriate to warn a junior like Zhang Ye. In fact, if there were other, better alternatives or suitable candidates, they would not have chosen such a young, Chinese person like Zhang Ye as one of the three recipients for this year's Abel Prizes. If Dale's Conjecture were confirmed to have been proven and acknowledged internationally, then the situation would have been different, but that was not the case at this moment.

As a committee member, why wouldn't they be allowed to give

advice to a laureate in private?

Unfortunately, Zhang Ye did not take that lying down. Regarding this so-called Abel Prize, he did not even have the slightest respect for it. To put it bluntly, it was not even the most prestigious award in the global mathematics field. There are other international math awards more prestigious than yours, who do you think you are?! To Zhang Ye, what he needed was only the popularity from receiving the Abel Prize. Since he had never seen himself as an academic, why would he have any respect for an academic award organized by foreigners? It's bullshit! As a committee member, you think you can insult me? I still have to listen to what you're saying? You even thought that you had something on me? Whoa! Why are you so funny?! Who do you think you are? You came up to me and tried to show off, acting like a know-it-all?

Johannes was just touching on the things he needed to take note of for the award ceremony when Zhang Ye interrupted, "Are you done talking?"

Johannes was stunned. "I'm still talking!"

"I only hear you talking, so let me say something too." Zhang Ye stared at him and stated, "I did not beg for you all to give me the award, so don't think that you are doing me a big favor. No one is forcing you. If you people are willing to give me the award, then do it. If you're not willing, then forget it!" Saying that, this fellow turned around and walked away without even looking back.

He left Johannes flabbergasted and furious after that!

What sort of person is he?!

How could he talk like that to me?

...

Outside.

Everyone still did not know what happened inside.

Seeing that Zhang Ye came out, Pan Yang smiled and said, "You've finished talking with him?"

Zhang Ye just smiled and replied, "Yes."

Dean Pan said, "It's almost noon, but don't go yet. Let's have—"

"No offense," Zhang Ye spoke quickly, "But I have something with my family and already promised them that I would be back for lunch. We can arrange to meet up again on another day and I will treat everyone. Sorry, but I really can't make it today."

Dean Pan understood. "Your family will definitely want to celebrate with you. Alright, some other day then."

Chapter 774: Something Big Has Happened Again!

Caishikou.

After he got out of the car, his mother called him just before he headed upstairs.

"Son! You won an international math award?" his mother asked, sounding very thrilled.

Zhang Ye said into his phone: "How did you learn of this?"

His mother said: "It was reported on the news, who wouldn't know! When are you receiving the award?"

Zhang Ye chuckled: "A few days later. How's your trip going?"

His mother said: "Didn't we just reach Tianjin a while ago? If I had known that something like this would happen, your dad and I wouldn't have gone on the trip. I heard that you're the first Chinese person to receive that Abel Prize or something?"

Zhang Ye made a sound confirming that and said: "Take good care of the kid and have fun with Dad. There's nothing much to worry about here. My passport and airline tickets will be taken care of by someone."

He pressed the doorbell.

After a moment, the door opened.

Zhang Ye sniffed and smelled the fragrance of stewed pork. "Wow, that smells delicious!"

"It's stewed pork ribs." Wu Zeqing smiled at him. "Hungry?"

Zhang Ye appetite was whetted. "I wasn't hungry at first, but I'm hungry now."

After closing the door, Wu Zeqing asked concerned, "How did it go over there? Have all the procedures been completed?"

"What procedures can there be? They just congratulated me. There were even people from the Chinese Academy of Sciences who came to offer me their congratulations. I was so flattered by it." Zhang Ye looked at Old Wu and continued, "Only the person from the Abel Foundation left me a little frustrated. This bro did not even offend them, but that bastard started criticizing me instead, claiming that I didn't have the qualifications and it was only down to luck that I managed to be selected for the award. He also claimed how they had to specially handle this matter and were being generous, as though telling me that their award's barrier to entry was very high and how I should be grateful for it. Heh, I was so amused listening to him say all that!"

Old Wu asked, "Then what did you say?"

Zhang Ye pouted and replied, "Do you think that I would have anything nice to say to him?"

"True," Old Wu giggled.

"In the end, I just said a few words to spite him and came back home," Zhang Ye clarified.

Suddenly, a call came in from Dean Pan.

Zhang Ye curiously answered: "Dean Pan, didn't we just say goodbye? What's the matter? Are you looking for me for something?"

Dean Pan wondered: "Did you offend the person from the Abel Foundation?"

"No, I didn't," Zhang Ye pretended even though he knew it clearly.

"Then that's strange." Dean Pan said: "That Johannes seemed like he was rather upset after speaking to you. He looked quite angry and even declined to attend the press conference afterwards. Besides, who doesn't know about your temper? You often offend people, so being worried, I called you to check about it. Being nominated for the award this time, you have done our country and Peking University very proud. I don't think you need me to remind you just how important this award is, but it definitely has a place

in the top six international awards for math prizes, so don't mess this up."

After hanging up, Zhang Ye waved his cell phone around at Old Wu. "Look at this, talking to me about such small things." He sat down and added, "I can't bother with them anymore. Let me have something to eat first. I'm so hungry."

"Wait a while longer."

"You've worked hard, Old Wu."

The food was served and every dish looked sumptuous.

Zhang Ye was watching the news together with Old Wu as he tucked in heartily.

As for Zhang Ye being awarded the Abel Prize, the satellite channels of every province were reporting about it. Even the news channel of Beijing Television did a special report about this matter in a segment that lasted over ten minutes. Ten minutes might seem short, but realize that the duration of a news program was not long to begin with. Whether it was the afternoon or evening news, the entire duration of the report would not exceed 30 minutes. So dedicating ten minutes to report on this news exclusively showed just how important it was.

At the beginning, Beijing Television's news channel started introducing in detail the origin and name of the Abel Prize. Then

they listed the previous laureates, talking about how each and every past laureate was either a famous mathematician or had been famous before. As the first Chinese citizen and person to be awarded this prize, Zhang Ye was undoubtedly a very prominent recipient.

In the middle of the special report, there was an interview conducted with some of the profession's experts.

Dean Pan and a Fellow from the Chinese Academy of Sciences were both interviewed. From the footage of the interview, it could be seen that it was done at Peking University. It was probably sent back to Beijing Television Station immediately after the interview was done so that it could be used for the afternoon news report.

At the end of the special report, there was an interview conducted on the streets.

The Beijing Television Station's reporter asked the people some questions on the streets.

Reporter: "Can you tell us your views on Professor Zhang Ye being awarded the Abel Prize?"

The interviewee was a young man. When he heard the question, his spirit was perked up. "That is so awesome! I'm still worked up from all the excitement!"

The shot cut to a young female university student being

interviewed. "I am a student from the Math Department currently in my second year of studies. I would never have thought that one day a mathematician from China would receive the Abel Prize. Teacher Zhang is my idol and as my goal is to become as good as him in the future, so that I can help mathematics flourish as a subject like he did. I want to be just like Teacher Zhang and bring glory to our country!"

A middle-aged man said: "My first thought was how awesome this is! Zhang Ye indeed lives up to his name!"

Then, yet another person was interviewed. "When I just found out about the news, I was rather shocked too. But after thinking about it, if Teacher Zhang could even prove Dale's Conjecture, then what was so shocking about him getting the Abel Prize!? Congratulations, Teacher Zhang. You've made history again!"

A third-year student at a high school said: "I will be taking my college entrance exam next year, but was still undecided on which institution and degree I wanted to pursue. However, after I learned about Teacher Zhang Ye being selected for the Abel Prize, I immediately decided that I wanted to join Peking University's Math Department! Teacher Zhang is way too amazing!"

Every television station was showing similar things, rushing to report about this important piece of news.

All with the exception of one station. The channel that was the most authoritative and should be reporting about this news at this moment dropped the ball—Central TV Department 1!

It wasn't that they did not report about it, since this was big news and they couldn't have possibly missed out on it or make no mention of it. Instead, their report about it was limited to several words only. To put it plainly, Central TV Department 1's afternoon news only gave the news a few seconds of coverage, with the news anchor summarizing Zhang Ye's nomination for the award into just a single sentence. There was no follow up to it, much less an interview. There wasn't even any live footage from the site or an insert of the university's picture, with this report being casually skipped over, leaving the audience greatly surprised.

But Zhang Ye was not surprised at this. He knew that Central TV Department 1 was now increasing their efforts to freeze and suppress Zhang Ye. From this point forward, Central TV Department 1 was not just going to keep Zhang Ye out of work, they were even going to keep him out of the news. This was an extremely ruthless move by them!

Zhang Ye sneered at this mentally. He could no longer be bothered with this bunch of people. He knew very well that he had never done Central TV Department 1 any wrong, working on his show without any rest for several months straight. He hardly went home during the production of The Voice, living and eating at the office just so that he could spend more time on the new show. Having put so much effort into the show and making it popular, it ended with those people turning greedy instead. Jiang Naixiong, Jiang Yuan, and the other executives of Central TV Department 1 were so greedy that Zhang Ye couldn't help fighting back. Was he in the wrong? His conscience was clear.

Enjoy your antics for now!

I will settle the score someday!

...

The next day.

Many of Zhang Ye's friends called to offer their congratulations.

"Little Zhang, congratulations!"

"Thank you, Brother Hu."

"Seeing you doing better and better with each passing day, as an elder brother, I am really happy for you!"

Hu Fei, Yao Jiancai, Dong Shanshan, Ha Qiqi, etc. Everyone sent their regards to him, but the one worth mentioning was from Zhang Yuanqi's manager, Fang Weihong. She got someone to send a basket of flowers to his home with a congratulatory card, making it look very formal.

When he received it, Zhang Ye hurriedly gave her a call.

"Sister Fang, I've received the flower basket," Zhang Ye said.

Fang Weihong laughed: "It's good that you got it. Congratulations

again."

Zhang Ye said: "Hur hur, thank you very much. But that was such a formal congratulation. It's my first time receiving something like that."

"It's only proper. This is not a small award that you're getting, but a well-recognized math award. It's even one of the top international awards, and besides, you're the first Chinese person to receive it and gain glory for our country, so of course this asks for a more formal congratulation. If we just called, it wouldn't be that sincere anymore, hur hur. Furthermore, you should not be thanking me since it was Sister Zhang who asked me to arrange it. The congratulatory message was all in her exact words," Fang Weihong said.

Zhang Ye said with surprise: "Then I am truly honored. Alright, please help me give my thanks to Sister Zhang."

The news of Zhang Ye receiving the award was getting hyped up!

"Abel Prize: No longer just a 'playground' for the westerners!"

""The 'jack-of-all-trades' Zhang Ye debuts on the world stage!"

"Abel Prize: The award that our countrymen have looked forward to for over 50 years!"

Online, in the newspapers, on television, every media outlet was

rushing to report this news. The people's congratulatory messages were also coming in overwhelmingly. As this was a matter of glory for the country, involving an international award, there were no naysayers coming out to sing a different tune. Even Zhang Ye's foes did not say much about this event.

But right at this moment, an incident occurred!

Because there wasn't much time left until the award ceremony, the matter could be considered rather urgent. Zhang Ye had already handed his passport over to the administrative staff at Peking University to handle since he did not have his own management team. It was also the first time he had encountered something like this. Therefore, the school administration at Peking University formed a team to handle communication with the Abel Foundation and the original plan did not require much effort on Zhang Ye's end. At most, he would be required to show up at the embassy, yet somehow, Zhang Ye and the school administrative team encountered some issues while applying for his visa and were rejected by the embassy staff!

The visa application was denied!

The reason given was that the paperwork was incomplete and the supporting documents submitted by the Abel Foundation were also incorrect!

The administrative team of Peking University were confused and quickly called Dean Pan to let him know.

Dean Pan was startled by this and said: "The paperwork was incomplete? It can't be!"

The school administrative staff said: "That's right, we did everything in accordance to the procedures and even checked the procedures of the Abel Foundation as well. They have already sent us the invitation documents and I believe Johannes has also communicated beforehand with the embassy? So why didn't the application get approved? They just straight up denied the visa application? There was no room for any discussion at all? If we have to reapply after the rejection, there will surely be a delay. If we don't hurry, Professor Zhang won't be able to make it in time to America to receive the prize!"

Dean Pan hastily asked: "Where is Professor Zhang?"

The school administrative staff said: "Professor Zhang is beside me right now."

"I'll go check again. I suppose there was something we missed while communicating with them." Dean Pan hung up the call and immediately contacted Johannes. After that, he made several more calls to the embassy.

Meanwhile, Zhang Ye stood outside having a smoke. He did not know this world's visa regulations so did not say anything.

Shortly, Dean Pan called back. The school administrative staff came outside to tell Zhang Ye and they went back into the embassy. They tried to do the application again but were unable to

finish it for the entire afternoon. In the end, they had to settle for the embassy staff's request for them to get the Abel Foundation to resend them the supporting documents and for them to get an official stamp from several agencies. That barrage of requests left the few school administrative staff grasping to understand it all. This was not the first time they were handling such visa applications since many staff members and some academics or professors would often have to go overseas on official business. However, a visa application was something that was very straightforward to handle and it was just a matter of procedures. They had never met with a case like this where Zhang Ye's visa application was incredibly difficult to get approved. Besides, Zhang Ye wasn't just going overseas for business. He was in point of fact invited by the Americans to go over. There was no reason for the visa application to be this troublesome!

OK!

If the Abel Foundation's supporting documents were missing some information, then why don't we do it another way instead? We will apply for a work visa as Peking University. That should make things work, right?

With this decision, the school administrative staff immediately made a call back to urgently prepare a draft stating that Zhang Ye had some business to attend to in America. After signing and putting a stamp on it, they got someone to deliver it to the embassy immediately. However, the resulting application was the same. They were still rejected with the reason given as how they were not allowed to make an application for two different types of visas within the same week!

Only then did the people from Peking University feel that something was amiss.

Zhang Ye understood even better why it turned out this way. This was definitely Johannes or someone from the Abel Foundation purposely trying to trip them up. Zhang Ye had seen enough of such underhand methods before to know, but this wasn't the style of the Americans but felt closer to the style of the Chinese. Knowing that Johannes' wife was a Chinese American, and how he could speak Mandarin fluently as well, Zhang Ye was no longer doubtful.

The Peking University people were beginning to feel anxious. Reapply after a week? The yellow daylilies would have already been frozen by then! The award ceremony would be over and done with by then, so what would we reapply for? The Abel Prize required the nominee to be there to receive the prize in person!

The embassy staff were having none of that and did not budge no matter what was said. The school administrative team hurriedly contacted Johannes, hoping that he could help to coordinate on this matter.

"Hello, Mr. Johannes, we seem to have met with some trouble over here at the embassy," the school administrative staff member explained the situation to him.

Johannes pretended to be surprised on the other end: "Something like that happened? That can't be?"

The school administrative staff member said: "At the moment, Teacher Zhang Ye is unable to get his visa approved. We're all waiting over here at the embassy. Do you think you can make a trip here?"

Johannes said, "It might be that the Foundation did not communicate this well enough to the embassy, causing there to be some problems. But I have something urgent to attend to and I am out of the country at the moment."

"Ah?" The school administrative staff member said: "Out of the country?"

Johannes replied: "I definitely can't make it back today. Why don't you contact me again tomorrow?"

Zhang Ye guessed right—the situation was indeed created by Johannes. Right now, Johannes was actually in a business suite at a hotel in Beijing. Beside him were his wife and two friends from America. They were currently having steak dinner with wine in the suite.

When she heard Johannes say that he was overseas, his Chinese wife smiled slightly at that.

"Haha, let's drink up," a blond American said.

The Chinese woman shushed him while smiling, gesturing for them to be a little quieter.

Yesterday at Peking University, as the official contact person of the Abel Foundation here, Johannes had been rebuked by Zhang Ye and that gave him a grudge. After he came back to the hotel, he started complaining to his wife and friends about how Zhang Ye did not know how to behave and was too cocky because of his achievements. After hearing that from him, his wife was also fuming mad, so came up with this idea. Johannes then made a call to a friend who worked at the embassy and another call to someone at the Foundation, all of which led to today's situation at the embassy. Johannes wanted to use this to regain some honor and to give Zhang Ye a scare.

Of course Johannes knew how important the Abel Prize was. From the media coverage and news in China for the past two days, he knew just how great the Chinese and Peking University felt about Zhang Ye receiving the award this time. The message Johannes wanted to send to Zhang Ye today was that he was in charge of managing things at the Abel Foundation and also the main contact person this time. The entire itinerary of events was controlled by him, and if he did not want Zhang Ye to get his visa, then Zhang Ye couldn't even make the trip to America, much less receive the award. Because a lot of the awards in the global mathematics field were not administered by one single entity, there were specific regulations for each type of award. For example, there were some awards that were only given out to young mathematicians under the age of 40, or, like in the regulations of the Abel Prize, if the recipient was not present in person, the award would be treated as turned down—but of course, in the many years since the start of the Abel Prize, there had never been a case of anyone turning down the award.

For such an important international math award, an award that

your country places so much importance on, if they saw how close you were to getting the award yet met with such an unexpected roadblock, I won't believe you won't be anxious!

Johannes thought about how no matter whether Zhang Ye begged him or hopped around in anger, he could still assert this grudge of his. By then, he would have considered himself to have stifled Zhang Ye's momentum and taught him a lesson on how he should never try to rebuke him again. With that, his purpose would have been achieved! As for not granting Zhang Ye the visa? Thus making him unable to go to America? That was clearly not going to happen. Johannes did not dare to do so. He was only trying to scare Zhang Ye a little. He did not have the guts to block Zhang Ye from receiving the award, because if he did, then it would be a huge problem. Johannes was not stupid, so of course he wouldn't do that!

On the phone.

His two friends were eyeing him and starting to urge him a little. One of them even poured Johannes a glass full of wine, hinting for him to quickly start eating.

Johannes, who was still holding the phone, smiled and nodded in acknowledgment.

The Peking University administrative staff member said anxiously: "If you can't make it over here, why don't you give them a call instead? On the other hand, you could get someone from the Abel Foundation to communicate with the embassy again. The paperwork is definitely not a problem, but since we're so close to

the day of the award ceremony, we're just afraid we won't make it in time!"

Johannes put his arm around his wife's shoulder, and declined while grinning: "We can't clear up such matters over the phone. It's not like the embassy staff knows me, so why don't we wait until I get back before we do anything. Yes, probably tomorrow or the day after, get Zhang Ye to look for me and I will help you all get it done."

Earlier, he said tomorrow!

But just a few moments later, it had become either tomorrow or the day after?

The Peking University administrative team was anxiously going around in circles. If they messed this matter up, they wouldn't be able to handle the consequences and responsibilities. This was the first time a Chinese citizen was going to receive an Abel Prize!

However, Zhang Ye who was on hand had heard everything that was said over the phone very clearly. He was not anxious or angry like the Peking University administrative team and appeared to be very calm instead. He walked over and stretched out his hand, stating, "Hand the phone to me."

The school administrative staff member was taken aback at this and subconsciously handed the phone over to Zhang Ye.

Zhang Ye took it from him and spoke into the cell phone: "Mr. Johannes, let's not wait for the day after tomorrow. Since my visa application was denied, I can see the attitude and sincerity of you and the Abel Foundation from this. If that's the case, I don't think there's anything else that we should be talking about anymore. You might not know me, but from now on, you will get to know me better. I am officially informing you right now that I fucking won't be going to this year's Abel Prize award ceremony, so you can find anyone else you like to receive the award instead!"

"What? What are you saying?" Over at the other side, Johannes' expression had shifted drastically. He immediately said: "Wait, wait awhile!"

With Johannes's panicked voice still shouting, Zhang Ye slowly hung up the phone and threw the phone back to the similarly aghast-looking members of the Peking University administrative team.

Zhang Ye smiled and said, "Everyone, you've all worked hard today. Let's go."

A young member of the team said in shock, "Professor Zhang, are...are you out of your mind?"

"Turning down the award? You want to turn down the award!?"

"Holy shit! Professor Zhang, don't be messing around at such a time! Please stop messing around like this!"

"Professor Zhang, stop scaring us like this! Aiyo, don't go away, come back!"

Zhang Ye had already exited and entered his car to drive off.

The several members of the Peking University administrative team were all panicking!

Something big had happened!

Something big had truly happened this time!!

Chapter 775: Zhang Ye Turns Down The Award!

At Peking University.

Starting from yesterday, Peking University had set up a team to be responsible for communicating with the media and reporters. Because it was the Math Department's Associate Professor Zhang Ye who was going to receive the Abel Prize, it was considered an achievement in the field of mathematics. Naturally then, the team would be led by Dean Pan Yang of the School of Mathematical Sciences. Officially, he was known as the team's deputy chief, while the appointed chief was a vice president of the university.

Today, they were receiving a lot of reporters again.

For the past two days, the television stations, newspaper firms, and many industry insiders from the domestic mathematics field had dropped by wave after wave to pay an official visit. There were even some people who were sent by some foreign mathematics institutions and research facilities to get in contact with Peking University, with some of them expressing their hopes to meet Zhang Ye in person and had called to schedule a meeting. There was also one foreign research facility that flatly mentioned that they would like to work with Peking University on a project, but of course actually meant that they wanted to work with Zhang Ye.

Pan Yang and his team were busy up to their ears.

"Dean Pan, a reporter from Liaodong Television Station has

arrived."

"Let him wait a little while, I need to finish this first."

"Hai, there will be several dozen people coming today again and we have to receive all of them."

"Our Peking University is going to be famous this time!"

"Should we call for a press conference instead, Dean Pan? If they keep coming one by one, when will all this end? There's too many people. We can't handle it as we are."

"We have to wait until the award has been accepted before we can do that. Professor Zhang's visa has yet to be approved as there was some issue with the invitation documents sent by the Abel Foundation. How is it at Professor Zhang's side now?"

"I don't know yet, but I'll ask."

"OK, that's the more important issue here, so ask clearly."

But before they could call to check on the latest development, the Peking University administrative team who went with Zhang Ye to the embassy called back to Dean Pan first. The first words they said made him feel like something heavy had struck his heart!

"Dean Pan! Something big has happened!" a person from the

school administrative team said in panic.

Dean Pan said, rather taken aback: "What big thing has happened?"

What kind of an institution was Peking University? It was the top educational institution in the country and also ranked in the top 50 globally. All related staff were people who had seen the world before. If anyone mentioned that "something big" had happened, to them, it would just be a small event. They shouldn't be reacting in such a strong manner as they did right now, shouting that "something big" had happened. This clearly put things in perspective. It was definitely not a small incident!

When they heard that, everyone looked over in surprise.

"What's happening?"

"Something big has happened?"

"What's wrong?"

The Peking University people gathered around Pan Yang at once.

Then, the school administrative staff member on the call said something utterly surprising: "The visa application is still not successful. Johannes said that he isn't in Beijing at the moment and would only be back tomorrow or the day after, obviously trying to make trouble for us. We could all hear that there was

something fishy going on, but who could have expected it would trigger Professor Zhang!"

Dean Pan said in shock: "What did he do?"

The school administrative staff member didn't know whether to laugh or cry. "Professor Zhang...turned down the award!"

A buzz was heard in the silence as the people currently at Peking University were stunned!

Dean Pan nearly fell over and hit his head on the ground. "What? Turned down the award??"

"Yes!" The school administrative staff member said: "What should we do now?"

Dean Pan asked very angrily: "Where is Little Zhang at now?"

"He already left!" the school administrative staff answered.

"Then what are you all doing? Why didn't you guys stop him? Why didn't you discourage him?" Dean Pan said with a shortness of breath.

The school administrative staff member said, feeling wronged: "We tried to discourage him, but that didn't work. Professor Zhang's temper...it's not like you don't know it. When he gets

angry, how...how can we possibly stop him!"

Other people might have only heard of Zhang Ye's bad temper, either from the Internet or from hearsay, but had not witnessed his temper for themselves. However, as a staff member of Peking University, these people had not only heard of it, they even saw for themselves Zhang Ye's bad temper on more than one occasion. That ruthless character of Professor Zhang, who in Peking University did not fear it? Even the Peking University head could not handle him! He was someone who dared to point his finger at foreign dignitaries and scold them as "idiots"! With him that fierce, how could they possibly talk him out of his decision!

After ending the call, Dean Pan stood there dumbfounded in silence, clearly stunned by what had happened!

The Peking University people were also causing pandemonium!

"I'm gonna faint!"

"Professor Zhang is..."

"This is going to be a big problem!"

"Not going to receive the Abel Prize??"

No one at Peking University believed this to be false. If it were anyone else who said that, they would surely take it as a joke, or at most think that it was just an empty threat in response to their

visa not being approved. No one would take it seriously. After all, this was not some small award but the world famous Abel Prize! However, the person who said those words had been Zhang Ye. As reality had always shown them, even if this course of action was unthinkable for other people, when it came to Zhang Ye...he was the type who would do it for real!

Shit!

This time, it's going to be really messy!

What if Professor Zhang is serious about this!?

...

On main road at second Ring Road.

Zhang Ye was not home yet, but Dean Pan was already frantically calling him.

"Little Zhang! What are you doing!" Dean Pan said.

Zhang Ye laughed: "I'm not doing anything, just driving."

Dean Pan sighed: "Do you really intend to turn down the award?"

Zhang Ye confirmed: "I've already decided. It's just a lousy award,

not even one of the top three international math awards, but they're selling themselves so prestigiously. Do they think that this bro would beg them?"

"Stop horsing around!" Dean Pan said toughly: "I will pretend that I didn't hear you say that you'd turn down the award. I will get your visa application done and you won't need to worry about it. I'll definitely get it done for you!"

Zhang Ye said: "Don't bother, Dean Pan. I won't be going to America, so let them give it to whomever they want."

"Little Zhang!"

"You know my temperament, so don't try to discourage me. That's it then."

"Little Zhang, you..."

"I see a traffic police officer up ahead. I can't talk any longer, hanging up now, Dean Pan!"

After ending the call, Zhang Ye put his cell phone aside and continued to drive. Although he claimed to have disdain for this award, but honestly, it was still worth some popularity. If he did not have to miss out on it, of course it would be good. At the beginning, he was not biased against the Abel Prize at all. Since their foundation had chosen him to receive the award, that meant they acknowledged him. That was also the reason why Zhang Ye

was very happy at that time. When he first met Johannes, he was very polite with him and spoke courteously. But the issue now was that their Abel Foundation did not respect him to begin with. A simple award like this was made out to be so incredible by them, and they came to him to condescend to him for no apparent reason as well. Now, they even made it very difficult for him to get a visa. That was totally unacceptable to Zhang Ye. Naturally, his impression of this Abel Prize was also tarnished with no trace of any wishful thinking left for it!

If I didn't accept your award, would I die?

Bull fucking shit! Then all the more I won't fucking accept it!

Chapter 776: Things Are Getting Out Of Hand!

Peking University was chaotic!

With such a big thing happening, Dean Pan and the rest couldn't possibly not report this to the higher-ups. The university president and several vice presidents were also startled by this news. After hearing about this matter, their expressions all changed!

"What sort of bad temper does this kid have?!"

"Hurry, get Old Pan to keep trying to contact him!"

"No matter what, this award can't be turned down!"

"It wasn't easy for our Chinese mathematicians to come so close to the Abel Prize, yet he intends to turn down the award? Why is this Zhang Ye always doing things that no one else dares to think about?!"

"Get me Little Zhang's contact number! I'll call him!"

As the matter blew up, it was impossible to keep it under wraps.

...

Beijing Times.

Inside an office at the headquarters.

After suddenly receiving a call, a newspaper editor froze. The phone in his hand slipped out of his grip and dropped onto the table with a bang, making a very loud noise!

The staff in the office were startled by this.

"Old Yu, what's going on?"

"I was nearly scared to death."

"What's the matter? What happened?"

"Brother Yu? What's wrong with you?"

Everyone looked at him baffled.

Old Yu looked at everyone in a daze. "I just received news that Zhang Ye won't be going to America anymore. He wants to...turn down the Abel Prize!"

The moment this was said, the office went into an uproar!

"What?"

"That's impossible!"

"Fuck! How's that possible!?"

"Old Yu, is your news reliable?"

Following that, the people in the office started to receive some calls as well. They were from either their friends or the foreign correspondents of their editorial department. Everyone received the news from their own various channels!

It was true!

Zhang Ye really was turning down the award!!

...

At Beijing Television Station.

The twenty or so staff members of Do You Remember's program team fell silent—they had just heard from the news channel that Zhang Ye had turned down the award!

Hu Fei gasped and observed, "If Little Zhang didn't intend to accept the award, why did he still attend the public meeting at Peking University earlier? He even did a few short interviews? There must be a reason for this to happen now!"

Xiao Lu said anxiously, "I heard that it was the Abel Foundation's people who deliberately made it difficult to approve Teacher Zhang's visa, so Teacher Zhang turned down the award in a fit of anger!"

Dafei facepalmed repeatedly. "Oh my god!"

Hou Di said, "Are the Abel Foundation's people dumb?! Teacher Zhang is such a bad-tempered individual. Tell me, why did they have to provoke him?!"

Hou Ge also exclaimed, "How will this situation end now?"

...

Central TV Department 1.

Zhang Ye's team who had received the news were all stunned!

Ha Qiqi was dumbfounded!

Zhang Zuo was left with his eyes wide and tongue tied!

Everyone was shocked by this piece of news and they failed to react in time!

Even Central TV Department 1's Deputy Director, Jiang Yuan, and several executives of Central TV Department 1 who hated Zhang Ye to his core were taken aback when they heard about this event. They couldn't believe that Zhang Ye would really turn down that Abel Prize! He didn't want it anymore?

Has that Zhang fellow gone crazy?

He even dared to do such a wicked thing that would upset a grandma?!

...

It was the most lively on the Internet.

The latest news had scattered everywhere like crazy!

"A major revelation! Zhang Ye turns down Abel Prize!"

"Zhang Ye turns down award! No line to Peking University!"

"What's the reason behind turning down award?"

"Zhang Ye rejects Abel Prize long awaited by Chinese mathematics field!"

The netizens' comments came as fast as the speed of refreshing a

page!

"Heavens!"

"He's really turning down the award?"

"I thought everything was still fine yesterday. There were even many news sources praising him to the heavens. What made the wind change direction today? This turn of events is too great!"

"This is the Abel Prize we're talking about!"

"Teacher Zhang is too fucking fierce! He's turning it down just like that?"

"What the hell! I just got online and I'm already hit with such huge news?"

"Teacher Zhang was still just doing Plants vs. Zombies two days ago. How did he get into a war with the Abel Foundation in just the blink of an eye? He really won't stop fighting unless he dies, isn't that it!?"

"What happened exactly?"

...

The storm was becoming bigger and was getting more and more turbulent!

Meanwhile, Zhang Ye, the person at the center of the controversy, was already back at home. He poured himself a cup of coffee and drank it leisurely. He switched his cell phone to vibrate mode and placed it on the table, leaving it there to buzz nonstop. Zhang Ye did not pick up most of the calls from the reporters and his friends. However, there were still some calls that he could not avoid answering, like the calls from the Peking University heads or the Chinese Academy of Sciences.

"Hello."

"Little Zhang, come back to Peking University immediately!"

"Vice President Sun, I'm still busy here and can't get away now."

"Don't try that with me. It's utter chaos here. Hurry up and come back now. We'll pretend that you never mentioned turning down the award. The visa matter will be easy to handle since Johannes from the Abel Foundation has already taken the initiative to contact us, saying that he will coordinate with the embassy staff and complete all the necessary paperwork for your visa application!"

"Vice President Sun, there's no need for that."

"Comrade Zhang Ye!"

"Vice President Sun, I still have something going on. Let's end the call here. I will treat you to a meal as an apology someday."

Following that, a call from Xin Ya arrived.

"Yo, Professor Xin."

"Don't 'yo' me, come back quickly and finish your visa application!"

"I won't listen to you regarding this matter."

"Does it make you uncomfortable if you don't cause trouble for a day? I already know all about the matter. That incident with the visa was just a small misunderstanding, so it's fine as long as it's settled."

"In my opinion, it isn't a small misunderstanding. Professor Xin, I won't say any more."

"How can you be like that! Although the Abel Prize is an individual award, do you know this also concerns the honor of our country's mathematics field?! Alright, since I can't persuade you, then I'll give your girlfriend a call! I don't believe you won't listen to Sis Wu!"

"Go ahead and call her, but don't worry, Old Wu will definitely

listen to me regarding this matter. There has not been a single time that she did not support me before."

"You...I'm hanging up! You're making me so mad!"

After hanging up, a call from a certain Fellow of the Chinese Academy of Sciences also came in!

"Hello, Fellow Zhao."

"What's wrong with you, Professor Zhang!"

"Hur hur, I just decided at the last minute that I do not want to go."

"Do you understand what this award means to the Chinese mathematics field? And what this award means to the Chinese academic world?"

"I know, but it's precisely because I know that I'm turning down the award!"

"You're turning down the award even though you know what it means to us?"

"Then let me ask you a question: What do you think is more important to a mathematician of any country, the award or our dignity?"

The other side of the line suddenly fell silent.

Zhang Ye said: "Getting the award is to showcase our mathematicians of China to the world and earn dignity and respect through it. But setting our dignity aside to gain the award and then using the award to earn us back the dignity, do you think that is meaningful? Isn't it a bit ridiculous? Fellow Zhao, I am not a professional academic, so I admit that I can't quite understand the desire of wanting to be recognized. But I know that if others don't respect me, you shouldn't expect me to show respect to them either. However others treat me, I will treat them the same many times over! That's the kind of person I am!"

Zhang Ye remained impenetrable and did not give face to anyone!

...

Soon after, more news was published!

Even the television stations followed up on this matter!

"Problem with visa application, Zhang Ye denied by embassy!"

"Internal staff reveals reason for Zhang Ye's snubbing of award is due to Abel Foundation's contempt and ignorance of him. Clearly invited by them to receive award, Zhang Ye was then denied a visa!"

"Hidden rules within Abel Prize?"

"Abel Prize's authority met with doubt!"

"Source confirms news, Zhang Ye's visa application denied!"

Very soon, with the many headlines, the truth and insider news of the incident was uncovered bit by bit!

Some netizens were still crying "what a pity," hoping for Zhang Ye to go and receive the award.

"Didn't you see the news? You guys don't know a fart! It was the Abel Foundation's people who schemed and purposely made it difficult for Teacher Zhang! They invited Teacher Zhang to receive the award yet refused to approve his visa application. What's the fucking meaning of this? This is too infuriating! Even I got furious when I heard that, so you don't even have to mention a bad-tempered person like Teacher Zhang! I knew that Teacher Zhang wouldn't turn down the award for no good reason. Although Zhang Ye doesn't have a good temper, he isn't an unreasonable person after all. So that was what happened!"

"I'm unconditionally giving all my support to Zhang Ye on this matter without a doubt!"

"Johannes? What an arrogant snob!"

"Fuck, that bunch of foreigners really look down on us too much!"

Such contempt! Teacher Zhang did well! That's the way it should have been handled! Do you think we fucking want your lousy award!?"

"Teacher Zhang is awesome! Beautifully handled!"

"That's right! This is really uplifting for our countrymen!"

"The prerequisites of giving and receiving awards should be respect for each other. If you don't show any respect to our Chinese mathematician? Then it's better to not receive the award! We don't care if you are Abel or Uber! We don't want it! How can such an important award in the global mathematics field be infused with personal emotion? Would that make it an impartial award? How utterly disappointing!"

"Hahaha! Zhang Ye is still as charismatic as ever!"

"The only person in the country capable of doing such morally upright and uplifting things is Zhang Ye alone! Speaking of boldness, no one in the country can match up to Zhang Ye! Not everyone has the determination to make such a decision as turning down the award! Not only does he need to withstand the pressure from the different fields in the country, he even has to bear with the doubt from the global mathematics field! Brothers and sisters, this is the moment when Teacher Zhang needs us. If we don't support him now, then when should we support him?"

"That's right!"

"Go to hell!"

"Teacher Zhang, you are way too fucking domineering!"

"Losing the Abel Prize is definitely not a loss to us. The loser here is the Abel Foundation!"

"This is what I've always liked about Zhang Ye. Even if it's the most prestigious award in the mathematics field, if they angered this bro, he would still turn it down, much less the Abel Prize. What can they do about that?!"

"Losing the award and honor isn't a big deal, but Zhang Ye has won us back our dignity, and that is more important than anything else!"

The netizens' vocal support was flooding in overwhelmingly!

Of course, there were still some critics. A few members in the mathematics field cast doubt and criticized Zhang Ye's behavior. Some even cursed at him, saying that he had embarrassed all Chinese citizens by turning down such an important international award. In the future, be it the Abel Prize or some other international awards, who would still dare to award it to someone from China?

All the different voices were clumped up into a big chaotic mess!

Chapter 777: Johannes Pays A Visit!

It was quite a mess after all the praise and criticism of Zhang Ye mixed together. Johannes was at a Beijing hotel reading the comments from those professionals and Chinese citizens. He did not know what Zhang Ye was feeling at this moment, nor did he want to know. All he knew was that he wanted to vomit blood right now!

This person has gone mad!

He is simply a lunatic!

"Johannes, what have you been doing?! What have you been doing!" His boss at the Abel Foundation had called up Johannes directly. Clearly, back in America, they had already been informed of the news!

Johannes panicked and said: "There was some misunderstanding, this matter..."

The superintendent shouted: "I don't care what misunderstandings there are! Can you settle this matter?"

"Yes, I will settle it immediately!" Johannes replied quickly.

His boss made his stance clear. "If you don't handle this matter well, then you can prepare to resign as administrator of the Abel Foundation tomorrow!" Du du du, the call ended!

Johannes was taken aback!

For the past few decades in the history of the Abel Prize, there had never a case of anyone turning down the award. Even when they awarded it to an 89-year-old French mathematician in the year before last, he earnestly came in person to the award ceremony with his grandson and granddaughter helping him walk up to the stage to receive the award. The value and achievement of this award were obvious. No matter which country's mathematician you were, it was impossible to remain unmoved by the Abel Prize. They would definitely feel excited to receive the Abel Prize as it was an honor of a lifetime to a mathematician!

But now?

Now?

An idiot who wants to turn the award down has appeared!

Someone who would become the first person in history to turn down the Abel Prize!

Johannes's wife who was beside him panicked. "Think of a solution quickly! Quickly!"

Johannes slammed his hands on the table and said, "I've already contacted Peking University and the embassy!"

"Make a few more calls! Tell them that the visa application can already be processed. All they need now is for Zhang Ye to show up at the embassy and submit the necessary paperwork, and that it will be approved immediately, today!" his wife said anxiously.

"Do you think that I didn't say all that?!" Johannes exclaimed. "They only said that they will try to communicate it to Zhang Ye! But did they communicate it to him? They have already communicated for so long yet there is still no news from them!"

His wife said, "You should call Zhang Ye! And tell him directly!"

Johannes said exasperated, "I've called him already, but he won't pick up!"

His wife was all pale by now. "What...what should we do now?!"

Johannes took two deep breaths and then said, "I'll get Zhang Ye's address. I don't believe he would dare to turn the award down if I pay him a visit personally! He might just be making an empty show of strength!"

When his wife heard that, she hurriedly agreed, "That's right, he won't have the guts!"

Initially, Johannes's plan was working well. He thought that by stifling Zhang Ye with the visa application procedures, he was showing him his authority. It was to tell him who the decision maker was for this Abel Prize. But who could have expected that

when Zhang Ye reacted with his move, Johannes would become totally flustered by it. By wanting to turn the award down, Zhang Ye had really caught him and the Abel Foundation in America completely off guard!

Johannes understood that a comment posted on a discussion forum was very true. He couldn't be sure how badly affected Zhang Ye would be if he gave up the award, but to the Abel Foundation and Johannes, there would be grave repercussions! As such, they couldn't afford to bear it! Zhang Ye must definitely accept the award! There was no room for negotiation! Otherwise, the Abel Foundation's reputation would take a big hit! No one could bear such a consequence!

...

At home.

Zhang Ye was currently on the phone with his mother.

"You are not going to accept the award?"

"You know about the news already?"

"Of course, how can I not know about it!? We were bringing the child out to sightsee when we overheard some nearby tourists discussing about this matter. It wouldn't be difficult for me to find out even if I tried to pay no heed!"

"Anyways, I won't accept the award. Let Dad know about this as well."

"Rascal, are you crazy? This is a major international award and you're just turning it down like that?"

"That Johannes was making things difficult for me, so tell me, why should I treat him nicely?"

"But that doesn't have anything to do with the acceptance of the award! The Abel Foundation has nothing to do with that!"

Zhang Ye shook his head and said: "Hur hur, how could they be not related, Mom? You sure are funny. Would Johannes alone be able to halt my visa application? Do you think he is capable of that? Does he have the capability to do so? The problematic invitation documents were sent from the Abel Foundation. Do you believe that no one from the Abel Foundation knew about this matter? He has been coordinating on both sides all this while!"

His mother said angrily: "I can't help but wonder why all the good things always end up badly when it involves you. Why didn't the other award recipients have any problems and only you are running into problems every time?"

Zhang Ye smiled and said: "That's because this bro abhors evil! I can't bear having grit in my eyes!"

"Come on, you! You might as well drive me to the grave!" His

mother mocked at him for a brief while before hanging up. She did not go on rambling anymore as she understood her own son well. What type of person was Zhang Ye? He could make something out of nothing while lazing around, much less if there was something going on. She was already used to it.

At this moment, the doorbell rang.

Zhang Ye wondered who was at the door. When he answered it, he saw Johannes standing at the doorstep. Whoa, the person in question had arrived?

Johannes was sweating profusely. He immediately said, "Zhang, I've finally found you!"

Zhang Ye smiled. "Mr. Johannes, didn't you say on the phone that you were currently out of the country? And that you could not make it back within the next two days? So what is the meaning of this? Did you come here in a space shuttle?"

Upon hearing this, Johannes looked somewhat awkward. He coughed and replied, "Zhang, after knowing that your visa application was denied, I hurriedly rushed back. Who could have guessed that when I got back, I heard that you wanted to turn down the award. You...you are being too rash. Was there a misunderstanding on this matter?"

Zhang Ye smiled but did not speak.

When Johannes saw that, he immediately said in outrage, "The embassy staff were too much! I will be honest with you, I couldn't stand those bunch of people since a long time ago! For such simple paperwork formalities like a visa application, they insist on going through so many troublesome procedures. Even I would get angry when I see them like that, let alone you! Don't worry, Zhang. When I return to America, I will give feedback about this situation to the relevant people! We must deal with them seriously! Criticize them! We will expedite the process with a separate channel for such famous academics like you in the future! We must be able to change the procedures for the processing of visas—simplify! Simplify! And further simplify! Efficiency! Efficiency! And more efficiency! We cannot let such a diligent academic like yourself waste your precious time worrying about the procedures of a visa application!"

As Johannes's wife was Chinese, he had fully mastered the essence of Mandarin!

"Zhang, you don't have to worry about this matter anymore. Give me your passport and we will go to the embassy right now. Just show your face and I will make sure they handle all the paperwork for you!" Johannes offered to bear all the responsibilities on himself.

But Zhang Ye smiled and said, "There's no need to."

Johannes hurriedly said, "Zhang, you don't have to worry about troubling me. Please don't be so polite with me. I'm your old friend from America. I will definitely handle this matter properly for you!"

Zhang Ye stayed silent.

"Zhang!" Johannes tried his best to convince him. "You shouldn't be turning down the award just because you are angry with those detestable embassy staff. It's not worth it! It's really not worth it! Although they have made some mistakes, you must also give them a chance to turn over a new leaf!"

Zhang Ye looked at him.

Johannes said, "Zhang, I'm begging for leniency on behalf of them. Give them a chance and don't take it up with those embassy staff. Can you give me, Johannes, some face regarding this matter?"

Zhang Ye asked, "Is that all?"

Johannes: "Uh? Yes."

However, in the next moment, Zhang Ye closed the door lightly. "Bye."

Outside, Johannes, who was rebuffed, was becoming even more anxious now. He banged on the door and shouted from outside, "Zhang, come out first. Let's discuss this again, please don't be rash, don't be rash! You're being irresponsible to yourself, your family, and the field of mathematics! Please open the door, Zhang! Let's talk it over again!"

"Zhang!

"Open the door! Open the door!

"Zhang Ye!

"Open the door!

"Zhang Ye, I'll curse your great-grandfather!"

After shouting for a long time, he finally let out a curse.

Zhang Ye was angered when he heard that, so he rolled up his sleeves, stood up, and opened the door. However, after opening the door, Johannes had already disappeared. Zhang Ye could only hear the sound of running footsteps coming from the corridor!

Zhang Ye shouted down the corridor, "Fuck your grandpa!"

He closed the door and returned to his room, doing whatever he wanted to do. A while later, his cell phone rang again. This time, it was a number calling from America. Even if Zhang Ye thought with his feet, he knew for certain that the Abel Foundation's people were also getting anxious. He rejected the call immediately without picking up the phone. He had already made up his mind, so it was useless no matter who they sent!

...

Online, on Weibo, and even on a debate program on TV, the experts and industry insiders were still divided into two camps and arguing nonstop!

A Fellow of the Chinese Academy of Sciences said: "Dignity is always greater than the award itself!"

A social affairs commentator: "Zhang Ye makes a mockery of the entire world! I have never considered this to be so-called dignity and respect! In my opinion, this shows a lack of magnanimity and self-restraint instead!"

An educator: "Magnanimity does not equate to tolerance!"

The famous songstress, Zhang Xia: "This is Zhang Ye's personal award. Whether he accepts it or not, we should respect Zhang Ye's decision. Why is everyone scolding him?"

Today, all the news headlines seem to have been occupied by Zhang Ye!

Actually, back when Zhang Ye proposed the solution to Dale's Conjecture, he had already caused a stir in the world. At that time, those who knew him already knew him, so even if he received the award now, most people would find it unexpected in a sense but not beyond reason. Although it was rather surprising, it was not that shocking. Therefore, based on common sense, even if Zhang

Ye went to America to accept the award, his popularity would still not increase by much.

However, Zhang Ye's sudden turning down of the award today had instead allowed his exposure to rise dramatically. With the ongoing debates and discussions, Zhang Ye's popularity soared along with them!

He wouldn't have gained much popularity if he chose to accept the award. However, by turning it down, his popularity surged instead?

That's right! In this world, there were just some things that worked in mysterious and dramatic ways!

Chapter 778: His Infamy Spreads Overseas!

The next day. Monday.

It just past 6 AM when the doorbell at home rang.

His parents had returned home with Chenchen from Tianjin last night. Everyone was still sleeping except for his mother, who was up early, so she answered the door.

"Who is it?" his mother asked.

Han Henian asked anxiously, "Auntie, hello. You must be Professor Zhang's mother, right?"

His mother looked at Han Henian. "Who are you?"

Han Henian immediately answered, "I am Han Henian from Peking University's Math Department, a colleague of Professor Zhang. I was assigned by the university to come invite Professor Zhang back to the school for a meeting!"

"Oh, you're Teacher Han?" His mother said, "Little Ye is not at home."

Han Henian quickly asked, "Where did he go? Everyone is waiting for him now and Dean Pan is also worried sick. They told me that I have to bring Professor Zhang back no matter what!"

His mother said, "I don't know either. He left last night but did not tell me where he was heading."

After dragging the matter and rambling on for a long time, she finally got him to leave.

When his mother closed the door, she went and knocked on his bedroom door. "Little Ye, your colleague came over just now, but I've fending him off for you."

A few moments later, the door opened and Zhang Ye walked out sleepily and yawned. "OK, Mom, thanks. No matter who comes over in the next few days, just say that I'm not at home." Then he went straight into the bathroom.

His mother stared in the direction of the bathroom and said, "It's easy for you, just ignoring everything after creating such a huge mess. I even have to be your shield in this situation now. When will ever let me and your dad not worry about you?"

Zhang Ye said rather helplessly, "I've already said that I won't go to America, but they're still very insistent. What can I do about it? I've even turned off my cell phone." He sighed, then added, "This bro has been in the industry for over a year now and has gotten into all sorts of incidents before, so it's not like they don't know about my temper. If I say I won't go, then I definitely won't go. What's the point in them coming and trying to persuade me?"

Just as he was saying that, the home phone rang.

His mother went to pick it up.

"Hello, who is this?"

"Hello, I am calling from Peking University's Math Depart..."

"Oh, you've dialed the wrong number."

"Ah? It can't be, I'm sure I dialed the right number."

"This is the restaurant delivery hotline. Would you like a [rice bowl](#) or pulled noodles?

rice with meat and vegetables

Zhang Ye: "..."

His mother hung up the phone and gave a hmph in annoyance.

Throughout the afternoon, another three groups of people came to the house and around eight calls were made to Zhang Ye's house. There were even a few people who managed to get their hands on Zhang Ye's parents' cell phone numbers and called them, showing just how much effort they were putting into this. However, still, none of them managed to get to Zhang Ye himself. As evening approached, the calls gradually became fewer, probably because everyone understood Zhang Ye's determination by now and knew that they could not change his mind anymore.

...

Meanwhile.

The Abel Foundation located in America suddenly released a public statement!

First, it announced that the Abel Foundation had removed Johannes from his administrative position at the Foundation.

When the citizens of China saw that, they all applauded.

"Beautiful!"

"Well removed!"

"You even dared to make things difficult for Professor Zhang? Of course you'd be removed from your post!"

"A person who throws their weight around like him is a maggot in academia!"

However, the Abel Foundation released another statement, but it was not the Chinese citizens' expected clarification or apology. Moreover, there wasn't any written explanation on the already known situation in which an Abel Foundation staff member had made things difficult for the selected award winner, not even a

single line. Instead, the statement condemned Zhang Ye!

The original excerpt read as follows:

Abel Foundation: The Foundation has verified the news of Zhang Ye, the Chinese man selected as winner of the Abel Prize, turning down the award to be true. It leaves us with deep regret, and at the same time, we find this to be a very naive and ridiculous behavior. The Abel Prize is one of the most prestigious awards in the global mathematics field; therefore, it is difficult to understand the turning down of the award. We do not know what kind of arrogance led Zhang Ye to make this decision, but we hereby clarify and announce that in the future, Zhang Ye will never again be nominated for the award!

When this news came out, many people started scolding!

"What dogshit is this!"

"Forever rejecting Zhang Ye for consideration of the award? Pui! It was clearly Teacher Zhang who rejected you, yet you people are still trying to make yourselves look good!? Stop pretending!"

"Zhang Ye might be arrogant, but you guys are ten times more arrogant than Zhang Ye!"

"I guess we have finally found out what kind of an organization the Abel Foundation is! If you give the award to someone, they have to ingratiate themselves to you? If someone turns down the

award, you lose your temper from the embarrassment? Even issuing a public condemnation? Never nominate the person for the award again? What sort of lousy international math award is this! Is this all there is to it!?"

"Teacher Zhang was right to reject such an award! This sort of lousy award is not worth receiving!"

"The entire statement was contemptuous and pretentious. It makes me want to scold someone!"

"I don't see how this award will still exist in several years from now!"

The domestic sentiments were frenzied as countless Chinese citizens waved Zhang Ye's flag and shouted for him. There were even a lot of people who went to the American Abel Foundation's official website and its affiliated mathematics research website to air their opinions!

At this moment, the incident had been pushed beyond China's borders and into international attention!

Due to the lag in the [global news flow](#), coupled with how the Chinese mathematics field was not too integrated with the global mathematics field, and time zone differences on top of everything else, even though some people had already learned of this news, it wasn't until the Abel Foundation's public statement was announced that every country's mathematics field truly learned of it, even finding out about the scandal from the news in China.

With that, the global mathematics field blew up. Every country's mathematicians were also dumbfounded!

[Global news flow](#)

A German mathematician publicly stated: "This is truly unbelievable!"

A French mathematician: "What on earth happened? Can someone tell me?"

A famous American mathematician: "This has to be the darkest day for the Abel Prize since its inception! I still can't believe that someone would actually turn down the award!"

An American mathematician even publicly criticized: "Those haughty and arrogant Chinese mathematicians! One of these days, they will surely pay for the naivety!"

The global mathematics field was full of criticism flying around!

Some overseas citizens raised some doubts instead.

In Germany.

"Aren't you people getting it all wrong?"

"Wasn't it the American Embassy that denied the visa application first?"

"If I am the award recipient and my visa was denied, that is basically a great insult to me. If I were them, I wouldn't have gone to attend the awards ceremony either!"

United Kingdom.

"This is the first time I've learned of a Chinese mathematician's temper!"

"I like them, hahaha. They actually went ahead and turned down the award!"

"There's such a big scandal regarding the Abel Prize now, yet they did not give an explanation? They did not explain why the Chinese mathematician's visa was denied? I used to think that this award was an authoritative one with great international prestige, but I no longer feel so!"

"So even the Abel Prize has a shady side to it!"

Following the overseas citizens' questioning of the Abel Prize's authority, many global mathematicians also gradually calmed down from the shock of Zhang Ye turning down the award and started noticing the cause and development of this incident!

Several mathematicians who had been at Summer Palace when Zhang Ye solved Dale's Conjecture and had struck up a friendship with him then also stepped forward one by one to openly question

the Abel Foundation!

The English mathematician who had invited Zhang Ye to the United Kingdom back then said: "I'm sorry, but I don't see any hint of arrogance from Zhang Ye in this incident at all. Instead, it is the Foundation's attitude that makes people very uncomfortable!"

The German mathematician who led the youth team for Germany said: "I do not know the exact details of the scandal, but what I know is that Zhang is truly quite a good person!"

All at once, the Abel Foundation was under enormous pressure!

Of course, in the global mathematics field, there were also many who called out Zhang Ye for being unable to judge what was good for him!

Turning down the Abel Prize wouldn't be that big of an issue for many of the foreign citizens. A sixth-ranked mathematics award in the global mathematics field would not even raise an eyebrow on these people. But to the global mathematics field, this was a big deal, it was a earth-shatteringly big deal!

...

Back in China.

Some of the international reactions and news were gradually published by the newspapers!

The netizens were yelling!

"There are many people overseas who are very understanding as well!"

"Yeah, there's even quite a number of foreign mathematicians who are supporting Zhang Ye!"

"But similarly, there are also those who are scolding him. Damn, this is so maddening!"

"This Abel Prize really has no morals!"

"Why are those at the Abel Foundation behaving like a bunch of bastards!"

However, a person familiar with the happenings said: "Hur hur, don't bother scolding anymore. The Abel Foundation is already paying for their arrogance. Teacher Zhang's rejection of the award has not only ruthlessly slapped their faces, those issues like the denied visa application and other matters were also revealed. The situation that everyone's seeing now should be how Zhang Ye is being scolded and how he has lost the award, while everything's still going on as usual for the Abel Foundation, right? But that's not what's happening! The Abel Foundation has suffered the greatest loss already!"

Someone asked: "What do you mean?"

"Hurry up and tell us!"

That person said: "I just heard some news from a friend that the International Mathematical Union has sent their people to the Abel Foundation's headquarters to investigate the affair. Although it's not likely they'll be able to find anything, what can be said for sure is that the Abel Prize will no longer have its glory days like before. Do you guys know what the most important thing an international award has to have? It isn't the size of the funding or the number of research facilities, nor is it the rigorousness and strictness of the award committee, rather the authority it has and how impartial they are! That's what makes an international award gain credibility in the eyes of the public! Once they lose their impartiality, everyone will doubt the authority of the award. That's when the award is relegated from its place! A fifth or sixth-ranked award of the global mathematics field? Starting from tomorrow, I'm afraid that will be history. With someone rejecting the award and the revelation of the scandal, it will be considered lucky if the Abel Prize can still stay within the top 15 awards in the global mathematics field! Perhaps, after years pass, they won't even be able to maintain that rank! It can be said that the Abel Prize has had its reputation stripped by more than half! Hurt by this affair today, it might take them a decade to several decades to recover their reputation!"

This Weibo post was immediately forwarded by countless people!

"Is that true?"

"Just because Teacher Zhang turned down the award, he

managed to deal such a big blow to the Abel Foundation?"

"Fuck me! If that happens, I'll be damned!"

In the end, it didn't take long for the news of the International Mathematical Union sending personnel down to the Abel Foundation to spread!

There was shock throughout China!

The global mathematics field was also shocked!

At this moment, people didn't need any explaining for them to know that beginning today, the Abel Prize had entered a period of slow decline! The incident had been blown out of proportion so much that it even alarmed the International Mathematical Union!

All of a sudden, the global mathematics field was lively once more!

Over a dozen Abel Prize laureates collectively came forward, some of them casting doubt on Zhang Ye's proof to Dale's Conjecture, saying that there had been logical errors in his reasoning. There were others who attacked Zhang Ye regarding his morals and also someone who suggested that Zhang Ye's name be rejected by all international math awards!

They were all Abel Prize laureates. The award was one of their greatest achievements and a gloss on their resumes. If the Abel

Prize depreciated from here on out, then who would be affected the most? Of course it was them! That was the reason why they all started scolding Zhang Ye without sparing any effort! They did not want to see the value of the Abel Prize drop!

It was chaos!

Everything was in turmoil!

Zhang Ye?

Many of these foreigners and foreign media reporters were hearing Zhang Ye's name for the first time!

In China, if you went around the streets and pulled anyone out of a crowd to ask, they would definitely know who Zhang Ye was. If you picked ten people from those who knew Zhang Ye to ask about Zhang Ye, then nine of them would tell you the same thing. Zhang Ye was very infamous for: beating his leaders, battling his peers, fighting a Korean celebrity, and scolding foreign dignitaries. All of those incidents were no longer a secret in China. Even a three-year-old child likely knew of them. Zhang Ye's notoriety was known to all within the country!

This time, however, Zhang Ye's name had finally spread outside of China. For the first time...his infamy had spread overseas!!!

Chapter 779: Feats Or Faults, Leave It To The Future Generations To Judge For Themselves!

On the same day.

Peking University's Dean Pan had called Zhang Ye's mother several times. When his mother could no longer bear this incessant hounding, she finally gave in and allowed him to speak to Zhang Ye.

Zhang Ye took his mother's cell phone.

"Dean Pan, I'm really busy right now."

"Even if you are dying, you still have to come back here!"

"But I've already turned down the award. What's the point in me going over there?"

"The reporters have already clogged our doorsteps and there's also foreign reporters!"

"Then why don't you help me handle them a bit?"

"You're the main character. If you don't make an appearance, who can possibly handle them? Everyone is waiting for you to

show yourself! You'd better hurry and come back here right now! The whole world has already found out about your rejection of the award. The Abel Foundation has also issued their statement. None of us are going to ask you to accept the award anymore, so even if you want it, there's nothing to accept. I want you to come back here and handle the media and clear up the incident yourself. There has to be a follow through no matter what. How can you just say nothing and not show yourself? What would that demonstrate? If the foreign media sees that, they might even think that all of our Chinese professors are this unreasonable!"

"Al-alright then."

"The press conference will begin immediately, so come down at once."

"OK, I got it."

"You must be here at the venue!"

"I know. I won't make things difficult for you."

After he put down the phone, Zhang Ye informed his parents and changed into formal wear. Dean Pan was right. Ever since yesterday when this incident occurred, Zhang Ye had not made an appearance in public at all, nor did he express his attitude. Now that everything could no longer be changed, with his award turned down, Johannes getting sacked, and the Abel Foundation suffering a great blow, Zhang Ye was receiving a lot of criticism in the global mathematics field. No matter how it went, Zhang Ye still had to

make an appearance and not let Peking University and Dean Pan bear the brunt of this pressure. In any case, Zhang Ye was used to such situations.

...

At Peking University.

Evening, 7 PM.

When Zhang Ye arrived in his car, a small-scale press conference was in progress in one of the smaller halls. Zhang Ye was escorted by Peking University's people through the back entrance, where he immediately saw the small hall packed with media reporters. The camcorders and cameras were set up all over the place, and about nine blond and brunette foreign reporters stood out in the crowd of people. Every one of them was staring at Dean Pan and a vice president of Peking University, posing questions to them.

When Zhang Ye appeared, the entire venue's atmosphere changed at once!

"Professor Zhang!"

"Zhang Ye has arrived!"

"Teacher Zhang, did you turn down the award because of the Abel Foundation's contempt for you?"

"Professor Zhang, do you know the stir that you have caused in the global mathematics field with your rejection of the award? What are your views on the criticism from the foreign academics?"

The reporters were asking questions like they were on stimulants as question after question was raised!

A Peking University staff member immediately tried to maintain order. "One by one! Please raise your questions one by one!"

Dean Pan gave Zhang Ye a look.

That vice president of Peking University also looked at Zhang Ye with blame. Ever since the incident, this was the first time they were seeing him in person again. Regarding Zhang Ye's rejection of the award, it would be a lie if they said they didn't care. Which person of Peking University did not hope to see Zhang Ye be honored with the award? Yet it was too late to say anything anymore. It was already a foregone conclusion, so what else could they do? They could only hope that after the proof of Dale's Conjecture had been validated, there would be another chance at getting an international award. By then, Zhang Ye had better not act impulsively like this anymore. Though coming back to the point, after this incident, which international award would dare come knocking on Zhang Ye's door again!? This fellow's handling of matters was simply too unreliable. He was too much of a troublemaker!

Zhang Ye went up on stage and took a seat near the Peking

University Vice President. Compared to the glum people up there, today's VIP, Zhang Ye, had a much more relaxed expression than everyone else. He even occasionally showed a smile, making that vice president and Dean Pan grit their teeth.

Zhang Ye spoke after he took his seat, "Good evening, dear friends from the media. The reason for my rejection of the award this time was entirely personal, so please don't speculate about it."

Hearing that, the Peking University Vice President and Dean Pan nodded slightly, looking a little better this time. They knew Zhang Ye had explained it this way because he had given it proper thought. The matter was already laid to rest; he had also gotten his revenge and vented his frustration. If he still raised the issue of the visa application, then that would have been very meaningless, and would also show his pettiness. Therefore, at this point, he might as well not bring it up anymore. Otherwise, if he continued being aggressive about things, the criticisms against Zhang Ye would surely increase. If that happened, it would guarantee that no one would ever consider him for any international awards in the future. This was something that Zhang Ye clearly understood.

But the more Zhang Ye understood this, the more Dean Pan and the school leaders felt helpless about this situation. Who said Zhang Ye was dumb? This fellow was definitely not stupid, and he knew and understood everything very well. However, for all his cleverness, it made the things he did seem even more unreasonable. Sometimes, this really made people not know how to react!

Zhang Ye continued answering the questions. "As for the

criticism against me from the global mathematics field, since I did not go online today, I'm unclear about them. However, I must make clear that rejecting the award was purely a personal decision. Therefore, if anyone has anything they want to say, please aim it at me alone. Do not make things difficult for my bosses and colleagues at Peking University."

More questions were thrown out in quick succession.

One...

Ten...

Twenty...

Zhang Ye answered without reservation, with a mostly bureaucratic tone.

An hour passed. The vice president looked at his watch and then interrupted the reporters' questions to announce, "It's getting late. I'm sure everyone has asked enough questions, so let's end the press conference here!"

Zhang Ye and the Peking University people stood to leave.

The Vice President successfully left the stage, with Dean Pan following close behind, nearly making it out as well. However, it wasn't so smooth for Zhang Ye as he got surrounded by the reporters who had rushed up onto the stage!

A reporter from The Morning Post: "Give us a little more detail, Teacher Zhang!"

Zhang Ye said helplessly, "Alrighty then, I will answer one last question."

A foreign reporter asked, "Zhang, I heard that there were some Chinese mathematicians who also expressed their dissatisfaction with your rejection of the award. How do you view your fellow mathematicians' comments of you?"

A female reporter from Beijing Times asked, "Professor Zhang, there are people who are praising you, but at the same time, a lot of people are scolding you. There's a great amount of controversy surrounding you, so what I would like to know is not how others see you, since that is already publicly known. I'm curious about how you view yourself. If a monument was erected for future generations and you could write your deeds or achievements on it, or if you prefer, your regrets and self-criticism, what would you pen?"

This question was very interesting.

Zhang Ye looked at her and smiled. "On that monument, I would not leave any words."

"Not carve anything onto it?"

"Why?"

"What do you mean by that?"

Zhang Ye said very calmly, opening his mouth to slowly speak, "Feats or faults, leave it to future generations to judge for themselves!" With that, Zhang Ye turned and left without another word.

When Dean Pan heard that, he was taken aback.

The vice president also heard and immediately stopped in his tracks. He gave Zhang Ye a slightly startled glance.

The reporters on scene also showed shocked expressions!

Zhang Ye's words had not been heard by the people of this world before. However, this saying was very well-known in his previous world. The most widespread version of it was "there will be future generations to judge" or "give it to future generations to judge." The meaning behind these words was that perhaps several decades or centuries later, future generations would give a fair assessment. However, Zhang Ye did not put it this way here, as he chose the words "leave it to future generations to judge for themselves"—he essentially did not care how the future generations judged him. Be it praise or criticism, however the future generations judged him, Zhang Ye would not care. The only thing that mattered to him was this: a clear conscience!

As for anything other than that?

You can say whatever you like!!

Chapter 780: Central TV Department 14?

The next day.

The incident of the award rejection had created quite a stir for the past two days. At yesterday's press conference at Peking University, they had somewhat reached a conclusion on the matter. It was gradually subsiding as well. Zhang Ye who had been idling at home for several days now noticed the good weather today and decided to wake up early to go back to the office for a rare day of work.

He drove and arrived at work.

He could feel the fresh autumn air outside and see the clear blue skies when he looked up.

Zhang Ye bought a morning newspaper at the entrance of Central TV Tower and flipped through it as he walked to his office. Within just two pages, he saw his picture that was taken during the press conference at Peking University yesterday. The headline of the newspaper was very prominent, occupying about one-seventh of the page, with color added to it. Zhang Ye's original words were quoted: "'Feats or faults, leave it to future generations to judge for themselves'!"

Actually, not only did The Morning Post's newspaper feature him in their report, all the other major newspaper outlets also commenced wide coverage and commentary on this news. The earliest report was published yesterday, while those who reported

it late published the news this morning. Live recordings from last night's press conference were shown on some television stations, portraying the scene in its unedited form. Zhang Ye's quote of "feats or faults" immediately created quite a stir in the online community and went viral with countless netizens labeling it a famous quote! You could just randomly go online and most of the updates and news would be about the "Uncharactered Stele"!

He folded the newspaper and scanned through the Weibo app on his cell phone.

Overnight, more than 10,000 private messages and comments were left on his Weibo!

ChineseCabbage: "Idol! You said it so well!"

OriolesFlygrass117: "I really, really like you! What a great 'feats or faults, leave it to future generations to judge for themselves'! Only you could say such strong words that shock the hearts of all of China!"

DJFOIK: "I've never chased any stars in the past and do not pay attention to anyone in the entertainment circle. At most, I just watch some celebrities who I like on television, but I can't even remember most of their names. But when I heard about this quote on 'feats or faults' yesterday, I was greatly moved by it as it was too shocking. I immediately looked up your works on the Internet and even checked out some of your past incidents. After reading everything, I just want to say this: You really are different from all of the other celebrities! From now onward, you will have another person added to your fanbase. I'm not chasing after stars, what I'm

chasing is the special aura you emanate!"

LittleFei: "I will support you forever! Teacher Zhang, I'm cheering you on!"

Everyone was very supportive of him. During the past few days, his Weibo followers grew by a few hundred thousand to around 3 million fans in total. Although his follower numbers could not be compared to the S-list or A-list celebrities who had tens of millions of followers, and could not even compare to those Korean idol groups who came to China to develop their careers, everyone knew that these fans of Zhang Ye had an irrepressible combat strength that no other fanclubs could ever have!

Posting for the sake of posting?

Scolding others?

Making trouble?

Stirring up trouble?

They were experts in all of these! In a fight, one fan could take on three! This was not merely empty talk, the notoriety was earned from all the fan battles fought in the past!

Zhang Ye was delighted when he saw everyone's messages and noticed that his fanbase had once again expanded in scale, so he simply chose a few random messages to reply back to. Just by

rejecting an award and making a comment inspired by the Uncharactered Stele, it had brought him so much popularity? Indeed, this was something that Zhang Ye did not expect.

This world also had Wu Zetian and a part of the important history remained the same. However, the quote 'feats or faults, leave it to future generations to judge for themselves' about the Uncharactered Stele was not said by Wu Zetian herself. It was the later generation who came up with such a theory. There were some other similar theories. For example, how Wu Zetian thought that her feats were too great, and a stele was not enough to describe them all, therefore leaving it blank. Another theory suggested that Wu Zetian knew she lacked virtue, so she did not write anything on it. But in this world, some of those theories by the later generations did not surface at all. He knew this because he had spent a lot of reputation points after the college exam question setting duty, reading up on books and audio-visual materials of this world, then reviewing them from memory after that. He was familiar with a lot of this world's workings now. That was why he dared to graciously bring up the quote regarding the Uncharactered Stele.

Some long-lost classics must never be buried. That would be disrespecting history and the past generations. As the only spokesperson in this world, Zhang Ye naturally had the responsibility and duty to plagiarize the classics...no...to pass down the classics. Heh, isn't this what Lei Feng's spirit was about?!

He took the elevator and went upstairs.

Ding. The elevator door opened and he reached the floor his

program team office was on. The moment he stepped out of the elevator, Zhang Ye saw two people engaging in a shouting match not too far away.

Who were they?

Why were they arguing this early in the morning?

After fixing his eyes on their faces, he saw that they were Jiang Yuan and another middle-aged man.

Yan Tianfei stared and said, "Old Jiang, are you people from Department 1 finding trouble with us? Our department has just recruited two high-caliber fresh graduates to join us, but look at what your department has done! You took both of them for yourselves? Leaving nothing for us at Department 14?"

Jiang Yuan looked at him, feeling troubled, knowing that this person was not easy to get along with. He was also the director of a department. If not for the special status that Department 1 had in Central TV, in terms of rankings, Yan Tianfei was still ranked higher than him as a vice director. "Department 14 has already been established for two years and still couldn't make a mark in the industry, so why would you still need so many people and equipment? After the Deputy Station Head considered all the factors and thought that those two graduates were not suitable for your department, he sent those two saplings to Department 1. Old Yan, we did not snatch your people, the Deputy Station Head was the one who made this arrangement. If you think it is improper, you can approach him to discuss it. As long as he gives his approval, we will release them immediately."

Yan Tianfei replied, "Since they went to your department, I should look for you!"

Jiang Yuan countered, "But it's useless even if you look for me. This matter was decided by the station heads after holding a meeting."

Yan Tianfei declared without giving him any face, "Old Jiang, don't try that with me. If you people did not request for them, would the station transfer away from my department? I can't understand this! Your department gets all the money, talent, and everything else good! Are all the other departments treated as stepchildren of Central TV? I'll fucking have it out with you today! After I finish with you, I will go and look for the Station Head! I'll demand an explanation for our Department 14 today! Otherwise, we'll just be dawdling around here! If I can't work properly? Then none of you will get to work properly either!"

Jiang Yuan knew that Old Yan actually dared to kick up a fuss over this. Old Yan was a veteran in Central TV and his qualifications were even higher than Central TV Department 1's Jiang Naixiong, much less Jiang Yuan. He had worked at Central TV all his life and had decades of experience. He even worked alongside two of the Deputy Station Heads at the same department before. So even if Yan Tianfei had a bad temperament and would shout or scold others over small things, he could still maintain his position as the Director of Department 14. The station heads did not bother him much since they could not control him anyway.

Jiang Yuan exclaimed, "Old Yan, what are you intending to do?!"

Yan Tianfei asked, "Where's Jiang Naixiong?"

Jiang Yuan said helplessly, "Director Jiang is not here yet." After thinking a bit, he got a little worried about the unyielding temperament of his opponent, so he took a step back and stated, "I'll make a decision on behalf of the Director. If you think you lack people on your side, except for those two fresh graduates, you can choose anyone who is idle or not doing any shows in our department now. Just one, be it an editor or producer. Will that be good enough for you?"

Yan Tianfei sneered, "Of the two graduates you took, one of them was the top scholar from Jiangsu's college entrance exam while the other was the vice president of the student council who had just graduated from Media College this year. For such good saplings, even ten of your staff cannot compare to them!"

Jiang Yuan threw up his hands and said, "Then I can't do anything about that."

Yan Tianfei added, "Fine, if you want me to choose, I'll take Zhang Ye from your department. Even if it's ten college entrance exam scholars who you took, I won't care. Just give me Zhang Ye and you can take as many people as you want from our department!"

Jiang Yuan: "..."

Zhang Ye who had just stepped out of the elevator was a little

taken aback by this.

Eh?

Why did they mention me?

Central TV Department 14? What is this all about?

Chapter 781: Director Zhang Looks For Trouble!

The both of them were still disputing.

Jiang Yuan: "No, definitely not Zhang Ye!"

Yan Tianfei sneered. "Then were you just making an empty offer!?"

Jiang Yuan said, "Old Yan, I was only giving you face by letting you pick a person. It's not like our Department 1 owes your Department 14 anything. If you want to be that way, then just take it as if I'd never offered at all!"

Yan Tianfei replied, "Department 1 has badly fallen out with Zhang Ye, even going all the way to court for a lawsuit. You people no longer have plans to arrange any work for Zhang Ye, but with a person like him whose popularity ranks within the top three at Central TV and is able to plan programs and even host them, he's just going to be doing nothing all day long at your department with that cold storage treatment, right? Since you have no plans for him? Then Department 14 will make plans for him! We lack talent on our side. Just tell me, which TV channel works in such a way like you do? With such a top host in your ranks, you've chosen to censor him instead! A bunch of prodigals!"

Jiang Yuan was furious. "How can you talk that way, Old Yan!"

Yan Tianfei rebuked, "Since you have taken my people, then you ought to make it up to me!"

They did not notice Zhang Ye who had just came out of the elevator not too far from them. Zhang Ye caught a glimpse of them and overheard most of what they said, but did not go up to greet them. He just made his way back to his program team office.

Half the staff were here, while the other half had not arrived yet.

Little Wang's eyes lit up. "Director Zhang!"

Ha Qiqi also smiled and greeted, "Good morning, Director Zhang."

"Good morning, everyone." Zhang Ye smiled back at them.

"Those words you said yesterday were amazing!"

"Yeah, it made my blood boil with excitement after hearing it!"

"What a great 'Feats or faults, leave it to future generations to judge for themselves!' I got goosebumps all over when I heard that!"

"That's the strong spirit our Director Zhang carries. Not mentioning the entertainment circle, even in the academic world through the ages, there haven't been many people who carry that

strength of character and domineering spirit like Director Zhang!"

All of his staff immediately started flattering him.

Hearing that, Zhang Ye could feel his face flushing and he couldn't help but laugh, "Oh come on. What strength of character could I possibly have? You're all praising me to the heavens too much."

A person said, "It's just a pity about that international award."

Another person beside said, "What's there to pity? Even if Director Zhang didn't receive the award, what he did was even more prestigious than receiving the award! Who wouldn't give Director Zhang the thumbs up if they saw him now? That Abel Prize and its undeserved reputation—it's better not to receive it!"

"Haha!"

"That's true."

Little Wang suddenly looked in the direction of the door and asked, "Listen, does it sound like someone is arguing outside?"

Zhang Ye laughed and said, "You're really nosy, just get on with your work." Then, suddenly remembering that his program team had not had much to do since half a month ago, he corrected himself. "Just get on with whatever you're playing."

Little Wang giggled. "Then I'll continue playing Plants vs. Zombies!"

Zhang Zuo said, "Director Zhang's game is still the most interesting. I heard that the sales volume of Plants vs. Zombies has already exceeded 20 million copies. It basically steamrolled all other foreign and domestic video game titles that were released around this time period!"

Those playing, played. Others chatted.

Zhang Ye went into his own office. After getting Little Wang to bring him a cup of tea, he sat there and started watching movies too. These were leisurely days indeed.

As for that altercation that happened outside their office earlier? Zhang Ye did not take it seriously or to heart. Central TV Department 14? Back in Zhang Ye's previous world, if he didn't remember incorrectly, Channel 14 was a children's channel. But over in this world, it was definitely not the same. The children's channel over here should be on either Channel 11 or 12. But whatever channel it was, it didn't mean anything to him now. It wasn't that Zhang Ye did not want to switch over. He had been put into the freezer by Central TV Department 1 and definitely wouldn't be able to do any work before his contract ran out, so of course it would be great if he could switch departments and start doing a new show. From the contractual terms, Zhang Ye was allowed to since he was bound by his contract to Central TV, and not specifically Central TV Department 1. Therefore, he could in principle transfer over to any department within Central TV.

But he knew that Central TV Department 1 would surely not allow him to go. He had fallen out with them. Central TV Department 1's aim now was to freeze him so that he would not get another chance to do a show for the remainder of the year. Since that was their objective, why would they agree to let him go to another channel? Even if those channels had comparatively much poorer viewership ratings than Central TV Department 1, it was still impossible. As long as they had a hosting position with a chance to be on camera, then Central TV Department 1 definitely wouldn't agree to it. As a result, Zhang Ye simply did not take it to heart or treat it as anything serious.

Dong dong. Someone knocked on the door.

Zhang Ye looked up. "Come in."

AD Zhang Zuo came in and closed the door behind him. "Director Zhang, I've just heard something."

"What's the matter?" Zhang Ye asked.

Zhang Zuo blinked. "The Mid-Autumn Festival is almost here, and the Gala broadcast has been scheduled. Since it is not going to be a live broadcast, the recording was almost completed last night. A friend of mine who was in charge of the stage effects this year told me that Ningxia Television and Zhejiang Television have both been in contact with Central TV Department 1 about inviting you over to attend their provincial satellite channels' Mid-Autumn Festival Gala. As Ningxia Television does not have any outstanding

hosts, they were hoping that you could go and guest host for them. Meanwhile, Zhejiang TV had originally planned to invite you and Teacher Yao Jiancai to perform a crosstalk act for their event. They got in touch several times with Central TV. Zhejiang TV even offered an appearance fee of 2 million RMB for you!"

There are still television stations that want me?

Zhang Ye felt very grateful. "Then what happened?"

Zhang Zuo said angrily, "Central TV Department 1 rejected all their approaches!"

Zhang Ye nodded, not surprised at all. "As expected."

"Director Zhang, Department 1 has really gone overboard. Do they really intend to cut off all your paths? Not only you, even the group of us were utterly disappointed when we heard about that!" Zhang Zuo sighed.

However, Zhang Ye wasn't disappointed. Since his relationship with those executives of Central TV Department 1 was already irreconcilable, there was nothing in it for him to be disappointed in them.

What Zhang Zuo had just told him about the other television stations attempting to temporarily borrow him had happened before, but it just wasn't a common occurrence. Further, paying an appearance fee of 2 million RMB to borrow someone was even

rarer. But that showed just how much value they saw in Zhang Ye's position in the hosting world.

However, it did not matter how much they were willing to pay. Even though Zhang Ye was not constrained by Central TV and had the freedom to pursue other activities, like writing songs, painting, or whatnot, within the television industry, his contract had some limitations to it. Without Central TV's permission, he could not take part in another television station's activities or recordings; not even interview programs were given the green light. If Zhang Ye went ahead and recorded an interview and Central TV found out about it, then all they needed was a lawyer's letter to stop the interview from airing. That was how bad Zhang Ye's situation was at this moment! If he sought to increase his popularity now, he could only do so through other means. His main job of producing and hosting his own show was completely held back and restrained by Central TV Department 1!

...

Zhang Zuo left the office.

After he finished watching the movie, Zhang Ye started to feel bored. He casually browsed the Internet and looked at several TV shows that had aired recently. Hai, how boring, there was nothing to do at all. If he knew it would be so boring, he would rather have stayed home to laze in his own bed.

Suddenly, he saw a post sent out by Central TV Department 1's official Weibo. It was a promotional post for a recently broadcast new show on Channel 1 called Traveling the World. It wasn't truly

a variety show but was more of a travel documentary show. Zhang Ye quickly went online to check out the first episode of this show but was left seething almost immediately.

What crap was that!

There was no sincerity in the presentation of the show at all!

On Weibo, there were also many netizens who were arguing with the director of that program team.

Netizen: "This show is truly boring!"

The director replied: "The original intent of this show has never inclined towards variety."

Another netizen: "But it's still not professional enough to be called a travel documentary either. There's so much nonsense in it. It makes me wonder if your travel host has even traveled before! It looks like she's going out of Beijing for the first time in her life, doesn't it?"

Perhaps due to the poor viewership rating for the first episode, that Central TV Department 1 director and his program team staff did not seem to be in a good mood either, and they exchanged some words with the netizens. This was an online activity for Traveling the World to engage their audience by letting them ask questions or give suggestions, with the program team answering them. However, looking at it now, it didn't seem like there was any

intention to answer any questions. The program team's attitude clearly said it all: Our program is already very good. Even if we try to explain it to you, you wouldn't understand!

The director was someone Zhang Ye had met before but never spoken to. However, Zhang Ye knew that he was rather chummy with Jiang Naixiong.

In the end, Zhang Ye decided to comment on the post: "This is the lousiest show I've watched this year. Nothing could be worse than this!"

With Zhang Ye appearing, the netizens who took part in this question and answer session started getting livelier as well!

"Wow! Did I see that wrong?"

"Aiya, it's Zhang Ye!"

"Pfft! Teacher Zhang has shown himself!"

"Quickly come and see this. Teacher Zhang is blasting Traveling the World!"

An internal rift at Central TV Department 1? Everyone was tickled by this as their interest was immediately perked up!

Traveling the World's director and staff were all exasperated by

this, speechless.

But before another five minutes could pass, Zhang Ye posted another Weibo message. It directly attacked his old foe, the Spring Festival Gala host Chen Ye's interview show. "I thought that Traveling the World was the lousiest show I watched this year, but who could've guessed that Chen Ye Interviews was even worse!"

Chen Ye: "..."

Chen Ye's fans: "..."

Another five minutes later.

Zhang Ye started firing at another Central TV Department 1 show again. "I thought that Traveling the World and Chen Ye Interviews were already the worst there was, but it seems like there are mountains beyond mountains and more 'able' men behind other 'able' men. Having looked around, I think your program is the worst of all! I don't even get what the program was about! Did the director graduate from a sports school?"

The directors and the hosts of those related shows had all stirred up trouble for Zhang Ye when he declared war on Central TV Department 1 back then. They criticized Zhang Ye both privately and in public, but as Zhang Ye had too much to handle at that time, he did not have time to get even with them. But now that this fellow was so free that his balls were aching, he naturally had to get back at them one by one with his scolding!

Chapter 782: Confrontation!

It was extremely amusing on the Internet!

Zhang Ye's Weibo handle kept showing up as he appeared everywhere!

"What lousy show is this!"

"What lousy attire is the female host wearing? Did she purposely dress that way to gain an advantage? She wants to grab the audience's attention? Then she might as well wear long johns on screen. Women who dare to wear long johns to work are definitely not your everyday, normal person. That getup will surely be more attention grabbing than your green and red combination of dressing!"

"Into the Cosmos? You spent 5 million RMB just to achieve these kinds of effects? I think it's more suitable if you change the title to Into the Village."

"What kind of filming technique is this? Did you use a cell phone to capture the footage?"

In a short period of time, Zhang Ye had bombarded seven or eight of Central TV Department 1's shows, including variety shows, social science shows, and interview shows. He was not making baseless accusations since he watched one or two episodes of those shows and truly felt that they were terrible. There were too many areas that could be criticized by the audience. Furthermore, this

bunch of people had caused trouble for Zhang Ye previously, so with that mouth of his, would Zhang Ye let them off so easily? That was obviously impossible! Every comment that this fellow made was getting more and more painful. His mouth was sarcastic all the way to their grandma's house!

The netizens were laughing out loud!

"Pfft!"

"Teacher Zhang is such a tease!"

"Well said! Your criticism of them is too scathing!"

"Man, Teacher Zhang has gone crazy again!"

"Hur hur, get used to it. Every now and then, Teacher Zhang will go crazy and pick on someone to argue with. This is his usual practice!"

"It's time for Zhang Ye and his peers to start fighting among themselves again!"

"I'm so excited. I've been waiting for this moment for too long!"

"My young friends, come gather around!"

"Take your chairs out and prepare to watch a good show. Support Zhang Ye silently by giving him Likes."

"I'm already fully equipped and ready for the battle to start!"

"Bring it on! I'm also prepared for the battle!"

Indeed, the battle was on the verge of breaking out. However, the scale was not as large as everyone imagined.

The main forces of the opponents were the fans of Chen Ye and the female host of another show. As for the other shows, they actually did not have much of an audience. First, the viewership ratings were not that high and very few people watched it. Second, some of the shows did not have hosts in the traditional sense. For example, when Zhang Ye scolded the director of Into the Universe, which was a social science show, no one knew who he was. And as the director was not a celebrity, naturally no one would speak up for him. Third, the quality of those shows was indeed quite poor. So if one really pondered Zhang Ye's words, he was actually telling the truth and not just spouting nonsense. It was just that his words were a bit too harsh.

The two groups of people started to curse at each other. However, the battlefield was very small since there weren't much people involved.

Many of those netizens who were anxious to see the world burn were totally lost for words.

"Where are they?"

"Come on, get the battle started! Quickly, start fighting!"

"Dammit, will you guys start fighting already? Why are there so few people?"

"Zhang Ye has already reached your doorsteps. You people should fight back! Why aren't you all fighting back?!"

The netizens were not satisfied with the small commotion and were shouting in frustration about how there was nothing to look forward to!

Finally, a veteran netizen stated a fact to explain it all. "What's there to fight over? Every other day, Zhang Ye has a war of words online with his peers. This has become such a common occurrence that everyone has already gotten used to. In the past, many people who found it a novelty would join in the fun and bang their war drums. Many people would help each other scold Zhang Ye. If it happened once or twice, it's still fine. But even after ten or twenty occurrences, it is still the fucking same. Even novelty has a limit. The people have already lost interest in what's happening. Didn't you all notice that those old enemies of Teacher Zhang are no longer interested in having a war of words with him now? How boring! If it was the couple, Chen Guang and Fan Wenli, who declared war and started criticizing those shows of Central TV Department 1, the entire country's citizens would definitely gather around to discuss or join in the battle, but that's because it would be very rare for that to happen. However, for Teacher Zhang Ye? Hur hur! Forget it. Has there ever been a day where he did not

scold anyone? Has there ever been a day when he did not look for trouble anywhere? There's nothing exciting to look forward to at all! Everyone knows that Zhang Ye is just such a troublemaker!"

The netizens were wholly amused by that explanation.

"That's right, that's right!"

"Teacher Zhang's reputation is way too terrible!"

"Uh, no one wants to battle Teacher Zhang anymore now!"

"Hehe, how boring, this is way too boring!"

Once upon a time, in a place like the entertainment circle where everyone cared about their reputation and fame, the sudden appearance of Zhang Ye who was such an unreasonable jerk had shocked everyone's jaws into dropping. However, a year later today, when everyone met with such an incident again, they actually remained calm and dismissed it indifferently. For such a change in attitude, it was actually quite laughable if mentioned.

However, even though most of the netizens were not interested in starting a scolding battle, it did not mean that other people could sit still. For example, Central TV Department 1 was in chaos at this moment!

...

At the program team office that was originally The Voice's.

Ha Qiqi, Zhang Zuo, Little Wang, and the others were looking at Director Zhang's Weibo in a speechless manner. Everyone looked at each other and they could spot the helplessness in each other's eyes!

It's starting again!

Director Zhang has done it again!

Ha Qiqi rubbed her temple and said, "This..."

Zhang Zuo didn't know whether he should laugh or cry. "Director Zhang has offended another wave of people this time!" He strongly suspected that it was because of what he had told Zhang Ye about the Mid-Autumn Festival Gala earlier that Zhang Ye would do something like this.

"This bunch of people had condemned Director Zhang online before when he was fighting the lawsuit, so it is not considered rubbing it in when he criticized their shows this time." Little Wang giggled.

Ha Qiqi looked at Little Wang. "You can still laugh at this moment?"

Little Wang also understood very well. "Anyway, our program team has already hit rock bottom. We have nothing to lose."

Suddenly, Ha Qiqi, Little Wang, and the others heard some shouting and a commotion coming from the outside. They turned their heads to look at where this was coming from. Eventually, they saw a group of 30 to 40 people appearing angrily at the entrance of their office. There were men and women, young and old in the group, turning out in full force. Every one of them appeared very angry and seemed to be here with unfriendly intent!

Ha Qiqi and Zhang Zuo went on alert!

Zhang Zuo said, "Quick, let Director Zhang know about this!"

Little Wang's expression changed and she rushed off to inform Zhang Ye.

While he said that, the group of people rushed in from the outside!

"Where is Zhang Ye?"

"Call Zhang Ye out!"

"This is too much! This has crossed the line!"

"What do you mean by changing the title to Into the Village?"

"Where's Zhang Ye? Telling our hosts to wear long johns on screen to grab attention? Long johns your sister! Aren't you being too sarcastic! Little Qian is such a good girl and host! Her face turned green after seeing what you posted on Weibo!"

"You said that our shows were recorded on cell phones? Go, go to hell! Our entire show was recorded on professional equipment! You lack ethics with your wording! Normally, we just tolerate whatever you do, but saying that our shows were recorded on cell phones? No one could pretend they never saw that!"

"This is too infuriating!"

"We demand an explanation today!"

"There's a group of netizens who don't understand the truth and are echoing Zhang Ye's claims! They are deriding our shows by picking on the faults! Mocking us! This is a great insult to our shows! It will surely affect our shows' broadcasts and viewership ratings! Based on what does The Voice's program team have the right to criticize our shows on the internet? Are you all qualified to do so? Huh? I'm asking if you people are qualified to do so!"

Chapter 783: No One Can Do Anything About Zhang Ye!

The office was in a tizzy!

The people of the program teams at Central TV Department 1 called out by Zhang Ye—whether the directors, editors, or hosts—all came looking for Zhang Ye to denounce him! If it were any other person who criticized their programs, they wouldn't be able to find them. But Zhang Ye's Weibo account was a verified one that everyone knew about. A colleague of theirs who was working in the same building, could it be impossible to find him!?

"Old Ha, where is your Director Zhang?"

"Zhang Zuo, tell your executive director to come out here!"

"No one does things the way he does!"

"I've been at Central TV for many years, but I-I've never come across such a shameless person before!"

Emboldened by the fact that they had more people on their side, they were shouting for Zhang Ye to show himself. The shouting here also alerted a few other program team offices opposite The Voice's. Some of the people from those program teams probably did not know about what had happened yet, but they were already stealing glances and pointing as they whispered among themselves.

"Did something happen over there?"

"Why did they start fighting over there? Did Zhang Ye do something again?"

"You all should take a look on Weibo."

"Weibo?"

"Zhang Ye bombarded quite a few programs of Central TV Department 1!"

"Ah? Publicly criticizing over Weibo? He even dares to do that?"

"Listen to what you're saying. What does Zhang Ye not dare to do?"

"Fuck, you're right."

At this moment, under the watchful gazes of everyone, Zhang Ye came out of his office.

When he saw that there were so many people, Zhang Ye was also slightly taken aback. Then he smiled and said, "Whoa, why is it so lively here? What's going on?"

The AD of Into the Universe shouted, "Stop playing dumb!"

Zhang Ye blinked. "Playing dumb?"

Beside him, another person from the same program team reacted by gently tugging back the AD a bit. Even if they were angry, Zhang Ye had been given the cold storage treatment by Central TV Department 1. However, Zhang Ye was still the same as before and his reputation was still kicking. Actually, if it weren't for him having offended so many people at once this time by scolding all of those program teams together, no one would have wanted to be the first ones to step up against him. Who didn't know that Zhang Ye wasn't someone they could afford to offend? Just look at those leaders of Central TV Department 1. Weren't they still busy clearing all those lawsuits brought up by those ex-employees of Central TV? Furthermore, no matter how down and out Zhang Ye was at Central TV Department 1, he was still the executive director, overall planner, and host of the top-top-rated variety show in the country. Their own shows did not even earn a fraction of The Voice's ratings, so when faced with a legend like Zhang Ye and his team, they still had some reverence for him.

The executive director of Traveling the World scoffed, "Don't tell me you've forgotten about the things that you posted on Weibo just half an hour ago. Your memory can't be that bad!"

Zhang Ye realized what they were talking about. "Oh, that."

Another person said, "Zhang Ye, you went too far! What makes you think you can scold our shows like that?"

Zhang Ye wondered, "Did I scold you guys? As your fellow peer and colleague, I only had some expectations for the shows that everyone here made. That was why I commented a little about them. When did I ever scold you?"

"Is that what you call commenting?" A youth said angrily, "Is telling someone to wear long johns on camera a comment!?"

Someone else said, "You also know that we're colleagues? Since we're all working at Department 1 together, why did you come and criticize one of your own? Those criticisms can come from anyone, anyone but our own! Otherwise, when our audience sees this, what would they think?"

When those words were said, many of the 30-odd people present here immediately blushed, with some coughing uncomfortably.

Ha Qiqi, Zhang Zuo, and the others were sneering at them from the side.

Colleagues?

One of your own?

You dare say those words with that mouth of yours!

When Director Zhang was being restrained and treated that way

by the Central TV Department 1 heads, being coerced into giving up his overseas copyright of The Voice and ended up facing the entire Central TV Department 1 in a lawsuit all by himself, what were all of you doing? You kicked him while he was down! Currying favor with the executives! Standing alongside Jiang Naixiong and Jiang Yuan to condemn Director Zhang! Colleagues? One of your own? Bull fucking shit! Since you guys already made the decision to denounce Director Zhang, then you should've been prepared for the day you would be targeted as well!

Ha Qiqi could no longer bear to listen. "It's office hours right now. Instead of working, what are you doing here in our office? What's all the shouting for? Are you competing to see whose voice is louder?"

But Zhang Ye did not seem to mind and just gave a smile. "Sister Ha, it's fine. Let them say what they want."

The AD of Chen Ye Interviews was one of the more well-qualified to speak on behalf of the group. With Chen Ye's position as one of the pillars of Central TV Department 1, their show was considered one of the more popular interview programs and also a branded program of Central TV Department 1. That was why when he spoke, it sounded much more confident as well. "Zhang Ye, no one does things the way you do! You can't indiscriminately scold our shows that way. That's basically causing trouble! You are purposely smearing our shows that way! That's an extremely underhanded move! Go on, just go on and revel all you want for now. We'll definitely bring this up to the executives! By taking advantage of your appeal to the audience and stabbing us in the back with such toxic behavior, the execs will surely deal with you severely! They'll punish you!"

"That's right!"

"Such behavior is too wicked!"

"They must definitely punish you!"

"Well said! Let's go together, everyone! We will report this to the execs together!"

"Right, if that sort of behavior is not severely punished, then what else would need punishing!?"

They all echoed each other's calls to denounce him!

Ha Qiqi was annoyed by this!

Zhang Zuo was also getting tired of hearing all this. Were they done complaining yet?

Zhang Ye's people looked at him while the bunch of people who came to denounce him were also constantly reading Zhang Ye's expression. After all, this fellow's reputation was really terrible and no one knew when he would lose it, so they constantly stayed alert.

However, just when everyone thought that Zhang Ye was going to get angry, he grinned instead and was totally unaffected by their

words. In fact, the look in Zhang Ye's eyes even seemed to be showing a sense of happiness. "Oh, really? This bro has really done something so serious? That's great then. You guys are right, totally right! I fully agree with what you guys are saying. I fully support everyone's intention to report this to the executives so that I may receive my punishment!"

Ha Qiqi and the others were stunned!

The denouncing bunch of people were also staring, dumbfounded!

What did you say? You agree with our views? And even fully support us to approach the executives to punish you!?

Suddenly, when this bunch of people caught on, their legs "gave way" and those who fainted, fainted, while others who vomited blood, vomited blood. Everyone "collapsed" at once, silently cursing Zhang Ye's 18 generations of ancestors once over!

Zhang, you son of a bitch!

Punish you? Fire you? Even an idiot would know that's impossible!

Everyone here knew that Zhang Ye had long been thinking of leaving this place, but it wasn't like anyone would let him do that. The executives wouldn't approve it for sure. They were already prepared to make things difficult for him by keeping him with the

department and not assigning any shows for him to helm. This was Central TV Department 1's revenge plot! In such circumstances, how could the executives possibly fire him over such a small incident? Even if Zhang Ye committed the greatest sin, Jiang Naixiong and Jiang Yuan would never have him fired! Otherwise, why would the executives have spent such a great deal of effort to freeze him? Do you think they were playing a child's game!?

It was precisely because they thought of this that the gang of denouncers suddenly seemed to have awakened from their wishful thinking. They lost their morale immediately and were seemingly suffocating from this anger that couldn't be vented. This was even more uncomfortable than swallowing a fly! They were just wondering why Zhang Ye was in such a good mood today, and why it was so easy to reason with him! Not only did he happily play along with them, he even agreed and supported their intention to report him?

Fuck!

It didn't matter who reported him to the executives!

In the entire Central TV Department 1 right now, it wouldn't be at all surprising if any person got fired, unless that person was Zhang Ye!

Seeing that they couldn't muster up another word, Zhang Ye began protesting instead, "What's this? You guys better not be worried that this will affect our relationship as colleagues. Seriously, don't be worried about that. I can guarantee all of you that our working relationship and friendship will never change for

life. Just go on and report me, I really won't mind at all. I am not someone who is that narrow-minded. When I heard your reasoning earlier, I finally realized how bad my behavior was! I definitely deserve to be severely punished! It wouldn't be overboard even if they fire me!"

Everyone: "..."

Everyone's anger utterly dissipated and died off.

Ha Qiqi and the others sniggered, unable to hold back their laughter.

The expressions of those people from the program teams were looking very bad. They seemed to have realized that they had come here for nothing now. This was all too meaningless!

Infuriating!

How infuriating!

It was clearly this Zhang fellow who came to scold them first, but how did this situation end up? Could it be that no matter how Zhang Ye scolded or insulted their shows, he would at most face a meaningless punishment of having his salary docked and nothing else? To be docked of one's salary might be very serious for people like them, since that was the thing they depended on for a living. However, to a B-list celebrity like Zhang Ye, what was a month's salary of several thousand really worth? It was worth a fart! To put

it bluntly, if he randomly burped or farted, that alone would earn him several thousand!

Outside, many people from the other program teams who had gathered to watch the commotion were tickled funny.

Chen Ye Interviews' AD had a sunken expression. They initially came over to confront Zhang Ye but had now become the joke instead. As he really couldn't take this lying down, he ended up accosting him with a few words. "Zhang Ye, just stay here and goof off by yourself! You better work hard at goofing off! Just watch out!"

The others also said angrily.

"Right, watch out!"

"Sooner or later, you won't be able to smile anymore!"

"I'll see how long you can mess around for!"

Hearing that, Zhang Ye smiled. "Alright then, I have to respect my colleagues' views. I will no longer mess around in the future. I will definitely stop stirring shit up on you guys."

Everyone was totally caught by surprise at this.

Wow, did this guy's attitude do a complete turnaround?

How rare, you even know that you're a shit stirrer?!

In the end, Zhang Ye sighed and reflected, "Hai, I didn't know I was a stick, I was actually a stick!"

This bunch of people could not react in time initially. Stirring shit up on us? If you are a stick? Then, everyone slowly turned angry and nearly cursed at someone's mother!

Fuck!

If you're the stick?

Then wouldn't that make us the shit!?

Zhang! You're too damn sarcastic!!!

—In the Beijing dialect, there was a word called "toughie." It was not used to describe Zhang Ye's age, rather his reckless character!

Chapter 784: [A Rock In A Privy, Hard And Stinky!](#)

a stubborn and unreasonable person

A shit stirrer?

Pfft!

Zhang Zuo, Ha Qiqi and the others nearly fainted from holding back their laughter!

"Zhang Ye, you!"

"You're so shameless!"

"You're too sarcastic!"

"Sooner or later, that mouth of yours will be your downfall!"

"Ah! I'm so mad I could explode! You've made me furious this time!"

The office was filled with angry voices as the program team staff of Traveling the World and Into the Universe were enraged and shouting loudly. Regarding Zhang Ye's metaphor of him as a stick and them as the shit, the new explanation of a "shit stirrer" left them infuriated. This was indirectly insulting people!

However, Zhang Ye could not be bothered with them and simply said to Little Wang, "Assistant Wang, see them out."

"Yes." Little Wang walked up and said, "Everyone, we still have work to do. Please leave now."

Then Zhang Ye turned to walk back into his own office.

A staff member with Chen Ye Interviews pointed at Zhang Ye's back and shouted, "Zhang Ye, if you are so capable, don't walk away!"

Zhang Ye really stopped in his tracks and turned back around. "I actually have the capability to not leave. Do you have anything for me?"

That person was stunned and turned dumb instead.

He wasn't leaving? Zhang Ye just stood there and did not move at all. So what could they do now? Fight? They couldn't beat him! Scold? They couldn't outscold him! Report him to get him fired? He was dying to leave this place! After fussing for a long time, they realized they could do nothing about Zhang Ye. He was such a fucking stubborn and unreasonable person!

"We can't just let this go!"

"Come on, let's go and look for the execs!"

"Right, I don't believe there's no place for us to seek redress!"

"This matter must be dealt with!"

After shouting those words, they had determined expressions on their faces and proceeded to leave Zhang Ye's office. Then, they went to look for the executives of Central TV Department 1 in anger.

...

Meanwhile.

While they were there, the entire Central TV also found out about the commotion. Zhang Ye had always been a "tumor" of Central TV Department 1 and there were always many pairs of eyes keeping watch on him. So when this commotion was stirred up, news of it naturally traveled very quickly. Furthermore, many of the Central TV staff had already seen the scolding battle on Weibo.

Everyone was talking nonstop in private.

"Zhang Ye has caused trouble again!"

"I heard of it too."

"Our Director Zhang really can't stay idle. He had just forfeited an international math award, and he's already back to causing trouble for his colleagues? He's really a true warrior!"

"Yeah, I heard that some of the program team staff who were insulted by him online went to seek for an explanation from him. However, I heard that all of them were scolded away by Zhang Ye. A host can already speak well to begin with. What's more, someone like Director Zhang is one of the most slick-talking hosts around, so how can the average person outscold him? Yet that group of people still went ahead despite knowing they wouldn't be able to outscold him. They must have been so free that their balls were aching. Isn't it in Zhang Ye's nature to always stir up trouble? Which associates of his did not get insulted by him before? If they saw something on Weibo, they should just pretend that they didn't see it."

"You make it sound so simple. A show represents the whole team behind it. Zhang Ye has openly criticized their shows. That's equivalent to insulting everyone from the program teams. So how can they pretend like they don't know about it? If they did that, would they still have any face left?"

"Did they go and make a complaint?"

"Yes, they went to find the director."

"Let's wait and see how the execs are going to deal with this matter. Hur, but it's obvious. How can they possibly deal with this situation?"

"That's right, how can they deal with it?"

...

Central TV Department 1.

Director's office.

It was unknown whether Jiang Naixiong and Jiang Yuan saw the Weibo posts or whether there were other matters being discussed, but when that group of people arrived here, the two main heads of Department 1 were already in the office.

"Director!"

"Director Jiang!"

"He's really taking it too far!"

"That's right, that Zhang Ye is getting too lawless!"

Everyone rushed into the office, full of pent-up anger!

Jiang Naixiong glanced at them with an expression that did not look good too good. "Yes, I saw the Weibo posts earlier as well."

That assistant director of Chen Ye Interviews said angrily, "It's not only about the random insulting of our program teams on Weibo. We just went to Zhang Ye's office to seek an explanation from him, but we were insulted back by him. His words were really, really nasty. I, I can't even bear to repeat what he said to us! Because of this matter now, every one of our program teams' staffs are feeling antagonized and it has affected their work. They aren't even in the mood to work properly now!"

"Our program team feels the same too!"

"He can't do things that way!"

"Director, if this kind of behavior is not dealt with, then it will be very difficult to appease everyone's anger. I've long heard that a lot of people in Central TV Department 1 have been complaining about Zhang Ye!"

These people knew what the executives were thinking. However, to them, the idea of freezing Zhang Ye at Central TV Department 1 for the next six months was actually not the result they were hoping to see. After this incident, they just hoped that Zhang Ye would get the hell out of Department 1. Be it a transfer or a dismissal, as long as this fellow did not stay on at Department 1 and continue stirring up trouble everywhere for them, any decision would be fine. They did not want to see that fellow anymore and wished that he would get as far away as possible from them forever. That fellow was too wicked, whether his speech or his actions, he was basically unreasonable and impossible to get along with—of course, one of the reasons for this was because someone, be it them or the program team leaders, had offended Zhang Ye

previously!

The group of people complained repeatedly.

Jiang Yuan frowned after listening to what they had to say.

Jiang Naixiong glanced at them and said, "Alright, I get what's happening. Everyone, go back to your offices first. I will discuss this matter with Deputy Director Jiang and give you all an answer."

Only then were they finally willing to leave the office.

Once the door closed, Jiang Yuan said, "This Zhang Ye is getting more and more out of hand!"

Jiang Naixiong's expression darkened. "What's your opinion on this matter? How should we punish him?"

Jiang Yuan hesitated for a while. "We can't just fire him like that, right? If we did that, we'd give him exactly what he wants."

"Of course that's impossible." Jiang Naixiong sneered and then raised up his head to say, "What's this I hear about Yan Tianfei of Department 14 coming to look for you this morning?"

Jiang Yuan nodded. "He came to demand an explanation from us because of the two fresh graduates. Hur hur, he even said that he

wanted to have Zhang Ye transferred over to them in return."

Jiang Naixiong exclaimed, "He actually risks accepting a hot potato like Zhang Ye? Ever since the lawsuit with Central TV Department 1 started, the execs of Central TV have been very unhappy with Zhang Ye. Furthermore, some old cases were also brought up one after another because of him winning the lawsuit. For the past few days, the legal department of Central TV has not stopped to idle for one moment. There is great pressure from the public and it has affected them very negatively, leaving our station in a very disadvantaged position. Thus, the general opinion of Zhang Ye is very bad, yet Old Yan still dares to accept such a person who has offended the entirety of Central TV? Is he not afraid of trouble?!"

Jiang Yuan said helplessly, "When has Director Yan ever cared about all these? Sometimes he does not even give face to the station heads, let alone this matter. There are two station heads whom he had a friendship with previously, and a deputy station head who even stayed with Old Yan in the same staff dormitory together, sleeping in a bunk bed when they first started working at Central TV. Therefore, there are some things with Old Yan that even the station heads cannot do anything about because of their old relationship with him." Jiang Yuan paused for a moment and then asked, "Do you intend to transfer Zhang Ye over?"

"You can't get anything over at Old Yan's department. Besides, there's also no opportunity to appear onscreen as it's not an entertainment channel. Actually, even if Zhang Ye goes over, what difference is there with staying in Central TV Department 1. It is the same as being freezed." After thinking for a while, Jiang Naixiong still shook his head. He said, "Let's forget it for now, we

will talk about it again in the future."

...

An hour later.

The details of the punishment were out: Zhang Ye would have three months of his salary deducted and an internal email was circulated to the entire Central TV staff to criticize him!

Zhang Ye showed no expression after he read it. He did not even blink and just continued watching his movie.

Ha Qiqi, Zhang Zuo, and the rest of his subordinates also saw the email and reacted indifferently to it. An official warning? This was not the first time it had happened anyway.

The reaction of the other Central TV staff were more or less the same.

"Official warning again?"

"Deduction of salary? Will Zhang Ye miss that little bit of money?"

"Yeah, Department 1 still hasn't fired him. Looks like they're ready to fight it out with Zhang Ye to the bitter end for the next six months!"

"Yes, if they don't fire him, the types of punishment they can dish out are really too limited in scope!"

"What's the use of issuing an official warning? If it were us, this email would definitely kill us off. Ignoring how it would affect our career developments, we would be totally embarrassed by it. But for someone like Zhang Ye? This isn't even considered a mosquito bite. As a person who dared to sue Central TV in court and forfeited an award in the international mathematics world, Zhang Ye's scandals and misdeeds were even published in the international newspapers! Would he be afraid of an internal official warning? Isn't this bullshit? If Zhang Ye cared so much about his face, he wouldn't have done so many earth-shattering things already!"

"That's right, Zhang Ye is such a shameless person. I'm quite sure that he read the email without batting an eyelid. It's pretty meaningless to him."

After the program team staff of Traveling the World, Chen Ye Interviews, and the others saw the email, they were extremely unsatisfied and felt that the action taken was not enough to sate their anger.

However, a few minutes later, Central TV Department 1's official website and Weibo flashed together with an update. It was a rarely seen punishment that was announced to the public, criticizing Zhang Ye in the announcement. This was clearly a more severe form of punishment. The executives of Central TV were probably thinking, "If Zhang Ye doesn't care about the internally circulated

official warning, then he must care about his own popularity, right?" If they made his reputation bad, it would surely hurt him.

However, they never expected that after they had announced to the public Zhang Ye's punishment, it did not cause much of a reaction from the people.

"Another punishment?"

"Heh, why is his salary being deducted again?"

"Official warning? Can't they come up with something new?"

"Zhang Ye cursing people is considered news? It's only if he does not insult or fight with his peers that it should be considered news, right? If Teacher Zhang suddenly stop insulting his colleagues for one day, you people can send out the notice then. I will definitely be so shocked that I will come support you all on Weibo and gather all my relatives and friends to help to forward it as well!"

"Gifting two words—hur hur."

"Let this thread die."

"Let this thread die +1."

The scattered replies from the people made the punishment look very pathetic.

Those people of Central TV who were waiting for Zhang Ye to embarrass himself were all dumbfounded. In previous times, when Central TV gave an official warning to one of their hosts, it had caused great response and created heated discussions. But what was happening now? Why was there not even a wave of commotion stirred when it came to Zhang Ye? This was Zhang Ye who had appeared every day in the media and the newspapers! This was a scandal of a B-list celebrity! Why was no one paying any attention to all of this!?

Only now did they realize they had underestimated their initial thought of Zhang Ye's reputation being terrible. It seemed like the fellow's reputation was at least ten times more terrible than what they had expected! If not for this fellow's really terrible reputation, why would people actually smile and let it slide without a care after hearing about this scandal involving a B-list celebrity??

Chapter 785: A Legend Of Media College!

Very quickly, the Mid-Autumn Festival arrived.

On that night, Zhang Ye went to his maternal grandma's home for a family meal gathering. It was very lively.

His first aunt was the first to finish eating and had already left the dining table. She sat down on the sofa and started munching on sunflower seeds while channel surfing, until she reached Central TV Department 1's Mid-Autumn Festival Gala. The scene was currently showing the famous host of Central TV, Chen Ye, laughing together with three other famed hosts of Central TV as they introduced the show. Chen Ye's overall popularity might not be higher than Zhang Ye's popularity anymore, but within Central TV and the hosting world, he was still of irreplaceable status. He knew how to make people emotional and was witty. For most of the Central TV Department 1 large-scale galas, he was always part of the hosting team.

When his maternal grandma had a look at the TV, her lips curled. "Our Little Ye is not taking part. What are you all watching it for?"

His second uncle said, "It's always the same group of hosts every year. I'm getting tired of watching the same old thing. When will our Little Ye be able to appear on the Spring Festival Gala and nudge those people aside?"

His second aunt echoed him, "Yeah, based on popularity and hosting ability, how is Little Ye not better than them?"

His third sister giggled and interjected, "His relations with others are not better than theirs."

Chenchen who was eating the braised prawns slightly nodded her head and mumbled, "Yes."

Zhang Ye stared at his third sister and Chenchen. "Don't you know how converse in a proper manner? When has my relations with others been that bad? Believe it or not, but this bro can invite the SARFT's Deputy Chief over for dinner with a single call."

Chenchen: "Hur hur."

His second sister: "Hur hur."

His third sister: "Hur hur."

Zhang Ye was speechless. He felt that every one of them did not know what a good thing was even when placed right in front of them. They've even learned how to ridicule me now?

Everyone in the house laughed.

His third aunt sighed. "Actually, if it weren't for the cold storage treatment, many people have saying that this year's Spring Festival Gala would likely have a place for Little Ye as a host. Even though Little Ye has not hosted a large-scale gala before, the basis of his

popularity is already there. If we're talking about overall popularity, then Little Ye wouldn't be less popular than any one of those Spring Festival Gala hosts. In fact, he's probably even more popular than them. Furthermore, with his résumé of a number one nationwide viewership rating show under his belt, his hopes are even greater. But...but who knew that those bunch of people had that trick up their sleeves. How infuriating! It has even caused our Little Ye to be unable to get onto any shows!"

The eldest younger sister asked with concern, "Brother, will you just be staying this way from now on?"

Zhang Ye smiled. "I'll let nature take its course, I guess."

His maternal grandma looked at him. "Think of a way out."

"Grandma, I know what to do." Zhang Ye did not emphasize any further.

...

The next day.

Zhang Ye woke up late. By the time he opened his eyes, it was already past 10 AM. However, he still took his time to get ready before driving to work. When he reached the office, he was confused by what he saw happening in front of him. He saw that the originally half-filled office area was now bustling with activity. The empty seats before were all taken up now. Some people were

packing the desks, some people were shifting the computers, and some were arranging their files.

Ha Qiqi and the others were also here.

"Director Zhang!" The several of them came up to him.

Zhang Ye frowned. "What are these people doing? Who are they?"

Zhang Zuo said worriedly, "They're the staff from the new program team."

"New program team?" Zhang Ye repeated, not fully understanding.

Ha Qiqi explained, "The notice was put up just this morning. For the 80 million RMB budgeted new show that was promised to us previously, you've been removed as the executive director and host. It will be taken over by this new program team. With the executive director changed, the host position has also been changed to Chen Ye." She pointed to the sign on the door. "Our program team's door sign has been removed as well. Because these people from the new program team have shifted here, there isn't much space left in the office area, so they've squeezed into our spot for now. Looking at the execs' intentions, it seems like we'll also be gradually integrated into their new team."

Zhang Ye did not find being removed from the supervision of the

new show surprising as it was only a matter of when they would do it. But he had not expected the 80 million RMB in production budget that he had fought so hard to be given to Chen Ye instead. What a bargain he has snapped up!

"Director Zhang, please make a decision for us."

"What should we do?"

"After getting such a bargain, they're even taking over our office space now?"

It was clear that they had earned this reputation with The Voice's amazing viewership ratings, yet that reputation had now paved the way for someone else. Ha Qiqi, Little Wang, Wu Yi, and the rest were feeling mentally unbalanced at this.

But Zhang Ye did not feel mentally unbalanced at all. A production budget of 80 million RMB? Central TV Department 1 was really being generous this time as this was a rarely seen large-scale production in the variety world. However, you'd need to have the ability to make a show that could match up to this 80 million yuan production budget. If that amount was given to Zhang Ye, he would naturally know how to spend it, thus creating a good program. But when given to a so-called elite team that no one knew how Central TV Department 1 formed? Zhang Ye was only waiting to see how they'd make a joke of themselves. But of course, he wouldn't rule out that they could achieve a good result either.

Zhang Ye finally spoke, "Don't be bothered by them; just do

whatever you need to do."

Ha Qiqi wanted to say something but ended up not doing so.

Zhang Ye had already been thinking of alternative ways recently as he knew that he could not just do nothing about Central TV Department 1's cold storage treatment towards him. He could not go on not doing any shows for the greater part of the next half a year and had to break out of this "cage" that they put him in. At the very least, he needed to do one last show before his contract ended with Central TV Department 1, so that he could consolidate his legendary viewership ratings miracle. Only then would Zhang Ye be able to successfully end things on his terms and make use of his popularity to move on into other industries. This was his plan all along.

Although Zhang Ye was in a very unfavorable situation now, he was already slowly finding ways to break out of it, ways like—making trouble?

Around 11 AM.

That new program team's bosses arrived.

One of them was the executive director, Xu Yipeng. He was a very famous director in Central TV Department 1 and was the AD of two Spring Festival Galas in the last three years. He had handled many of such large-scale galas and also helmed several of the more outstanding variety shows as well, albeit the viewership ratings ranged from low to high. His results in the variety industry

weren't too stable, but the executives of Central TV Department 1 fully trusted him and felt that Xu Yipeng was a very capable man.

The other boss of the new program team was Chen Ye. Chen Ye was one of the newly added hosts of Central TV's Spring Festival Gala in recent years. He was a pillar of the television station due to his fame and qualifications, which was also the reason why Central TV Department 1 was slowly ceding more authority to him. Of this new show the station placed a lot of importance and a huge sum of investment on, not only did they assign Chen Ye to be the host, they also gave him the position of AD so that he would work closely with Xu Yipeng.

As for the other staff of the new program team, they were also all elites handpicked by Central TV Department 1. The two rookies who had been taken from Department 14 were assigned to this program team as well, so you could say that they had the most excellent batch of people. Somehow, the executives of Central TV Department 1 thought that as long as they gathered all of the elites together, they would be able to assemble a much better team than the one that was put together at the last minute for Zhang Ye's The Voice. If The Voice's program team could create a miracle, then there was no reason why Xu Yipeng and his team couldn't do it!

"Oh, everyone's busy?" Xu Yipeng smiled.

Chen Ye was also grinning as he greeted, "Hello everyone."

The people from the new team stopped what they were doing and looked as though they were energized by their leaders' appearance.

"Director Xu!"

"Hello, Teacher Chen!"

"Hello, bosses!"

Everyone was looking spirited. After all, this was a new show with an investment of 80 million RMB, so who wouldn't be excited? None of these people on the team had ever worked on such a large-scale variety show before!

Xu Yipeng smiled and said, "Teacher Chen, why don't you say a word to everyone?"

Chen Ye waved him off. "You first, Director Xu."

"Well, alright. Then let me say a few words first." Xu Yipeng began his bureaucratic jargon, talking about pies in the sky and so on. This was a new team after all, so he wanted to drum up morale, and at the same time, briefly introduce the key points of the show and the division of duties.

After he finished speaking, Chen Ye also said a few words, except that it was targeted at Zhang Ye's team. "Let me add on to that. The management has already approved the original staff members of The Voice officially joining the new program team with me and Director Xu as their bosses."

Little Wang did not give him any face and questioned back, "Then what about Director Zhang?"

Chen Ye narrowed his eyes at her. "Him? He has some other appointment, I guess. I'm not too sure."

After the talking and announcements, both Xu Yipeng and Chen Ye left the office quickly. They probably still had a lot of work to handle.

After the two of them left, an older, middle-aged man of the new program team looked at Little Wang and commanded, "You're Little Wang, right? There's no more coffee. Go and get some more for everyone."

Little Wang stared at him. "Who are you?"

The middle-aged man said, "I am the executive director's assistant."

Little Wang sneered. "If you want it, go get it yourself. Don't act like you're all chummy with me!"

"You..." The middle-aged assistant became furious.

Ha Qiqi knew that person. "Old Seven, you've just arrived, but you're already ordering others around? Do you think you're a huge deal just because you're the director's assistant? Why're you putting on such airs?"

Everyone knew about Zhang Ye's temper, and as they said, "he who handles vermillion will be stained red, and he who touches ink will be stained black." As a result, the people he led were clearly influenced by his character and did not have a good temper either.

"I was only asking for her to go get more coffee. How is that putting on airs?"

"Don't you have hands?"

"She's an office assistant. Why can't I get her to do that?"

"You're also only a director's assistant. Does that mean I can order you around?"

The two groups of people drew a distinct line between themselves. In just the short time since they'd met, they'd nearly come to blows. This atmosphere was simply too tense!

After bickering for a bit, the new team members couldn't do anything about Ha Qiqi, Zhang Zuo, and the others from the original team. They could only hold it in and leave it to the leaders to rein them in later.

Not long after, Zhang Ye came out of his office to get some water from the water dispenser.

With his appearance, the new team members all subconsciously took a sudden, deep breath. Perhaps it was because they were afraid that Zhang Ye would find trouble with them, so they felt a sense of nervousness and went on alert. They all looked up, keeping their eyes on him, with the motion of their heads moving synchronously. When everyone realized their own actions, it felt hilarious and simultaneously extremely embarrassing, resulting in all of them lowering their heads together again. Just two days ago, Zhang Ye had scolded away a group of people who came to denounce him. It seemed like that had left a very deep impression on everyone here.

Little Wang quickly went up to him. "Let me do it, Director Zhang."

"I can do it, don't worry." Zhang Ye smiled.

At this moment, when the two youths seated beside the water dispenser saw Zhang Ye walking over, they subconsciously stood up again, one of them looking excited, while the other one was a little agitated.

"Senior!"

"Hello, Senior, how are you doing!?"

The two of them addressed him differently from the others.

Zhang Ye was taken aback. "You two are?"

The two of them said, "We're both this year's graduates of Media College!"

Zhang Ye was suddenly enlightened. "Oh, my juniors. Hello." He looked at them from head to toe and appeared to realize these two were also likely the ones he heard about during that morning's argument at the elevator landing about whom had been taken away from Department 14. However, Zhang Ye did not appear too enthusiastic meeting them and turned around after just saying a word or two, but in actual fact, did so for the good of these two rookies.

Sure enough, once he walked away, one of the staff members from the new program team told the two rookies in a low whisper, "You guys are new and probably don't understand the situation here. In future, stay away from Zhang Ye. Otherwise, if the program team leaders or any of the execs of Department 1 learn about it, it will surely affect your career progression."

The two rookies nodded.

Before they started work here, they had already heard about how Zhang Ye, the legend of Media College, was a hated figure at Central TV Department 1. Witnessing it for themselves today, it was precisely as rumored. In the eyes of all those other employees, Zhang Ye's image might be extremely negative. There were many who scolded him and others who despised him. But to his two juniors from Media College, the way Zhang Ye carried himself right now, his bearing, it had totally left them tantalized in awe. They felt that this senior of theirs was way too awesome!

This was Central TV Department 1 they were talking about!

The first person to bring Central TV Department 1 to court in the history of its existence, even representing himself as his own lawyer and utterly defeating the Central TV Legal Department's professional lawyer to win the court case. He even somehow managed to stay on around the station as though nothing had happened, happily insulting his colleagues on Weibo if he felt like doing so and not having to worry about not giving face to anyone! With such a stature, he was indeed worthy of being the legend that all the Media College teachers and students looked up to!!

Chapter 786: Director Zhang's Taiji Fist!

The next day.

In the afternoon.

Central TV Department 1 posted a short promotional video which not only created a heated discussion online, even the thousands of pairs of industry insiders' eyeballs were attracted to it. This was Central TV Department 1's upcoming, brand new, large-scale talent show following the highly rated The Voice—Rise to the Dance!

Invested Production Budget: 80 million RMB.

Executive Director, Executive Producer: Xu Yipeng.

Assistant Director, Host: Chen Ye.

Program Planners: Xu Yipeng, Chen Ye, Hao Qian, Hu Tianqi.

The promotional video included all the details of the show clearly, even following The Voice's promotional slogan—regardless of looks, age, or gender, as long as you have a love and passion for dancing, you're welcome to join Central TV Department 1's large-scale dancing talent show, Rise to the Dance. There was even a registration hotline at the end of the video. From the time that this short clip was posted, the Rise to the Dance program team was already prepared to accept registrations for the preliminary audition rounds, officially kicking off the show's launch!

The netizens were stirred.

"An investment of 80 million RMB?"

"Fuck, wasn't that the figure that Central TV Department 1 said they would give to Zhang Ye for his new show?"

"Did he get replaced? The show was given to Chen Ye instead?"

"It's as expected. For a variety show that cannot afford to be messed up, after losing Zhang Ye, Central TV Department 1 would surely have to find someone who could alleviate their worries to take over. The names on this production team look rather impressive. There's Xu Yipeng, who was the assistant director for two Spring Festival Galas and is very experienced. Chen Ye is also a famed Spring Festival Gala host and his popularity as a host is around the same level as Zhang Ye!"

"A dance show? That sounds interesting!"

"Yeah, the audition and competition format all look to be rather novel ideas!"

"Yes, no one has done a dancing talent show before. Does Central TV Department 1 intend to break new ground again? They're thinking of building on the momentum of The Voice and hoping to create a dance trend that could sweep across the nation? Looking at this program team's lineup paired with that large production

cost invested, it really is worth looking forward to!"

"Oh, come on. I don't think it will be good. Without Zhang Ye, they're nothing."

"Previous poster, don't be too sure yet. No one doubts Zhang Ye's abilities, but that doesn't mean only Zhang Ye alone can create good shows. There are also others who can do it, so who says that they won't make it without him? In any case, I rather like Chen Ye. He is capable, but not a troublemaker like Zhang Ye."

"No matter what, Xu Yipeng and Chen Ye really picked up a bargain this time."

"Yeah, this program was initially slated to be done by Zhang Ye."

"I hope it quickly starts broadcasting. I can't wait any longer!"

"Watching the promo, it does feel like it's going to be quite good!"

"Supporting Teacher Chen Ye! Rise to the Dance will surely outdo The Voice's viewership ratings!"

"Who wouldn't be paying attention to Central TV Department 1's variety shows now? The entire industry already has all their attention on it. If there's a chance of any show in recent times exceeding The Voice's viewership ratings, then it has to be Rise to the Dance. Old Xu and Old Chen do have the ability and Central TV is a large platform with the necessary audience base as well!"

"Hmph, what's Chen Ye even worth? When the cat's away, the mice come out to play!"

There were those who praised and others who scolded. All kinds of voices could be heard regarding the new appointments.

...

Back at his own office.

Zhang Ye was eating lunch as he browsed Weibo. He had also found out about the details of this new Central TV Department 1 program from the Internet. He even watched that short promotional video repeatedly three or four times.

A call came in. It was Hu Fei from Beijing Television.

"Brother Hu." Zhang Ye put down his chopsticks and answered the phone.

Hu Fei immediately asked: "What is your opinion of that Rise to the Dance show?"

Zhang Ye laughed: "It looks pretty good from what I see."

Hu Fei frowned. "Really? Pretty good?"

Zhang Ye acknowledged: "It's not bad."

Hu Fei said: "Quite a lot of us were just discussing this new show at Beijing Television earlier. Since you also think it's not bad, then it definitely won't have a problem."

Zhang Ye said: "Of course it won't have a problem. They took reference from our team's proposal and just made some changes to it. Together with the 80 million RMB poured in, if they can't even produce a proper show, then they must be garbage."

Hu Fei was taken aback at this. "Your team's proposal?"

"If my team and I did not come up with several proposals beforehand, would their program team have been able to so confidently confirm their show on the second day of its formation? Could they come up with the promo so quickly?" However, Zhang Ye was not really angry at this. "They're not dumb."

Hu Fei said: "But it's your effort. How can you just give it up to them so easily?"

"It didn't take much effort to do." Zhang Ye said indifferently: "I had my team write up quite a few of such proposals back then, touching on various types of shows. It was aimed at getting a direction from the station at that time, so it wasn't a complete proposal. They want to steal my ideas? They're still far off from that. Besides, those proposals were all written casually anyway. Even if I had to choose, I would not have chosen from that pool of

proposals. I am quite picky when it comes to making shows since I am always striving for perfection. If I want to make a show, there are definitely better choices than those."

Hu Fei sighed: "But you won't be able to make any shows in your current situation. The broadcast time for Rise to the Dance hasn't been set yet, but I've heard news saying that their program is likely going to clash with Do You Remember's broadcast time on Friday evening. I wouldn't mind if I had to compete with you, but with them, I'd have to be more careful so that they don't steal our share of the viewership ratings. Little Zhang, let me know if you have any news."

"OK."

After exchanging a few words, they ended the call.

After the call ended, as he got ready to get back to his lunch, Zhang Ye heard loud arguing voices coming from the outside. He did not make much of it since there had already been several arguments since yesterday between the people of the two teams. This was the umpteenth time they had been arguing.

The argument could be heard in his office.

Little Wang said rather loudly, "You guys copied our ideas. What makes you think you can argue against that?"

The person she was arguing with said, "Who copied anything?"

This proposal was done by ourselves!"

Little Wang said, "Whoa, aren't you afraid of getting struck by lightning!? This was obviously Director Zhang's proposal that you guys made some slight changes to, but otherwise, you've used it in almost its entire original form!"

Another person from the other team said, "Even if it was your proposal in the first place, so what? You're also part of Rise to the Dance's program team now!"

Ha Qiqi interjected, "Director Zhang's contract is different from ours. For the shows he planned out, the copyright belongs to him alone. Now that you guys have directly used his proposal, did you ask him for permission to use it?"

The other person said, "Director Xu and Old Chen are our bosses now. Why should I be asking Director Zhang?"

The proposals that were submitted prior were truly written by Zhang Ye casually. He did not put in any serious effort at all, but his team's staff did not know about this. They thought that Director Zhang had spent a lot of effort to complete them, so they were very mad about what had happened. This group of people had snatched their office space, snatched their show, and even snatched their creation and proposal now too? Anyone would get mad at this! This was pushing them too far!

As they were arguing, Xu Yipeng and Chen Ye came into the office.

"What are all of you shouting for?" Chen Ye banged his hand on a table. "What's going on?"

Xu Yipeng said with a darkened expression, "How many times has this been? Ah? How many times? Ha Qiqi, Zhang Zuo, do you two intend to rebel? Are you not satisfied with the arrangements that the station made for you? If you don't want to obey job instructions, I'll let it slide. If you don't want to cooperate on getting the new show started, that too is fine. Now you're even making trouble?"

However, Ha Qiqi was not afraid of him. "Then what about the proposal that you guys copied from Director Zhang?"

Xu Yipeng also banged his hand onto the table heavily. "This is the station's proposal and show. Since when did it belong to Zhang Ye exclusively? Besides, let me reiterate one point. You all are now staff of Rise to the Dance's program team, all you need to follow are the orders of me and Old Chen! Don't you have any concept of superior-subordinate relations? How did you get around in all your years in the industry? Don't think that just because you have the reputation of The Voice behind you that you can do things as you please. Even if you were once part of the team of the nation's top-rated variety show, do you think that I can't rein you people in?"

I can't do anything about Zhang Ye!

But for you all? Do you think that I can't do anything about you all!?

"Go back to your seats and get working!" Chen Ye also said enraged. Zhang Ye's team staff were indeed too difficult to handle. They were each harder to order about than the other team. Now that the show's production had officially begun and with the preliminary auditions going to take place soon, if their internal program team staff were still arguing every day, how could they get things moving? The more he thought about this, the greater the rage he felt. The show, Rise to the Dance, carried the great expectations and hopes of riches of Chen Ye and the Central TV Department 1 executives. It was slated to exceed The Voice's viewership ratings so that they could carry on dominating the nation's variety show industry and must absolutely not fail!

Finally, Zhang Ye opened his office door and came out.

"Director Zhang!"

"Director Zhang!"

Ha Qiqi, Little Wang and the rest looked over.

Zhang Ye narrowed his eyes and said, "What's this about? Who do you want to rein in?"

Xu Yipeng sneered. "Zhang Ye, this has nothing to do with you!"

"I was happily eating lunch, but you people are making so much noise, slamming tables out here and giving me quite the scare.

What's the meaning of all this?" Zhang Ye said.

Chen Ye replied angrily, "Why are you going on in such an enigmatic way! This has nothing to do with you!"

Zhang Ye scoffed, "So what if I'm going on about something? Scolding you is already a thing of the past!"

Xu Yipeng was a little miffed and reached out to bang his hands on a round glass table that was at least 2 cm thick. As it had a glass top, the resulting sound was heard very loudly and distinctly, like sending shockwaves across the entire office. "Zhang! You really don't have any regard for the rules!"

The light in Zhang Ye's eyes turned harsh. He stepped forward and raised his arms, moving over to the glass tabletop and flicking his wrist as he smacked it as well. It didn't look like much, and didn't even look like he used much strength as he smacked his palms onto that 2 cm-thick glass top which Xu Yipeng had just banged his hands on!

"Do you think only you know how to bang your hands on the table!?"

It didn't look like he used much strength and the resulting sound from this was very soft as well!

However, half a second later, the thick glass top started cracking to the horror of everyone who was looking on at them in the office.

Krrack. With a cracking sound, the glass top shattered!

Xu Yipeng was dumbfounded!

Chen Ye was dumbfounded!

The Rise to the Dance program team was also dumbfounded!

At this moment, the large office space fell entirely silent!

That was a 2 cm-thick glass tabletop, for fuck's sake!

Even if a hammer was used to hit it, it might not necessarily be able to smash it!

Even if a hammer could smash it, it couldn't possibly be smashed into so many pieces!

But you only used your bare hands and managed to break such a large glass tabletop into so many pieces by just lightly smacking it?? Are you on steroids or something? Just what kinds of fucking skills do you have!?

Chapter 787: Job Reassignment Orders Have Arrived!

The entire office fell silent!

Everyone was stunned by this smack of Zhang Ye's!

Ha Qiqi: "..."

Little Wang: "..."

Zhang Zuo: "..."

Wu Yi: "..."

Actually, even Zhang Ye himself was stunned by what had happened as he looked at his hands in some confusion. His Taiji Fist was already at a rather high level of attainment now, having eaten so many Taiji Fist Skill Experience Books, yet he had never had the chance to showcase it or met with an incident that required him to use it. But today, with his sudden smack onto a tabletop, he never expected that his hit-or-miss Taiji Fist would coincidentally present itself here in such a dramatic way. Even he was shocked with astonishment!

Holy shit!

So this bro is this powerful?

Zhang Ye secretly rejoiced.

When Xu Yipeng could finally react, he immediately pointed at Zhang Ye furiously. "You, you, you..."

"How dare you, Zhang Ye!?" Chen Ye also flew into a rage. "Are you planning to rebel! You're definitely rebelling!"

Zhang Ye said dismissively, "When you all banged your hands on the table, it was fine. But when I did the same, you call it rebelling? It seems like everything is dictated by you people!"

A staff member of the new program team rebuked, "You're smashing things! Destroying public property! That is flagrant provocation!"

Zhang Ye eyed that person like a gangster and said, "I did destroy public property. What can you do about it?"

Zhang Zuo was also angered. He pointed at that person and said, "Don't try to pin the blame on our Director Zhang! Who do you think you are?"

But it was still Ha Qiqi who reacted quickly enough, knowing that things had gotten out of control. Smashing a table might not be a big issue, but neither was it a small one, especially with Director Zhang's current situation at Central TV Department 1. The effects would be much greater. As a result, Ha Qiqi had an idea

and immediately pointed at Xu Yipeng. "I saw it. I saw that when Director Xu slammed his hands onto the table, the glass tabletop already had some cracks in it. That was how Director Zhang's smack managed to shatter it!"

Xu Yipeng was stunned!

What?

What did you say?

I broke it? I broke your grandpa! That was such a thick glass top. Even if I banged on it until my hands shattered, there wouldn't be a mark on it!

Ha Qiqi was trying to shift the blame!

Little Wang was also taken aback at this, but quickly added, "I saw it too!"

Zhang Ye's team gradually pointed their fingers at that as well!

"Right, I saw it too!"

"It was him!"

"It was Director Xu who banged too hard on the table!"

Xu Yipeng, Chen Ye, and the rest nearly fainted at this. They cried out with anger. Is there even any place for reasoning now!?

The staff from the two teams were arguing again. However, after the impact from Zhang Ye's smack earlier that left everyone in horror, quite a few people were affected by it. As a result, they could not muster up much even in their argument and had a sense of fear in them. Such a thick glass top could even be shattered just like that. If they really pushed that Zhang fellow too much, who knew if they would end up getting smacked by him as well? If that happened, who could withstand that?

This Zhang fellow's combat strength was too strong!

Not only his mouth, even his hands were the same!

And so, under the lead of Chen Ye and Xu Yipeng, all of them went to seek redress from the leaders!

When they left, Ha Qiqi and the others got anxious.

"Director Zhang!"

"What should we do now?"

"Let's go too!"

"Right, we can't just let the executives hear their side of the story!"

But Zhang Ye replied, "It's fine, don't bother with them."

Zhang Zuo said, "But..."

Zhang Ye laughed, "A bad thing might turn out to be good instead."

"Ah?" Ha Qiqi exclaimed, sounding stunned. "What good could come out of something like this?"

...

In a small conference room of Central TV Department 1.

The executives of Department 1 were currently in a meeting, discussing work-related matters. Midway through the meeting, Jiang Naixiong's secretary walked in quickly from the outside to report on something.

Jiang Naixiong frowned. "Let them in."

When the door opened, Xu Yipeng and Chen Ye came inside.

Jiang Naixiong asked, "What's going on?"

Chen Ye said angrily, "Zhang Ye is rebelling! He smashed and shattered a table in the office! It was a 2 cm-thick glass tabletop and he smashed it with a smack!"

When an executive of Central TV Department 1 heard that, he said, "He has rebelled?"

Jiang Yuan thought that Chen Ye was too exaggerated in his description. "That's such a thick piece of glass. How could he have shattered it with a smack? Don't try to embellish things. What exactly happened?"

Chen Ye didn't know whether to laugh or cry. "He really did that with a single smack of his hands!"

Xu Yipeng immediately testified to that. "Indeed, a lot of us saw it as well!"

Jiang Yuan: "..."

Xu Yipeng said, "Leader, Zhang Ye's too much of a hooligan. With that temper of his, I can't take it anymore. Moreover, that group of his subordinates are following everything that he does, ignoring Old Chen and my orders. In the past two days, we've already had multiple arguments between the new program team and their people. If this goes on, how can we go on to make the show? They might as well argue every day. No one can get any work done!"

Chen Ye added, "Director Jiang, we really cannot go on existing together with Zhang Ye and his team. Can we get them transferred out? Or just let us have a totally new office space to work at!"

Jiang Yuan replied, "The Voice's team are, after all is said and done, very experienced with the reputation of being the nation's top-rated variety show team. Those people still have good abilities, so if you don't make use of them, you all..."

Xu Yipeng said confidently, "Without them, our show will do even better!"

Chen Ye also said, "Speaking of experience, speaking of abilities, would our new team lose out to them? The people we have are the elites of Department 1! Boss, Director Xu and I have the same view. Without them, we wouldn't be dragged back anymore. If we really don't have enough manpower, then we can always transfer some people over from the other departments or loan them over! There is basically no use for The Voice's team at all!"

Jiang Naixiong thought about it, then looked at the other executives. "What's everyone's opinion?"

One of the executives said, "I think the same as them. Zhang Ye and his followers are all troublemakers most people can't handle. Rather than having it like this, we might as well not use them."

Another executive said, "In my opinion, other than Zhang Ye, we should just fire the rest of them!"

An executive beside them said, "We can't fire them. Whether it's Old Ha or Zhang Zuo, every one of them is already an old-timer of Central TV. They've always been giving their best and even worked on a world-class variety show like The Voice. If we fire them, first, it wouldn't look good on us and would definitely affect the other employees' thinking of how our Central TV Department 1 is too unreasonable. Second, the reputation of The Voice's program team in the industry is already there. If we really fire them, I believe that there will be other TV stations lining up to take them in immediately on the day that they're let go. If we really let them end up at some other satellite channels, then wouldn't we have nurtured a tiger that could be the cause of our calamity? Won't we let the others get them for cheap?"

Jiang Yuan nodded in agreement. "You're right."

Jiang Naixiong was feeling quite troubled. "Then what do we do with those people? Are we just going to leave Zhang Ye and his team alone and pay them for doing nothing? Let them stir up trouble every day in Department 1?"

Jiang Yuan held in his anger and commented, "That group of people is indeed very good at stirring up trouble!"

Suddenly, a shout came from the door.

"Director Yan!"

"Stand aside!"

"There's a meeting going on inside at the moment!"

"They're exactly who I'm looking for!"

"You can't go in, aiya! Director Yan!"

The secretary was unable to hold him back and the door was pushed open from the outside. Central TV Department 14's Yan Tianfei strode in. "Old Jiang, it isn't easy to find you!"

Everyone in the meeting room wore different expressions.

Jiang Naixiong had already avoided him for two days now, but could no longer do so. He played dumb and said, "Old Yan, you're looking for me for something?"

Yan Tianfei's tone did not sound friendly at all. "Of course there's something. I've been looking for you for two days now! Let me ask you. The two rookies at our department, did you request for them to be transferred to you!? Do you really think that our Department 14 can be bullied around like that? Don't forget, I was the one who introduced you to your wife. Now that you've done this to me, you better explain to me what your intentions are!"

Everyone looked at Jiang Naixiong.

Jiang Naixiong's expression darkened.

What are you bringing up about my wife for!

Jiang Naixiong married late at 39 years old. When he had met his partner, it indeed had a little bit to do with Yan Tianfei. At that time, Yan Tianfei was not at Department 14 yet and Jiang Naixiong's wife was a deputy supervisor in Yan Tianfei's department. As Yan Tianfei's department collaborated with Jiang Naixiong's side, one of the people who Yan Tianfei sent over to work on it was Jiang Naixiong's wife. Jiang Naixiong won her over easily with his sweet talk back then. It could be considered true love. Therefore, to say that this had a little bit to do with Yan Tianfei, it was somewhat true. But if it had to be argued that Jiang Naixiong's wife was introduced to him by Yan Tianfei, then that would be bullshit.

However, if Yan Tianfei wanted to put it that way, then Jiang Naixiong would also not bother to argue with him. "Old Yan, cool off. Calm down first and take a seat."

Yan Tianfei did not give him any face. "You better tell me how we should resolve this matter!"

Jiang Naixiong knew that Old Yan was not that easy to appease. Unless he could give him a good resolution, this Old Yan would surely come over and stir up trouble at Department 1 for the next three to five months. Thinking of that, and thinking of how Old Yan's department was a godforsaken place, Jiang Naixiong looked at Xu Yipeng and Chen Ye, and suddenly had an idea. "Although those transfers were arranged by the station heads, since they came over to Department 1, then don't you worry about anything, Old Yan. I will definitely give you a proper answer. Speaking of

that, I was just thinking of looking for you, since I know that your department has only been up for a while and don't have the proper staff setup yet, and even the viewership isn't performing well. As sister channels, those of us at Department 1 will surely give you our support!"

Yan Tianfei looked at him. "Oh? How do you propose to support us then?"

...

Later that afternoon.

The grapevines of Central TV was awash with gossip.

"Have you heard?"

"Yes I did. Zhang Ye smashed a table!"

"What you heard was too brief. The details were that he shattered a 5 cm-thick glass tabletop with a smack of his palms!"

"Are you serious?"

"Fuck, how could he be that powerful?"

"Dogshit! Do you even really know what happened? What 5 cm-

thick glass tabletop? It was a solid wood desk that he smashed with a smack of his palms!"

"Ah?"

"Sol-solid wood?"

"What I heard was that he smashed a marble top instead."

"..."

"Do our offices even have marble tops for tables?"

"Fuck, why does the news keep sounding more and more extraordinary now!?"

The rumors continued and started to become more and more exaggerated.

However, one of these rumors was as true as it could get!

On that day at 3 PM, Central TV Department 1 sent out an internal email: Zhang Ye and the original program team staff of The Voice would be transferred over to Central TV Department 14!!

Chapter 788: Central TV's Documentary Channel!

Later that afternoon.

The entire Central TV was fervently gossiping.

Now that Zhang Ye had fallen out with Central TV Department 1, his position within the organization was rather awkward as well. With the source of this news quite confined, he was almost one of the last to find out about it. In fact, it was brought to his attention by his subordinates.

The door was pushed opened without even a knock!

Both Ha Qiqi and Zhang Zuo came rushing in!

"Director Zhang!" Ha Qiqi said anxiously, "We have been transferred out!"

Zhang Ye's eyes shifted to her. "What do you mean transferred out?"

Zhang Zuo quickly said, "There was an internal email sent out just now. You and the whole of our The Voice program team will be transferred over to Central TV Department 14 starting tomorrow. We will be starting work over there and will no longer be under Central TV Department 1! Starting tomorrow, our

personnel files will all be under the charge of Department 14, including our social insurance!"

Zhang Ye's heart skipped a beat. "Are you two sure?"

"It's been confirmed; just check your email!" Ha Qiqi said.

Zhang Ye was a little worried, so he immediately logged on to check. Indeed, the transfer orders were already passed down!

Ha!

That's great!

Messing around and stirring up trouble indeed worked wonders!

At the time Zhang Ye had gone around on Weibo blasting those Central TV Department 1 shows, he initially did it out of spite towards those who had taken a dig at him when he was down. He did not consider other factors, though as an afterthought, he realized that Central TV Department 1 could actually do nothing about him. Since they already intended to freeze him, then there were only limited ways to deal with him now, perhaps even unable to do anything about him. Having had that experience, a light bulb went off in his head and he thought that he could resort to making trouble several times more to see where it would lead. Since his situation with the department was already beyond repair and his reputation was also trashed, there wasn't much to lose. His main goal was to see if he could force a way out for himself, to break out

of the present deadlock that he was in—he had never given up hope that he could still make another show all this while!

Who knew that he would actually succeed!

He really made Central TV Department 1 unable to bear with his antics anymore and force them to transfer their team out!

He heard Zhang Zuo ask, "Director Zhang, what do we do now?"

Ha Qiqi also asked, "Is this actually a good or a bad thing?"

"I've heard of Department 14's Director Yan Tianfei before. He is considered a veteran of Central TV and can have a rather bad temper at times. Director Yan's relationship with the station, including Central TV Department 1 and many of the other departments, isn't too good either. Even if Central TV Department 1 wants Director Yan to continue adhering to the cold storage policy they had for us, I don't believe that Director Yan will listen to them, so that would mean that we might get to start making shows again?" Zhang Zuo commented as he thought through it all.

However, Ha Qiqi did not think it was going to be promising. "But Department 14 is..."

When Zhang Zuo heard her, he suddenly felt discouraged as well. "True, Department 14 is indeed a little...ahem."

When Zhang Ye heard that, he said to the two of them, "Do our

other colleagues know about this yet? Why don't you two go outside first and reassure everyone. Let me understand the situation first before I go outside to talk to you guys."

"OK."

"Understood."

They proceeded to leave the office.

Zhang Ye did not say any more because he did not know what Department 14 did exactly. He did not ask Ha Qiqi or Zhang Zuo either as he did not want to appear too unprofessional in front of them. He'd rather check it himself on the computer. Logically, no matter what happened, Jiang Naixiong, Jiang Yuan, and the others hated him to the bone, so they couldn't have possibly transferred him to another broadcasting department. Only then would they be able to carry out the cold storage treatment in its entirety. Variety channel? Impossible! International channel? No way! Even if it was the sports channel or the children's channel, there was no way it would happen! As all of those channels used a host, no matter how poor the viewership ratings were, Central TV Department 1 would never transfer him to such a place. They would never have allowed Zhang Ye to have a chance to appear on screen. Otherwise, why would it be called cold storage treatment?

So where was it?

What sort of a place was this Department 14?

Upon checking, Zhang Ye was first stunned, then suddenly realized that Department 14 was just a label for whatever was being broadcasted. The channel's full name was: Central TV Documentary Channel!

No wonder. It was no wonder Central TV Department 1 would so reassuringly in transferring him over. It was because Department 14 was just a channel used for broadcasting documentaries. On further checking, Zhang Ye suddenly understood everything. In this world, the Central TV Documentary Channel did not have any hosts at all. It wasn't because they did not hire any, rather there was no position open for anyone. The usual work flow at Department 14 was also a fairly straightforward one.

Only a very minor portion of their documentaries were self-produced, like the ones in which they sent a correspondent and cameraman to the stadiums, or to document behind-the-scenes footage of whichever team were the championship winners, which they would then come back and edit it into a documentary to broadcast on their channel. Otherwise, on visits to a heritage site or tourism spot, they would send a reporter out there to get some footage and document the trip before getting it approved and aired. For additional program resources, they would either partner with other media companies or buy copyrights from overseas television stations to broadcast those programs, afterwards airing reruns over and over again. In any case, with just over a dozen documentary series, they could fill the channel's programming schedule for at least half a year, with each documentary probably being repeated five or six times. That would be just the lower range of times it was repeated.

This was the current situation of Department 14: lack of

manpower, lack of financial resources, show quality was low, viewership ratings were even lower!

If someone wasn't extremely bored, they would never switch to this channel. Even if they did, they would move onto the next channel within a second without any hesitation.

Yes, but if there was really a need to state an advantage of Department 14, then it had to be its wide area of coverage. As it was a domestic channel, the documentary channel was placed close to the front of the television channels' order. When the television was tuned into channel 1, Central TV Department 1's shows would be on. When it switched to 14, Central TV Documentary Channel's shows would be on, so this was considerably at the front. Like Department 1 and Department 2, Department 14 also had nationwide coverage, so most provinces and autonomous regions would be able to receive the broadcast. Whether or not the audience would tune in, at least the signal still reached them. This was also the one and only advantage that Department 14 had.

After understanding most of it, Zhang Ye's heart started pumping harder!

Not long after, he walked out of his office.

"Did Director Zhang say anything?"

"Nothing much."

"Aiya, are we really going to be transferred over to Department 14 then?"

"I heard that it's a godforsaken place there. If we go there, our careers are as good as over."

"At least it's better than staying at Central TV Department 1, no? We're obviously being put into cold storage if we stay here!"

"How is it better? I don't see much of a difference if we go to Department 14. That's as good as getting frozen. Besides, the salary and benefits are also a grade lower, so it's much worse there!"

"I'll just follow what Director Zhang says."

"Yeah, wherever Director Zhang goes, I'll go!"

"At most, I'll quit!"

"That's right!"

As Xu Yipeng and Chen Ye had led their people out for a meeting, Zhang Ye's team were the only ones left in the office area. They were busily talking and discussing the latest transfer orders from management.

Zhang Ye came out. "Little Wang, close the doors. I want to talk to you guys about something."

Only then did everyone fall silent as Little Wang went to close the main office door.

Ha Qiqi said, "Director Zhang, go ahead and speak. We're only waiting for your instructions now!"

Zhang Ye nodded and said, "Regarding the transfer orders, everyone should know about it already, right? To me, I don't actually have a better choice than this. But for everyone here, if all of you were to submit your resignation letters, I think that the management would accept it. You guys still have a chance to leave if you want to."

Zhang Zuo interrupted, "Director Zhang, you've already brought this up too many times!"

Zhang Ye raised his hand, signaling to let him finish speaking. "Even if I have, I will still say it. After all, this is not a small matter. We've been working together for a long time now, so you guys know what my temper's like. I've always spoken in a very direct manner and never hidden behind any doublespeak. If you resign, there will surely be employers ready to take you in. Our reputation as the team behind the nation's top-rated variety show is not for nothing, so they can't wait to employ any of you if you choose to leave here. That would not be the end of the road and you might even have a better future. If you guys feel that those other TV stations are not offering you something better or are unsatisfied with it, I can represent you and negotiate with them. In the industry, I still do know some people and I'm sure they'll give me some face as well."

Ha Qiqi said unhappily, "Director Zhang, aren't you looking down on us by saying that!?"

Little Wang called out, "I'm not leaving in any case!"

Wu Yi also shouted, "Right, I'm not leaving either! We've not done Central TV any wrong! So why should we leave with hanging our heads?"

"Director Zhang, don't say anymore," Zhang Zuo said firmly. "If you go, we go. If you don't go, then we won't go anywhere either. We'll stick together!"

"Right!"

"Together!"

"Stick together with Director Zhang!"

A female staffer who didn't usually talk much remarked, "When our team was formed, all of us came from different places, some from Department 5, some from Department 10. We did not know each other then, but after all these months, I feel a sense of belonging in this group. Everyone is also getting closer to each other. Director Zhang, it was you who united us. In the past, when I was at Department 10, I was getting bullied every day, condescended to by the leaders and ostracized by my colleagues. But at our program team, I feel so at ease every day that I can't wait

to come to work every morning. I feel more motivated spending my time at the office than resting at home. We don't care how the Central TV Department 1 executives treat us; all we know is that you're good to us. When we were paid less than what we deserved, you fought for us to get our proper share. When we were bullied, you rolled up your sleeves to go scold the other program teams. We can see all of that. We're a team. So wherever you go, we will follow!"

"That's right!"

"Well said!"

"That's just how it is. We won't be leaving!"

"Me too!"

Everyone was getting more and more agitated, expressing their desire to stay.

Seeing this, Zhang Ye felt rather touched. "Alright, in that case, I won't say anymore!"

Ha Qiqi immediately asked, "Since everyone is staying, then..."

Zhang Ye smiled. "Then we will naturally go together to Department 14 and achieve some results!"

"Achieve some results? Uh, but that is the documentary channel. We all..." Zhang Zuo hesitated.

Ha Qiqi lost all her morale as well. "Yeah, what kind of results can we achieve at that department? First, that channel's viewership ratings are too low. Second, no one watches documentaries to begin with. Furthermore, we have experience when it comes to variety shows, but documentaries? None of us have done one before!"

Everyone said that they would stick with Zhang Ye, but that was all based on their instincts of loyalty. However, they did not think that they'd be able to achieve any results over at the documentary channel!

Zhang Ye gave a slight smile but did not answer them.

Who said that a documentary channel couldn't have a show that could shock the entire nation? Even if it was a godforsaken place, as long as he had the authority to make a show, then Zhang Ye would find a way to make the flowers bloom there as well!

Chapter 789: What Sort Of Place Is This?

The weekend went by without an incident.

Monday morning.

His father was packing Chenchen's bag according to her class schedule.

His mother had just finished preparing breakfast. Seeing that it was about time, she opened her son's bedroom door to wake him up for breakfast.

"Son, it's time for breakfast!" his mother shouted loudly.

However, the moment she stepped into the room, she saw that he was already awake.

Zhang Ye was scribbling on some documents as he answered her without even raising his head to look at her. "OK, Mom."

His mother wondered, "Heh, why are you suddenly feeling so perked up? You've been like that for the entire weekend already. I don't see you sleeping at night, and by the next morning, you're already up before I even wake up. Has the sun started to rise from the west? What have you been writing for the past few days? Didn't you get frozen by the station? What are you still working so hard on?"

Zhang Ye said, "I've been transferred to another department, haven't I?"

"You mean that Central TV Documentary Channel?" His mother curled her lips.

Zhang Ye nodded. "Yes, that's why I'm writing a program proposal. I've spent an entire weekend on this and it's almost finally done."

His mother grunted, "That lousy documentary channel? Nowadays, if a variety show is done badly, there wouldn't even be much of an audience watching it, much less a documentary. Only an idiot would watch!"

Zhang Ye: "..."

"Quickly go and eat breakfast." His mother turned around and walked away.

Zhang Ye rolled his eyes. "Forget it, you'll never understand no matter how much I explain it to you!"

His mother instructed, "Send Chenchen to school first after you finish eating."

"I know," Zhang Ye answered.

Regarding Zhang Ye's transfer to another department, his parents did not care much about it. Zhang Ye's team members just went along with him and the general populace did not pay much attention to this matter either. It was as though Zhang Ye alone was full of fighting spirit!

After sending Chencheng to school, Zhang Ye bought two copies of newspapers from a newsstand beside Experimental Primary School. The newspapers did publish news of his transfer to the Central TV Documentary Channel, but it was located at a somewhat inconspicuous spot at the bottom of the entertainment news section. The main section of the entertainment news was occupied by other celebrities. One was suspected to be pregnant while another who was seemingly in a scandal was actually promoting new work, etc. There were all sorts of incidents every day in the entertainment circle, so Zhang Ye's news was considered very insignificant this time.

He browsed the Internet on his cell phone and found some people discussing his situation online.

"Zhang Ye has been transferred out?"

"Hai, isn't it still the same?!"

"Indeed, I'm pretty sure it was Central TV Department 1 who couldn't tolerate Teacher Zhang anymore, so they dumped him to another department. But even with this move, he is still as good as frozen, so don't expect that Teacher Zhang will appear onscreen again this year, hai."

"But he can still make something even though he's with the documentary channel!"

"Pfft, previous poster, are you alright?"

"Will you watch the show made by the documentary channel?"

"Fuck, that's true."

"Teacher Zhang is the best at making variety shows, but for him to produce a documentary? Let's put aside whether the department will let him film one or not. Even if he's allowed to film, Teacher Zhang must also know how to shoot one first! And even if he can do it, who will watch his documentary? So is there any difference by transferring from Central TV Department 1 to Central TV Documentary Channel? If we're hoping for Teacher Zhang to give us another program with a high viewership rating like The Voice, we'll have to wait until next year at least, when his contract with Central TV ends."

The netizens did not give much attention to this or treat it as anything serious.

Regarding this, Zhang Ye only smiled at it.

...

At Central TV.

Zhang Ye headed straight upstairs to his previous office. Xu Yipeng was not around, and he only saw Chen Ye and his team staff busily working on the new show in high spirits. All of them had very excited expressions on their faces, whereas Zhang Ye's old team were all packing their belongings and documents from their desks, looking rather numb. To them, this transfer was not a promotion, so there was nothing to be happy about.

"Director Zhang, good morning," Ha Qiqi greeted listlessly.

Zhang Ye nodded. "Have you finished packing?"

Ha Qiqi nodded. "We'll head to Department 14 first then?"

Little Wang said, "Director Zhang, shall I help you with your packing?"

"There's no need to. Why don't you guys go over first. I'll head there after I finish packing." Zhang Ye turned around and walked into his office. He packed his things one by one neatly as he did not like other people touching his things. This was why he did not get anyone to help him. After everything was done, Zhang Ye had a final look at his office he had worked in for the past few months. Then he strode out to the main office area without any lingering emotions.

When the team of Rise to the Dance saw this, they heaved a sigh

of relief.

"He's finally left!"

"That's right, he's finally gone!"

"Heh, this time we will finally have peace with no one creating any more trouble for us."

"The Voice is already a thing of the past. From now on, it's all about our Rise to the Dance!"

"Director Chen, the date for the preliminary auditions has been set. We'll just make some changes to the stage of The Voice which wouldn't take us too much effort. The management has given us two months for the recording schedule, so that would mean the program should officially start broadcasting in December?"

"Yes, this schedule isn't tight at all, so let's work hard, everyone!"

"Got it!"

"Yes!"

"Just rest assured!"

Zhang Ye, standing at the elevator landing, heard their voices

behind him. I have finally left? Chen Ye, aren't you guys being too naïve?! It's not that I have left. Hur hur, it should be I, Zhang Ye, who has come back again! Your new program will be broadcast in December? Fine! We'll have a chance to meet again when that day comes!

The elevator arrived.

Zhang Ye went in and headed up.

The Central TV Documentary Channel was a newly established department from two years ago. The office of Department 14 was located at a higher floor. Although Zhang Ye had heard of that department, he had neither seen for himself nor went to that location before. Therefore, he knew that some things couldn't depend only on his own enthusiasm. That was useless. He had to see how the actual situation was like first. For example, Department 14's environment, the personnel, and equipment would all determine whether Zhang Ye could flex his muscles this time. Regarding this, Zhang Ye was still filled with much anticipation.

However, Zhang Ye was dumbfounded the moment he reached the new office!

Because it was a new environment, the office renovations still looked quite new. The renovated environment looked quite good and the furniture was also quite new. This floor had three independent offices, but one of the bigger offices was empty and the transparent glass door was locked and chained up, with the inside covered with dust. The other two offices looked like they

belonged to two sections of a department. When Zhang Ye saw Ha Qiqi, Zhang Zuo, and the others in one of them, he also went inside.

What he saw after he entered the office dumbfounded him.

This office area consisted of around twenty staff members of Department 14. Almost without exception, everyone's computers were switched on with the screens showing a game interface!

Some were playing [Fight the Landlord!](#)

[Fight the landlord.](#)

Some were playing online games!

And there were also some who were playing Plants vs. Zombies!

This group of people were quite friendly as they were chatting away noisily with Ha Qiqi, Zhang Zuo, Wu Yi, and the others!

Tong Fu said excitedly, "Director Ha, I have heard a lot about all of you!"

Huang Dandan said, "Welcome, welcome. We warmly welcome you!"

A youth said, "Director Yan is not here yet. Feel free to find a seat. You guys can just sit anywhere you like. Aiya, we finally

managed to get you guys over here!"

Another youth nearby said, "That's right. We received the notice on Friday and knew that you would be coming today. Everyone's very excited about this. We're a family from now on, so don't stand on ceremony with us!"

Tong Fu said immediately, "There's no need to be overly polite. Let's get straight down to business!"

That youth nodded several times. "That's right, that's right. Business is more important!"

While Ha Qiqi, Zhang Zuo, and the others thought what kind of business they were talking about, the female staff member Huang Dandan eventually said, "Would you all like to play Adventurers' Wars? We've already downloaded the games onto the computers for everyone. Just register an account and enter Zone 10. Let's defeat some monsters and level up!"

Tong Fu also said, "This game is extremely good. Let's form a team!"

"We don't have much work to handle on a daily basis anyway, so let's go kill some monsters!"

"We still need a cleric. Who wants to be one?"

"We also need a hunter. We've been stuck on this dungeon for a

few days now!"

"Stop messing around. Why are you playing MMOs? Just playing Plants vs. Zombies is good enough!"

"Dammit, this bastard is not playing with us anymore. Hurry, does anyone want to play Mahjong? We lack a player now, so why don't one of you bros come and join us. The three of us can even discuss our moves here!"

Ha Qiqi: "..."

Zhang Zuo: "..."

Wu Yi: "..."

Zhang Ye was also stunned!

Fuck!

Just what kind of a fucking place was this?!

Chapter 790: Designing A Documentary!

Almost all the staff of Department 14 were playing games!

At this moment, someone noticed Zhang Ye.

"Ah! Quick, look!"

"Director Zhang!"

"It's Teacher Zhang Ye!"

"It's him in person!"

"Wah! Director Zhang is here!"

"I want to take a picture and post it on Weibo! Would the people in front please move aside!"

When the staff of Department 14 saw Zhang Ye standing at the door, they got extremely excited.

They were unlike those employees at Central TV Department 1. Even the lowest grade staff like those miscellaneous staffers working in Department 1 would frequently come in contact with some of the more famous hosts or celebrity guests whenever they came to attend galas, or record of a show or an interview program. Which big shot had they not seen before? They had probably even

talked with them before, so they were generally much calmer when faced with such situations.

But Department 14 was a newly established department that was just a few years old. Almost everyone in the department were still considered rookies and their department was too neglected, with a viewership rating that was ranked last among all the channels of Central TV. Even the overseas and agricultural channels had viewership ratings that were several times higher than the overall viewership ratings of their channel. The status of their channel in the Central TV network was extremely low. At most, they could get to know some sports stars when they shot for a soccer or basketball team's championship winning documentary. That was why, even though they worked in the same building, they had not really come across any real big shot celebrities before, let alone a person like Zhang Ye who had created such a big commotion in Central TV Department 1. Together with the upheaval being repeatedly hyped up, all of a sudden, everyone piled forward to him with warm expressions on their faces!

A female staff member said, "Director Zhang, I really like you!"

Zhang Ye replied, "Thank you."

Tong Fu quickly said, "I heard that you smashed a marble table with just a smack of your palms last Friday, is that true?"

Zhang Ye: "..."

Huang Dandan claimed, "Nonsense, it was obviously an

aluminum alloy table!"

Zhang Ye: "..."

F**k, how did it turn into an aluminum alloy table?

I even smashed something like that?

Do you fucking think that I am Iron Man?!

Ha Qiqi who was beside him gave a wry smile and said, "It was a 2 cm-thick glass table. The rumors are too exaggerated."

Huang Dandan exclaimed, "That's still super amazing! Eh, Director Zhang, do you want to play some games?"

A middle-aged woman smiled and said, "I haven't been able to stand Central TV Department 1 since long ago. They snatched our people and appropriated our production budget. Hmph, that smack on the table was really excellent!"

Huang Dandan nodded and agreed, "Yeah, that smack of yours really helped us vent our anger. In the past two years, Central TV Department 1 pushed us aside just because they're the station's favored department. Hai, Director Zhang, do you want to play some games?"

Zhang Ye said embarrassed, "Not now."

Tong Fu said, "Director Yan is not here yet, so feel free to take a seat anywhere you like. I also don't know which office will be assigned to you."

"Hur hur, I can just sit out here." Zhang Ye was not picky. As he was new here, it was best to keep a low profile since he didn't intend to just get by for this period of time. He had a goal to achieve.

When Zhang Ye sat down, Ha Qiqi, Zhang Zuo, and the others also found their seats and sat down as well.

When the staff of Department 14 saw this, they also did not disturb Zhang Ye anymore. They focused their attention on Zhang Ye's team members and started to chat with them.

After around ten minutes, Wu Yi, Little Wang, Ha Qiqi, Zhang Zuo, and the others could no longer refuse their invitation and joined with the gaming forces as well. Actually, during the past month or so, the original team of The Voice had been either playing games or watching movies while under Central TV Department 1. Since they were already doing so at Department 1, there wasn't much difference now that they came to Department 14. Everyone "defected" and integrated into the new team very quickly.

"Director Ha, put points in your strength stat. Right, HP is very important to your class!"

"Ah, I was killed by someone!"

"Where? We will take revenge for you!"

"Fuck, who dares to kill our people? How dare they!"

"Who wants to attempt an instance dungeon? We're still missing one party member!"

"Does anyone here play Plants vs. Zombies? How do you clear this stage?"

Upon seeing everyone so focused, Zhang Ye felt a sense of despair and speechlessness. It would be impossible to make the documentary channel flourish! With this group of people, it would be a wonder if they could even fucking accomplish anything at all.

Suddenly, footsteps from outside could be heard!

The director of Central TV Department 14, Yan Tianfei, was here. He did not go back to his own office at the other office area but walked directly over to this side instead.

Then, a scene that made Zhang Ye drop his jaw played out in front of him!

The staff of Department 14 who were crying out in excitement earlier suddenly put on different expressions. With a flash on their

computer screens, which Zhang Ye did not see clearly, the game interfaces on them just a moment earlier had all completely disappeared. Plants vs. Zombies was now replaced by Word while the MMOs changed to show PowerPoint slides. Everyone's faces appeared very natural and they looked to be very calm as though they had been through this many times before!

Tong Fu picked up a document as he stood up. "Director Yan, I completed yesterday's work that you assigned to me. I just made some final changes to it a moment ago. Can you take a look and see if this is usable?"

Yan Tianfei nodded. "We'll talk about it later."

Huang Dandan also immediately said, "Director Yan, I've already finished that report and sent it to you by email. I've also printed out a copy and put it on your desk!"

Yan Tianfei acknowledged, "Alright."

"Director Yan, we have already agreed on the contract for the copyright. I'm preparing it right now and will submit it to you later."

"Director Yan..."

Yan Tianfei sounded pretty satisfied when he said, "Good, good, everyone has worked hard!"

Ha Qiqi, Zhang Zuo, and the others were all dumbfounded!

Zhang Ye was also stunned at what he was seeing! Fuck, you guys changed way too quickly! Only then did he realized that he had underestimated this group of people!

They were a talented group of people!

They were a fucking talented group of people!

Yan Tianfei casually acknowledged a few of the staff who reported to him, while his gaze since he entered the office was on Zhang Ye's team all along. He looked at them with much admiration.

Zhang Ye walked over to him. "Director Yan, I'm here to report to you."

Yan Tianfei grabbed his hand and shook it. He replied, "I've been wishing for the stars and the moon, but finally I've managed to get you, Teacher Little Zhang, here."

"Don't say that. You're much too polite." Zhang Ye smiled.

Yan Tianfei immediately announced to everyone, "Starting from today, Teacher Little Zhang and his team will be joining us at Department 14. Everyone, let's welcome them!"

Bba bba bba. Thunderous applause rang out!

"Welcome, Teacher Zhang!"

Zhang Ye smiled and said, "When we arrived, everyone welcomed us. They're all so friendly and welcoming that it's making us a little embarrassed."

Yan Tianfei laughed heartily. "You guys are the best team in the variety show industry. How could they not be passionate about your arrival?" But as he said this, Yan Tianfei glanced at Zhang Ye and his team, his laughter becoming softer and softer. "But it will be hard on you guys now that you have to come to our Department 14, hai."

Zhang Ye waved it off and said, "No, it isn't. We are not here to sponge off others but planning to make a mark for ourselves. If there's any work at all, just arrange it for us."

However, Yan Tianfei stated, "There's no need to rush regarding work, since there isn't much to do around here anyway. Besides purchasing some documentary copyrights and handing it over to the broadcast department for scheduling, there isn't much more than that to handle. Come, let me bring you to your office first. I'll brief you on the situation of our department as we go." Leading Zhang Ye out of the work area, he explained, "We are not a full establishment like the other departments. I am the director here, and after Old Liu retired, we have not had a deputy director position. As you can see, there are two work areas here, one for the team that handles the shooting of documentaries, the other for the team that does copyright communications. It's different with your

variety show department setup since the documentary department does not have separate program teams for the time being. Most of the work we do here is just to broadcast the documentaries that we have copyrights to, so there's no need to set up any independent program teams."

The hallway narrowed, offices on the left and right sides.

Yan Tianfei led him and opened one of the office doors. The area inside was quite big and very well-equipped. It was almost two times larger than Zhang Ye's office at Central TV Department 1. His office at Department 1 was part of the entire office area but partitioned out to become a personal office space. As a result, the environment there was naturally not as good as the standalone office space over here.

"You will work from this office from now on, is that OK?" Yan Tianfei asked.

Zhang Ye couldn't say no. "Of course, I'll follow to your arrangement."

Yan Tianfei chuckled, "In the future, you will still be an executive director at Department 14. Since a few of our directors here are still rather inexperienced and have not done too many documentaries yet, you can pass down some knowledge and experience to them from your program planning at Lecture Room, Zhang Ye's Talk Show and The Voice. Your experience in this aspect is not something those rookies can hope to compare to. Although variety shows and documentaries are two different fields, there should still be some things in common. Under normal

circumstances, you can teach or lead them a bit. The team that you brought over will still be under your command. You will only need to report to me when it comes to work-related matters."

Zhang Ye immediately asked, "What about our jobs?"

Yan Tianfei looked at him and replied bluntly, "Actually, as you can see for yourself, our department does not lack manpower and there isn't much work to handle around here either. The reason why I made a fuss at Central TV Department 1 was mainly because I couldn't take it lying down. Based on what could they just steal our new recruits like that? Teacher Little Zhang, I know that you are having a tough time at Department 1 and are on bad terms with them. But don't worry anymore, hur hur. There will definitely be no one coming to find trouble with you or give you an attitude now that you're here at Department 14. Just enjoy your stay here and work seriously."

Find trouble with me?

This bro isn't afraid of people finding trouble with me, what I'm most afraid of is having nothing to do!

However, Zhang Ye definitely appreciated the kindness from Yan Tianfei. He was also very grateful that Yan Tianfei had requested to have him transfer to Department 14, allowing him an opportunity to strike back, an opportunity to deal a fatal blow to Central TV Department 1!

After chatting for another ten minutes.

The two of them more or less had a basic understanding of each other by now.

Zhang Ye blinked and finally spoke, "Director, since there isn't much work here most of the time, and our team doesn't know anything else but to make shows, what would you say if we wanted to make our own in-house documentary? Something fully produced by us?"

Yan Tianfei answered without even thinking, "Of course you can. You guys can make any documentary you like!"

Zhang Ye was taken aback and asked, "Then I will still take the lead as the executive director?"

Yan Tianfei smiled and said, "Yes."

Zhang Ye added, "As for the genre of the show..."

"Is it a documentary?"

"It definitely will be."

"Then just do whatever you like. Our department is a documentary channel anyway!"

"As for the equipment and production budget..."

"Submit the program proposal to me after you've written it up and I will allocate the funds to you."

Fuck!

How did it all go so smoothly?

Zhang Ye coughed and decided to give him a heads-up first. He smiled and declared, "Alright then, I'll write up a program proposal. But for the equipment and production budget, it will probably not be a small amount, I'm afraid..."

Yan Tianfei laughed and said generously, "Usually, we just use our department's budget to buy some copyrights and the remaining funds have no practical use. If you want to try and make a documentary, it doesn't matter if the viewership rating is good or not. Our department still has the ability to fork out this sum of money. After all, how much money could filming a documentary take up? I will allocate 1 million yuan to you when the time comes. You can shoot whatever you like!"

1 million RMB?

Shoot whatever I like??

Zhang Ye was already in tears. I knew it couldn't be this smooth!

If the documentary was to be done according to this bro's expectation with only a production budget of 1 million RMB? Then don't mention the entire documentary, with just that amount of money, it would not even be enough to fucking cover half an episode's shoot!

Chapter 791: A Documentary That Could Sweep Away All Variety Shows?

Later that morning.

The Voice's program team officially entered into their new roles.

After Yan Tianfei left, Zhang Ye hung around at his new office for a while, putting out his belongings and getting familiarized with the surroundings. Then he scrambled to continue perfecting the program proposal that he had spent the entire weekend working on. However, as he wrote, his mind was also occupied with something else.

Oh, money!

There wasn't enough money!

As everyone knew, a documentary did not cost much to produce as the standard template of a documentary was different from that of a variety show. It did not need a large sum of money to promote, or a huge joining fee to be paid to celebrity guest stars. It didn't even need to have a host, much less a stage that would require money to build with all its special stage effects and whatnot. None of that was required in a documentary. Only the most basic setup was required, which included a video journalist and a video editor. All of the equipment would then be provided by the station and the staff were also on the payroll of the station, so how much money would they need to spend? If you were to invest 5 million or 10 million into a normal documentary series with three episodes,

even if the film crew were to check into a five-star hotel and have abalone and lobsters for their meals, they wouldn't be able to spend it all! Usually, for the self-produced documentaries of Department 14, the production costs would hit 80-100,000 RMB at most. Even for the purchasing of copyrights to a fully produced documentary from their media partners would cost less than 1 million.

Therefore, 1 million RMB was really not a small amount at all!

Zhang Ye knew that Yan Tianfei was being very generous and had even given Zhang Ye a lot of face on this matter.

However, the problem now was that Zhang Ye didn't intend to make just any documentary. It was not the kind of documentary series that would end after just three short episodes, nor was it the type that followed a sports team around which could be completely filmed within a few short days. 1 million RMB was definitely not enough!

This wouldn't do. he had to come up with something!

Zhang Ye couldn't continue writing any further. Without money, even if the proposal was finished, there wouldn't be any meaning to it. He had to first find a way to resolve the funding before anything else!

He took out his cell phone and scrolled through his contacts. Right now, Zhang Ye could only think of approaching Wu Zeqing's nephew, Wu Mo. He was the only boss whom he knew would be

willing to fork out so much money and also trusted him at the same time. Oh, Old Wu's elder sister was also one, but Fat Sis's company did not suit the sponsorship profile for what he had in mind. Zhang Ye was planning on using the same old tricks as he did with The Voice. Insufficient production budget? Then he would have to depend on his own reputation to pull in the title sponsors and funding. Once they had that money in their accounts, it would make up for the lack of production money!

He made the call—the phone was switched off.

Eh?

Switched off?

Zhang Ye considered this very serious and was very anxious to resolve the matter. As a result, he made a call directly to the Brain Gold company. "Hello, this is Zhang Ye. I am looking for CEO Wu. Is he around?"

It was a female receptionist on the other end. "Ah, Zhang Ye?"

Zhang Ye said: "I have something urgent to discuss with CEO Wu. But his cell phone seems to be off. Is he in a meeting?"

The receptionist quickly answered: "Please wait a moment, I'll get my manager to speak to you."

The call was transferred. Not long after, a middle-aged woman's

voice sounded on the line: "Is this Teacher Zhang? I am Old Li. We've met before. CEO Wu has gone overseas for a business trip. He left in the morning, so I suppose he should be on the plane right now. Is there something urgent? Why don't you let me know about it first?" There were all kinds of opinions about Zhang Ye floating around in the public, but the Brain Gold company's staff were considered to be on very close terms with Zhang Ye. Zhang Ye was the long-term spokesperson for their company, as well as the creator of the brainwashing advertisement that saved the entire company, so how could they not be close?

Thus, Zhang Ye directly spoke: "Big Sis Li, I do indeed have something urgent I would like to talk about. I might be doing another show very soon, ahem, a large-scale documentary series. Right now, the title sponsor's position is still open, and since CEO Wu and I go back such a long way and have cooperated so many times before, I naturally thought of you first. I just wanted to know if you guys have any plans to invest in a title sponsorship again in the company's short-term strategy? If there is, we can discuss further about it."

Big Sis Li exclaimed: "Oh, we don't have any plans for that right now. Since The Voice ended not too long ago, the effects of the title sponsorship from there is still ongoing. The company's operating efficiency is steadily increasing and we have just reached a new milestone in that area as well. But as our company has no new products slated for release temporarily, CEO Wu mentioned in the previous meetings that other than the ongoing long-term TV commercials slots, there should be no other forms of spending on any short-term promotions. Our publicity campaign is already becoming quite saturated and any more money invested would be meaningless."

Zhang Ye said regretfully: "Oh, I see."

Big Sis Li immediately added: "But I can't decide on this kind of thing, so why don't you contact our CEO Wu again instead. As long as you're the one asking, I don't think CEO Wu..."

Zhang Ye interrupted: "No, it's alright. My project is not set yet anyway, so let's forget it for now. Then, Big Sis Li, regarding my call, please don't mention it to CEO Wu."

Big Sis Li acknowledged: "OK...then"

After hanging up, Zhang Ye laughed to himself helplessly. He should have expected that the Brain Gold company would not be increasing their advertising investments in the short term. The Voice's title sponsorship had already spread the name of their product throughout the country. Its brand exposure had also reached a saturation point, so why would they want to buy another title sponsorship? Figuring this, Zhang Ye told Big Sis Li not to inform Wu Mo about his call. Why? Because Zhang Ye knew that based on their friendship, as long as he asked, Wu Mo would surely not reject him. Even if it was a show with a title "How Dog Shit is Produced," as long as Zhang Ye intended to make it, Wu Mo would still buy the title sponsorship rights. He would do so not because of the show, rather basing his decision on their friendship. The more he knew this, the more Zhang Ye would never approach Wu Mo about this anymore. If he did, then it would mean that he wasn't mature. Friendships shouldn't be taken advantage of!

Since he could not count on Wu Mo anymore this time, who else was there?

Quite a number of company names flashed by in Zhang Ye's mind, but he decided against them all with a sigh. Your sister! If he was doing a variety show, rather than an 8-10 million RMB title sponsorship fee, even if he asked for several tens of millions, there would still be a lot of large companies snapping it up. With the reputation of The Voice behind him, even an investment of 100 million into the title sponsorship was no longer just a dream. In the field of variety television, Zhang Ye's name was worth at least that much!

But how times had changed!

Where was he transferred to?

It was the documentary channel! The program that he was going to shoot was the unloved and uncared for documentary! Even with Zhang Ye's reputation there, it wouldn't be possible to change the entire country's mindset of a documentary! For something that would look like a scam to most people, who would dare invest in it? Who would be such a fool to buy a title sponsorship to a documentary! If there really were an idiot who'd buy it, the entire corporate industry might end up laughing at that person for years to come, no?

Forget it, there's no point looking for a sponsor anymore!

It would be useless no matter who he asked. Even if he kept on asking, there wouldn't be a company that would want to buy a title sponsorship rights to a documentary, much less a title sponsorship

that would cost at least 10 million or so. Regarding this matter, Zhang Ye could do nothing about it for now! Unless he could convince those people to just hand over a mere 10 million RMB to him? That once this bro's documentary series was completed, it wouldn't need any promotions, wouldn't need to build up its reputation, no need to heavily promote it, no requirements for any celebrity guests, nor would it need to be broadcast in a primetime slot, and it would still sweep the entire country, that its viewership ratings could also sweep away all the variety shows?

Hai.

Who would possibly believe that!?

Chapter 792: Oh, Money!

After a busy morning, the program proposal was completed in full.

When Zhang Ye looked at the clock, he saw it was already close to lunchtime. However, he was in no hurry to go downstairs to grab lunch during the break. Instead, without a moment's delay, he went straight to Yan Tianfei's office which was next to his own office to look for him. The door was adorned with a metallic sign with the words: Central TV Department 14, Director's Office.

Dong dong.

He knocked on the door.

"Come in, it's not locked." Yan Tianfei's voice drifted out from inside.

Zhang Ye pushed the door open and entered, only to see Yan Tianfei eating lunch. Tong Fu of Department 14, whom he had met earlier, was reporting about work to Yan Tianfei.

Tong Fu turned around and smiled at Zhang Ye in a friendly manner, then spoke, "Director Yan, let me continue."

"Go on."

"Our channel's Crossing Shangri-La's viewership rating for this week is 0.014%."

"OK."

"Trekking through Xining Again: Episode 3, the nationwide viewership rating is 0.027%."

"OK."

"Visiting Ethnic Communities, viewership rating of 0.066%."

"OK."

"Road to the CBA Basketball Championship, viewership rating of 0.092%."

A long list of viewership ratings for each show was read out by Tong Fu.

Zhang Ye stood at the back, listen to this while feeling less and less confident and wanting to sigh badly.

Those viewership ratings were too pathetic!

No, it should be called too motherfucking pathetic!

0.0-something percent? Were these even worthy of being called viewership ratings? Was this the present situation at Department 14? The present situation of the documentary industry? This was too damn low! What did a show with a 0.0-something percent viewership rating mean? For the most common types of TV shows, whether it was a variety show or an interview show, their viewership ratings would all be at least 0.x%! Compared to The Voice that Zhang Ye had brought to this world, such a viewership rating was as good as zero!

Previously, when Zhang Ye was still at Central TV Department 1, he had seen someone compile the viewership ratings with a very interesting data set in it. Central TV Department 1 would always end the day's broadcast at 4 or 5 AM by displaying a colored still image while playing background music. Yes, it was exactly this still image that had nothing on it which would last until the morning, but can you guess the viewership rating for that? It could even get 0.02%! These ratings were from those who had been watching Central TV Department 1 from the night before but fell asleep without turning off their televisions. Therefore, the viewership rating signal could use this to calculate a viewership rating for that time period. Leaving the accuracy and precision aside, this was still included in the viewership ratings report somehow!

What did this mean?

A still image used by Central TV Department 1 to signal its end of day broadcast had a fucking higher viewership rating than a minority of the shows broadcast on Central TV Department 14 during the day, or perhaps even during a primetime slot. As for those other shows that had better viewership ratings than that end of day broadcast image, they weren't actually much higher at all.

The highest rated show was the sports documentary involving the CBA league, which just barely hit 0.1% in viewership ratings!

This was as brutal as it could get!

This was so miserable it was unbearable to look at!

Zhang Ye didn't know whether to laugh or cry. He had once again gained a deeper and more intuitive understanding of this world's documentary channel. It was no wonder this channel was on the lowest rung of the viewership ratings when matched up against all the other Central TV channels!

Hai, it's a good thing I'm here now!

With this bro behind you all, I will make us so good that our department will shake up the world!

On the other side of the room.

Yan Tianfei nodded without showing much of an expression. "I understand."

Tong Fu smiled. "I won't disturb you from your lunch anymore then."

After Tong Fu left, Yan Tianfei greeted Zhang Ye. "Here, have a seat."

Zhang Ye smiled and said, "Whoa, smells delicious." He looked at the two lunchboxes on the desk. "Did you make this yourself?"

Yan Tianfei pointed at the lunchboxes and said, "My wife made them for me this morning. I just need to heat them up in the microwave during lunch. It saves me so much hassle. You came just in time. She packed too much food for me today, so let's eat together. Come, sit down."

Zhang Ye said, "It's fine. I'll be going to the cafeteria later."

"The food there isn't that good." Yan Tianfei laughed. "You should try my wife's cooking. I guarantee you it tastes much better than that cafeteria food. I have some disposable chopsticks here. Come join me."

Seeing how Old Yan was not standing on ceremony and insisting that they eat together, Zhang Ye did not refuse. "Alright then, I'll have a share of your good food if you insist. The quality of the food at the cafeteria is indeed going from bad to worse."

After eating for a while.

Yan Tianfei asked, "What's the matter? What's that you're holding?"

Zhang Ye handed the documents over at once. "It's the proposal that I told you about this morning. Please have a look and give me

your opinion."

"You finished it this quickly?" Yan Tianfei replied, rather taken aback.

Zhang Ye said, "I've been preparing it since the weekend."

Yan Tianfei took it from him and browsed through somewhat surprised.

Zhang Ye stopped eating and began introducing, "The front few pages cover the show preparations, then towards the back, it mentions the filming arrangements, expected daily schedules, and so on."

Yan Tianfei praised, "You're indeed Teacher Zhang. Just by looking at this briefly, I already know that you're on a totally different level from the program planning staff in our department." He flipped through the proposal page by page very quickly without reading the details. Then, Yan Tianfei placed the proposal down and said, "Alright, we'll go according to what I told you this morning. This show has been approved and you'll be its executive director and executive producer. The original team of The Voice will be readily assigned by you. On top of that, if you still lack manpower, you can take a few people from Section 1 to help you guys out with the shoot. As for the filming schedule, you can arrange it for any time you want. I'll be fine with it."

Approved just like that?

Without even reading the details? This is too nonchalant!

Zhang Ye was helpless at this. He knew that Old Yan did not have any expectations as well as totally not taking his show seriously. He did not even read the details regarding the show's content and filming style, probably because he did not want to appear like he was doubting Zhang Ye and was happy to let him make a show for the fun of it. He did not pin any hopes on Zhang Ye making a good documentary out of this. After all, the situation of Department 14 had always been at a low, so even if he were to leave it to the others to film the documentary or let Zhang Ye do it, it would still end up as a documentary that hardly anyone watched and probably have viewership ratings of just 0.0-something percent. So then, did it matter who made the documentary? Yan Tianfei surely felt that there was no difference.

If it was badly filmed, the viewership ratings would be 0.0-something percent.

If it was filmed well...it would also be 0.0-something percent.

0.01% and 0.09% viewership ratings, was there any practical difference between them?

Zhang Ye was right, because that was exactly how Yan Tianfei thought.

It was not that Yan Tianfei did not trust Zhang Ye, but the few years that Yan Tianfei had been here at Department 14 had given him a very deep understanding of the documentary industry. The

more he understood, the more he knew how difficult it was. To him, or perhaps to their entire department, their highest expectation for a domestic documentary was to have an independently produced documentary win a domestic art award. By going the artistic route, they could still win some honor and reputation for themselves. As for viewership ratings? He had never hoped that a documentary would get much of any viewership. The term "viewership rating" was a nonsensical expectation in the domestic documentary industry that they couldn't possibly have access to! This not only applied to Central TV Department 14, even for the other television stations and the documentary industry, it was the same. No one would be laughing at others, since no one was doing any better than another!

Zhang Ye suggested, "Director, do you want to have a better look at it first?"

Yan Tianfei nodded. "Sure, I will go through it in detail over the next few days."

Zhang Ye opened his mouth. "Then for the production budget..."

Yan Tianfei readily agreed, "I've already promised you 1 million RMB this morning, so go wild with whatever you want to shoot! After you're done with the shoot, there's no need to report back about any leftover budget. If you still want to shoot a second documentary after that, go ahead and do it. There's not much restriction and a lot of freedom over here in our department!"

Leftover budget?

A second documentary?

Even if the budget for the equipment was taken into consideration, 1 million was still not enough to film a single episode!

The most worrisome part to Zhang Ye was the production budget. It was far too little. As a result, he couldn't help but say embarrassed, "Ahem, so then, Director Yan, ah, about the money....Yes, could it..."

Yan Tianfei was taken aback. "What? Are you trying to tell me that this amount is still not enough?"

Since he had already put it that way, Zhang Ye found it even more difficult to speak further. After thinking carefully, he thought that Old Yan had really been very good to him so far. He had already approved the program without meticulously looking over the proposal, willing to support him with manpower resources, and giving him authority as well. It was only their first day coming into contact with each other, so they couldn't be considered very familiar with one another, so Zhang Ye wondered all the more how he should touch on the issue.

Zhang Ye could only say, "It's not like that."

Yan Tianfei asked, "Then what did you want to ask me just now?"

Zhang Ye had already thought over what to say before he came here, so he brought up the next most important issue. "I would like to borrow a few high definition camcorders. From the main camera to the supporting equipment, I want the full set of them. It would be best if I could get my hands on three sets so that I can plan for three different film crews to do their filming concurrently at different locations. That would help speed up the recording progress."

Yan Tianfei was taken aback. "HD equipment? Three sets?"

Zhang Ye replied, "Yes."

Since the budget wasn't likely to be increased, if they could get the HD equipment, that would still take a large amount off the production budget. This sort of HD camcorder and supporting equipment were not cheap at all, in addition to three independent sets of the full setup for on-location filming?

Yan Tianfei asked, "Why do you require three sets?"

Zhang Ye said, "I would like to finish the entire recording by December. That was all written in the program proposal. Since it's almost winter now and as I hope to record more footage, we won't be able to capture some scenes once the weather turns extremely cold."

Yan Tianfei wondered. "Why must you want it in HD? Can't you shoot with the standard definition equipment?"

"Our channel's broadcast signal is HD ready. Although the station's programs are still following the standard definition requirements, which is also how it is for our country's documentaries, I actually find it to be a waste to keep it this way. Since we can broadcast in HD, then we should create better value with an HD show. Besides, the HD equipment does not only contribute to the image clarity, many of the professional shots and magnified closeup effects can only be achieved by using HD cameras," Zhang Ye explained.

Yan Tianfei said, "But no one has ever used HD equipment to shoot a documentary before."

Zhang Ye smiled and said, "Then we can be the first movers and shakers in the industry."

Yan Tianfei replied, "But that would greatly increase the shooting costs. Have you thought about this yet?"

Zhang Ye stated, "That's why I came to you to see if you could help solve our lack this equipment. Does our department have any such equipment?"

"We don't have them. Those things are too expensive and generally a big waste of money. The station hasn't assigned any of that equipment to us before either." Yan Tianfei thought over this for a moment before saying, "For such HD equipment, Central TV Department 1 has quite a number of them. But since I'm not on good terms with their directors anymore, I doubt I can borrow it from them. Then, there's the foreign channel which probably has two sets of them while the sports channel should also have four or

five sets of HD cameras. I'm still on rather alright terms with their directors, so I think I might be able to borrow it from them for you."

Zhang Ye cheered up upon hearing this. "Then I guess I'll have to trouble you a little!"

Yan Tianfei threw up his hands and said, "I only said that I would give it a try. Who knows if they're also using them at the moment?"

"I'll only borrow it for two months. I'll get everyone to work overtime so that we can all quickly finish filming and return all the equipment back to our sister channels!" Zhang Ye promised.

Yan Tianfei added, "But I won't be able to loan their personnel over to our department. The cameramen and video journalists we have at our channel might not be able to handle those professional grade equipment."

Zhang Ye smiled at this. "No problem, I know how!"

Yan Tianfei didn't know how to react. He did not take Zhang Ye's claims too seriously and only felt that he said this to ensure that he could get his hands on the equipment. However, he did not say anything to it.

But in actual fact, Zhang Ye truly knew how to handle them!

In the previous lottery draw, not only did Zhang Ye win 100 Skill Experience Books for the Basics of Directing, he also received 101 Camera Techniques Skill Experience Books. Anything that had to do with filming equipment, he more or less knew how to handle them. 101 skill experience books was not a small figure at all. Even though he couldn't be truly called a professional, he could still be considered to be quite knowledgeable about it!

Yes, with the equipment issue now resolved, he wouldn't have to spend to purchase these items anymore. Then that would mean that he wouldn't need 10 million to shoot this documentary anymore. If he tried to cut further down on the expenses, then 6 to 7 million might just be enough? That was good news! Having lowered the production budget by quite a bit, the bad news now was that the show was still the same as before!

Where would he get the remaining amount from? He had to think of a way!

The documentary that Zhang Ye wanted to shoot this time was the famous representative show in the documentary field of his world. It wasn't like he couldn't go ahead with the shoot even though he did not have enough money. No matter how much the production budget was, he could still come up with an average documentary for sure. But if he were to do that, the show's quality would most certainly suffer greatly. It would definitely not be able to live up to the standard of imagery and effects as well as the viewership ratings that he had in mind. This was something that Zhang Ye could not accept no matter what. A reckless move like this was something that Zhang Ye would never do!

If he wasn't going to do it, then fine. But if he wanted to do it, then he would do it to the best of his abilities!

So much so that Zhang Ye had considered increasing the production budget further. He had wanted to have a production budget that was more than what the original documentary series had in his previous world. He wanted to do so because he felt that he could further fine-tune this classic documentary series to let the entire country's citizens and the entire world see the pinnacle of their Chinese documentary standards!

Oh, money!

Oh, money!

How was he going to make up for the difference of several million yuan??

Chapter 793: Using The Lucky Halo Again!

Afternoon.

During the lunch break, Zhang Ye called his team into his office. When the 20-odd people gathered in the office, the originally spacious office was suddenly very packed. Everyone stood in a circle around Zhang Ye's desk or near the sofa. Because the office area in Section 1 did not belong to Zhang Ye alone, being new, he did not want to behave too casually and did not feel at ease if he didn't treat himself as an outsider. Therefore, he summoned his team to his office instead.

"Has everyone already eaten?" Zhang Ye asked with a smile.

Zhang Zuo burped. "Yes, we just ate."

Little Wang said cheerfully, "I thought after changing to a new department, the food would be different. But I never expected that we would still have to go to that cafeteria for lunch. I'm already sick of eating the food there."

Zhang Ye chuckled, "Alright, I'll treat everyone to something special later."

"That's great. That's a promise then, Director Zhang," Little Wang laughed.

Ha Qiqi looked at Zhang Ye and noticed something was up. "Little

Wang, enough of that, let's listen to what Director Zhang has to say first. It's definitely about our job arrangements."

Everyone looked at Zhang Ye.

Zhang Ye nodded and pushed the documents in his hands towards them. "Take this program proposal with you all, and don't photocopy or disclose it to anyone outside of our department. Just let our people read through and circulate it among yourselves to study it. Then, probably in the next few days, we'll be forming a new program team to get ourselves back to doing what we did before, so let's work well on this program together. I know that we have never dabbled in the field of documentaries before and it may seem rather unfamiliar. It's that way for all of you, as is the same for me as well. That's why we must spend more effort on it, since anything is possible, right?"

Ha Qiqi was a little taken aback. "We're making a documentary? Us?"

Zhang Zuo exclaimed, "Director Zhang, are we really going to do it? Our team will be formed in the next few days?"

Zhang Ye acknowledged, "I've already told Director Yan about this matter. Basically, it is approved and we are just waiting for some procedural documents and HD equipment. We can start work when everything arrives."

Wu Yi wiped his sweat away. "Is...uh...isn't this a bit too hurried? We still haven't familiarized ourselves with the work style here

and have not even come into contact with documentaries before. H-how can we do the filming like this?"

Zhang Ye replied, "I've already thought of how we can shoot the documentary, so when the time comes, I'll arrange and assign the tasks accordingly. Since we are making a documentary now, everyone's job scope will definitely be quite different from before. But I'll also take that into consideration and plan accordingly when the time comes, so don't worry too much. Just get yourselves familiarized with the program proposal and also with the various job details in making a documentary. I believe that everyone will not have a problem since we are the best program team in the country's variety show industry. Be it the variety show industry or the documentary industry...that will remain the same!"

Everyone knew about Zhang Ye's temperament and knew that he would definitely not idle around. He would surely stir up something after coming to Department 14. They were already mentally prepared for it. Although they knew that the documentary industry did not have any future and it wasn't likely to have good viewership ratings or popularity, since there was nothing else to do anyway, they would just try their hands at making a documentary, treating it as a game or practice. No one could have expected that Director Zhang could not even wait a fucking day. They had just transferred to Central TV Department 14 for one day now and he was already finished with the proposal? And the program team schedules were planned out as well?

This was way too fast!

It's just a documentary, do you need to go to such extremes?

It would be fine if it was just filming for fun. Could it be that you're really planning to shoot a documentary with a viewership rating of a variety show in mind? You want to be the best in the documentary industry as well? How could you possibly get number 1? To clinch number 1 in an industry that can only get 0.0-something percent of the viewership ratings, is there any meaning to that? Besides, it was still a big question mark if they could even achieve a 0.0-something percent viewership rating. They were just an amateur team that had never come into contact with documentaries before and many of them didn't even understand the core essence of a documentary. They believed Director Zhang was just the same as them. For a director of a variety show leading a team of variety program staff who were totally clueless, how far could they possibly go in the documentary industry!?

Zhang Zuo made eye contact with Ha Qiqi.

"Are there any questions?" Zhang Ye glanced at everyone.

"No!"

"Uh, we will listen to whatever you say!"

"Yeah!"

"Director Zhang, we'll follow your arrangements!"

"Please assign the tasks. We're your subordinates anyway, so

anything is fine."

Everyone replied positively as they could only respond that way. What questions could they have? Some disagreements could only be left unsaid.

Zhang Ye voiced his understanding while smiling. "Alright, there's nothing more from me then. I'm just informing everyone about this. You guys don't have to feel too pressured. Let's just regard this as practice since that was also Director Yan's intention. It doesn't matter how the shoot turns out. We don't have to care about the viewership ratings either."

With Zhang Ye saying that, everyone heaved a sigh of relief!

Just film it as we like it?

And we can even disregard the documentary's viewership ratings?

Only then did they walk away smiling.

The reason Zhang Ye said that was because he did not want to give them any pressure or push them too hard. There was no point in telling them too much, but the main point was that no one would believe him even if he told them. If that was the case, wouldn't it be better to just let everyone feel relaxed and treat this as a sort of game? As long as Zhang Ye knew how to prioritize, that would be good enough. The team only needed to ensure they

completed their assigned tasks up to par and need not worry about any other things. In this way, he could potentially better bring out everyone's potential instead.

Next, it was the issue of money. This must be solved immediately. If the production budget was not dealt with, they would not be able to carry out the filming for the show!

He began thinking of different approaches!

Use his own money? Impossible. The executives would not agree to it and the station would not allow this. This was not his personal show and the procedures would be wrong too. Besides, Zhang Ye might not even have several million in his account anymore. As a person who had never accepted doing commercial events, he only depended on the meager sums earned from the few novel copyrights he had. On top of that, he had bought a car, spent on food and other expenses, all this often without a second thought. There was probably no other B-list celebrity who was poorer than Zhang Ye.

How about requesting for more funding from Yan Tianfei? But he couldn't bear to touch on that. Besides, their Department 14 was not considered a large channel. It was just a new channel ranked at the bottom, and it was a question whether they even had so much money!

What should he do?

What could he do?

Zhang Ye did not know what to do. He just walked around in circles inside his office, his hands behind his back with a constantly changing expression!

This was a major stumbling block!

He had no more ideas! No ideas whatsoever!

Suddenly, Zhang Ye sat down and lit a cigarette. He concentrated and raised up his hand to open up the game ring's interface. It had been a long time since he had used the game ring, and without any other options left, Zhang Ye could only go for the last resort. The game ring!

What tricks did he have up his sleeve?

It was the upgraded Lucky Halo of course!

During this period of time, Zhang Ye had earned a lot of reputation points which he did not get to use much, so most of them accumulated until now. This Lucky Halo was very powerful, especially after he had gained the "upgraded" version of it. The reputation points that it consumed was so fast that it was like that of a running tap. This speed was so scary that Zhang Ye had not used it much since he gained the purchasing rights to the Lucky Halo (Upgraded) at the Merchant Shop. But he was left with no choice today. He had to use it!

He needed the luck and the money urgently!

Almost without hesitation, Zhang Ye took a deep breath and opened the Merchant Shop to press the Lucky Halo (Upgraded) item immediately!

The Lucky Halo was activated.

A dazzling, angelic, white ring of light appeared over his head suddenly and his reputation points decreased rapidly!

-100,000!

-100,000!

-100,000!

Zhang Ye clasped his hands together and prayed!

Please bless me!

Give me some power!

Chapter 794: Here's 10 million! Spend It All!

At this very moment.

At the recording studio of Rise to the Dance.

Chen Ye was currently giving instructions. "The first batch of auditions will officially start the day after tomorrow. Although it will not be broadcast, the stage must still be ready since the auditions will be conducted here. Set up all the signs and supporting beams properly!"

"OK."

"Understood!"

"Teacher Chen, leave it to us!"

Everyone answered enthusiastically and got busy with their work.

The stage here was originally The Voice's and it was designed completely by Zhang Ye himself. Now that, Zhang Ye was put into cold storage and dumped over to that "desolate" Department 14, this variety stage that had taken a large sum of money to build and was ranked among the best in the country would naturally be given to Xu Yipeng and Chen Ye's team who had taken over. The signboard and logo of The Voice had already been removed and the workers were now hanging up their Rise to the Dance's large

signboard and slogan in place.

Chen Ye said, "Move it slightly to that side!"

That worker said, "Do you mean here, Director Chen?"

Chen Ye said, "No, move it a bit more!"

That person said, "Uh, is it alright now?"

Chen Ye said, "No, no, no. Aiyo, why can't the few of you understand what I'm saying?! Move it this way!"

Without warning, a worker suddenly lost his footing on the ladder and with a tremble of his hands, the large signboard fell out of his hands. On the other side, another worker who was standing on the ladder supporting the other end of the signboard could not react in time and also lost his grasp as it slid out under the horrified gaze of everyone. The signboard was still suspended from a steel cable, but only on one side, making the signboard swing like a pendulum in midair!

The steel cable broke as it swung.

And hit two long rows of lights at the side with a loud bang. Boom boom boom. With several exploding noises, those two rows of lights were completely smashed and the signboard and lighting frame dropped to the ground together. No one knew what it hit when it landed. With several thunderous crackles, it was as though

lightning had struck!

This was not the end. While the signboard was swinging, the two workers standing on the ladder were shocked and instinctively stretched out their hands to try to grab hold of it. However, that only made matters worse. They did not manage to catch hold of the signboard and the ladders they were on tipped over amid the screams of everyone. Then the ladders crashed directly down onto the stage's largest main equipment in the rear!

Smash!

Smash!

The entire place was a complete mess! Everything was smashed!

There was even a device making a crackling sound as it exploded with glaring sparks at the next moment. The entire place was in shambles!

Chen Ye was stunned!

All hell broke loose!

"Ah!"

"Quick, rescue them!"

"How are they? How are they?"

"Aiyo, what happened?! What happened?!"

"It's over! All the equipment is broken!"

"Get away quickly! In case it explodes again!"

"Oh my god! What, what should we do?!"

A moment later, Xu Yipeng rushed over frantically. When he arrived, he saw the scene in front of him and started cursing immediately. The two slightly injured staff who were putting up the signboard were scolded until their faces turned green. For such a big incident to happen at this critical juncture, how would they be able to hold the audition in two days? If they were to repurchase the equipment and repair the stage, would they still make it in time for the broadcast in December? Their plans were disrupted. Besides, even though they had 100 million RMB for the production budget from Central TV Department 1, the use for this money was already all planned out. They did not have much money to spare to repurchase the equipment and repair the stage anymore. It was likely that even a few million would not be enough to cover the damage on these equipment!

Being the leaders of the program team, the first thought that came to Xu Yipeng's and Chen Ye's mind was: Where would they get this money from? How could they fill this shortfall?

Not long after.

The news of the incident at the Rise to the Dance recording studio had spread throughout Central TV!

Many people were shocked when they heard about it.

"Holy shit, why are they so unlucky?"

"Are you serious? Such a big accident?"

"There was even nearly a fire?"

The people of Rise to the Dance are really unlucky. But then again, that stage was originally designed and built by Zhang Ye, so it was just restoring it back to its original state. A lot of the equipment were damaged and I even heard that the electrical wirings of the lights were destroyed. Repair? It looks more like they'll have to rebuild it from scratch!"

"This is really strange."

"That's right. The main problem is that the electrical circuits and equipment are all damaged!"

"Is there anything that is related to Zhang Ye not strange?"

"I just passed by Central TV Department 1 and noticed their directors getting anxious. It won't be a small sum of money. If they have to repair the stage, then what's left over of their production budget will become even less and that might affect their ability to invite big shot celebrities. Back then, when Zhang Ye made The Voice, he raised the celebrity joining fees by around two times the market prices. With that as a benchmark now, the conditions for a celebrity to appear as guest on variety shows has also become much higher! Let's just see how they'll handle it."

...

At the Deputy Station Head's office.

Yan Tianfei was called over by the deputy station head.

"Old Yan, sit," the deputy station head said pleasantly.

Yan Tianfei asked curiously, "Old Zhou, what's the matter?"

"Hur hur. I heard that Zhang Ye and his team were transferred to your department? How are they doing?" the deputy station head asked.

Yan Tianfei said, "They're quite fine. Everyone knows how capable Little Zhang is, so you might as well say that he's wasting his talents over at our department. Old Zhou, if there's anything you want to say, just say it. We've known each other for over twenty years now. So stop beating around the bush."

The deputy station head cleared his throat and said, "OK, then let me give it to you straight. Did you hear of the incident regarding Rise to the Dance? Your Department 14 has actually gotten quite a good bargain this time. Not only was Zhang Ye transferred over, even his entire elite team of people from The Voice have been incorporated by your department. Since Central TV Department 1 has given you so many talented people for nothing much in return, now that something has happened on their side, you should express some gratitude, right? Since you all don't have any new shows lined up for now, you should take out a portion of your production budget and lend it to Central TV Department 1 first. I think just 10 million would do. It's not much."

Upon hearing that, Yan Tianfei was angered. "Old Zhou, do you think that our Department 14 can be bullied around like that?"

The deputy station head frowned. "How can you say that?"

"It's because Central TV Department 1 stole two of our rookies in first place. When I went to request for the two of them back, they refused. Since Zhang Ye and his team were already getting the cold storage treatment from Central TV Department 1, they were dumped over to our Department 14 to free up their staffing. How did it turn out to be that I'm the one who owes them? They created the trouble themselves, but I have to clean up the mess for them now? Help them out with our money?" Yan Tianfei laughed loudly. "Don't bullshit me!"

The deputy station head said, "It's just a loan. I'll be the guarantor for them and make sure that they will return it to you all

later."

Yan Tianfei remained impervious to both hard and soft tactics. "If they want to borrow money, tell them to borrow from the station. Don't set your eyes on our Department 14!"

"The station doesn't have much money now since our spending has already been planned beforehand, so there aren't many surplus funds to move around for the time being." The deputy station head said, "I hope you can look at this from the bigger picture, Old Yan!"

Yan Tianfei said angrily, "The station does not have surplus funding, Department 1 does not have surplus funding, then why does it fucking seem like only our Department 14 have surplus funding?! How much do the other departments get for their annual budgets? How much does our Department 14 get for our annual budget? We have the least amount among all the channels! Old Zhou, don't tell me you don't know that!"

The deputy station head was also fuming. "It's been many years now and yet your temper is still just as terrible! That's enough, I'm won't be discussing this with you anymore. The station will cut your department's production budget this year. Tell your department's financial personnel to come look for me!"

Yan Tianfei sneered, "If you can take it directly, so be it. But let me tell you this first: there's not a single cent left in our department's account anymore!"

...

At Central TV Department 14.

In Zhang Ye's office.

As he looked at his reputation points decreasing rapidly, Zhang Ye could feel his heart wincing!

-100,000!

-100,000!

Ten minutes passed!

Another twenty minutes passed!

It was consuming 100,000 reputation points every second! Seeing that his reputation points were almost used up, Zhang Ye still did not know if the matter was resolved or not. Therefore, he did not risk deactivating it in case the Lucky Halo just took effect but ended up getting stopped by him suddenly. If that happened, it was as good as giving up halfway and all the reputation points spent up until now would be for nothing!

Hurry!

Just what was the situation like now?

Could any investors be taking the initiative to contact this bro for the title sponsorship right now? Or could it be...

As he was feeling restless, he heard the sound of someone hastily walking outside. He could hear Department 14's Director Yan Tianfei shouting for him from a distance away, "Teacher Little Zhang!"

Zhang Ye was stunned and quickly turned off the Lucky Halo (Upgraded). He walked out from his office in a hurry to look for the direction where the sound came from. He then saw Yan Tianfei taking large strides towards him with an infuriated expression.

Sensing that something had happened, the staff of the department's two sections were also startled as they looked over. Some of them even ran over in a flurry.

"Director?"

"Director Yan, what's the matter?"

"What happened? What's made you so angry?"

Zhang Ye also asked puzzled, "Director Yan, you're looking for me?"

Ha Qiqi, Zhang Zuo, and the others appeared as well, not

knowing what was going on.

As they were clamoring, Yan Tianfei walked up before everyone. After he caught his breath and stifled his anger, he shouted at Zhang Ye, "Teacher Zhang, set up a program team immediately for the new show that you mentioned earlier. Establish an independent program team from Section 1 and 2 of the Department right now. You will be the team leader and the program team's account will be separate from Department 14's. I will give you 10 million and you shall lead your team to go film the documentary!"

Everyone was dumbfounded by what they heard!

"What?"

"10 million?"

"A documentary? 10 million?"

"This...this..."

"Director Yan, what's this about?"

Zhang Ye was also a little confused. Damn, just what the hell was happening? He's handing out the money just like that? And it was even for a budget of 10 million which had surpassed his requirements? This was more than enough for him to shoot the entire documentary! There would even be a lot of surplus funds leftover!

Zhang Ye exclaimed, "Director Yan!"

Yan Tianfei was not afraid to say what he wanted and interrupted, "Don't say that it's too much. I won't let you reject this either. I don't have any requirements for the documentary and it doesn't matter if the viewership rating is low or not! The only thing you need to do is to spend all 10 million on this documentary! You must spend it all! Don't leave a single cent! All the money will be handed to you!"

All of a sudden, he was given 10 million!

And he must even fucking spend it all??

Zhang Ye was elated and immediately said, "OK! I will definitely complete this mission!"

Yan Tianfei nodded. "Good! Very good!"

Everyone's jaws dropped as they did not know what was happening here!

Only Zhang Ye knew clearly that it was because of the power of the upgraded Lucky Halo. All the problems he had were easily solved. It was just that awesome!!

Chapter 795: The New Show Will Be Called—

The developments that followed could only be described as swift. After Yan Tianfei gave the word, Zhang Ye and his team received the orders and established a new program team immediately. Before even confirming the staff assignments and related work duties, the program team's bank account was already set up and running. Yan Tianfei specially approved their department's Finance Section to transfer the 10 million RMB over to the program team. It was done in about ten minutes, as though that money would disappear if they did not quickly get it done. Around ten minutes later, Zhang Ye already had his hands on a legal-looking document with the official department stamp on it that detailed the establishment of the new show.

Yan Tianfei's high efficiency made everyone's jaws drop!

Instantaneously, everyone started discussing in whispers what just happened.

"Wha-what happened just now?"

"I don't know. What on earth is Director Yan doing?"

"Excluding the copyright purchase funds, our department should only have around 10 million or so left in our production budget, right? All of that has been allocated now? All of it will be used for making a documentary? I'll faint if that's true. What's Director Yan thinking?"

"10 million RMB for a documentary? That is enough for 100 documentaries!"

"If they spend it carefully, it might even be enough to shoot 200 documentaries!"

"What on earth is going on?"

"Did anyone hear about anything?"

"I heard that Director Yan went to see the deputy station head, and he's been like this since he came back!"

"There wasn't any warning that this would happen, neither have I heard of anything! Uh, but there was an incident that happened at the stage of Central TV Department 1's Rise to the Dance. Could this be related to that?"

Nobody could figure out what was happening.

Tong Fu of Department 14 suddenly exclaimed, "I get it! The deputy station head must have tried to make some arrangements on behalf of Central TV Department 1 and asked for access to our department's production budget to be diverted over to Department 1! There were precedents of such actions before, like last year when the station's funding was tight, didn't they ask for our department's budget to help tide them over!?"

Huang Dandan slapped her thigh, creating a loud pop. "Oh, that's

true!"

Tong Fu continued, "Could it be that Director Yan does not want them to have their way, therefore he distributed all the money to Director Zhang using a newly set up bank account? He'd rather spend it all than give it up for nothing to Central TV Department 1!"

Someone cursed, "Fuck! Central TV Department 1 has really gone too far!"

Another person said, "They're outright bullying us!"

"Do they think that Department 14 is so easy to pick on? Ah?"

"It's the same with the station. They're always siding with Department 1!"

"Seems like Central TV Department 1 is Central TV's biological child while we're merely the stepchild!"

Little Wang grunted, "That bunch of people at Central TV Department 1 are always behaving in that way!"

Ha Qiqi said, "The Voice's copyright that belonged to Director Zhang was almost sold off by their management who wanted it for themselves. I wouldn't be surprised by what that bunch of people are capable of!"

Wu Yi said, "Those immoral people!"

Zhang Zuo said, "Don't talk about it anymore. I get angry just at the mention of it!"

The people on Zhang Ye's team also started scolding with the same thoughts in mind.

These two groups of people held a grudge with Central TV Department 1, some of it was new, some of it was old.

Zhang Ye was listening to this from the side all this while, suddenly realizing that something had happened to Rise to the Dance's stage! As he was in his office using the Lucky Halo, he did not know about it yet. Needless to say, this was definitely the work of the Lucky Halo. The stage was built by Zhang Ye himself according to the original version of The Voice of China in his previous world. Zhang Ye had spent much time and effort to recreate it and it represented his blood and sweat. It also represented a lot from his previous world, so now that it had been destroyed? It was just as well. The new show had been taken away by Chen Ye and his team, but that was not an issue to him. However, the stage must not be left to them. With his activation of the Lucky Halo this time, it also helped him bring down the entire stage setup in an instant. It was so powerful that Zhang Ye secretly felt a little afraid of it!

So this was the upgraded Lucky Halo!

The reputation points needed to keep it activated were many, something that Zhang Ye would never be able bear in normal circumstances. However, when it was used, its power was very significant. It had the ability to cause an earthshaking effect that could turn things around!

Ha Qiqi said to Zhang Ye, "Director Zhang, although Director Yan has already given the word, but for this 10 million production budget, how should we spend it? There's nothing much that we can spend on when it comes to documentaries, right? Usually, a documentary can be made with just 80 to 100,000 RMB."

When Zhang Zuo heard this, he gave a wry smile and added, "The problem now is that we have to spend it all no matter what?"

Tong Fu and Huang Dandan, along with the rest of Department 14's staff, all knew best about a documentary's expenses. For a documentary, this 10 million was indeed an astronomical figure. To put it bluntly, even if the 10 million yuan budget was given to them, they couldn't spend it all.

When Zhang Ye heard this, he rolled his eyes. This bro was just worrying about the lack of money and only managed to get this 10 million after having such a hard time, so how could he possibly not be able to spend it all. Don't worry, there won't even be a single cent left! It was even better since he was just considering increasing the production budget to replicate the popular documentary series of his world in its whole to present it to this world. This 10 million had arrived timely and the funding was all of a sudden in such great excess!

With so much extra funding, he was no longer limited to just filming the first season of the documentary series. He could even go ahead and do the second season as well, as long as he did not waste too much time. By not capturing unnecessary footage, he could easily finish filming for the two seasons' worth of the original series. There should be enough money now to support this change of plans. Zhang Ye's advantage was that he knew the final cut of the documentary, thus reducing the time needed for him to repeatedly test his shots. In most cases, a documentary had the lowest percentage rate when it came to recorded footage making it into the final cut. Perhaps a little more than a dozen shots out of a thousand would be selected while the remaining would end up not being used, but none of that was a worry for Zhang Ye. The footage he was going to film would have already been "chosen" by the professionals of his previous world who had spent so much time fine-tuning and refining their shots and were later market-tested when the documentary was broadcast. Because of all those reasons, he would undoubtedly be able to avoid wasting any unnecessary expenses. This was an advantage that no one could ever beat him at!

At this moment, Yan Tianfei's secretary walked into the office area hurriedly.

"Director Zhang, are you busy?" the secretary asked politely. "Director Yan just informed me that your team has a total of around 20 people and that all of you are working from Section 1's office space for now, so it has gotten a little crowded here. He told me to unlock and open up Section 3's office space and get it cleaned up before telling you about this, but starting today, your new program team will operate from the Section 3 office space which will become your independent work area."

For a team of around 20 to have their own workspace might seem like it was too much, but with their team setup, they were also considered to be qualified to use it since they were a full team after all.

Zhang Ye smiled and replied, "Great, thank you. Help me thank Director Yan as well."

The secretary smiled. "You can also pick out a few people from Section 1 and 2 to join your new program team. Director Yan has considered the fact that since you're still new here and might not be too familiar with our documentary department's operation and filming process, you would probably need a few old hands to help familiarize you with the work here."

Zhang Ye remarked, "OK, but since I'm still new, I'm not familiar with the people either..."

"Shall I recommend a few people to you then?" the secretary asked.

Zhang Ye answered, "That would be great."

The secretary turned around and looked at the people of Department 14 before saying, "Tong Fu is quite good. When the department was first set up, he was already here, so you could consider him veteran around here. Every time our department has a self-produced documentary job to handle, Tong Fu usually follows along. He knows all about the workflow and approval standards for the documentaries."

Zhang Ye smiled and stated, "Alright then, but I will still have to respect his wishes and not force him to join my team." Saying that, he looked at Tong Fu. This was someone he had a good feeling about since he arrived at the office this morning. He was one, while Huang Dandan was the other. Both of them were very active and cheerful, and it was exactly this type of person Zhang Ye preferred getting acquainted with.

Tong Fu chuckled, "Of course I don't have a problem. I'm just afraid that Director Zhang will find me unreliable. As long as you don't mind, I'll surely give my all!"

Zhang Ye was very happy at that. "Then it's confirmed!"

Tong Fu immediately started packing his things to prepare to go over to the Section 3 office space. However, as he packed, he kept signaling to Director Yan's secretary with his eyes, making it seem like they knew each other very well or something.

Director Yan's secretary glanced at him and coughed, then pondered as he pointed at a girl—Huang Dandan. The secretary said, "Well, Director Zhang, Huang Dandan is quite good as well and she's rather spirited too. She's also well-versed in communication skills and interview techniques. Not only is she one of the more excellent video journalists in our department, she can handle filming very well too if you don't have enough cameramen. Whenever there's a shoot that follows the soccer or basketball leagues, she's always the first choice to go along with the film crew. Her experience is definitely good enough."

"Ahem, you're praising so much that I feel embarrassed. Am I that good?" Huang Dandan scratched her head and then stepped up. "Director Zhang, from now on, wherever you point, Tong Fu and I will follow. Now that I'm a part of your team, I can't guarantee other things, but I definitely won't embarrass you!"

Zhang Ye put out his hand. "Welcome aboard!"

Tong Fu and Huang Dandan both shook Zhang Ye's hand.

Actually, Zhang Ye had already noticed something. He saw the two of them throwing looks at each other every so often and believed that they were probably a couple. It was likely that everyone else in the office knew about this as well.

Next, Director Yan's secretary recommended another two people and Zhang Ye gladly accepted them without hesitation and took them into his fold.

Seeing that, the secretary felt his heart warm. He knew that this was down to Zhang Ye's trust for him. "Director Zhang, regarding the equipment that you requested, Director Yan has already settled it all. He just made some calls a while ago and everything should be sent over by tomorrow."

Zhang Ye reacted with surprise. "That fast?" Accustomed to the red tape in a television station and the delay from the department leaders, Zhang Ye was still not used to working under a leader who was so efficient.

The secretary said, "It was just a few sets of HD equipment, so they still gave us some face regarding that request. Uh, Director Zhang, do you still need me to recommend a few more people for your team?"

Zhang Ye laughed and said, "No, it's alright, that's more than enough. If I were to get more people, then the other sections would be emptied out soon and Director Yan would surely take it up with me if that happens, right?"

After confirming the team members, some people kept their composure as though nothing had happened while a few others clearly looked disappointed. It seemed like they had wanted to go over to the new program team as well, but were unfortunately not chosen to do so. Zhang Ye was still a legendary figure in the industry and his team was also the one who had created the miracle of the variety world. Joining this legendary team and working with them would surely have been a good experience that they could mention to others in the future: I worked on a show as part of Zhang Ye's program team before! Who wouldn't be impressed if they heard that? Even if they were to leave Central TV, with that line in their résumés, they might even be able to get a better job!

Hua la la. The metal chains on the door were removed by Director Yan's secretary.

The office space at Central TV Department 14's Section 3 was officially opened for Zhang Ye's program team starting today.

The money was in place!

The equipment was in place!

The staff were also in place!

Zhang Ye suddenly felt very emotional. OK, with everything ready, the platform has been set up. The rest will be up to me now! This bro will show those people at Central TV Department 1 that even if I get transferred over to Department 14, even if I end up making documentaries, I will still be able to fucking demolish you all!

The secretary suddenly asked, "Director Zhang, what is your new show going to be called? I'll get someone to make the plate for you to place on the office door."

Ha Qiqi, Zhang Zuo, and the others looked over.

Tong Fu, Huang Dandan, and the rest of the Department 14 staff also perked up their ears in curiosity.

Zhang Ye looked at everyone and then smiled before announcing, "The new program will be called—A Bite of China!"

Chen Ye?

Rise to the Dance?

Central TV Department 1?

Let's meet again in December! See you then!

Notes:

Hey people, I forgot to paste the link for the show if you're interested in it, so here goes... (English Dub wasn't the best, so you know which to go)

- [Official CCTV English Dub](#)
- [Official CCTV YouTube Chinese Playlist](#)
- [Unofficial A Bite of China English Subs](#)

Chapter 796: The Cameras Start Rolling For A Bite Of China!

The next day at work.

News of the matter started spreading internally at Central TV. Many of the Central TV staff who came to work were chatting privately about the matter which they had heard from their friends or seen in the media.

"Hey, have you heard? Zhang Ye got his new show approved by Yan Tianfei the very same day he assumed his new duties at Department 14 yesterday. I heard that Yan Tianfei has established a program team and specially set aside an office area for Zhang Ye and his team. He even borrowed HD equipment from everywhere and allocated a production budget to him. It seems that the cameras will start rolling soon for the new documentary that Zhang Ye's team is going to make. Central TV Department 1 had the intention to freeze Zhang Ye, but Department 14 doesn't care about this. It looks like we'll be able to watch Zhang Ye's documentary very soon."

"Seems that they were allocated 10 million RMB for it as well."

"What? How can that be?!"

"It's true! I've also received very reliable news that it's 10 million RMB!"

"10 million?"

"Can they spend that much money on a documentary?"

"That's because there is something more to this. Yan Tianfei did not want their money to land in the hands of Central TV Department 1. That's why he allocated all the money to Zhang Ye in a fit of anger."

"What's the new documentary about?"

"I'm not sure, but I've heard that it's about cooking?"

"A documentary about cooking? What's so interesting about that?"

"Who knows? But even if it's not based on cooking, there's nothing to look forward to in a documentary. After all, documentaries are a niche genre. No matter how they're shot, they are more or less still the same. I've heard that they even intend to shoot the documentary with HD video cameras? That's a purely superfluous move. Is there even a need to shoot a cooking documentary with HD equipment? I've never heard of anyone using HD video cameras to shoot a documentary! That's such a waste of money!"

"Who knows what Zhang Ye is thinking?"

"Hai, then what do you expect him to do? The place that Zhang

Ye went to is Department 14. It's the only place willing to take him in and give him the money to make a show. Do you think that he still has a choice? All he can do is to brace himself to produce a documentary. Therefore, all of you shouldn't be thinking too hard. Hur hur, my guess is that Zhang Ye himself also does not know how his documentary might turn out this time. I bet that he just got tired of idling around and so chose to make a casual documentary for fun. Probably no one is taking this too seriously."

"You're right on point."

"Yes, I think the same as you."

"Hai, Zhang Ye is finished. He has at least another half a year to go in his contract at Central TV and this is as good as being frozen. Right now, what's getting the most attention from everyone at Central TV is only Department 1's Rise to the Dance. Even the Central TV station leaders are placing a great deal of emphasis on it. Didn't their stage just get badly damaged yesterday, and then on the same night, the station started withdrawing funds from everywhere else so that they could use it to cover Xu Yipeng and Chen Ye's show? Who wouldn't notice that favoritism? All of Central TV's people and resources have to make way for Rise to the Dance since it's a critical show that will help cement Central TV Department 1's position as the best in the variety show industry. They cannot afford to mess this up. As for everyone else? All the other shows? All of them will have to step aside!"

"That's unavoidable since Department 1 has a special status at Central TV."

"But there are certain things that Central TV Department 1 has indeed gone overboard with. Regarding Zhang Ye back then, they never gave their full support to him. Frankly, ever since the beginning, Central TV Department 1 has never treated him as one of them. They would only trust someone like Chen Ye who has been a long-serving employee of Central TV."

"Don't say any more. There are some things that we just cannot do anything about, hai."

"That's right, this is a fight between gods. Let's just watch from the sides."

Not long after, it was on the news as well.

"Zhang Ye to oversee and produce a documentary!"

"A new challenge faces Zhang Ye and the team of The Voice: A documentary series!"

This news was not very prominent and the number of the media outlets reporting were not that many either. However, when it was published, it attracted a whole lot of attention!

Zhang Ye's friends were all stunned!

Crosstalk actor Yao Jiancai posted on Weibo in shock: "Little Zhang is going to shoot a documentary?"

Singer Chen Guang: "Is he crossing over into other industries again? This should be considered crossing industries, right?"

Dong Shanshan, the host of Beijing Television's Do You Remember: "I wish everything goes well for my old classmate. Always supporting you! Hur hur."

Beijing Television's program team lead, Hu Fei: "A documentary? That won't be easy to shoot at all."

A popular contestant of The Voice, Luo Yu: "Director Zhang is challenging the impossible again!"

The netizens could not stop discussing.

"A documentary? Did they make a mistake?"

"I know that Zhang Ye has gone over to the Central TV Documentary Channel, but I never expected that he would really be making a documentary!"

"Will the final product be watchable? Fuck, who even watches documentaries anyway?"

"I don't."

"I don't watch them much either, ahem."

"Documentaries are overdone with the same old topics. There's nothing interesting about them!"

"Get lost! Even if Teacher Zhang shoots a documentary about dog shit, I'll still watch it!"

"Right! Supporting Teacher Zhang!"

"There's finally news of Teacher Zhang's new program. Praise be! But it's just too bad that it's a documentary. Sob! How do you expect us to watch a documentary?! Even if I forced myself, I wouldn't be able to watch it! The educative nature of a documentary is too strong and too boring! Hai. In any case, I'm not keeping my hopes up, but really it's not because I don't support Teacher Zhang!"

"Making a documentary after making a variety show? This jump is a bit too much!"

There were all sorts of differing opinions.

Even some of Zhang Ye's fans also expressed that they wouldn't be able to watch if it were a documentary, much less those who were not his fans. Not many netizens believed that it would do well at all.

Almost instantaneously, the heated discussions about Zhang Ye's new show died down. Many people's attentions turned back to

discussion posts or Weibo posts related to Rise to the Dance and they talked about it fervently. Regarding Central TV Department 1's large-scale dancing talent show, many people were more optimistic about it. In the past few days, under Central TV Department 1's intense promotions and troll army led commentary, the discussions about this topic never ceased and stayed fresh in the minds of everyone.

"Chen Ye's status has risen again."

"It's probably the same for Xu Yipeng too. If Rise to the Dance becomes popular, do you think Old Xu can land the position of executive director for this year's Spring Festival Gala? He has even taken on the role of assistant director at previous Spring Festival Galas before."

"I'm looking forward to this dance show."

"Yes, I'm already tired of watching the recent variety shows, but there really haven't been any dancing talent shows before!"

"Central TV Department 1 really has the makings to become the dominant force of the variety show industry."

This was the entertainment industry and it had always been so realistic. If you had good works, stories, or news, everyone's discussions would revolve around you. Once you were out of new works, or if your stories became boring, even if you were an A-list celebrity, everyone would stop following you. With time, if you didn't have any new works, no topics of discussion, and no

popularity, even an A-list celebrity would drop to the B-list and a B-lister would drop to the C-list. There were many celebrities who ended up like that, and Zhang Ye was also in that awkward position now. However, the difference between him and the fallen celebrities was that this fellow had great capability. Even if he couldn't perform in his own profession, he could still pull in fame from his ventures in the gaming and mathematics worlds to maintain his popularity. Although it might not increase his popularity much, at least it helped in not letting it decline for the time being.

Therefore, Zhang Ye had nothing to worry about or had any concerns for now. His popularity was already stable for the time being. He did not need to consider other matters and only needed to shoot the documentary well. When A Bite of China got broadcast, everyone would find out whether his show was good or bad!

...

In the afternoon.

The last set of HD equipment was finally delivered by the staff of their sister channel.

Zhang Ye's heart was set and he immediately called out, "Little Wang!"

Little Wang blinked as she walked over. "Are you looking for me, Director Zhang?"

"Go and book the plane tickets. The teams will be split into three according to plan. We will set off on time tomorrow morning, so no one is to be late as the plane will not wait for anyone!" Zhang Ye instructed.

Little Wang was stunned. "Ah? Tomorrow morning?"

Ha Qiqi also asked, "Director Zhang, why...why are we in such a hurry?"

All the other program team staff of A Bite of China were not at all prepared either.

Zhang Ye smiled and said, "It will already be winter if we keep dawdling like this. We won't be able to film at many of the northern locations if that happens. We can wait, but time does not wait, so let's just endure the hardship for now and start packing once you all get back home in the evening. For a period of time, everyone will be working outside of Beijing on a business trip. Unless you have a very special reason, you won't be going back home for a while. Therefore, please inform your family about this beforehand. When we are finished with our work, I will apply to Director Yan to give everyone a long vacation."

"Sure."

"Understood, Director Zhang."

"Then we'll go prepare!"

Zhang Ye also called home to his parents.

Du du, the call connected. His mother answered the phone.

Zhang Ye said: "Mom, help me pack my luggage and put in more clothes. I'm afraid that I might not have time to pack when I get home. I'll be flying out tomorrow morning."

His mother asked: "Where are you going off to?"

"I will be filming a show. It's a documentary." Zhang Ye said.

His mother nearly fainted. "You're truly serious about filming the documentary? Can you do it?"

Zhang Ye laughed: "You'll know once the documentary is broadcast!"

After hanging up, Zhang Ye went to report to Yan Tianfei again. His application for the business trip was officially approved, and after he returned, Zhang Ye immediately announced, "The cameras will officially start rolling tomorrow for A Bite of China!"

Chapter 797: Filming In Progress!

Yunnan.

Shangri-La.

At the boundary of the deep mountains and forest, the film crew of *A Bite of China* had set up a temporary camp for communications one kilometer away at a small village where they had built tents and set up communication equipment. Zhang Ye and around nine of his colleagues were at the foot of the mountain, worn out from their journey here. As they stood close to nature, their spirits unwittingly started broadening. This was indeed the legendary tourist attraction. Many of those who were here for the first time would immediately fall in love with this place. It was a haven for nature's animals and plants alike, with nature's beauty unreservedly presented in front of one's eyes. This sight would make one feel very relaxed and happy.

The smell of grass was everywhere.

Ha Qiqi praised, "This is such a nice place!"

Little Wang was also spoiled with delight. She whispered, "I thought that this would be a tough assignment, having to rush out dozens of episodes for the documentary series within two months. But who could've guessed that Director Zhang has arranged such a nice place for us? Isn't this as good as going on a tour?!"

Tong Fu laughed. "It's still Director Zhang who takes the most

care of us!"

Huang Dandan spread her arms out to embrace the air, "How refreshing! Those who didn't join our film crew will definitely regret it. I'll send them a picture afterwards to make sure of this, hehe!"

At this moment, a wispy group of clouds drifted overhead and everyone looked up to watch, exchanging words about this scenic view.

Zhang Ye came over. "Are all the preparations done?"

"Everything is ready."

"The video cameras have been checked as well."

"Director Zhang, everything is A-OK!"

Everyone got ready.

Zhang Ye said satisfied, "Alright, Tong Fu, Dandan, Little Wang, Old Wu, you guys follow me up into the mountains. We will scout ahead first and try to find a spot where we can set up the cameras."

Wu Yi asked curiously, "Set up the cameras?"

Zhang Ye explained, "I want to record a full day's footage from day until night, highlighting the changes of the cloud cover over several hours and the fog movement, all of which requires a long take. Therefore, we need to find a spot that has a panoramic view for this appropriate scene to be recorded. During that time, we will also need someone to stay up there to look after the equipment and ensure that there are no problems with the shoot."

Wu Yi immediately volunteered, "I'll do it."

"Good." Zhang Ye then said, "Sister Ha, what's the status of the thing I asked you about earlier?"

Ha Qiqi replied, "I've already informed the villagers. When they learned we were from Central TV, everyone was so passionate and were fine with us filming anything we wanted to film. I've also arranged for our food and accommodation for the next few days."

Zhang Ye nodded. "That's good then. There's still another matter. I need a mountain guide, but even though I say it's a guide, what I need is actually someone who can appear on camera as well. Go and find out if there are any volunteers for this task. If the filming progresses smoothly, it will only take a day or two. Let them know about this clearly beforehand and also inform them that they will be compensated for their time. You can decide on the amount to pay them. Oh, the guide will need to have experience in picking pine mushrooms and it'd be best if it's a young woman."

Ha Qiqi was a little taken aback. "A woman? Young? I don't think there are many who suit that profile."

Zhang Ye stated, "Even so, try to get one. I'll leave that to you then."

"OK, I will get it done for sure," Ha Qiqi said.

After assigning a few more tasks, Zhang Ye led them up into the mountain forests.

"Eh, this spot seems pretty good."

"The view is really good too!"

"Old Wu, set up the camera and take some test shots!"

"OK."

"The framing here looks good, so we can pick this spot. This camera needs to keep recording for at least five hours and has to be securely stabilized at this spot. You must ensure that the mountain breeze doesn't knock it over or sway the camera's framing!"

"Director Zhang, do we need to record audio as well?"

"Get the audio down too, but I'm not too particular about it. We can edit out parts of it to be used when the time comes."

"Alright!"

After a full two hours of working in the mountains, they familiarized themselves with the routes and environment. There was also an update from Ha Qiqi's side, as she brought along with her a local Tibetan girl—Sangyé.

Ha Qiqi said breathlessly, "Will she do, Director Zhang?"

Sangyé who came with Ha Qiqi did not look tired at all from the trek here. Her eyes sparkled with interest as she looked at everyone and the equipment in their hands, while she herself was a little shy.

Zhang Ye smiled and said, "Hello, my name is Zhang Ye. I'm the director of the film crew."

Sangyé quickly said, "I am Sangyé, hello."

She could speak Mandarin, but just at an average level although it was still quite understandable.

After a simple chat and posing some questions to her regarding pine mushroom harvesting, Zhang Ye finally said, "Alright, you'll do. I'll be troubling you for the next two days, Sangyé. We can start filming immediately. Are you OK with that?"

Sangyé nodded. "I'm fine." Saying that, she hesitated for a moment before mustering her courage to ask, "I...Will everyone be

able to see me on television?"

Ha Qiqi smiled and replied, "Yes, of course. When the time comes for the broadcast, I will give you a call to let you know beforehand. We're from Central TV Department 14 and you will be able to receive the signal here as well."

Sangyé was suddenly delighted at that and immediately led them up the mountains.

Zhang Ye said from the side, "Sangyé, you don't need to be so nervous. Just be yourself and act natural. Yes, your expression can be a little more natural, just think of us as nonexistent and you'll be fine. Walk ahead like you would usually do when you're harvesting for pine mushrooms since that's what we want to capture on camera." After a few test shots, Zhang Ye checked the footage from the video camera but was not too satisfied with the results. He quickly got everyone to stop what they were doing and told his staff, "Someone come and help Sangyé touch up a little."

Little Wang said, "Let me do it. Should I put on some makeup?"

Zhang Ye said, "No need for makeup. Just help her tidy up a bit, so that her hair won't look messy."

This was Zhang Ye's first time directing a documentary shoot and also the first time most of his team were filming a documentary. As everyone needed a little bit of a familiarization process, this slow development at the beginning was already expected by Zhang Ye. He believed that after today, the filming process would only get

faster and faster. But for now, they would have to take things one step at a time so that their basics could be honed. No shot could have a mistake in it. If they returned to Beijing after the location shoots were completed and discovered that a certain key scene could not be used? At that time, they wouldn't have the time or resources to come back here to re-record the footage! Therefore, Zhang Ye could accept a slow start, as long as they kept improving their quality of shots!

During the break.

Zhang Ye looked at his cell phone and saw that there was still a signal. He quickly made a call to the second film crew who were sent to Zhejiang, with Assistant Director Zhang Zuo being assigned as the temporary director of their group.

"Hello, Director Zhang!" a tired-sounding Zhang Zuo answered over the phone.

Zhang Ye immediately asked, "Have you all arrived?"

Zhang Zuo replied breathlessly, "Phew, we have just reached the site and found the village. This place is quite inaccessible by vehicle."

"Great, it's been tough for you guys," Zhang Ye said. "Just get some rest first and take a breather. As for the rest of the work, just follow the arrangements that I briefed you guys on earlier. Brother Zhang, the task that I assigned to your team is the most urgent one. Try to get all the footage recorded by tomorrow, then head to

the next filming location. It's going to be October very soon, so it might be a little late to get the footage of the harvesting of the winter bamboo shoots. But if we drag it on any longer, I believe that we won't have a chance at getting that footage anymore. I'll need you all to put in a lot of effort and tire you guys a little this time to record that footage over there. Tomorrow afternoon, when I can get the plane tickets booked, I'll fly straight over and we'll head to the next filming location from there."

Zhang Zuo said, "How hard can it be for us? You're the one having it the worst, so just leave this to us and don't be worried."

After the call ended, Zhang Ye made a call to the third film crew.

The three film crews of A Bite of China were already assigned and sent out to their respective locations by Zhang Ye at around the same time. Zhang Ye could not oversee everything by himself and could only follow one film crew at a time, so he went with Ha Qiqi's team first to help them become familiar with the shooting and to let them know what kind of style he was trying to achieve. After that, Zhang Ye would rendezvous with the next team on the second day, and then the third team a day or two later. All of the recorded footage would need to satisfy Zhang Ye before he would use them. If he did not have a look for himself, he would not be able to stop worrying. A Bite of China might look like it was easy to film, but the truth was that there were many techniques used to film this documentary. The simpler a scene looked, the harder it was to capture. The massive amounts of information and content, and even the artistic mood of the documentary could sometimes only be found in those several simple scenes. Nothing could be wanting at all, and if it was, it would surely affect the documentary's quality!

As the executive director of A Bite of China, he could not run away from the fate of having to travel all over the country to oversee the filming progress. There was no way, especially with time so tight!

For example, the scene featuring the winter bamboo shoots harvesting.

For example, the scene of the pine mushrooms harvesting which was also found in the first episode.

They all needed to be filmed right now, not later. The harvesting of winter bamboo shoots would have ended in mid-September and they could almost no longer film this harvesting process anymore at this point in time. Meanwhile, the pine mushrooms harvesting season ended a little later, just before mid-October. But when something like that was so dependent on the weather, if waited until the rainy season of Shangri-La was long over, then there might be no more traces of any pine mushrooms in the mountains anymore. All of these tasks were a race against time, which was why Zhang Ye had given a recording schedule to each of the three film crews before they set off from Beijing. With the three film crews headed off to different locations, the shooting process was not done in accordance to the timeline of A Bite of China back in Zhang Ye's previous world. It was planned accordingly to which shoot was more urgent, and only in that way would they be able to ensure that everything could be completed successfully.

As for the footage which could not be filmed during September and October? After all, in the original version of A Bite of China,

there were also many scenes that took place in spring and summer.

So Zhang Ye thought of a plan.

He had two ideas to solve this:

1. Change locations. Although it was winter in the north, there were locations where it was spring all year round. Surely they could get the footage they wanted at those places, right?

2. Change the types of food. A Bite of China was a documentary that focused on food, the people, and its culture. By changing the type of food featured, he wasn't changing the idea behind the documentary. They would still be able to show the food and its history in that way, except that Zhang Ye would have to start thinking a bit harder and try to write a script which would follow according to the format of the original A Bite of China. The amount of food that required changing wasn't that much either, so his workload shouldn't be too great. Zhang Ye had already used the Memory Search Capsules to retrieve all the information of A Bite of China from his previous world. All of the scenes and details have been fully memorized by Zhang Ye, and when coupled with his Basics of Directing and Camera Techniques Skill Experience Books, he could mimic those scenes without affecting the quality of the documentary.

The film schedule was resolved.

The race against time was resolved.

And thus, there were no longer any problems!

Chapter 798: I Have Not Left Yet!

On the first day of shooting, the film crews were all very excited, relaxed and treating it as a holiday tour.

On the second day of shooting, the film crews were beginning to feel a little tired.

On the third day of shooting, the first casualties started appearing, with some staff from all three film crews falling sick at the same time. Some either caught a cold or couldn't acclimatize, with one suffering from altitude sickness, but was recovering well after being given an oxygen mask at a local hospital.

On the fourth day of shooting, the film crews were all complaining incessantly.

"We still have to fly today?"

"We're going to Guizhou this time?"

"Fuck me! I can't take this anymore!"

"Director Zhang, can we request for a day off to rest?"

"Yeah, Director Zhang, everyone's almost at their limits. We have been hiking in the mountains and crossing streams every day, coupled with rushing to our flights and making our way into the

villages on ox carts. We're all used to sitting in the office at work, so doing all these activities has suddenly taken a real toll on our health. We really can't take it anymore!"

"Director Zhang hasn't even complained yet. Who are we to say anything?"

"Right, let's endure a little more. We can catch some z's on the plane."

"We can do it. Back in the days of preparing for The Voice, how many of us really got any rest in the two months leading up to the broadcast? Didn't we also work every day for more than ten hours? We could even survive those difficult times, so what is this hardship now? It's not easy for Director Zhang either, so let's not complain anymore."

There were some who complained, but also others who encouraged.

When Zhang Ye heard this, he could only try to cheer them on by saying, "We can't afford to rest in the next few days. There are still two more locations that we have to complete shoots at, so why don't we wait for the day after tomorrow instead? By then, we can get a day or two of rest, so please try to endure a little more."

Today, Zhang Ye was following the second film crew around on their film schedule. This crew were all made up of the staff who were previously from The Voice. He knew the reason why everyone could not take this anymore. Other than the mountain

hikes which took a lot of their energy, there was one other reason. It was the lack of something to look forward to. When they were recording for The Voice back then, everyone was successively clocking overtime to finish their tasks because Zhang Ye had pulled in an astronomical title sponsorship fee. On top of that, he also pulled in big shot celebrities like Zhang Yuanqi, Chen Guang, and Fan Wenli to join the program. With the public's eye on them and the media reporting about their program almost every day, everyone surely had the motivation to work harder.

However, this time?

This time they were shooting a documentary program which seemingly had no future to them!

It was only reported by a few scattered and small media outlets before quickly dying down. They did not even seem to be interested in the title of the documentary, much less give it any further attention. Knowing that the documentary they were shooting would not be seen by too many people, everyone's motivation naturally dropped by quite a bit.

Zhang Ye told them, "Just endure a little bit more. Perhaps when everyone looks back on this in the future, you all might discover that this hardship was very well worth it. Who knows, this documentary just might bring us a great surprise!"

Everyone broke into a sweat.

Surprise?

Surprise my ass!

What surprises could a documentary possibly have!? They would be more than satisfied if the viewership ratings did not get too frighteningly low. No one was hoping for a miracle and felt that this was just Director Zhang painting pies in the sky to raise their morale.

AD Zhang Zuo led everyone by saying, "Director Zhang, don't worry. Since you can hold up, we'll be fine as well! There definitely won't be someone who holds us back!"

At this moment, a call from Beijing came in.

It was Department 14's Director Yan Tianfei.

Yan Tianfei asked: "Teacher Zhang, how's the progress of your shoot going?"

Zhang Ye immediately answered: "It's been very smooth up until now. We're stepping it up to try to get more footage recorded."

Yan Tianfei coughed: "You don't have to rush. It's not like we must definitely broadcast in December anyway. I've heard that some of your crew members have fallen ill since yesterday? There was even someone who suffered from altitude sickness? Please take it easy and watch out for everyone's safety. That is of the utmost importance. It doesn't matter if it affects the show, but our people

must definitely not have anything happen to them. I know that you have very strict requirements when it comes to the arts. You always want to achieve perfection and excellence, but a documentary is different from other programs, so there's no need to push it so hard, am I right? Just do OK and it'll be fine."

Zhang Ye laughed: "Director, rest assured. I have a sense of propriety. I'll certainly bring back everyone in the same condition as when I brought them out here."

"Alrighty then, as long as you know what you're doing." Yan Tianfei had wanted to say a bit more, but after hearing Zhang Ye reassure him in that way, he couldn't really interfere anymore. Since the film crews were already assigned to Zhang Ye, with him as their boss, it wouldn't be too good if Yan Tianfei had to stick his nose in. He only called because he got worried after hearing that some people had fallen ill and hoped to persuade Zhang Ye not to push the teams too hard. However, he guessed that Zhang Ye probably did not really take his words to heart. Hai, it was good that he was responsible in his work and sought perfection in what he did, but there was no need to be like this. Does Little Zhang really intend to make something fancy out of this show called A Bite of China?

How could that be!?

Yan Tianfei had read through the program proposal repeatedly, but he did not find anything unusual about it.

Recording cuisine, recording ingredients, recording people and cultures, it was a very standard template that you could find in

eight out of ten documentaries. Their department had also done similar documentaries like this before, where they would visit forested mountain regions to document the untouched way of life. Wasn't this how all documentaries were filmed? The only difference was that they had never used HD video cameras in the past, so rather than just saying that the staff on Zhang Ye's filming crew did not anticipate the documentary much, or that the media and audience of the entire country also did not anticipate it much, even an experienced director of a documentary channel like Yan Tianfei also did not anticipate it much.

Well, whatever. As long as the entire 10 million was spent, everything else was not an issue! He wasn't going to be bothered by anything else anymore and just left Teacher Little Zhang alone to handle this matter. He could do it however he liked, and no matter how poor the viewership ratings ended up, Department 14 wouldn't care about it. In any case, they were already at the bottom rung of the entire Central TV structure, so no matter how badly they did, they couldn't do any worse than they were already doing!

...

Meanwhile.

In Beijing.

While the film crews of A Bite of China were slaving away, rushing to the different locations to film their scenes, the program team of Central TV Department 1's Rise to the Dance was in contrast much more relaxed.

The preliminary auditions had already begun!

Their program had taken up at least half of the entertainment news headlines!

"Chen Ye's marriage on the rocks?"

"Internal rumors rife: Rise to the Dance's executive director, Xu Yipeng, to host the coming Spring Festival Gala!"

"According to sources, Rise to the Dance's actual production spending could rise to 120 million RMB!"

"Beijing Dance Academy's senior year school belle rumored to be competing in Rise to the Dance?"

"Preliminary auditions, fierce competition. A talented dancer emerges!"

All these headlines were mainly to hype up the show. Some were real and some not, but all of them were just rumors.

Then, there was also some confirmed news.

Beijing Times: Rise to the Dance has officially invited dancer Teacher Lili to join the program. Our reporter has received an official confirmation about this news from Teacher Lili's

management company. Undoubtedly, this would add another heavyweight claim for Rise to the Dance. Teacher Lili is one of the few famous dancers from China to have received an international professional dance award before, so her status in this industry was unquestionable!

Southern Entertainment News: A-list celebrity Huo Dongfang confirms that he has joined Rise to the Dance, with a rumored joining fee of 18 million RMB. As everyone knows, "Sect Leader Huo" started out as a professional dancer before crossing over to become an actor. Back then, the movie Dancing in the Air earned the accolade of Best Picture in China. Sect Leader Huo played the lead role without needing a standin. All the dance scenes in the film were performed by him, and he even played a part in choreographing them. From that alone, his strength in dancing was evident. The addition of him to Rise to the Dance was truly a great move. With Huo Dongfang joining Rise to the Dance, he brings along a great deal of his followers as well, and he could be considered one of the most suitable guests to be invited onto the show. Yes, as to why we say "one of the most," that is because there is another even more suitable guest—Heavenly Queen Zhang Yuanqi. It's rumored that the people in charge of Rise to the Dance have been in contact with Sister Zhang's agency. If they really manage to invite the Heavenly Queen who's also extremely well-versed in dance to helm the show, then it would only make the show even stronger!

The news of the day in the entertainment circle was mostly about Rise to the Dance!

...

Guangxi.

At a small civilian airport.

Zhang Ye and his team were waiting to show their boarding passes to board the plane. At this moment, his cell phone rang. It was Zhang Ye's former boss at Beijing Television, Hu Fei, who called.

Hu Fei: "Little Zhang, where are you?"

Zhang Ye said, catching his breath: "I'm in Guangxi right now."

Hu Fei cleared his throat. "You went all the way there?"

Zhang Ye: "Yeah, right now I'm in Guangxi. Later, I will be in Guizhou. I'm actually waiting to board the plane right now."

Hu Fei: "You always give your all when it comes to work. I've heard that you're making a documentary this time, so I thought of giving you a call. You should know that a documentary is really difficult to handle. When I graduated all those years ago, my first job was to work on documentaries. I've produced several of them before, so you can say that I have some understanding of them."

Zhang Ye laughed: "It really isn't easy to shoot. I've come to realize that greatly in the past few days."

Hu Fei said: "Have you already read about Rise to the Dance's promotions?"

"I flipped through some newspapers and saw them. It seems like they're really promoting it quite a lot," Zhang Ye replied with a laugh. Although he had been spending much of his time in the mountains and small towns, but when it came to his opponent's news, how could he not keep himself updated?

Hu Fei declared, sounding rather stressed: "It's more than a lot! I haven't seen their ads yet, but the speculation and publicity in the news are always changing every day. They've already managed to move Huo Dongfang and Teacher Lili and get them to join the program with their joining fees one higher than the other. I've also heard that Chen Ye is trying to convince Sister Zhang to join them, having gone over to discuss with them personally twice already."

Zhang Ye blinked at that. "Did Sister Zhang agree?"

Hu Fei said: "No, a joining fee of 20 to 30 million won't be able to move the Heavenly Queen. In the entire entertainment industry, the Heavenly Queen will only give face to you. Xu Yipeng and Chen Ye could never do that. However, even without the Heavenly Queen, Rise to the Dance still has a glittering lineup. Our entire program team is already feeling the pressure from them, possibly because they're not letting up in their promos at all. The recent viewership ratings for Do You Remember has already dropped slightly, while the other talent shows are also experiencing the same thing. This Rise to the Dance show is already creating such a wave even before it starts broadcasting. I really cannot imagine what it will be like when they start their broadcast! From now on,

I'm afraid that our good days are going to be over. I just had a meeting yesterday to discuss with Dong Shanshan and the others. We're already preparing to implement the changes that you told us about back then to change the show's rules and format. Hopefully, this will help freshen the program a little for the audience."

Zhang Ye nodded when he heard that. "That's OK. Since Do You Remember has already been on air for so long now, it's also the right time to introduce some changes."

Hu Fei sighed: "If only you were still around in the television industry, Rise to the Dance would never be able to act so arrogantly. After you left, no one in the variety industry is able to keep them under control."

Zhang Ye laughed: "Brother Hu, who says that I have left?"

Hu Fei sounded a little startled. "Huh?"

Zhang Ye added: "Because I...have not left yet."

Chapter 799: Filming Wraps For A Bite Of China!

After the call with Hu Fei ended.

They still could not board the plane yet. This time, Zhang Ye received a rather unexpected call—from Chen Guang's wife, the famous singer, Fan Wenli.

"Director Zhang, are you busy right now?" Fan Wenli asked.

Zhang Ye laughed: "I'm not busy at the moment, just waiting to board the plane. What's the matter, Sister Fan?"

Fan Wenli's tone sounded like she was somewhat embarrassed. "There's something that I think I should inform you about first. After discussing with Old Chen, he also said that I should let you know as well."

Zhang Ye was taken aback. "Huh? What's the matter?"

Fan Wenli said: "Rise to the Dance has invited me to join their show, and I've agreed to it."

This was something that Zhang Ye did not expect at all. Why would a dance show invite Fan Wenli? Wouldn't there be more suitable candidates? Even though Fan Wenli was considered a big sister of the music industry and a very popular singer who knew

how to do simple dances, surely she didn't have much in relation to a dance show, right?

However, on second thought, Zhang Ye understood. Did it matter that she wasn't in the dance profession? How many of Rise to the Dance's future audience would really understand dance as an art as well? In the numerous dancing talent shows of Zhang Ye's previous world, not only were there singers who joined the judging panels of those dance shows, there were even crosstalk actors who did the same. The main qualifying criteria still boiled down to the celebrity's popularity and ability to present themselves onstage. Fan Wenli had good looks and could also dance a few moves. It didn't matter if her dance was not professional, it would still be able to attract attention. After all, she had already worked her way up as an artist involved in the performing arts industry, and had even been a teacher before as well. She did not lack the foundation in this area, so it was definitely acceptable that Rise to the Dance invited her to join the program. Besides, Fan Wenli was also a guest coach on the recently ended but successful Central TV Department 1 variety show The Voice. By inviting her, Xu Yipeng and Chen Ye were probably hoping that Fan Wenli would be able to help build Rise to the Dance's audience base by pulling in fans of The Voice, thereby letting them smoothly succeed the previous show.

Having considered it all, Old Fan was truly quite a good pick for the show.

Of course, that also meant that the program team of Rise to the Dance probably failed to invite Zhang Yuanqi on board, otherwise they wouldn't have gone for the next best choice, Old Fan.

Zhang Ye laughed and asked: "How much are they paying you? If it's too little, you should not go."

"It's about the same as The Voice," Fan Wenli said embarrassedly.

Zhang Ye nodded. "Then that's fine. Why would you need to inform me about this? The viewership ratings for Rise to the Dance shouldn't be too bad. Since they're promoting the show so aggressively, if you joined them, it will definitely help with increasing your popularity. Besides, the joining fee isn't a small sum either, so why would you not agree, right?"

Fan Wenli said: "Everyone knows that you don't get along with Chen Ye and the both of you even fought on Weibo before. Besides, if not for that incident, this program should have been helmed by you instead, so I—"

Zhang Ye interrupted: "Aiyo, Sister Fan, come on. You and I have already known each other for some time now. Am I really such a petty person in the eyes of Old Chen and you?"

Fan Wenli chuckled when she heard him say that. "Well, no."

"Then that settles it." Zhang Ye really did not think much of this and even joked: "Just do it knowing that I don't mind at all. However, I hope that you won't do your best for them and just do your job averagely. Most of the people in that group aren't good people and they will not appreciate you even if you try your best for them."

Fan Wenli was tickled at this. "I'm really relieved to hear you say that. If only you did not leave, because even if you offered me half of what you did before, I would still be willing to join your shows."

Zhang Ye suddenly stated, "Rest assured, Sister Fan. There will still be chances for us to work together in the future."

After hanging up, Zhang Ye shook his head. It was yet another assumption that he had left? He had already heard this being mentioned so many times in just a short period of time.

Leave?

Of course he didn't leave, but it was just that everyone thought that he had left. All of the media, his peers, as well as the audience believed that after he was dumped to the Central TV Documentary Channel, he would lose the ability to compete for viewership ratings against the other variety shows, so they automatically excluded Zhang Ye from there. But Zhang Ye never thought this way before. Whoever dictated that the prerequisite to getting first place in the nationwide viewership ratings was to have a variety type of entertainment program? Other than variety shows, did all the other genres not have the right to fight for the number 1 spot in the viewership ratings?

Hur hur.

Perhaps this might be the case in the past. But from now on, that was no longer necessarily true!

This time, Zhang Ye wanted to let everyone know. To come out top in the viewership ratings? Even a documentary would stand a chance! On the day that A Bite of China broadcasts, all of you better be prepared for a fright!

In front of him.

Zhang Zuo turned around, probably curious after hearing Zhang Ye's conversation on the phone. "Director Zhang, Teacher Fan Wenli has also joined Rise to the Dance?"

The others from the film crew also looked over.

Zhang Ye had no reason to hide this so just nodded and said, "It's confirmed. Teacher Fan has just called me to let me know about it."

"Sister Fan has really joined their show?"

"Damn, then their lineup will really be strong!"

"With Teacher Fan on board, their show will be supported by the momentum gained from The Voice!"

"Director Zhang, are we just going to look on like this?"

"Yeah, I really can't take this lying down! It's so infuriating!"

"What else can we do? We have already been reduced to making documentaries! There's no way for us to go and compete with them in the ring anymore! We won't even qualify for an entrance ticket!"

"How annoying!"

Everyone had their share of opinions. Having their show taken away from them had already left them very unhappy, but what made it worse was that this bunch of people who took their show were still getting featured so regularly in the media that they couldn't avoid seeing them at all!

However, Zhang Ye spoke very calmly, "Alright, don't complain anymore. Just leave them be. We'll carry on doing our own things. There shouldn't be any point of conflicts in what we do. I was thinking of our schedule just now. Maybe we can add a visit to the Wuyi Mountains for a scenic shoot. It's not that urgent, so we can leave that location for last."

Zhang Zuo was taken aback. "Director Zhang, was our program proposal only a half completed one?"

Zhang Ye laughed and said, "We don't lack any money now anyway, so why not shoot a few more episodes?"

Zhang Zuo voiced with trepidation, "10 million is indeed not a small sum. But if we go on like this, I'm afraid that this 10 million would also be insufficient for us. It looks like we're making a large-scale documentary already?"

"The money should be enough. I'll keep it in mind," Zhang Ye replied.

Back then, the proposal that Zhang Ye had given a copy to Yan Tianfei and his team staff only touched on the first season of A Bite of China. But due to the Lucky Halo's effects which landed them a 10 million RMB windfall, Zhang Ye decided to make some changes to the proposal by adding the second season into the filming schedule as well. With the tasks and scenes doubled, he began to slowly add schedules bit by bit across all three film crews.

As for how he would fuse seasons one and two of A Bite of China together? Zhang Ye already made his plans. The simplest solution: cutting down on the scenes that touched on the stories of people and culture in season two of A Bite of China. There wasn't a great deal of difference between the first and second seasons, except that the second season featured a lot more stories about the people and culture surrounding the featured foods. Some netizens rated season two of A Bite of China to be lower than the first season because of all the scenes that it dedicated to talking about the people and culture, while there was less of a focus on the food itself. But regardless of whether that opinion was objective or not, since Zhang Ye wanted to edit the two seasons into one, then he needed to have the storytelling be consistent. With food as its central focus, Zhang Ye would definitely choose to cut out the irrelevant scenes of season two of A Bite of China. With this small change, it might even help push their viewership ratings even higher than he wanted them to be.

The Voice's viewership ratings had defied all sense and it achieved many records in this world as well. It also achieved the top spot in the nationwide viewership ratings, amazing everyone

except Zhang Ye, who was not that impressed with the results. Although he knew that the two worlds could not be compared using the same standards, the viewership ratings of The Voice in this world was really quite terrible when compared to his previous world. This was due to the variety show environment, the viewing habits of the audience, as well as many other factors. But the details of this were not important at this time anymore. Zhang Ye had pinned all his expectations for a better viewership rating on A Bite of China!

There mustn't be any more "discounts"!

This time, with A Bite of China, there had to be no mistakes. Zhang Ye even hoped that A Bite of China would do exceedingly well in this world as he believed it had the potential and also the capability to do so!

In his previous world, season one of A Bite of China took a long time to become popular. At the beginning, the viewership ratings were extremely low until it started spreading by word of mouth about how good it was. By the time season two of A Bite of China aired, the viewership ratings began rapidly climbing until it reached a peak. What must be cleared up here is that in the previous world, A Bite of China was not promoted, and had no celebrity stars or much funding. It was even broadcast on television at a very bad time. Regarding this, Zhang Ye had no plans to replicate those conditions!

Promotions?

I will fucking promote it well!

No celebrities?

I will personally narrate A Bite of China!

Lack of funding?

I will throw money at every scene with the greater production funding than the original version, so that every image shown will be better perfect!

As for the broadcast schedule?

Whatever primetime slot that Rise to the Dance will be broadcast at, we will also broadcast it at that time!

I will give whatever you all want and I will make up for whatever you all don't have! Zhang Ye did not have any extravagant hopes other than for A Bite of China's viewership ratings to start off with a bang!

With this expectation and determination, the filming was also systematically carried out!

On their journey, all kinds of incidents kept occurring. Equipment failures, staff injuries, plane delays, the film crew getting trapped in the mountains due to weather, etc.

This was Zhang Ye's attitude towards the arts and also his purpose as an executive director of the show.

A documentary was unlike a variety show, with the latter for entertainment, while the former existed as a form of art. They were not the same at all!

...

Two months passed in no time.

As November came to an end.

Winter arrived as the weather turned cool. It also started snowing in many places.

The second film crew at Anhui were the first to have completed all their tasks at this moment. At about the same time, the third film crew at Jiangsu also completed all of their team's schedules!

On the same day.

Zhang Ye and the first film crew finished their final shoot at the Wuyi Mountains!

Along with Zhang Ye, they excitedly wrapped up their work and cheered!

"We're done shooting!"

"We're finally done!"

"My god! I'm exhausted!"

"We can finally go home! Hooray!"

"It's been two long months already! We can finally wrap!!"

Everyone in the film crews nearly burst out into tears. All those days really had not been easy for them!

Chapter 800: [Da Hong Pao](#) Doesn't Exist In This World?

In the afternoon.

Wuyishan City.

The members of the first film crew were all inside their hotel suites. Some of them were packing up the equipment and luggage, some of them were finishing up their final bit of work, and some were laughing and chatting happily. The atmosphere was very relaxed. Having worked on the documentary for two full months now, once the filming wrapped, they suddenly felt no tinge of tiredness anymore.

Zhang Ye was standing at the window, on the phone.

"Brother Zhang, we've also completed our work over here."

"Congratulations, Director Zhang."

"I should congratulate you too. Have you guys booked the plane tickets yet?"

"Yes, we've already booked them. We'll be taking this afternoon's flight back to Beijing."

"Alright. I've already told the third film crew that they can go

back as well. Our side here will be taking tomorrow's flight since we didn't manage to get today's plane tickets on time, so we will head back a day later than you guys."

"Alright, then we will wait for you to get back."

"Don't bother waiting for me. After you guys get back, take it that I have given my approval for you to have a few days' rest. Since we're already done with the filming, the remaining work will be the editing and voiceover recording. That will be my job and I'll have to spend a few more days to edit it. Most of you can just take a break."

"OK."

"Then that's all. Handle the equipment and source footage carefully when you get back. Don't damage anything."

"Understood."

"We'll meet back at Beijing then."

After hanging up, Zhang Ye immediately made a call to Yan Tianfei. He definitely needed to report back to Old Yan that they had successfully completed the first stage of production.

When Yan Tianfei heard about this, he was overcome with emotion. "You've finally completed the shoot! Well done! Well done! I've heard all about the hard work that you guys have been

putting in for the past two months. Teacher Zhang, it's been hard on you."

Zhang Ye quickly replied: "Hur hur, Director Yan, listen to what you're saying. This is my job and whatever I did was all part of my job. It's been hard on our brothers and sisters of the film crews though."

Yan Tianfei asked: "How much of the production budget have you spent?"

"Slightly more than 9.9 million RMB." Zhang Ye laughed and said: "I was controlling our spending. Another night at the hotel and another meal later, there should be almost nothing left of the remaining money."

Yan Tianfei also chuckled: "Good, it's a good thing that you've spent it all. The station has been pressuring us to lend them the money every day. I heard that Central TV Department 1 still does not have enough funding, so even if there is money left over, we won't be able to keep it. It's great that you've spent it all! After you guys have returned, I'll throw a celebratory feast for everyone."

Zhang Ye smiled and said: "Alright, I'll thank you for that first, Director Yan."

When the call ended, Zhang Ye heard Ha Qiqi and the others chatting behind him.

Ha Qiqi was all smiles as she said to the several of them, "I never knew that shooting a documentary could be so expensive. Back then, when I heard that we were given 10 million RMB for our budget, I thought that it would be impossible for us to spend it all. In the end, I couldn't have expected that if we didn't control our spending a little, we might not even have enough to last us the entire trip. Spending 10 million RMB to film a documentary? I think it's only us who try to make a documentary this way in the entire country! This is really a genuinely expensive documentary to produce!"

Tong Fu didn't know whether to laugh or cry. "That's right. There's really no one in the country who will spend so much money to shoot a documentary. Some of the 30 to 40 episode documentary series would at most cost around 2 million RMB to make, but as for us? Looking at Director Zhang's program proposal, it's only a total of 10 episodes?"

Little Wang asked, "What are your opinions about this documentary?"

Tong Fu exclaimed, "Regarding this, I don't know."

Huang Dandan coughed, "Yeah, it's indeed hard to say."

After hearing from these two staff members who were the only ones with real documentary making experience, it became clear to the several of them that those two were also in the same situation as them. After shooting for two months, they still did not understand what was so special about this documentary. They were only shooting the documentary in the traditional manner,

albeit with HD video cameras, and they did not notice anything in the entire process that looked like a flash of brilliance. They just shot as much footage as they could, doing as they were told and following Zhang Ye's instructions. If Zhang Ye said they were to look for a certain type of food, they would go look and for it. Basically, they did not understand much of what they were doing at all.

Zhang Ye walked over with a smile. "What're you guys talking about? I heard everything."

Everyone suddenly felt awkward.

"Uh, we aren't talking about anything much," Tong Fu scampered to reply.

"Director Zhang, where should we go in the afternoon?" Little Wang changed the subject.

Zhang Ye said, "Whoa, you guys aren't tired?"

Little Wang smiled gleefully and said, "I'm don't feel tired. Our flight is tomorrow anyway, and we will have plenty of time to rest once we get back to Beijing."

"I agree!" Huang Dandan pumped her fist in agreement.

Ha Qiqi laughed. "The mountains and rivers here are quite scenic, but I don't think there's much of anything else to do here?"

Are there any local attractions in Wuyishan City? Or anything good to eat?"

Wu Yi said, "I don't know. I think it's the first time that all of us are here."

Zhang Ye suggested, "Why don't we go out in the afternoon to drink some tea?"

Little Wang clapped her hands as she mentioned, "I like drinking tea!"

"Since we're at Wuyishan City, if we don't give Da Hong Pao a try, we would really have come in vain." Zhang Ye smiled. "Of course, I'm talking about cultivar tea. We won't be able to afford to try the tea leaves that comes directly from the parent trees, and neither would they sell it to us anyway."

Ha Qiqi was stunned. "Da Hong Pao?"

Wu Yi also blinked and asked, "Cultivar tea? What cultivar?"

Little Wang was feeling puzzled. "Parent trees?"

Zhang Ye looked at them. "What? Have you all never heard of Da Hong Pao?"

How disgraceful! Aren't you all being a little too tacky! This is the

noblest tea among all the famous teas!

Hearing Zhang Ye mention about this Da Hong Pao, the others all looked at each other puzzled!

Tong Fu asked with a confused expression, "What kind of tea is this Da Hong Pao?"

Scratching her head, Huang Dandan smiled embarrassed and asked, "Is there such a tea? I've never heard of it before."

"If Director Zhang says there is, then it must exist. Our limited knowledge can't compare to Director Zhang," fawned a staff member, though his eyes were filled with doubt at the same time. Da Hong Pao? Are you sure you're not referring to clothes? Is there even a tea that goes by this lousy name?!

This time, it was Zhang Ye's turn to be confused. It was understandable if one or two of them had never heard of it before, but for everyone present to have never heard of Da Hong Pao? That was somewhat inconceivable. Zhang Ye's keen sense of awareness told him that there was something wrong here, so he immediately probed further. "What about oolong tea?"

Little Wang said immediately, "I know about oolong tea. There are many types of it, but I like to drink Tieguanyin the most."

Ha Qiqi asked, "Do they have Tieguanyin here?"

"It doesn't seem like they have any exceptionally famous teas in Wuyi, right? Although it also seems like they grow tea here, their reputation and quantity aren't comparable to Suzhou's and Hangzhou's tea," Wu Yi said.

Wuyi's teas are not famous?

Fuck, are you from another planet?! The parent trees of Da Hong Pao are located right here! They sell those tea leaves by the gram in auctions! Each auction's winning bids could easily reach several hundred grand! Yet here you are telling me that there are no famous teas in Wuyi? Are you kidding me?

However, judging from everyone's expression and doubtful faces, Zhang Ye thought that he was probably the one who came from another planet instead. He was full of curiosity now. Could it be that there wasn't any Da Hong Pao on this planet? That those parent trees did not exist? But it was impossible. Even though there had been some changes in this world, there hadn't been much of a deviation from history. The more critical point was that those few old tea trees older than several hundred years should not be related to history at all! It should be an issue of geography and the mineral makeup of the location instead! In this world, Shanxi was still mining coal, Daqing still had oil fields, while Burmese jade was still as popular as ever, so there shouldn't be any changes in this area, right?

Then why did Da Hong Pao not exist here?

Or could it be that those parent trees did not actually disappear, but that the people of this world were still unaware of how

precious and valuable it was?

At the thought of this, Zhang Ye's heart began thumping faster and faster as he became quite excited. The parent trees of Da Hong Pao were as good as money trees. It was the most expensive tea in the world! Moreover, nothing could even come close to its price, as it was countless times more expensive than gold was worth its weight! If only he could manage to get hold of some of the parent trees. The thought of that left him trembling in excitement!

Zhang Ye could no longer hold back his curiosity. "Let's go to the Wuyi Mountains scenic area and have a look!"

Ha Qiqi said, "Sure, I'll follow Director Zhang."

Little Wang cheered, "Oh, let's go then!"

One of the staff members was feeling tired and volunteered to remain back at the hotel to look after the equipment.

The others packed and changed. Then, together with Zhang Ye, they headed straight to the famous Wuyi Mountains scenic area.

Somewhere in the scenic area was the exact location where the Da Hong Pao parent trees grew. In Zhang Ye's previous world, this location was a prominent scenic spot called the Da Hong Pao attraction where tourists were allowed to take pictures from outside the perimeter surrounding the parent trees. Zhang Ye knew exactly where it was located!